This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

32101 066151554

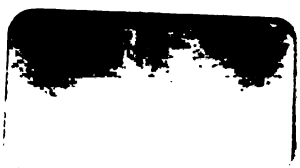
Digitized by Google

1154
.6414

Library of

Princeton University.

Cadwalader Fund.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Michigan History Magazine

OFFICIAL ORGAN OF THE MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION
AND THE MICHIGAN PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

VOLUME II

1 9 1 8

Published Quarterly by the
MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION
LANSING

Digitized by Google

(RECAP)
1154
.6414
v.2
1918

Digitized by Google

MICHIGAN HISTORICAL COMMISSION

A STATE DEPARTMENT OF HISTORY AND ARCHIVES

ORGANIZED MAY 28, 1913

MEMBERS

Hon. Albert E. Sleeper, Governor of Michigan
Claude H. Van Tyne, Ph. D., Ann Arbor, *President*
Clarence M. Burton, M. A., Detroit, *Vice President*
William L. Jenks, M. A., Port Huron
Rt. Rev. Mgr. Frank A. O'Brien, LL.D., Kalamazoo
William L. Clements, B. S., Bay City
Augustus C. Carton, East Tawas

EXECUTIVE OFFICERS

George N. Fuller, Ph. D., *Secretary and Editor*
Floyd B. Streeter, M. A., *Archivist*
Marie B. Ferrey, *Curator*
Percy H. Andrus, *Chief Clerk*

MICHIGAN PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Founded in 1874; Successor to the Historical Society of Michigan founded in 1828 by Lewis Cass and others

TRUSTEES AND OFFICERS

Augustus C. Carton, *President*
Gerrit Van Schelven, Holland, *Vice President*
William L. Jenks
Clarence M. Burton
Rt. Rev. Mgr. Frank A. O'Brien
William L. Clements
Junius E. Beal, Ann Arbor
Clarence E. Bement, Lansing
Alvah L. Sawyer, Menominee
Hon. Woodbridge N. Ferris, Big Rapids
Benjamin F. Davis, Lansing, *Treasurer*
George N. Fuller, *Secretary, ex officio*

Cadw. (St.)

1154
.641A

456321

Digitized by Google

A Magazine of Michigan history for Michigan people, containing new information on interesting subjects by Michigan writers.

Historical news and reports from county and other local societies and from schools and clubs doing work in Michigan history will be received and disseminated to all parts of the State.

As the official organ of the Michigan Historical Commission and the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, the Magazine will contain the important official acts of these bodies and the plans and progress of their work.

Members of the Society are urged to make the Magazine a medium of communication with other members and societies respecting their historical needs, or the needs, plans, and progress of their respective societies.

Due notice and credit will be given for all biographical sketches, reminiscences, letters, diaries, memoranda, account books, photographs, old newspapers, maps and atlases, museum objects and other items of historical interest received.

All communications should be addressed to the Michigan Historical Commission, Lansing, Michigan.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

NUMBER I — JANUARY, 1918

	Page
Historical News, Notes and Comment	5
Michigan Historical Commission: Fifth Annual Report	54
Pioneer Museum: Gifts and Donors	58
WINFIELD LIONEL SCOTT—A Day in France (Poem)	68
EDWARD G. HOLDEN—Carl Schurz in Michigan	69
JOHN C. WRIGHT—Indian Legends of Northern Michigan	81
KAROLENA M. FOX—History of the Equal Suffrage Movement in Michigan	90
JOHN C. VISMARA, D. D.—Coming of the Italians to Detroit	110
HON. EDWIN O. WOOD, LL. D.—Father Marquette at Michilimackinac	125
JOHN P. SANDERSON, D. D.—Congregationalism as a Factor in the Making of Michigan	143
PRESIDENT WM. T. DORAN, LL. D.—Historical Sketch of the University of Detroit	154
FLOYD B. STREETER, M. A.—Factional Character of Early Michigan Politics	165

NUMBER II — APRIL, 1918

Historical News, Notes and Comment	195
Report on the Archives in the Executive Department, State Capitol, Lansing	238
WINFIELD LIONEL SCOTT—In France (Poem)	258
COLONEL ROY C. VANDERCOOK—Michigan in the Great War	259
WILLIAM L. JENKS, M. A.—The Creation of the Territory of Michigan	270
FLOYD B. STREETER, M. A.—History of Prohibition Legislation in Michigan	289

Digitized by Google

Page

WILFRED B. SHAW, B. A.—James Burrill Angell and the University of Michigan 309
JUDGE THOMAS LINEHAN—Early Catholic Missions in Emmet County 324
MRS. EDITH C. MUNGER—The Michigan Audubon Society 330
SUPT. F. E. KING—The Pageant of Escanaba 341
BRAYTON SALTONSTALL—Reminiscences of the Mackinac Country 381
ARCHIBALD BUTTARS—Memories of Northern Michigan 387

NUMBER III JULY, 1918

Historical News, Notes and Comment 399
Report on the Archives in State Department, State Capitol, Lansing 437
DAVID CHALMERS NIMMO—Fourth of July Song 457
HON. AUGUSTUS C. CARTON—What Can a Historical Society Do Now? 459
PROF. R. CLYDE FORD—France in the Great War 465
LANSING LODGE, SONS OF VETERANS—Old Veterans' Stories 484
JOHN T. DANIELLS—The History of Memory Day 491
HON. FRED LANDON—Father Jones and the Jesuit Archives 499
HOWARD H. FITZGERALD—Harry Coleman 504
Michigan Authors' Association: A Symposium 513
REV. WILLIAM GAGNIEUR, S. J.—Indian Place Names in the Upper Peninsula and Their Interpretation .. 526
FLORENCE E. PATON—History of Schools in Portage Township in the Copper Country 556
WILLIAM H. HATHAWAY, M. A.—County Organization in Michigan 573

Digitized by Google

NUMBER IV OCTOBER, 1918

	Page
Historical News, Notes and Comment	633
Reports from the Counties	652
Report of the Daughters of the American Revolution	681
LILIA BARTLETT KING—Michigan, My Michigan	688
PROF. R. M. WENLEY—The University of Michigan in the War	690
MAHLON H. BUELL—Why the United States Is at War	702
MISS ETTA KINCH—Why the United States Is at War	716
JOHN FITZGIBBON—King Alcohol: His Rise, Reign and Fall in Michigan	737
JOHN A. LEMMER—Claude Jean Allouez, S. J. (1613–1689)	781
LANSING LODGE, SONS OF VETERANS—Old Veterans' Stories	795

Digitized by Google

ILLUSTRATIONS

NUMBER I — JANUARY, 1918

	Page
Carl Schurz	69
The Lagorios	112
Louis Schiappacasse	114
San Francesco Church and Rectory, 1898	118
Rev. Francis Beccherini	122
Marquette at St. Ignace	125
University of Detroit, First Building	154
" Building of 1889	158
" Engineering Building, 1915	162

NUMBER II — APRIL, 1918

Michigan Prohibition Vote 1916, Map	307
James Burrill Angell	309, 312, 316, 318
President's House, U. of M. Campus	322
Supt. F. E. King	341
Pageant of Escanaba	356, 360, 368, 378

NUMBER III — JULY, 1918

John T. Daniells	491
Harry Coleman	504
Supt. John A. Doelle	568
Houghton High School	570
County Organization in Michigan	605–629

Digitized by Google

CONTRIBUTORS

MAHLON H. BUELL, A. B., Milford.—Graduate of Hillsdale College, 1918; Member Alpha Kappa Phi Literary Society (Will Carleton's Society); member Glee Club 1915–16, 1916–17, and president in latter year; successively Freshman reporter, Intercollegiate news editor-in-chief of the college weekly paper, *The Collegian;* winner of Junior prize essay contest, 1917, and Martin prize for proficiency in Mathematics, 1918; Principal Grandville High School, 1918; called to the colors.

HON. ARCHIBALD BUTTARS.—President Charlevoix County Bank; member Michigan State Senate representing the 30th Senatorial District, 1881–82, and member and president pro tem representing the 29th Senatorial District, 1883–84; Lieut. Governor of Michigan, 1885–86; lay member of the Methodist Episcopal General Conference at Los Angeles, Cal., 1904; president Old Settlers' Association of the Grand Traverse Region, 1918.

HON. AUGUSTUS C. CARTON, East Tawas.—President Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society; member Michigan Historical Commission; secretary Public Domain Commission; Commissioner of Immigration, State of Michigan; member of Executive Committee, Michigan Audubon Society; State Senator, 28th District, 1907–08; Deputy Commissioner of the State Land Office, 1909–11; Commissioner of the State Land Office, 1913–14; recommended abolishing State Land Office during first term.

JOHN T. DANIELLS, St. Johns.—Pioneer farmer of Clinton County; educated at Olivet College; author of legislation creating Memory Day, Sept. 30 of each year, for specially caring for graves in the cemeteries of Michigan; in 1894 helped to organize the State Association of Farmers' Clubs; one of the earliest agitators for rural free mail delivery in Michigan; holder of numerous public offices, and long president of the Clinton County Pioneer Society.

Digitized by Google

REV. WILLIAM T. DORAN, S. J., Detroit.—President University of Detroit; professor in Marquette University, Milwaukee, 1893–95; student of Philosophy and Theology in St. Louis University, 1897–1904; Dean of the Department of Arts and Sciences, University of Detroit, 1910–15; honorary member of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society.

R. CLYDE FORD, Ypsilanti.—Professor of Modern Languages, State Normal College; author and editor of several books; a native of Michigan, educated at Albion College and in European universities; somewhat of a traveller; lived for a time in the East Indies.

MISS KAROLENA M. FOX, A. B., Grand Rapids.—Graduate of the University of Michigan; instructor in English, Lansing High School.

REV. WILLIAM F. GAGNIEUR, S. J., Sault Ste. Marie.—Indian missionary; Past Professor of Mathematics, Hebrew, Holy Scripture, Church History, and Theology.

WILLIAM H. HATHAWAY, A. M., Milwaukee, Wis.—Head of History Department, Riverside High School, Milwaukee, Wisconsin; Prin. of Schools at Port Hope, Michigan, 1903–06; instructor in history, Central High School, Grand Rapids, 1907–13; A. B. Univ. of Mich., 1907; A. M. Univ. of Wis., 1914.

EDWARD G. HOLDEN, A. B., Tryon, North Carolina.—Graduate of Yale 1860; well-known author, editor, and man of wide public service.

MISS ETTA KINCH, Grindstone City.—Teacher; graduate St. Joseph's Academy, Ferris Institute, Michigan State Normal College; student at Western Reserve University; teacher of history, West Technical High School, Cleveland, Ohio; now teacher in Grindstone City Schools, Michigan.

FRED ERWIN KING, Escanaba.—Teacher; Supt. City Schools, Centerville, Iowa, 1895–1903; Supt. of Schools at Ames, Iowa, 1903–1910; Supt. of Schools at Escanaba, Mich., since 1910; at sundry times member Iowa State Educational Council, president Southeastern Iowa Teachers' Association,

Digitized by Google

and president Upper Peninsula Education Association, Michigan.

MRS. LILIA BARTLETT KING, Marquette.—Regent Marquette Chapter, D. A. R., and of State Committee to Prevent Desecration of the Flag.

FRED LANDON, A. B., London, Ont.—City Librarian; graduate Western University, London, Ont., 1906; engaged in newspaper work 1906–16; member Parliamentary Press Gallery at Ottawa, 1907–08, 1912–14; lecturer in American history at Western University, London, Ont.; president London and Middlesex Historical Society, 1918.

THOMAS LINEHAN, Harbor Springs.—A resident of Emmet County since 1879; honored with numerous offices of public trust in his county and village; local representative of The National Fire Insurance Company of Hartford, Conn.

MRS. EDITH C. MUNGER, Hart.—President Michigan Audubon Society; chairman numerous committees of public and social service; woman member of Oceana County War Board; devoted worker for the conservation of wild life in Michigan.

DAVID CHALMERS NIMMO, Detroit.—Expert machinist, Dodge Auto plant; graduate McMaster University, Toronto, 1895; member Michigan Authors' Association; author of numerous poems which have appeared in the Detroit press.

BRAYTON SALTONSTALL, Charlevoix.—Pioneer of Chicago; descendant of John Winthrop, first Governor of Massachusetts; studied in Paris; in public service, London, England; member of the Chicago Stock Exchange 1895–1905; president Charlevoix Historical Society.

REV. JOHN P. SANDERSON, D. D., Chicago, Ill.—Field Secretary of the Congregational Church Building Society; sometime pastor of Congregational churches at Clio and Kalamazoo, Michigan; registrar and treasurer of the Michigan Congregational Conference, 1883–1908; secretary of the Michigan State Board of Corrections and Charities, 1908–09.

WINFIELD LIONEL SCOTT, Detroit.—Author, poet, artist; president Michigan Authors' Association, 1917–18; Poet

Digitized by Google

Laureate M. A. A.; an earnest student who has travelled extensively.

WILFRED B. SHAW, A. B., Ann Arbor.—Secretary Alumni Association, University of Michigan; editor University of Michigan *Alumnus*, 1904–18; secretary National Association of Alumni Secretaries, 1913–15, and president of same 1916; president Ann Arbor Art Association; secretary Ann Arbor University Club; commodity expert U. S. Shipping Board, 1918; at date, Assistant District Educational Director, War Department Committee on Education and Special Training (S. A. T. C.), with headquarters at San Francisco.

REV. JOHN C. VISMERA, M. A., D. D., Kalamazoo.—Graduate University of Detroit, 1905; M. A. '13; D. D. Pontifical Gregorian University, Rome, Italy; translator of *History of Catholic Church*, by Fidelis Savio, S. J.

COL. ROY C. VANDERCOOK, Lansing.—Well-known newspaper man; Adjutant General of Michigan, 1911–1915; secretary of War Preparedness Board, 1917 to date.

ROBERT MARK WENLEY, D. Sc., D. Phil., Litt. D., Ann Arbor. —Head of the Department of Philosophy in the University of Michigan since 1896; Fellow and Lecturer of the University of Glasgow (1885–96); Dean of the Faculty of Arts in Queen Margaret College, Glasgow (1891–4); secretary of the Glasgow University Extension Board (1889–96); M. A. (First Class and University Medallist in Philosophy, Glasgow, 1884); D. Sc. (Edinburgh, 1891); D. Phil. (Glasgow, 1895); F. R. S. (Edinburgh, 1896); Hon. LL. D. (Glasgow, 1901); Hon. Litt. D. (Hobart, N. Y., 1908); Hon. D. C. L. (University of the South, 1914); member of the Aristotelian Society of London (1896); Lecturer to the Philosophical Union of the University of California (1901–2); Baldwin Lecturer (1908–9); Assembly Lecturer in the University of Oregon (1916); president of the Research Club of the University of Michigan (1908–9); president of the Michigan Alpha Chapter of Phi B. K. (1913–14); Contributing Editor *Dictionary of Philosophy and Psychology*, and *Encyclopaedia of*

Digitized by Google

Religion and Ethics; author of numerous articles, reviews and books.

JOHN COUCHOIS WRIGHT, Harbor Spirngs.—Author of *Northern Breezes* (a book of poems), and *The Crooked Tree* (Indian legends and traditions); poet, writer, lecturer; topics: Michigan history, romance, legendary lore and American antiquity.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

VOLUME II, NO. 1, JANUARY, 1918

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Bag D.R.

MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

VOL. II, No. 1 JANUARY, 1918 WHOLE No. 3

HISTORICAL NEWS, NOTES AND COMMENT

GREETINGS for the New Year! So many congratulatory letters have come in with good cheer that we must beg to thank friends and subscribers collectively. It is said that prophecy is a dangerous thing. But the Magazine under the inspiration of this encouragement indulges the belief that it may soon become entirely self-supporting, the subscription rate continuing at the low price of $1 payable to the State of Michigan.

Volume II begins with this number, in order that each volume may correspond with the calendar year. Numbers 1 and 2 of Vol. I have been in the nature of a prospectus. These numbers have been distributed widely regardless of subscriptions, and all subscriptions received to date will begin with this number and close with the October number, the last of Vol. II.

The four numbers of each annual volume of the Magazine will comprise six or seven hundred pages, the same number as formerly contained in a volume of the *Collections*, for which the statutory price of $1 was charged. The contents will be of the same nature, barring documents, and will give the historical news of the State while it is still news.

Arrangements will possibly be made later by which subscription to the Magazine will carry with it membership in the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, so that upon receipt of subscription a certificate of membership may be

Digitized by Google

issued to the subscriber which will entitle same thereafter to all literature, announcements, and privileges accorded to members. Such action may be taken at the annual May meeting of the Society this year, and if so, will include old subscribers as well as new.

TO HISTORY TEACHERS and to historical workers generally who have to remain at home in this great crisis of the national life, the question comes, with telling force, "What can I do now?" The question is well put in an excellent historical publication (*The History Teacher's Magazine*):

"What can I do? I have been trained in normal school, college, and graduate school in certain habits of research; I have acquired what I believe to be satisfactory pedagogical methods; I have stored my mind and notebooks with innumerable facts concerning the history of the past; I may even have developed a power of generalization and comparison which at times I call a philosophy of history. But can I make any of these expertnesses count for my country in the present struggle? They seem so impractical, so far removed from the battlefield conflicts that I am tempted to throw them all over and enter a munitions factory. I, who am willing to give my goods, my blood, and my life to the country—must I go on recounting these tales of forgotten days? What can I do?" And the reply is there given:

The history teacher can effectively serve the country through the daily class-room work. This will require careful thought, much work in rearrangement of material and great care in the presentation of the facts.

There is one sacrifice no historian must make. He must

Digitized by Google

not distort or pervert the facts of history to suit the present struggle. He must "see things as they really were and are." This is not easy at any time; it is peculiarly difficult at such a time as this when to many people a slight distortion of facts may even seem a patriotic duty. Aggressive sovereigns like Louis XIV and Frederick the Great were usually able to find loyal subjects who could produce legal and historical arguments in support of policies already put into effect by their armies in the field. Similar things have happened in the present war, and since history teachers are not less human than their fellow-citizens we must all of us be on our guard against this mistaken view of patriotic duty. In the long run loyalty to the country, as well as loyalty to history, are best served by looking the facts squarely in the face.

Yet in the class-room, as is pointed out in the Bulletin of the United States Bureau of Education, entitled, "History and the Great War: Opportunities for the History Teacher," the conscientious teacher can do much. (1) By training pupils in the "historical conception of their membership in a *continuing* community, more important than their own individual fortunes;" (2) by supplying a "larger and truer perspective" in movements of depression or of easy-going optimism; (3) by teaching the financial and economic experiences of other wars; (4) by training pupils and their parents to take an intelligent part in the decision of public questions, particularly by laying a foundation for sensible action in international relations, in an understanding of other nations; and (5) thus prepare citizens generally to accept the responsibility for a permanent "establishment of a better international order, a real society of nations."

What facts of history should be dwelt upon in order to

Digitized by Google

attain these results? How can these results be obtained in a course in ancient or medieval history? These questions are answered in general terms in the Bulletin mentioned above.

It is the earnest hope of all the scholars co-operating in this work that history teaching in America may retain in the present crisis not only its scholastic standards, but also that it will draw from the past examples which will be of enduring social value.

What can history teachers do now?

You can help the community realize what history should mean to it.

You can confute those who by selecting a few historic facts seek to establish some simple cure-all for humanity.

You can confute those who urge that mankind can wipe the past off the slate and lay new foundations for civilization.

You can encourage the sane use of experience in discussions of public questions.

You can help people understand what democracy is by pointing out the common principle in the ideas of Plato, Cromwell, Rousseau, Jefferson, Jackson and Washington.

You can help people understand what German autocracy has in common with the autocracy of the Grand Mogul.

You can help people understand that democracy is not inconsistent with law and efficient government.

You can help people understand that failure of the past to make the world safe for democracy does not mean that it can not be made safe in the future.

You can so teach your students that they will acquire "historical mindedness" and realize the connection of the past with the present.

Digitized by Google

You can not do these things unless you inform yourself, and think over your information.

You can help yourself by reading the following:—1 "History and the Great War," bulletin of the Bureau of Education, Washington, D. C.—2 A series of articles published throughout the year in *The History Teacher's Magazine.*

You can obtain aid and advice by writing to:

1. The National Board for Historical Service, 1133 Woodward Building, Washington, D. C.
2. United States Bureau of Education, Division of Civic Education, Washington, D. C.
3. Committee on Public Information, Division of Educational Cooperation, 10 Jackson Place, Washington, D. C.
4. The Committee on Patriotism through Education, of the National Security League, 31 Pine Street, New York City.
5. Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, 2 Jackson Place, Washington, D. C.
6. The National Committee on Patriotic and Defense Societies, Southern Building, Washington, D. C.
7. The World Peace Foundation, 40 Mount Vernon St., Boston, Mass.
8. American Association for International Conciliation, 407 West 117th Street, New York City.
9. The American Society for Judicial Settlement of International Disputes, Baltimore, Md.

Digitized by Google

THE NATIONAL BOARD FOR HISTORICAL SERVICE formed April 20, 1917, has made in the November *History Teacher's Magazine* (McKinley Publishing Co., Philadelphia, Pa.) the following important announcement of its work:

The Board has carried on an extensive correspondence throughout the country, seeking by this means to direct historical activity into lines of national service. It has furnished advice concerning research work, university courses, public lectures, newspaper and magazine articles, the collection and filing of records of the present war, and other topics. It has had prepared bibliographies of the war such as those which were published in *The History Teacher's Magazine* for June, 1917, and that which will shortly be issued by the Committee on Public Information.

Active cooperation has been maintained between the Board and the Committee on Public Information. The Board has aided the Committee by making historical researches and by gathering material suitable for publication by the Committee. Mr. W. G. Leland has prepared a pamphlet on the collecting of material respecting the war and its treatment by libraries and historical societies.

Early in its work the Board undertook joint work with the United States Bureau of Education which resulted in the decision by the Bureau to publish a pamphlet of suggestions to history teachers. This plan was expanded further to include a series of papers to appear in *The History Teacher's Magazine* from September, 1917, to June, 1918. The educational work was placed in the hands of four committees, each of which has considered what reorganization of historical material should be made in the usual high school subjects of Ancient, European, English and American history. The gen-

Digitized by Google

eral chairman of the educational workers is Professor E. B. Greene, of the University of Illinois.

The Board has encouraged the establishment of prizes for distribution among teachers in public high and elementary schools, and by the public spirit of donors it has announced competitions in fourteen States. The prizes are offered for the best essay, primarily historical in character, on the subject, "Why the United States is at War." In each State, provision has been made for a first prize for high school teachers of $75, and other prizes of $30, $20, $15 and $10; and for a first prize of $75 for elementary school teachers and additional prizes of $25 and $10 (five of the latter). Further information concerning the competitions can be obtained from the Secretary of the Board, Mr. W. G. Leland, 1133 Woodward Building, Washington, D. C.

Other activities of the Board have included the preparation by Prof. S. B. Harding, of a syllabus for lectures and reading courses on the causes of the war; the reprinting of articles bearing on the war; the supplying of historical material on the war to magazines; and arrangements for issuing sample copies of *The History Teacher's Magazine* and for trial four-months' subscriptions at reduced rates.

The work of the Board has been carried on solely by the voluntary cooperation of the historical scholars concerned. The Board has paid no salaries, and the members not habitually residing in Washington have paid their own expenses while staying there. The spirit of service among historians is well shown by their willingness to share in the work of the Board not only in Washington but throughout the country.

By encouraging a scientific attitude toward the questions involved in the war; by directing teachers to trustworthy

Digitized by Google

sources of information; by pointing out how history courses should be reconstructed in the light of the war; by furnishing historical data to public officials; by furthering popular but accurate statements on the causes of the war,—by these activities the creation of the Board has been fully justified.

WAR HISTORY DATA for future use by historians of Michigan may be secured now with comparative ease.—Think for a moment what we would give if we could have the so-called "commonplace" historical materials of the American Revolution, such as soldiers' letters, their diaries, letters from home, memoranda, programs and reports of public and private functions to aid the cause, etc., or if we could have similar materials of Michigan soldiers and families and communities of the Civil War. People then living did not collect them and these precious memorials have perished, for they could not save themselves. Probably people felt then much as many do now about contemporary history, that it is commonplace and that the future is far away and will not care about these things; but the year 2018 is not as far from us as 1776.

Let us either preserve these historical materials somewhere locally, in one collection, under public auspices of some kind,—in the Public Library, the Court House, or other convenient depository,—or send them to the Historical Commission or to the State Library at Lansing.

Michigan is to play no inconsiderable part in the Great War. How considerable, is the question in which the historian will be interested. He will not be specially interested in these papers as relics, they will be his voices; they must tell him

Digitized by Google

of the state of mind of the people in this great crisis, how different sections and classes of the people felt about the war, what they did to help or hinder, and the reaction of the war upon the economic, industrial, social, political, educational and religious life of the commonwealth.

Other States are doing their "bit" in this line, and Michigan must look well to her laurels. In North Carolina, the State Council of Defense has appointed a Historical Committee for this work. Their outline for collecting is sufficiently noteworthy to reproduce here. It is as follows:

1. Official Documents

Under this head come (a) municipal ordinances relating to the war; (b) proclamations and other public papers of the Governor, sheriffs, mayors, and other public officials; (c) documents issued by State or local boards of food conservation, and other public boards and commissions growing out of the war or relating to the war; (d) posters (recruiting for army and navy, for Liberty Loan, Red Cross, etc.).

2. Semi-official Documents

These include resolutions, reports, and activities of (a) public meetings, (b) social, labor, professional, charitable, religious organizations; (c) Red Cross chapters; (d) special committees on Liberty Loan, Y. M. C. A. Fund, Red Cross Fund, etc. As far as possible, the names of persons taking active part in such work should be preserved as well as the results of their work.

Digitized by Google

3. Public-Service Documents

These include announcements, notices, orders, etc., relating to the war of (a) transportation companies and other public-service corporations; (b) mills, factories, mining companies, and other industrial corporations.

4. Educational Material

Such as documents, records, reports, etc., showing effect of the war on schools and colleges as regards (a) attendance; (b) courses of study; (c) teachers; (d) tuition and fees; (e) military training, etc.

5. Economic Material

Includes (a) price lists; (b) quotations from local markets; (c) advertisements showing the effect of a state of war on economic conditions; (d) bank statements; (e) financial statements of corporations.

6. Propaganda Material

This includes circulars, letters, advertisements, resolutions, etc., designed to influence public opinion as to (a) preparedness; (b) conscription; (c) registration under the selective draft law; (d) American participation in the war; (e) peace terms; (f) any other questions relating to the war.

7. Pictorial Material

Photographs of (a) local events; (b) bodies of troops; (c) individual soldiers; (d) military camps, etc.

Digitized by Google

8. Military Material

(a) Names, addresses, and records of State soldiers and sailors; (b) members of officers' training camps; (c) lists of men enrolled under the selective draft law; (d) those selected; (e) organizations of the National Guard; (f) efforts of local communities to aid enlistments; (g) any matter relating to State soldiers, collectively or individually.

9. Manuscript Material

Under this head come (a) letters from soldiers in camp or at the front; (b) diaries; (c) sermons and public addresses relating to the war.

10. Woman's Work

The women of the State are engaged in many forms of patriotic service—(a) Red Cross work; (b) nursing; (c) knitting for soldiers and sailors; (d) gardening, etc. Records of their activities should be carefully preserved.

11. Newspaper Clippings

Clip from local papers any articles bearing on any of the phases of the war mentioned above. Be certain to mark in some way on every clipping the name and date of the paper from which it is taken.

THE INITIAL NUMBERS of *Service*, the official organ of the Michigan War Preparedness Board, have been received. It would be difficult to find anywhere more essential and timely reading than is contained in these pages on Michigan in the War. The continuation of the paper throughout the War will

Digitized by Google

be not only of great present value but of untold service to the future historians of Michigan.

ATTENTION OF ALUMNI SECRETARIES of the schools and colleges of Michigan is called to the example of the University of Michigan and of the Michigan Agricultural College which are making an effort to obtain records of all men who have attended these institutions and are now in any branch of the war service of the United States. It is proposed to publish after the War a complete history of the service performed by each man. In this way the institutions will have a complete record of the part they have played in the great cause for liberty.

A similar example is set by the Lansing High School Alumni Association under the direction of Prin. B. F. Brown. The list of graduates and former students, including both men and women, who have entered any branch of service of the World War is expected to reach several hundred names and is to be framed and hung in the entrance corridor of the High School building.

In like manner the attention of city clerks may be called to the example of City Clerk J. A. Parsons of Lansing who is employing assistants to aid in compiling a list of all Lansing men in the military service of the Union. The National Government does not keep a record by cities. The only way to get the information therefore is through parents and relatives of the men serving from a given city. The cooperation of the people will be given readily and every city and community should thus gather and cherish a record of its soldier boys for the inspiration of posterity.

Digitized by Google

"WHY THE UNITED STATES IS AT WAR," is the subject of an historical contest arranged by the Michigan Historical Commission at a meeting held Nov. 14, 1917. The conditions of the contest as there formulated are as follows:

Time: December 1, 1917, to April 30, 1918.

Subject: "Why the United States is at War."

Management: The Michigan Historical Commission has set aside the sum of $200 to be expended in four prizes of $50 each, to four groups of competitors in educational institutions of Michigan, for the best essays on "Why the United States is at War."

Eligibility: Group I.—Teachers in Public High and Elementary Schools.

Group II.—Students in Normal College and Normal Schools.

Group III.—Students in the University of Michigan, the Michigan Agricultural College, the Michigan College of Mines, and the University of Detroit.

Group IV.—All other Michigan Colleges and Schools not included in Groups I-III.

Committee on Prizes: President University of Michigan
Dr. Harry B. Hutchins, Ann Arbor.
President Michigan Agricultural College
Dr. Frank S. Kedzie, East Lansing.
President Michigan College of Mines
Dr. Fred W. McNair, Houghton.
President State Normal College
Dr. Charles McKenny, Ypsilanti.

Digitized by Google

Supt. of Public Instruction
Hon. Fred L. Keeler, Lansing.
Dean of Nazareth Academy
Rt. Rev. Mgr. F. A. O'Brien, LL.D., Kalamazoo.
President Michigan Historical Commission
Prof. Claude H. Van Tyne, Ann Arbor, Chairman.

Conditions of the Contest:

The method of treatment must be primarily historical. The essays should bring to bear upon the subject all of the essential facts of recent or remote history relative thereto.

The text must be amply fortified with references for all important statements, and be accompanied with a bibliography of the works consulted.

As competitors may not have equally easy access to large libraries, stress will be laid, in awarding the prizes, upon the degree of thoroughness and intelligence with which the available sources are used.

The essay must be the competitor's own work, accurate as to facts, dates and citations, and well written.

It is suggested to teachers that the essays written by the students be given credit in the English and history work where possible.

In order to enter this contest, application must reach the Secretary of the Michigan His-

Digitized by Google

torical Commission, Lansing, Michigan, on or before February 1, 1918. The Secretary will assign to each applicant a number, which will be sealed at the office of the Commission until after the contest. Essays should be signed only with number.

All essays must be typed. They should not contain more than 4000 words.

Essays must reach the Secretary of the Michigan Historical Commission, Lansing, Michigan, on or before April 30, 1918. Announcement of the winners will be made as soon thereafter as possible.

AMONG THE SEVERAL PATROITIC SECIETIES of Michigan none are doing a finer historical service for the State than the "Society of Colonial Wars in Michigan," for which body the Secretary, Mr. Williams Cooper Harris, of Detroit, has furnished on request the following notes respecting its personnel, organization and purposes.

According to Mr. Harris, the National Society of Colonial Wars was first organized in New York City, August 18, 1892. In 1893, the New York Society having chartered similar organizations in Pennsylvania, Maryland, Massachusetts, Connecticut and the District of Columbia, delegates from all these societies met in New York City on May 9 and 10, and there formed the General Society of Colonial Wars.

The object and purposes of the Society are stated in the Preamble of its Constitution, as follows:

"WHEREAS, It is desirable that there should be ade-

Digitized by Google

quate celebrations commemorative of the events of Colonial History, happening from the settlement of Jamestown, Va., May 13, 1607, to the Battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775;

THEREFORE, The Society of Colonial Wars has been instituted to perpetuate the memory of those events, and of the men who, in military, naval, and civil positions of high trust and responsibility, by their acts or counsel, assisted in the establishment, defense, and preservation of the American Colonies, and were in truth founders of this nation. With this end in view, it seeks to collect and preserve manuscripts, rolls, relics, and records; to provide suitable commemorations or memorials relating to the American Colonial period, and to inspire in its members the fraternal and patriotic spirit of their forefathers, and in the community, respect and reverence for those whose public services made our freedom and unity possible."

Membership is limited to men over twenty-one years of age, who, in addition to possessing the required personal qualities, are lineally descended in the male or female line from an ancestor:

(1) Who served as a military or naval officer, or as a soldier, sailor, or marine, or as a privateersman, under authority of the Colonies which afterward formed the United States, or in the forces of Great Britain which participated with those of the said Colonies in any wars in which the said Colonies were engaged, or in which they enrolled men, from the settlement of Jamestown, May 13, 1607, to the battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775; or

Digitized by Google

(2) Who held office in any of the Colonies between the dates above mentioned, either as

(a) Director-General, Vice-Director-General, or member of the Council, or legislative body in the Colony of New Netherlands;

(b) Governor, Lieutenant or Deputy Governor, Lord Proprietor, member of the King's or Governor's Council or legislative body in the Colonies of New York, New Jersey, Virginia, Pennsylvania and Delaware;

(c) Lord Proprietor, Governor, Deputy Governor, or member of the Council, or of the legislative body in Maryland and the Carolinas;

(d) Governor, Deputy Governor, Governor's Assistant, or Commissioner to the United Colonies of New England, or member of the Council, body of Assistants, or legislative body in any of the New England Colonies.

The "Society of Colonial Wars in the State of Michigan" was organized November 3, 1897, at Detroit, the Charter members being Theodore H. Eaton, Henry W. Skinner, Frederick T. Sibley, John N. Bagley, Charles A. Du Charme, Rev. William Prall, Benjamin H. Scranton, Edward L. Woodruff, Sidney T. Miller.

Only one regular meeting is held each year, on the anniversary of the attack of Pontiac, the Ottawa Indian Chief, upon the garrison at Detroit, May 7, 1763. At this time the members assemble at the Detroit Club, where the business of the organization is transacted and an election of officers held, after which occurs the Annual Dinner, followed by addresses, usually of an historical character.

Digitized by Google

Ninety-three men have been elected to membership in this Society, and the membership at the present time is fifty-seven. Most of them are residents of Michigan, although members moving away usually retain their membership in the Society.

Many addresses by students of American History have been given at the meetings of this society, such as:

"Pioneers and Patriots," by Prof. Edwin Earle Sparks of the University of Chicago.

"John Askin, Tory."

"Records of the Northwest Territory in British Archives," and "Amusements in Detroit in Colonial Days," by Mr. Clarence M. Burton, the Historiographer of Detroit.

"The Paul Revere of the West," by Mr. Joseph F. Tuttle, of Denver.

"Lord Dunmore's War," by Dr. Reuben Gold Thwaites, late Secretary of the Wisconsin Historical Society.

"The Message of the Mound Builders to the Twentieth Century," by Prof. Archer Butler Hulbert, of Marietta College, who is also Archivist of the Harvard Commission on Western History.

"The Personal Side of American Diplomacy during the Revolutionary War," by Prof. Claude Halstead Van Tyne, of the University of Michigan.

"Changing America," by Prof. Robert Mark Wenley, of the University of Michigan.

"Stevens T. Mason and His Time," by the Hon. Lawton T. Hemans, late President of the Michigan Historical Commission.

A number of these addresses have been published by the society through cooperation with Mr. Clarence M. Burton.

Digitized by Google

There has also been published the following pamphlets, either prepared or edited by Mr. Burton:

Journal of Pontiac's Conspiracy, 1763.

Journal of J. L., of Quebec, Merchant.

LaSalle and the Griffon.

The present officers of the Society are:

Governor—William Post Holliday.

Deputy-Governor—Truman Handy Newberry.

Secretary—Williams Cooper Harris.

Treasurer—Alonzo Prentiss Ewing.

Registrar and Historian—Clarence Monroe Burton.

Gentlemen of the Council:

William Muir Fink.

Enoch Bancker.

Mark Burnham Stevens.

Merton Elmer Farr.

Charles Moore.

John Herbert Avery.

Gustavus Dibrell Pope.

Berrien Clark Eaton.

James Thayer McMillan.

Deputy-Governor General for Michigan:

Allen Lysander Colton.

THE WARD SCHOOL PRINCIPALS' SECTION of the State Teachers' Association, (Grand Rapids, Nov. 2, 1917), gave commendable attention to Michigan history, the general theme being the nature and amount of Michigan history that should be given in the grades.

Highland Park's new history outline was presented by Prin. E. J. Quackenbush of the Angell High School, Highland Park.

Digitized by Google

Supt. F. E. King, of Escanaba, described Escanaba's pageant and correlated history work.

Prof. Carl E. Pray, of the Michigan State Normal College, Ypsilanti, discussed the suitability of Michigan history for grade work.

"State Legends and Their Use," was the subject of a talk by Prof. Claude S. Larzelere, of the Central State Normal School, Mt. Pleasant.

Mrs. M. B. Ferrey, of the Michigan Historical Commission, Lansing, talked on the sources of Michigan historical material.

"State History in the Primary Grades," was treated by Minetta Warren, of the Manual Training School, Detroit, and "State History in the Grammar Grades," by Mary Hardin, of the South High School, Grand Rapids.

The session was followed by a teachers' meeting of those most interested in Normal School history work, as a result of which there will be organized an historical society of the Michigan Normal Schools for encouraging the study and teaching of Michigan History. The Society will be a general organization to include not only the four Normal Schools but the County Normals. Each school will have its branch or chapter of the Society but will be related to all others through mutual interest in studying the State's history. President Cody was first to call attention to this need, in his address at the Annual Meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society in May, 1917, printed in last October's number of the Magazine.

ONE OF THE MOST INTERESTING AND PRACTICAL TALKS at the Michigan State Teachers' Association (Grand Rapids, Nov. 1 and 2) was that given by Supt. F. E. King of the

Digitized by Google

Escanaba Public Schools on the recent Pageant presented by school children of Escanaba. Prof. King is preparing the address in manuscript for the April number of the Magazine.

Whether or not the historical pageant is a strictly orthodox method of teaching history, it is effective and it appears to have come to stay. Certainly, moving scenes of costumed people, if historically accurate and artistically presented afford a means of impressing history upon large groups of people to whom otherwise it would remain a sealed book. One of the distinctive social as well as educational values of the pageant is that nearly everyone in the community can take a part in it, at least every family be touched in some of its members. Men, women and children can learn much of their community history in the process of getting ready for the pageant, and this cheerful public cooperation in the interest of visualizing history is a valuable stimulus to the more arduous and prosaic work of the local historical society. The dignity of the pageant is attested by the use made of it in the highest circles, in England and on the continent, as well as in our eastern cities. It has been used to visualize the history of the English Church, on the grounds of the palace of the Bishop of London, members of the highest clergy taking part in the pageant. English cities have used it frequently in celebrating anniversaries of important events in their history. By its means the lessons of history may be planted not only pleasantly but permanently.

A common form of the pageant is the procession, adapted to large audiences on special occasions, as in large cities at celebrations, in which costumed citizens on floats or horseback move through the streets between crowds lining either side of the way. Its weakness lies in that it can not be rehearsed for

Digitized by Google

presentation, that it passes but once before the audience and that the ensemble is devoid of the effects obtainable by grouping and speech. The "procession" is the type which was exemplified at Pontiac in the celebration of the centenary of the settlement of Oakland County (*Michigan History Magazine*, July, 1917, pp. 69-72).

A more effective form of the pageant is that which was presented under Mr. King's direction at Escanaba, the type best adapted to a limited audience, dramatization. In this type, the several acts or episodes are presented in some suitable spot with grass, foliage and pretty water surfaces at hand adapted to historical requirements, and with imaginative details, music, dancing, etc., suited to the spirit of the historical scenes or to the period. If needed, a grandstand can be built for spectators and the performance can be repeated to accommodate several audiences. An out-of-doors at-night performance can be very prettily given with lanterns or searchlights.

The scenes to be presented of course need to be carefully selected, and should be prepared under adequate historical and artistic supervision. Those chosen at Escanaba were:

Prologue: Herald, Father time, Messengers and hidden chorus aided by band

1st episode: Earliest times (dealing with the Indians)

2d episode: Missionaries (time 1673)

3d episode: Early settlers (tableaux of schools and pioneers)

4th episode: Coming of nationalities, (melting pot, spirits, and thirteen nations)

5th episode: All Americanized (Ordinance of 1787)

Digitized by Google

The text of the Escanaba pageant was written jointly by seven High School girls, under the joint direction of the English and History departments. It has been published and can be supplied to teachers by Supt. King as long as the edition lasts.

MISS MINETTA L. WARREN at our request has kindly sent us her paper on "Michigan History in the Primary Grades" read at the M. S. T. A., Grand Rapids, Nov. 2, 1917, the essential points of which are grouped under four heads:

1. The teacher's aim in presenting history to primary pupils
2. The teacher's preparation for her work
3. The teacher's method of presentation
4. The material selected

The teacher should aim first to add to the child's experience, —his *mental* experience,—through the knowledge of the story together with the human traits which it sets forth and the appeal which it makes to the imagination, and secondly to enlarge the child's vocabulary through her own good telling of the story and the response which it calls forth from him. There are other aims which might be stated, but these two are the most important ones.

What should be the teacher's preparation for her work? How shall she tell her story well? She must know her subject-matter thoroughly,—of course, that goes without saying,—and She must have her material well organized; but aside from these purely technical requisities, the first requisite in the teaching of history to young children is the genuine interest of the teacher herself in the particular bit of history she is

Digitized by Google

about to teach and her strong desire to tell the story and to tell it well. The fire of interest *in the teacher* rarely fails to kindle a kindred spark in the minds of the pupils; and having that, it matters not so much just how she conducts her lesson or what method she uses. That will vary anyway at different stages of the work as she stresses this in one story and something else in another.

Having told the story well (and if the teacher is not a good story-teller she should practice until she becomes one), she should be able to *question* well. She should find out through her questioning what the pupil knows of the history story and what he does not know. She should so lead him by means of questions which are as well organized as the subject-matter itself, that he may learn to think connectedly in his small way and arrive at a reasonable conclusion.

A hint as to method is found in the two words "story" and "history," which are much alike in their derivation. In olden times when story-tellers and troubadours were the only historians, traveling from camp to fireside and from the market-place to the palace, or wherever there were people to listen, the mythical deeds of the gods were interwoven with the actual deeds of real heroes, and all there was of history was partly truth and partly fiction,—but it was all put into story form with events gathered about some central heroic figure.

Children of the present day, scarcely more child-like in their willingness to believe all of the story that is told them than were the grown-ups of olden times, listen with unbroken attention to the tales told them, whether true history or fiction; so it seems reasonable to conclude that the teacher may present most of the history in story form, well told, to the first three grades at least. If stories can be easily dramatized,

Digitized by Google

they are more quickly and enjoyably learned that way. In the first two grades she may ignore the sequence of time and place; but in the third grade, where pupils begin to read story books and study geography, she may begin to attend to locality and time in a small way and to correlate the history very closely with the geography work and to some extent with the work in English.

As to the selection of material, much that is used in the first two grades, such as Indian stories, while they are State history they are the history of any State, and with the work upon special days and certain local events of lesser moment they comprise all of the history that is presented in these grades; but with the third grade, especially with its latter half, a new opportunity arises. She should not feed the children upon the dry bones of history but upon living food, and there is plenty of it in the history of Michigan and much that appeals to the imagination.

For instance, contrast the great metropolis of our State with the same spot two hundred and fifty or more years ago. Imagine a great forest stretching its unbroken length for hundreds of miles, traversed by the missionary and the fur trader, peopled only by the Red Man and abounding in various animal-kind whose rich furs were causing both France and England to cast envious eyes upon it. The tales carried by the travelers passing up and down the great lakes and rivers,—for there had been settlements made at Mackinac and vicinity many years before,—told of other wealth, of the advantage of location, of a great river teeming with fish, and one day, about fifty years after the Pilgrims settled at Plymouth, came two French priests to explore, and here we have the legend of "The Manitou of Belle Isle." Finally into

Digitized by Google

this scene of quiet peace and plenty steps the rather pompous but picturesque figure of Antoine de la Mothe Cadillac, and Detroit began her existence.

At this point the teacher has an opportunity to compare and contrast the settlements at Detroit and Plymouth, the different motives that actuated their founders, the hardships that were so similar, the people, and their pleasures that were so different.

After about sixty years came the English, and the British flag floated over the little village for thirty-six years; and finally came the Americans when the first "Stars and Stripes" that ever waved in Michigan was unfurled over the fort. She has another story in "The Fire of 1805," which in a few hours undid the work of a hundred years. She has an excellent opportunity at this time to contrast the present method of fighting fires with the one in use in 1805; also to contrast Detroit's water system now with the one of that time which consisted of the town pump. Here, a little later, she has the story of "Hull's Surrender," with the final recovery of the fort by the Americans the next year; and so, selecting some of the big events that helped in the making of Detroit and Michigan and piecing them together with an occasional interesting bit of lesser importance, she may easily find enough of State history to whet the mental appetite of the primary pupil and cause him to desire more; and in this way she may prepare him for American history work in the higher grades, and for world history in the High School; and so on up, to a full appreciation of the cost of his inheritance, and the meaning of this great world struggle for democracy that we are now engaged in.

Digitized by Google

MR. WINFIELD LIONEL SCOTT, President of the Michigan Authors' Association, at our request has kindly submitted the following data respecting the history of the Association:

The Michigan Authors' Association was organized in June, 1910, with forty charter members. Its founder was E. Cora DePuy. Its membership numbered seventy the first year. Its first President was Frederick S. Isham.

Jennie O. Starkey, as First Vice-President, occupied the chair during Mr. Isham's stay in Hong Kong, China. Mr. Isham was re-elected for a second term in 1911, with Dr. Charles L. Arnold as First Vice-President, who presided during Mr. Isham's continued absence abroad. For the four subsequent years Dr. C. L. Arnold was President, 1912-15 inclusive.

In 1916 Hon. Chase S. Osborn was elected President, with Winfield Lionel Scott as First Vice-President, who presided during the absence of Mr. Osborn. In 1917 Winfield Lionel Scott was elected President, with Jennie O. Starkey as First Vice-President.

A revised constitution and by-laws have been accepted whereby terms of office are held only for one year and no member is eligible to succeed himself in any office, thereby according to each member the privilege of sharing honors and duties as well. No member residing outside the city of Detroit is eligible to any office except that of Director. All officers are elected by ballot at the annual meeting, to continue in office for one year or until the next annual election.

Each year there has been an annual banquet, with a fine program, in which members have taken a part together with able speakers and literary and musical talent of Detroit and surrounding towns.

Digitized by Google

At first, meetings were held semi-monthly, usually at the Hotel Cadillac; or the members were entertained at the home of some of its number. At present, meetings are held on the second Thursday of each month in the Flemish Room, Hotel Cadillac. At each meeting, beside business transactions, a fine literary program is provided. A paper from some member of the Association or by outside talent is followed by a discussion of the paper, or a round-table.

Among the many pleasant events of the Association was a reception to Will Levington Comfort, held at the Hotel Cadillac shortly after the appearance of his book, "Routledge Rides Alone." Some three hundred guests were present.

At the first annual convention and banquet Michigan's Governor, Chase S. Osborn, and Will Carleton, her favorite poet, were guests of honor.

Another pleasing event was a birthday party and reception to the silver-haired poetess, Sara Sutter Wolverton, on her eighty-ninth birthday. Each member who attended carried roses to her and presented her with a copy of their work. The parlor in which she received was a bower of roses. Mrs. Wolverton entered into rest in her ninety-third year. She was the author of two volumes of verse, "Primroses" and "The Crown of Motherhood." In speaking of this event Mrs. Wolverton said, "All my life I have longed for the companionship of gifted minds; this was denied me, but now has come the crowning glory and honor of life."

During the season of 1915, a "short story, poem and sonnet" contest was held for all Michigan writers by the Detroit *News-Tribune*, under the auspices of the Michigan Authors' Association. The prizes were $100, $50 and $25, for the three best stories; $50 and $25 for best poems, and the same for

Digitized by Google

sonnets. The committee consisted of Mrs. Josephine S. Conlon, Jennie O. Starkey, Mme. Annetta Antona and Adam Strohm. The seven readers were chosen from the Association. The Judges were Judge Alfred J. Murphey, Rev. Chester B. Emmerson and Winfield Lionel Scott. Six hundred and twenty manuscripts were submitted.

At each of the annual banquets are missed from the number some of the most highly respected and talented members who have gone, to banquet with the King. The Association is constantly adding to its number. The meetings are well attended. The Association is in a flourishing condition, and is ever ready to welcome any who are eligible, to extend encouragement and to help all who may apply.

Many of the members are authors of from one to a dozen volumes; many are recognized poets of merit. The Association is justly proud of its list of Associate and Honorary members.

In a later number of the Magazine will be given a list of these members and their most important works, and something about their present literary life and plans.

ON ACCOUNT OF ACTIVITIES in behalf of war preparations, the Midwinter Meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, which was to have been held in Bay City, Jan. 30 and 31, has been postponed, and combined with the Annual Meeting at Lansing in May.

Just at this moment, in these months of January and February, every man, woman and child must concentrate on the efforts being made to raise funds to supply the needs of our soldiers and Allies. All realize the great need of united effort

Digitized by Google

and the use of every ounce of energy to the end of winning this war, to lose which would be a catastrophe unthinkable.

In May, at the Annual Meeting, the midwinter program will be combined with war features of similar nature to impress the terrible crisis reached in the world's affairs. Among the speakers in May will be many who were to have appeared upon the Bay City program. The subjcets will be of wide range, representing the various war interests of the State. Patriotic and martial music will accompany each session. The spirit of the hospitality of war times will reign, and the pioneers and their friends will find themselves completely at home. The reminiscences of the pioneers and old soldiers will form a most stimulating part of the program, and it is desired that they be present in large numbers to give the meeting that atmosphere and support necessary to its greatest usefulness in the great cause for human liberty.

In the April number of the Magazine, the program will be announced in detail.

DEATH HAS MADE sad inroads upon the membership of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society during the year just closed. So far as known, the following is a complete list of deaths in 1917:

Cochrane, Sarah Ann, Detroit
Coleman, Senator H. B., Kalamazoo
Cook, Col. W. W., Lansing
Cornell, Dr. A. B., Kalamazoo
Cummings, Mrs. J. W., Kalamazoo
Ferris, Mrs. W. N., Big Rapids
Flowers, Judge Norman, Jackson

Digitized by Google

Fyfe, Mrs. R. M., Detroit
Halstead, Judge Benj. F., Petoskey
Hayden, Senator James G., Cassopolis
Maxwell, Hon. Edwin Gregory, Grand Rapids
Mitchell, Judge Wm. T., Port Huron
Musselman, Hon. Amos, Grand Rapids
Palmer, Ervin, Detroit
Person, Judge R. H., Lansing
Preston, William P., Mackinac Island
Price, Lawrence, Lansing
Ramsdell, Judge T. J., Manistee
Sabin, Marden, Battle Creek
Smith, Hon. Samuel L., Detroit
Thayer, George W., Grand Rapids
Utley, Henry M., Detroit
Wright, Mrs. Dorothea Mason, Waterford, Conn.
York, N. E., Millington

In 1917 sixteen new members were added to the Roster of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, not including the Honorary members, who were listed in the October number of the Magazine for 1917. The new members are as follows:

Oscar G. Boiseau, Holden, Mo.
*Mrs. Sarah A. Cochrane, Detroit
Mrs. Edith C. Dunton, Manistique
George R. Fox, Three Oaks
Mrs. F. L. Handy, Bay City
Miss Gracie B. Krum, Detroit
Henry S. Lucas, Ross
Prof. Carl Esek Pray, Ypsilanti

Digitized by Google

Rev. Anthony Schumacher, Big Rapids
Mrs. Margaret Temple Smith, Bay City
William O. Van Eyck, Holland
Edward K. Warren, Three Oaks
Mrs. Edward K. Warren, Three Oaks
Frederic McKey White, Detroit
Louis Arthur White, Adrian
Norman B. Wood, Elsie

*Deceased.

MARQUETTE COUNTY organized a county historical society on August 14, 1917, being next after Delta County to take this forward step in the Upper Peninsula. Miss Olive Pendill, to whom credit is due for much of the preliminary work of organization, reports as follows:

On Tuesday, August 14, 1917, in response to a call, a meeting was held in the assembly room of the Public Library at Marquette to organize a Marquette County Historical Society.

The call was signed by the following persons: From Marquette, D. H. Ball, F. H. Begole, J. M. Longyear, J. F. Neidhart, B. W. Wright, A. E. Archambeau, E. O. Stafford, A. F. Maynard, Mrs. Ellen J. Clark, Mrs. Geo. Thiras, 3d., Mrs. Anna Barney, Miss K. E. Everett, Miss Mary Atfield, Miss Olive Pendill; from Negaunee, Mrs. Alex. Maitland and E. C. Anthony; from Ishpeming, Dr. T. A. Felch and R. P. Bronson.

The meeting was called to order at 7:30 p. m. Mr. A. E. Archambeau was made acting chairman, and Olive Pendill temporary secretary. All who desired to speak were given opportunity and then the following resolution was proposed and unanimously adopted:

Digitized by Google

"WHEREAS, It is desirable that all the information obtainable relative to the early history of this county and of the Upper Peninsula, as well as to its subsequent development and growth, be collected and preserved; and further, since to secure that end a society is needed in this county to cooperate with other historical societies already formed in the Upper Peninsula, and with the State Pioneer and Historical Society and the State Historical Commission;

RESOLVED, That we organize a society to be known as the Marquette County Historical Society."

A motion to appoint a committee on constitution and by-laws to report at the next meeting was adopted and the chairman appointed as such committee D. H. Ball, E. C. Anthony and R. P. Bronson.

It was moved and adopted that a delegation be chosen to attend the joint meeting of the State Pioneer and Historical Society and the Keweenaw Historical Society to be held at Houghton, August 15, 16, 17, and to extend to the State Pioneer and Historical Society an invitation to hold its 1918 Upper Peninsula meeting in Marquette County. The meeting then adjourned until such time as the committee on constitution and by-laws should be ready to report.

The Marquette *Mining Journal* of August 16, 1917, made the following editorial comment:

The organization of a Marquette County branch of the State Historical Society is belated but it comes better late than never. The early history of Marquette County has a relation to State history and national history comparable in the Upper Peninsula only with that of Houghton County. The historical roots of Chippewa and Mackinac perhaps go further

Digitized by Google

back, but the industrial significance of these counties has been less marked than that of Marquette or Houghton. In the one the great metal industry that has made the United States the foremost steel manufacturing country in the world obtained its first sound basis, and the mines of Houghton County gave the country its first great copper range and for many years were the principal source of supply of this indispensable metal.

It is a thing to be wondered at that one can look in vain for an adequate narrative summary of the history of Marquette County. Such a work is not extant. The material on which it could be based has never been collected, edited and published. Many of the men who could have contributed to it in generous measure have long since passed to their fathers. Their reminiscences are to be found scattered here and there in newspaper files and in unrecorded papers that it will be now most difficult to assemble. Much material that would have been of great value is wholly lost. Labor as industriously as he may, the compiler of the story of Marquette County will find many gaps that he can not fill.

The purpose of the Marquette County branch of the State Historical Society is, manifestly, to take up this too long delayed work. It is one that should be set about vigorously, without delay. The sources of material are constantly diminishing. For each year the work is now delayed there will be a corresponding incompleteness in the data.

When the story of Marquette County is adequately prepared it will be an important contribution to the records of State history.

Digitized by Google

ONLY A VERY LITTLE LATER than the organization of the Marquette County Society came a similar movement in Alger. The Alger County Historical Society was organized August 21, 1917.

To Robert H. Wright, editor of *The Cloverland Farmer* of Munising we are indebted for a report of the meeting. The Society was organized in the editorial room of *The Cloverland Farmer*. The following officers were elected:

President—Robert H. Wright
Vice-Presidents—Victor Cox, Aaron Powell
Secretary—Charles Gogarn
Treasurer—Swan Anderson
County Historian—Robert H. Wright

The Alger County Society becomes a branch of the State Historical Society. At its next meeting, not yet called, a constitution and by-laws will be adopted. It has been suggested that another meeting and a picnic be held some time in the near future at some point to be selected by the members of the Society at the next meeting. There is some talk of holding this meeting in Limestone Township.

It is proposed to hold one or two meetings a year in the future and to make an effort to gather together all historical facts pertaining to this county, its settlement, organization, etc., with names of its past officials. The history of each township will also be compiled and preserved.

The membership of the new organization is not confined to any one place but includes the entire county. A membership fee of one dollar will be charged and small yearly dues, perhaps not exceeding fifty cents for each member. This sum will

Digitized by Google

be used in obtaining historical information pertaining to the county, and making records of it.

Mr. Wright requests anyone possessing accurate information of interest, historical or otherwise, pertaining to the early days of this region to send it to him.

MR. I. P. BATES, of Paw Paw, reports the following officers elected at the last meeting of the Van Buren County Pioneer Association:

President—Chas. J. Monroe, South Haven

Vice-President—Oran W. Rowland, Paw Paw

Secretary—I. P. Bates, Paw Paw

Treasurer—Arthur Jennings, Lawrence

A fine large boulder marking the old Territorial Road was unveiled at this meeting. The boulder, about four feet in height and roughly shaped like a huge arrowhead, bears on its face toward the road a bronze tablet upon which is this inscription:

"This Stone marks the old Territorial Road. Survey authorized, 1829. The Woman's Literary Club of Keeler and Algonquin Chapter, D. A. R. dedicate it to the Pioneer men and women of Van Buren County, 1916."

THE ST. JOSEPH COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY has recently elected the following officers:

President—J. Henry Worthington, Mendon

Vice-President—J. Murray Benjamin, White Pigeon

Secretary-Treasurer—Frank S. Cummings, Centerville

Digitized by Google

MRS. E. E. CROSS, who for several years has been the efficient Secretary of Emmet County Historical Society has removed to Grand Rapids. Mrs. Ethel Rowan Fasquelle succeeds Mrs. Cross as Secretary in Emmet County. The Emmet County Historical Society has done excellent work since its comparatively recent organization, again demonstrating the vigor of the northern part of the State.

DURING THE LAST SIX MONTHS, the Curator of the Museum, Mrs. M. B. Ferrey, has visited seventeen places in fourteen different counties, including four county pioneer and historical societies. Her report is as follows:

"Ingham County is rapidly gathering the history of each township. Col. Ives as president, and Mrs. Franc L. Adams as secretary are very efficient. The next session of the county society will be at Stockbridge and a good attendance is expected.

"The Washtenaw Society is doing good service, but the long list of deaths of pioneers read at the last meeting shows that more effort and new members will be necessary to carry on the work effectively. Two strong aids should help solve the problem, the University of Michigan and the Ypsilanti Normal. Prof. Laird of the Normal College in a recent address gave an academic view that was instructive and profitable as to the duty of these centers of learning.

"The Clinton County society several years ago added 'Historical' to its name, and has several splendid workers recording data for township history. Their reports are very well kept and the pioneers are faithful.

Digitized by Google

"Eaton County never lacks for a fine meeting and an interested audience. Prof. Pray of Ypsilanti Normal gave an address at the recent meeting on 'The War and its Causes,' in a clear, concise and satisfactory manner.

"Every reader of the Magazine is urged to help in giving us reports of meetings wherever held in the State. We should have much more complete reports of societies and their work than have been sent in to the Magazine.

"The Sanilac County Federation of Women's Clubs held a recent meeting at Marlette, and notwithstanding the very bad condition of the roads, had a good audience and cheering reports. A tri-county historical organization in the Thumb would be very helpful. So far the infant society of Huron, started through the help of our honored Governor, stands alone.

"The clubs of Holt and Bath show the power and use of organization and community spirit for history. Some of the best work will be found in rural clubs. Isolation of farmers is a thing of the past.

"Hillsdale County was one of the first to have at its Fair a Woman's Congress, taking up discussion of the vital topics of the day, which is now one of its best and most distinctive features. Several other counties have tried to follow the plan but none have been so successful and prosperous. It is to be hoped that a historical society may be started there. If Hillsdale College would lend its strength and influence to such an undertaking the county and State would be richer.

"The help from patriotic societies in the State's historical work is so well demonstrated by the cooperation of the State Regent, Mrs. Waite, that all must be convinced. The Chapter at Howell, visited September 11, and the State meeting at

Digitized by Google

Saginaw, showed the immense power and influence of loyal women. The President General was present at the State meeting at every session and extolled the ability and success of Michigan in unstinted praise. The War and our duty in its prosecution was the keynote.

"October 16-18 saw a wonderful gathering in Traverse City of five hundred club women from all over the State, with encouraging reports from all departmental work. Michigan for years was the only State embodying historical work in its club departments.

"A few have taken up their history in classes. A resolution asking that our plan be adopted by the National Biennial we hope will be considered favorably.

"Too much praise cannot be bestowed on Oakland County for its valuable historical cooperation. Its recent Centennial celebration added several markers. The Woman's Club had a few dollars left from the Centennial funds and added enough to place at the forks of three roads a very appropriate marker. On a very disagreeable day Royal Oak dedicated a boulder marking the site of the oak tree which was so royally named by Gen. Cass.

"The progress of Michigan cannot be better displayed than in the annual meeting of the teachers of the State, held this year in Grand Rapids. Sectional meetings representing twenty-eight departments and an attendance of seven or eight thousand demonstrated that 'schools have been encouraged' since 1787.

"In 1916, $1,500 were expended by the Association for lectures and $1,800 for fine, musical programs, affording a splendid chance for grade teachers to get inspiration from artists in their particular lines. This Association is not only

Digitized by Google

self-supporting but patriotic, having a surplus of $5,000 in First Liberty Bonds."

THE CITY OF HASTINGS, Barry County, has set a good example by placing in the Court House a fine oil portrait of its namesake, Enrotas P. Hastings.

AN HISTORICAL PRIZE ESSAY CONTEST was concluded Dec. 31, 1917, by the White Pigeon *News*, which offered two prizes of $3 and $2 for the best essay on the village and township. The prize essays will be published in the *News*.

VERY INTERESTING is the series of Civil War letters by Mr. W. H. Tuttle which have been appearing in the Decatur *Republican*.

THE PAPERS OF AUSTIN BLAIR of which a descriptive list appeared in the October number of the Magazine for 1917 have been printed in part (particularly Mr. Blair's letters) in the Detroit (Sunday) *News*, beginning with November 4, 1917. Mr. John Fitzgibbon who edits the series writes of them in this number:

"A large mass of the letters and telegrams refer to matters directly concerning Michigan, so are of State historical interest. None of them have heretofore been printed. Most of the letters are in the handwriting of the men who wrote them, and are addressed to Gov. Blair in terms of personal acquaint-

Digitized by Google

ance and friendship. The names of the senders alone attest the historical value of the correspondence. They include:

"President Lincoln, and his first and his second secretary of war, Simon Cameron and Edwin M. Stanton; his secretary of state, William H. Seward; Lieut.-Gens. Scott and Grant; Maj.-Gens. McClellan, Sherman, Halleck, Burnsides, Rosecrans, and Hunt, who was chief of artillery of the army of the Potomac; Adj.-Gen. Lorenzo Thomas, of the war department; Ripley, who was chief of ordnance of all the armies; Sedgewick, who fell mortally wounded fighting his corps at the Wilderness; Kilpatrick, Custer, Gillmore, Fitzjohn Porter, Wright, Berry, Barney, Townsend, Willcox and Buell; Lieut.-Gen. Longstreet, of the Confederate service; James G. Blaine, Schuyler Colfax, Horace Greeley, Horace White, Thomas C. Platt, John A. Logan, Lyman Trumbull, all of the war governors of the Northern States and John Bright, the famous British statesman and orator, who pleaded the cause of the North in Parliament and in English public meetings from the beginning to the end of the war."

These papers may now be consulted in the Burton Historical Collection of the Detroit Public Library, having been purchased for the library by Hon. C. M. Burton of Detroit, member of the Michigan Historical Commission.

AMONG RECENT MAGAZINE ARTICLES of special interest to Michigan is "A Century of Steam on the Great Lakes" (*Outlook,* July 11, 1917); "Naming of Apostle Islands" (*Wis. Mag. of Hist.,* September, 1917); "The Services of the Menominee in the Black Hawk War" (*Ibid.*); "Survey of Historical Activities" (*Ibid.*); "Historical Activities in Canada, 1916-

Digitized by Google

1917" (*Ibid.*); "Historical Activities in the Old Northwest" (*Miss. Valley Hist. Review*, June, 1917); "Spanish Influence in the West During the American Revolution" (*Ibid.*, September, 1917).

NOT WITHOUT HISTORICAL INTEREST is the recent raising of the steamer *Pewabic* from the bottom of Lake Huron off Thunder Bay Island south and east of Alpena. The steamer was sunk August 9, 1865, in a collision with the steamer *Meteor*, with the loss of 125 lives and all her cargo under 180 feet of water.

Besides the cargo of pure copper, some 300 tons valued at $200,000 at present market price, and several hundred tons of pig iron, many relics of historic interest have been brought up. Among these are numerous fine silk and broadcloth garments of fifty years ago, well preserved,—of woolen fabrics, however, the material that comprised the warp has disappeared, leaving the woof as small meshed netting; watches, revolvers, coins of date prior to the Civil War, jet bracelets and haircombs in the fashion of the period, square-toed shoes and slippers of that day, black silk handmade lace, keys, locks, articles of silver and gold, and a great variety of relics and souvenirs belonging probably to passengers' baggage.

The history of attempts to reach the *Pewabic's* copper treasures constitutes a story of tragedies and reflects the general advance made in deep-sea diving since the Civil War. The success of its raising is significant for the possible recovery of historic relics and records which have been lost in ships on the Great Lakes during half a century. Water pressure has been of course the great obstacle. This successful attack was

Digitized by Google

achieved by a species of armored diving-suit invented by Mr. B. F. Leavitt of Toledo. It is constructed of hardened bronze, and carries its own condensed air supply sufficient for a four hours' stay under water.

The *Peucabic* was owned by the Lake Superior Transportation Co., consisting of Wells D. Wallbridge, J. T. Whiting, and L. McKnight, all of Detroit and all of whom died many years ago. The steamer's master was Captain George P. McKay, of Cleveland, treasurer of the Lake Carriers' Association.

THE *Public Life of Zachariah Chandler,* by Wilmer C. Harris, Ph. D., instructor in history in Ohio State University, has been issued as Vol. II of the University series of the Michigan Historical Commission's *Publications.*

It is a volume of 150 pages printed and bound uniformly with Fuller's *Economic and Social Beginnings of Michigan.* A distinct credit to American scholarship, it will be specially interesting to students of Michigan politics in the period centering about the Civil War and the rise of the Republican party.

While the work owes much to the *Post and Tribune* "Life of Zachariah Chandler" the author has used a great variety of source materials, to which references are made in the footnotes. Mr. Harris says in his preface:

"This little monograph is intended in no way to supersede the *Post and Tribune* 'Life of Zachariah Chandler.' That interesting work will remain a mine of information for the student of Mr. Chandler's political career. It was written by his friends and contains information which would be difficult if not impossible for the student of the present day to find elsewhere. But, written by his friends at a time when the stirring

Digitized by Google

events with which Mr. Chandler was connected were still fresh in their minds, the *Post and Tribune* 'Life' is necessarily not wholly impartial. In presenting to the public another study of Zachariah Chandler, I ask consideration for three reasons: first, I can, I believe, write with reasonable impartiality; second, I will present Mr. Chandler as a typical product of his time, a fire-eater of the Northwest, the representative in the United States Senate of the radical spirit dominant among his constituents during the epoch of Civil War and Reconstruction; third, I will present Mr. Chandler as the exponent of a system of practical politics, which will, I hope, be of interest to the student of American history."

The book is divided into 15 chapters, which, abbreviated, are: Mayor of Detroit, Candidate for Governor, Formation of Republican Party, Basis of Michigan Politics, Election to U. S. Senate, Early Years in U. S. Senate, Civil War Begins, Second Election to U. S. Senate, In U. S. Senate 1863-64, The Years 1865-66, Foreign Affairs and Reconstruction, Third Election to U. S. Senate, Grant's First Administration, Chandler's Defeat in 1875, and Summary 1875-79.

It deals with national politics only in so far as Chandler was connected with them. The Michigan background however is explained more fully. The strong anti-slavery sentiment of the people of Michigan is shown to be the result of the social, industrial, religious, cultural, racial and geographical factors that obtained in the State more than half a century ago. People of Detroit will be amused to read this description of the office of Mayor in their city in 1851, "The office of Mayor of Detroit in 1851 was not one to attract the professional politician. There were arduous duties to be performed with reference to the city administration and the rewards were

Digitized by Google

meager. The office carried with it no salary, and except for a fee of one dollar for each case tried before him in the Mayor's Court, the Mayor received no salary. Custom demanded that the Mayor subscribe liberally to charity and to various associations for moral, religious and literary purposes. He was supposed to dispense the hospitality becoming to his station. Necessarily then the office was open only to men of wealth and public spirit who were content with the rewards that the honorable position and the opportunity to serve the city gave them. In 1852 two Whigs declined the nomination before a third was found who was willing to become a candidate."

Chandler's career as presented by Mr. Harris may be briefly outlined. He was born in Bedford, New Hampshire, emigrated to Michigan in 1833, engaged in business in Detroit and by 1850 had amassed a fortune. He then, at the age of thirty-seven, turned his attention to politics. The Whigs elected him Mayor of Detroit in 1851. The following year he ran for Governor, but the State election was overshadowed by the Presidential campaign; and the election of Pierce, the Democratic candidate, brought about the defeat of Chandler, the Whig candidate for Governor of Michigan. Chandler then entered enthusiastically into the plans for the formation of a new party based on anti-slavery and took an active part in the meeting at Jackson, Michigan, which gave birth to the Republican party. His reward for this was his election to the United States Senate to succeed Lewis Cass in 1857. This position he held for eighteen years. He was subsequently appointed Secretary of the Interior in Grant's cabinet. He was chairman of the Republican National Committee in the Hayes-Tilden campaign and finally again elected to the Senate to

Digitized by Google

fill the unexpired term of Isaac P. Christiancy, resigned. His death occurred in 1879.

Chandler was a powerful man physically, as tall as Lincoln and in his later years considerably heavier. He possessed a tremendous fund of nervous energy and when he spoke to a political audience he used every ounce of it. As a stump speaker he relied in large measure upon vituperation and a certain coarse humor. He lacked refinement and education, but had native ability and common sense. Perhaps with more education his aggressiveness and initiative would have been weakened—some modern critics of education would say so. This lack of education in no way lowered him in the opinion of his constituents. They saw in him the qualities which they most admired—the ability of the self-made man.

In these days when the United States is again engaged in a great war it may be well to recall the position of Michigan's great War Senator in the Civil War. Whatever else may be said about Zachariah Chandler, he was always "sound on the main question." He was absolutely loyal to the cause of the North. No matter what the cost, the war must be won and the South must be humbled. As we today take the position that the war must continue until there has been beaten into Germany a sense of her inferiority, so Chandler in his day would view the conflict with the South. With compromise and "peace talk" he had no sympathy, and were he living today he would be one with President Wilson in condemning it. He would favor the draft and the Liberty Loans as in his day he deplored the payment of money in lieu of military service and favored bonds and even greenbacks to win the war. His hostility toward rebels was only exceeded by his hatred for Copperheads. They were the "hyphenated" citizens of the Civil

Digitized by Google

War. His bitterest invectives were always employed against those who in any way sympathized with the enemies of his country. Great Britain favored the South—hence Chandler's diatribes against our present ally. England's more or less covert sympathy with the South in the Civil War seemed to him to furnish just cause for war against her. Can one doubt that Germany's violation of our rights as neutrals would have made him an earnest champion of war against the German Government? He was narrow and prejudiced, coarse and violent, but he was loyal to the North and a tower of strength to the friends of freedom.

The cause of freedom in Europe was very near to Mr. Chandler's heart. With the Revolutionists of 1848 he was in full sympathy. Speaking to his fellow citizens from the balcony of the old Biddle House in 1851, Mr. Chandler said in words which in the light of present events seem almost prophetic: "The flame of Liberty may be smothered for a moment but it will break out with ten-fold fury at no distant day. . . . . Kings, Dukes and Emperors 'By the Will of God' must give place to Presidents, Senators and Governors 'By the Will of the People.' Then will those time-honored fabrics of despotism fall like tottering walls before the hurricane. When this struggle shall come, and come it must soon, *America will not be an idle spectator of the conflict* . . . . Our country has a glorious destiny to fulfill."

With the advent of Reconstruction, Mr. Chandler appears in a less favorable light. He seemed unable to take a statesmanlike view of the problem of the resumption of peaceful relations with the South. He had fought rebels too long to willingly see them again enjoy political power and privilege. "Rebels must take back seats, and of course, loyal men must

Digitized by Google

govern this country," said he, "I care not whether they be black or white." He continued to "wave the bloody shirt" when the country was tired of the subject and willing to bury the issues of the Civil War in oblivion. With the newer issues, such as civil-service reform, he had no sympathy. "What are they howling for reform for? They have it now," he declared in 1872. "There is hardly a man who is setting up his cry for reform who is not a corrupt scoundrel and a thief." Mr. Chandler was personally honest, but he had long been accustomed to regard the spoils as the legitimate reward of the successful party at the polls. He grew old in this school, and the system which kept him in place and power seemed good enough for him. Just as he in his younger days had supplanted Lewis Cass when that great Michigan statesman had grown old and failed longer to represent the spirit of his constitutents, so in his turn Chandler was to be succeeded in public favor by younger men more truly representative of the times.

The final contest took place at Lansing in January, 1875. The cohorts of Chandler were assembled in all the glory of numbers and past victories, but a little band of seven Republican members of the Legislature stood firm and refused to vote for Chandler. Then Chandler knew that bitterness of defeat which sooner or later comes to every man in public life who remains in office long enough to be overtaken by the younger men and newer issues that always pursue and threaten the older leaders.

As a member of important Senate committees, Mr. Chandler did work of a useful though less spectacular character. He was for years the chairman of the Committee on Commerce. Of course he used his position to further liberal appropriations

Digitized by Google

for Michigan's needs, such as the channel through the St. Clair Flats. But he was almost equally liberal in favoring appropriations for the building of a Pacific Railway, the laying of Atlantic cables and the building of the Niagara Ship Canal. His influence was on the side of a liberal construction of the interstate commerce clause of the Constitution. In fact constitutional questions troubled him little. "I believe that it is constitutional to do whatever is requisite to save the Constitution and the Government," he said. As a prominent member of the Committee on the Conduct of the War he was very active in investigating the treatment of Union soldiers in Confederate prisons and other matters that formed the subject of the Committee's work.

Mr. Harris' book is well written and abounds in the "human" side of Chandler's career, containing numerous quotations from his letters and speeches reflecting the personality of the man and his relations with the public men of his day. It has a bibliography and a good index.

All public and school libraries in Michigan are entitled to a free copy which will be sent upon request. To individuals the price is $1 payable to the State of Michigan.

Digitized by Google

Fifth Annual Report of the Michigan Historical Commission, 1917

The Michigan Historical Commission, acting in accord with Section 9 of Act No. 271, Public Acts of 1913, herewith submit their fifth annual report, covering the period from January 1 to December 31, 1917. Only a brief summary is needed, so fully have the activities of the Commission been presented in the Magazine during the past year.

The Commission has consisted during the year of the following members:

Hon. Albert E. Sleeper
Prof. Claude H. Van Tyne
Hon. Clarence M. Burton
Hon. William L. Jenks
Rt. Rev. Mgr. Frank A. O'Brien
Hon. William L. Clements
Hon. Augustus C. Carton

July 20, 1917, Prof. Claude H. Van Tyne, head of the history department in the University of Michigan, was reelected President and Clarence M. Burton, city historian of Detroit, was reelected Vice-President, for the fiscal year 1917-18.

Four meetings have been held, as follows: at Lansing, May 9; at Detroit, July 20; at Ann Arbor, October 24; at Lansing, November 14.

The publications of the year include Vol. II of the University series, *The Public Life of Zachariah Chandler, 1851-1875*, by Wilmer C. Harris, Ph. D.; the July and October numbers

Digitized by Google

of the *Michigan History Magazine;* and a volume of tributes, poems and addresses in memory of the late Hon. Lawton T. Hemans. In press is Vol. III, of the University series, *The Historical Geography of Detroit,* by Almon E. Parkins, Ph.D.; and Bulletin No. 9, *Prize Essays Written by Pupils of Michigan Schools in the Local History Contest for 1916-17.* This contest was continued for 1917-18, subject: "Our Soldiers, Past and Present," in the city, village, or school district of the writer; these prize essays will go to press early in 1918. A volume of documents to include the *Executive Journal* of the Governor and Judges of Michigan Territory from 1805 forward is projected for publication in 1918. The *Michigan History Magazine* will be published quarterly. The limitations on State printing due to the war have affected the Commission's printing in no small degree.

The publications have been issued in editions of 2,500 copies and distributed free to the libraries and schools of Michigan and to such institutions outside of Michigan as have arranged for exchanges.

During last summer the old files in the executive department and the department of state were carefully listed for administrative and historical purposes. The Bibliography of published materials on Michigan has now reached 9,000 titles of printed books, pamphlets, etc., descriptive list of 2,000 volumes of manuscripts, and about 300 maps. A descriptive list of Michigan newspapers, past and present, has been completed as far as possible by correspondence with editors, publishers and libraries in Michigan, and may now be consulted at the Commission's office. The work in the archives at Washington which is being conducted jointly with the historical commissions and societies of Illinois, Indiana, Wisconsin, Minnesota

Digitized by Google

and Iowa in listing the documents relating to the history of Michigan and the Middle West, has reached above 5,000 entries. By means of the results obtained through these channels the Commission has been able to answer more quickly and definitely the questions which have come to the office from students and citizens desiring historical data.

The Commission has actively assisted the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, the auxiliary county historical societies, and the women's clubs and patriotic societies working in Michigan history. Special attention has been given to the Upper Peninsula, where two new societies were formed during the year, in Marquette and Alger counties. All of these organizations have been specially urged to gather the fugitive war records which otherwise must perish. Assistance has been given in marking historical spots and encouraging collectors and writers of history in the cities and counties. The result has been many new and valuable contributions of documents and papers, and material additions to the Museum collection.

In addition to the office and Museum on the fourth floor of the Capitol, an additional room on the same floor, recently occupied by the Fire Marshall, has been acquired for the Archivist of the Commission. The appropriation for the Commission, in consideration of the Commission's desire to withdraw from the general fund, was raised by the last Legislature from $6,000 to $15,000. Following is the financial statement covering the fiscal year from June 30, 1916, to July 1, 1917:

Digitized by Google

FINANCIAL STATEMENT

Balance of appropriation from preceding year...		$489.98
Total amount of appropriation for fiscal year ending June 30, 1917		6,000.00
Expenditures from appropriation for fiscal year:		
Salaries of officers	$4,271.72	
Washington archives work, printing, mailing, etc.	1,203.73	
Traveling expenses	704.48	
Museum supplies	280.05	
Telephone and telegraph	20.02	
Express, freight and cartage	6.62	
Office supplies	2.05	
Total disbursments		6,488.67
Total balance on hand July 1, 1917.....		$1.31

Digitized by Google

Donors and Their Gifts to the State Pioneer Museum, Jan. 1 to Dec. 31, 1917

(LIST MADE BY MRS. M. B. FERREY, CURATOR)

1. Barnard, Miss Emily (Lansing)—Brown straw bonnet worn by her in 1860; water-color or funeral mourning-picture made about 1825 by her mother, Persis Burton.
2. Bennett, Miss Susie (Lansing)—One tea-cup, small; picture painted on glass; plate decorated with hunting scene; brass calendar stand; souvenir of Garden of the Gods.
3. Bentley, Mrs. Bessie (Marshall)—Black bonnet worn by Jane Lyman Godfrey at Jackson about the year 1845.
4. Birmingham, Alton M. (Duplain)—Union flag purchased during Civil War for fifty dollars in gold. (Secured through the courtesy of Coleman C. Vaughan, Secretary of State).
5. Blair, Mrs. George H. (Los Angeles, Cal.)—Piano belonging to the wife of Governor Austin Blair and given by her to her granddaughter Harriet and at her death presented to the Museum. (Secured by Mrs. Katherine Blair, Lansing.)
6. Bliss, Mrs. Alseba (Saginaw)—Platter marked "Berne," from the first set used by Mrs. Bliss after her marriage in New York State.
7. Bowen, Mr. and Mrs. W. L. (Somerset)—Baby-cab brought from Scotland about 1817 by the grandparents of Miss Whelpley.

Digitized by Google

8. BROWN, GEN. JOSEPH W. (Tecumseh)—Portmanteau carried during early days of Lenawee County in Toledo and Black Hawk Wars.
9. BURTON, MRS. L. (Lansing)—*The Evening Echo,* published in Alpena, issue of July 4, 1898 (size 16x10 inches and printed only on one side).
10. CHAPIN, MRS. A. M. (Eden)—*The New Covenant,* a Universalist paper with memoir of Almon Morris Chapin; blue plate marked "Canton" pattern; yellow mug; pair woolen stockings; black silk dress; *The Massachusetts Sun or American Oracle of Liberty,* published at Worcester, Mass., issue of July 17, 1776.
11. CHAFFEY, MRS. AGNES (Lansing)—Round covered blue sugarbowl, spatter pattern; iron for pressing the crown of caps worn in early days; red Bohemian glass bottle; frame of screen for fireplace; small wooden cup.
12. CHUBBS, HENRY S. (Lansing)—Picture and two bills, paper money; stereopticon view of laying of Capitol corner stone, Lansing; ticket to John B. Gough's lecture, Lansing; envelope from steamer "Ironsides" sunk at Grand Haven, 1873; two souvenirs from China.
13. COBURN, MRS. H. W. (Gladstone)—Red cashmere shawl worn about 1850.
14. COBURN, MRS. M. A. (Perry)—The first postoffice case used in Perry, made about 1847 by William Laing.
15. COOK, R. K. (Bay City)—Shotgun marked "Chance & Son, London," said to have been brought from England to Bay City in 1806.
16. COREY, MRS. POLLY (Drummond Island)—Old-country wooden shoes found by her on Drummond Island near the old fort in a box dug up August, 1916.

Digitized by Google

17. DELAMATER, MRS. LOUIS (Lansing)—*Rural Repository Magazine,* copy of 1845 owned by her mother, Mrs. Ellen Baker, Lansing.
18. DE ROCHER, MRS. RUTH (Berlamont)—Coat made of the entrails of the walrus by the Alaskan Indians, impervious to water.
19. DONOVAN, HON. WILLIAM H. (Lansing)—Two volumes of *The History of the Indian Tribes,* by Thos. L. McKenney and James Hall, published by Fred W. Greenough, Philadelphia, 1838. Beautifully illustrated.
20. DOYLE, FLORA—Specimen of carborundum.
21. FIELD, C. E.—Pitchpine stick taken from breastworks near Jacksonville, Fla.
22. GRINWOLD, MRS. ELIZABETH (Lansing)—Sanders' *Fourth Reader;* Journal, Sandwich Islands, 1828; pocket Bible; dictionary, 1831; Cobb's *Juvenile Reader,* 1834; Sanders' *Third Reader; Evidences of Christianity,* published 1832; *Sunday School Harmonist; Notes on the Epistle to the Romans,* 1835, by Alfred Barnes; old Bible, no date.
23. HADRICH AND KAINE, MESDAMES (Lansing)—Metal candlestick from the home of Mrs. Sarah Brisbin.
24. HANDY, FRED (Lansing)—Pair wooden shoe-soles with leather straps, found on Mackinac Island.
25. HARTZOG, REV. W. G. (Tecumseh)—Three copies of State *Manual* formerly owned by and marked with name of "O. Hough, Herkimer Co., N. Y., 1831"; second, 1837, marked the same but printed by John S. Bagg, Detroit; third, the same for 1838; clipping of obituary from Adrian *Times,* Jan. 2, 1866.
26. HAYES, GURD (Lansing)—Relic of "wet" campaign which

Digitized by Google

opened the last bottle of beer in Lansing; ballots of Ingham, Ionia and Kent counties voted by the soldiers in field during Civil War.

27. HOGLESONG, MRS. LILLIE G (Waldron)—Photograph and biography of her father, John Brooks, aged 100 years.
28. HOPKINS, MRS. C. C. (Lansing)—Large library table of mahogany and bird's-eye maple used in the family of Gov. John J. Bagley.
29. HUBBARD, J. P. (Menominee)—Chair made of turkey-quills by pupils of Miss Remington.
30. HUTCHINSON, MRS. HARRIET (Lansing)—Clock, mahogany case; pewter plate; biography of Wm. S. George, State Printer, Lansing; picture of Abraham Lincoln.
31. IMMEN, MRS. LORRAINE PRATT (Grand Rapids)—*Replica* of Statue of Liberty.
32. JUDSON, MR. AND MRS. NATHAN, (Lansing)—White sauce-dish, conventional pattern; large white platter marked "J. Edwards"; syrup cup without cover, used by Mr. Judson's mother.
33. MEAD, CHARLES (Lansing)—Two pencil drawings of early Lansing given to Mrs. Ferrey and presented by her.
34. MERRICK, MISS (Charlotte)—Bible printed in 1846 by G. & C. Merriman, Springfield, Mass.; sofa pillow; picture of Miss Merrick's grandmother; sexagonal box; baby dress, hand-made embroidery; pair white undersleeves; home-made thread, and flax; twenty-three bills of Erie and Kalamazoo Bank, dates 1853; two Confederate bills; letter from "Albert," from Macon Prison, Dec. 1, 1864, to Mrs. Merrick; sketch of Holly village; souvenir medals; box of minerals and shells; small

Digitized by Google

book, entitled *Dew Drops;* petrified cedar; box of wax tapers formerly used for candles.

35. MERRIFIELD, MRS. SARAH THOMAS (Lansing)—Valentine sent to her in 1851,—no stamp but marked "Paid two cents"; daguereotype (in velvet case) of herself taken in 1851; pair of ear-rings made from her own hair in 1856; bronze badge for Lt. Edwin E. Merrifield, 15th Michigan Infantry.

36. MILES, MR. AND MRS. T. P. L. (Lansing)—Metal plate; two decorated chamois mats; one placque; set of "tiddlewinks"; iron pothook for fireplace; matchsafe; framed picture of eagle; three wooden brackets; gravy dish; large Egyptian statue; canteen carried by Tim. Miles in Civil War; metal bank; pin-cushion made on standard from lamp in 1844; six diaries kept by his mother, Mary Miles; porcupine quill card-case; plaster-of-Paris placque made by his mother, Mary Miles, about 1902; tinder-box for flint and steel; shell back-comb; black beaded parasol; white Estella shawl; one regalia collar; black and white striped percale dress; pink cambric; scale for weighing gold coins; red cashmere cap; doll's dress; grenadine shawl; child's skirt hand-embroidered; Grandfather Chamberlain's handkerchief, 19 inches square; night-cap, shadow embroidery; two black satin stocks for neck; two embroidered dresses for child; statuette; picture of Lt. L. B. Baker; Mark Twain scrap-book; brass clock; grey sunbonnet; black decalcomania box; souvenir of Washington monument; bead-bag made by Indians; specimen from Lake Superior; case of birds' eggs (three drawers); Columbus clock, marked "1492"; small brass clock; gilt weather-

Digitized by Google

vane; two Indian mococks for sugar; knife-box with handles; mahogany jewel-box; army buttons from coats of his father Col. Miles, and brother Capt. Miles; tin spice-box; several almanacs of 1837 and 1840; army ink-bottles used in Civil War; toy candlestick; toy gun; tail of swordfish; box of shells; two glass bottles with embroidered covers; seven pictures, six framed; copper dish dug up in front of their home in St. Clair; many newspapers and clippings; land deed signed by Martin Van Buren; plated butter-dish; soup tureen, white; china clock; forty-one scrap-books; many old books (to be listed later); one old desk and two book-shelves; two bound music books.

37. MILLER, MRS. M. (Hart)—*History of Oceana County,* by L. W. Hartwick and W. H. Fuller, published by the Pentwater *News* in 1890.

38. MUNGER, MRS. E. (DeWitt)—Tool for polishing shoes used in family of her father, Mr. Bennett.

39. PADDOCK, MRS. CORNELIA (Lansing)—Framed portrait of James W. Sanborn, Port Huron; large framed picture of Gen. Grant and family.

40. PECK, MRS. CHARLES R. (Kalamazoo)—Lace dress made for the wife of Senator Burrows to wear when she assisted Mrs. McKinley at a Presidential reception in 1900.

41. ROGERS, MRS. JESSIE A. (Hillsdale)—Apron worn about 1812 by Mary, daughter of Rev. Hiram Smith, and said to be the first graduate of Amherst College, Mass.; piece of printed cloth used in the family of Henry Fowler, one of the first settlers in Hillsdale County.

42. ROWELL, MRS. H. L. B. (Battle Creek)—Tobacco- and pipe-

Digitized by Google

bag carried by Sojourner Truth; newspaper clipping regarding this illustrious character.

43. RUSSELL, J. H. (Ann Arbor)—Model of ship in glass frame; pencil drawing of Soldiers' Home, Washington, D. C.; crayon of Joan of Arc, by Mrs. T. S. Mayan; stationery from Queen Liliuokalani of Hawaii; cord and tassel of curtains formerly in Governor's parlors in the Capitol; pewter cuspidor; sisal hemp from Jackson Prison; small china vase; tablespoon; octagonal glass salt-dish.

44. ST. JOHN, JOSEPH (Bancroft)—Tooth of mastodon found by him while digging a ditch.

45. SMITH, MRS. AND DAUGHTER (Grand Haven)—Red Bohemian glass goblet.

46. SMITH, E. J. (Battle Creek)—Two specimens of wood.

47. SPENCER, MRS. MARY C. (Lansing)—Cashmere shawl worn by her mother.

48. STARK, MRS. SUSIE (Lansing)—Majolica plate representing a green leaf.

49. THAYER, GEORGE W. (Grand Rapids)—Oil painting of his Uncle, Hon. Lucius Lyon, U. S. Senator in 1837, which was presented by Mr. Claude R. Buchanan, one of Mr. Thayer's executors, at the annual meeting of the State Pioneer and Historical Society in 1917.

50. TRUMBLE, RAYMOND (Lansing)—Three-tined fork brought over from England about 1800 by Mrs. Arksey, Lansing.

51. UREN, MRS. W. J. (Houghton)—Two "Merry Widow" hats, worn in 1910; black silk dolman with heavy bead trimming, worn in 1885; petticoat of down, worn about 1860 by her mother-in-law, Mrs. R. Uren; stand-cover of pieced silk, edged with worsted fringe.

Digitized by Google

52. WAKEMAN, ABRAM (96 Water St., New York)—Letters, 1774, sent to Massachusetts Bay Colony by New York Colony.
53. WARREN, D. H. (Secretary of 18th Mich. Vol. Inf.)—Minutes of annual reunion, 1868.
54. WATKINS, MRS. WILLIAM (Allen)—Hand-knit silk glove said to have been brought from England about 1845 by her mother-in-law.
55. WEST, MRS. HAZEL (Detroit)—Dress which was part of a wedding trousseau in 1875.
56. WILCOX, MRS. JAMES (Calumet)—Bull Moose fifty-cent piece, Columbian Exposition, Chicago, 1893.
57. WRIGHT, ROBERT H. (Munising, Editor of *The Cloverland Farmer*)—Beautifully carved ladle fifteen inches long, bowl four inches in diameter, carved by the Indians at L'Anse, Michigan.
58. UNKNOWN GIVER—Musket marked Dantzig, 1830, with powder-horn tied to gun; saddle-bags left in Museum May 12, 1917.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PAPERS

Digitized by Google

A Day in France

By Winfield Lionel Scott
(president mich. authors' association)

At peace lay the field in the early morn,
As it smiled o'er the world anew;
A sparkle of dew on the ripened corn,
There was song of larks in the blue.

Then all that glad day was a whisper low
Of sickles a-gleam mid the grain;
Where the aged toiled till the sunset glow
Lit with gold the sheaves on that plain.

There were women there with their willing hands,
There were children gleaning after;
They bound the sheaves with their shining bands
As they smiled at childish laughter.

For the children's song outrivaled the thrush,
Still unwearied at close of day,
As they paused at last in the twilight hush,
All ready for the homeward way.

A Zeppelin sent a bomb on its way—
Then that field was furrowed and torn,
And the shattered forms all scattered that lay,
With the impact afar were borne.

Dear God! and must it ever be thus,
That the curse on the innocent fall?
O, Brothers arise! bring the foe to the dust,
To the world bring peace, once for all.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CARL SCHURZ

Digitized by Google

Carl Schurz in Michigan

By Edward G. Holden
Tryon, N. C.

PARDON the necessary but I hope not unblushing egotism of these reminiscences of Carl Schurz in Michigan!

Our first meeting was in March, 1866, when I joined him as an assistant editorial writer on the as yet unissued Detroit *Post*. This newspaper was established by Senator Zachariah Chandler and his political "machine," he being the largest stockholder. The Detroit *Tribune* had so prospered during the war that it had begun "feeling its oats," indulged in more or less independence and had the temerity to criticize Mr. Chandler's rule of "blood and iron" in Michigan. This was *lèse-majesté*, and the *Post* was set up for the purpose of both offsetting the lukewarm if not hostile influence of the *Tribune* and at the same time properly chastizing it. It finally resulted in the demise of both papers and in the conversion of one of the fiercest Democratic journals in the United States into a Republican organ, still bearing its original name, the *Free Press*.

At this time Mr. Schurz was the Washington correspondent of the New York *Tribune*. He was not Mr. Chandler's special choice, for their political ideals were wholly different; but at the time, they agreed on the policy of the Republican party as opposed to the reconstruction plans of President Andrew Johnson, to bring back the seceded States "rebel-end first"—as the phrase went. Besides it was thought that the prestige

Digitized by Google

of Schurz's name and of his German nationality, would be a substantial asset for the new paper. As a matter of fact, he was not strictly a "newspaper man." His long suit was oratory, not flap-doodle and spread-eaglism, but the power, like Lincoln's, to convince the reason and influence the judgment, instead of hypnotizing reason and overwhelming judgment by appeals to prejudice, emotion, and passion. Schurz knew little of the details of newspaper work; and even his editorial writing, though often good and even excellent, did not begin to have the merits of his speeches. While not prolix, he was not terse, and seldom could put his points or arguments into short articles or pungent paragraphs. However, these were not so much the fashion then as in these later days. The other departments of the paper he left to his various assistants. The late Ray Haddock of Detroit was the commercial editor; the late L. A. Sherman of the Port Huron *Times* was its State editor. Mr. Utley, late Superintendent of the Detroit Public Library, was its city editor. The managing editor had recently been connected with the Chicago *Times,* one of the earliest if not the first of the "yellow" journals. After a few issues Mr. Schurz was startled by the remonstrances from subscribers, and especially from intimate friends outside the State, against the glut of articles with scare-heads, devoted to murders, scandals, and crimes and casualties of all sorts, gathered from all parts of the world. In his close attention to the purely political features of his new paper, he had not really noticed what was going on in other departments of it. Of course, he stopped that, and it settled down into the soberer mood of the average newspaper of the city.

As Mr. Schurz's paper, the *Post* was quoted extensively by the press everywhere, although his own contributions even to

Digitized by Google

its editorial page were a small part of its contents. If fact, he soon unconsciously showed that journalism was neither his forte nor his fad. The exciting politics of the days of reconstruction, Negro suffrage, and the like lured him to a larger field of conflict. The platform tempted him far more than the editorial chair. He would speak to his fellow men face to face, not address them in cold type, unable to measure the effect of his words upon them, or even to tell whether they were listening to him or not, and so get back from them—then and there—some recognition of the force and cogency of his arguments and appeals. Consequently he was often absent from his Post—as the joke went in the office—in answer to urgent requests to help carry a State or Congressional district, for the Republicans. Some stockholders of the paper began to grumble. He was paid what seemed to them a munificent salary—$5,000—and for that day it was certainly a substantial one; but not above his earning power as a speaker and lecturer. They felt however that he was not earning it for them. Perhaps they were right; but they overlooked the fact that if his name and prestige were worth what they were paying for it, he was but increasing this asset by his public appearances far more than by his more limited labor on their paper. However, there was one subject about which his information could not be supplied by amateurs like myself and colleagues. This was his intimate knowledge of Prussian history, especially through his painful and hazardous experience as a rebel against Prussian despotism in 1848. The first attempt of that nation to unite and control the other German states, beginning with the war against Austria and terminating in the battle of Sadowa (1866), gave him a fine opportunity to gratify both

Digitized by Google

Germans and Americans with his lucid, scholarly and fervent treatment thereof.

But he was not satisfied with this work, nor with the prospect which his environment held out to his growing ambitions. At Washington he had, to some extent, measured up very well with them. He wanted to be something more than an editorial writer on a provincial paper. He wanted to be called to a place of power, worthy as he thought of his talents and intellectual resources, where they would be frequently and severely tested by rivalry and prominence, and rewarded by a publicity impossible in private life. He wanted, in short, to be a United States Senator. With Mr. Chandler in that office from Michigan, and skillfully wielding all its dominating means for reelection, and even for dictating who should be his inferior colleague, a Senatorship in his bailiwick was as unattainable for Schurz as the throne of the Hohenzollern; or, by reason of his alien birth, the Presidency of the United States. In fact, he always congratulated himself that the accident of his birth, by taking away all hope of that grand prize, enabled him to act with entire independence of what would or would not affect any hope of getting or failing to get that crowning glory of the American public man. He therefore accepted a position offered him on a St. Louis German paper, with a promising prospect of his probable election to the Senate from the then German-Republican State of Missouri. This was accomplished about twelve months after his arrival there.

Intellectually and socially, Carl Schurz was one of the most attractive of men. Mr. James Bryce once said that he was the most interesting man in Washington. Though a ripe scholar and linguist, well-read in political and general history,

Digitized by Google

better informed in the history even of the United States than many of his American rivals and contemporaries, he was never pedantic, never "showy"; simple in his tastes, correct in his language and diction, and with scarcely a perceptible accent in his speech. There were few subjects—including art and music, and except perhaps science and the mechanic arts —that he could not talk about intelligently, and always interestingly. His observations on human nature were always keen, often humorous. He was not fooled by flattery. "The number of men who have 'watched my career with interest,' if you can believe them, would make a pretty good show in the census," he once said. Much of this fascination was due to his romatic and unusual experiences—first in his native land, and then in America; his part in the Revolution of '48; his struggle with poverty after his escape from Germany; his struggle to familiarize himself with a new country, its constitution, laws, literature, history, politics, and its composite people. One source of his strength and success was his quickly-acquired contact with some of the most distinguished lights and leaders. Being without pretense he was never ashamed of his ignorance, and so never hesitated to ask the meaning of any allusion, the bearing of any incident, the point of any joke, that he did not understand. If he fully comprehended the precise use of slang and if he thought it would make his meaning clearer, he employed it. To the very last he was up-to-date in every way, and his children, unlike those of so many foreign parents, could not accuse him of being a "back-number," and of "not knowing anything." While never repudiating or snubbing his German friends, he wanted to be and always was an American without a hyphen. This was one great reason why he was the foremost American-

Digitized by Google

German and German-American with world-wide fame. Both nationalities were proud of him. His German knowledge and traditions were at the service of his adopted land. He was one of the very first to introduce and advocate the conservation of our forests and was rewarded by Mr. Blaine's sneer that the American people had no use for Prussian bureaucrats.

Aside from the personal sacrifices he had made in Germany in behalf of democratic ideas and institutions in opposing what is now known as Prussianism, he was intuitively a friend and champion of republicanism. One of his earliest recollections is that of his grandfather in Germany showing him a portrait of Washington as one of the greatest men that ever lived. So much was this quality taken for granted that I do not now recall any particular utterance of his in eulogy of liberal principles. He was a great admirer and frequent quoter of Thomas Jefferson and instinctively took the anti-slavery side in the great controversy settled half a century ago.

Abroad he was a live American. Once Bismarck, after several flattering and distinguished courtesies, invited him to renaturalize himself in his native land, assuring him that he would lose nothing by it and hinting that a large place awaited him there. "Even if I'd got nothing in the United States but a mess of pottage," replied Schurz in substance, "I would not swap it for my birth-right again." The offer did not tempt him, any more than an offer of the chieftainship of an Indian tribe, which was not without its possibilities, either, so great was the gratitude of those wards of the nation for the liberality and justice of his treatment of their race while Secretary of the Interior under President Hayes.

Digitized by Google

No incident in his career, perhaps, better illustrates the sterling, unsordid, disinterested moral character of the German "Forty-Eighters,"—their deep-seated, unvarying convictions and their unshakable courage, their natural inevitable resistance to disloyal repudiation or betrayal of them, likewise their impregnable devotion to the country that gave them welcome, shelter, protection, honor, prosperity, and offered them a refuge from that Prussianism which in three-score-years-and-ten has lost nothing of its venom in hating and crushing every democratic aspiration.

Though not a believer in prohibition, nor practicing total abstinence, he, unlike too many foreigners, never resented nor disrespected any effort to discourage drinking, or to restrain or inhibit the liquor traffic. I never even knew him to indulge in the favorite beverage of his native land. In fact, he once acknowledged to me that he never liked beer, although he drank a light wine at dinner. In all things, except on his opposition to dishonesty in the affairs of government, and hypocrisy in politics, he was moderate in conduct, tolerant in speech. He seemed to be almost without any native German predilections. The nearest to it that I recall, was his saying that the German translation of Shakespeare conveyed the rhythm and the majesty of his verse better than the original English. I remember a very comical dispute at the breakfast table between himself and his wife in regard to what he called and what are generally called "French rolls." She maintained, and I thought successfully, that they were of German origin, but the French *cuisine* had stolen the credit of them. I always forgot in his presence that he was not a native American, and sometimes would carelessly, almost unconsciously refer to his native countrymen in the rude phrases that are employed to

Digitized by Google

designate them. At the opera I once referred to one of the singers as that "lager-beer Dutchman." "My friend," he whispered, looking archly at me, "I haven't the least objection to your way of putting that, any more than you have probably of being called 'a d— Yankee,' but several of my countrymen in the vicinity might not be as indifferent."

He was an "easy boss," always genial, perhaps not exacting enough, or as much as he would have been had newspaper-making been more congenial; for his subsequent success as Secretary of the Interior in the Hayes Administration, proved that he possessed pronounced executive ability. He worked best in the real, bustling, business of active politics. During the first few issues of the *Post* he planned and directed its editorial conduct, selecting the subjects and dictating their form. After having always worked independently, this was unfortunate for me, and having selected me for my reputation among Connecticut newspaper men, it was disappointing to him. But one day, for some reason, he "gave me my head," with such satisfactory results that we lived happily together forever afterward. During forty years, though we met only at long intervals, the old relations were immediately resumed, the friendship always as cordial. He was to me more a brother and a friend than an employer with the frequent antagonisms of that relation. His dignity and force of character however, always discouraged taking liberties. Among his strongest traits were his calmness and equipoise. Trifling annoyances never disturbed him. A page or two in an article I wrote on the history of financial panics dropped out before it reached the typesetters; when expressing my vexation next morning, he only laughed and said, "Pity all panics can't be as easily disposed of!" His philosophy of life always kept him

Digitized by Google

serene and sweet-tempered. An early incident revealed this to me. The destruction of a Detroit railroad station offered a glorious fire-spectacle which he witnessed from the roof of the Russell House. Next morning, opening his mail at his desk, he suddenly exclaimed, "By Jove!" He held in his hand, bills of lading, notifying him that a carload of boxes had arrived by freight and express. "No wonder I was interested in that fire," he continued, coolly, "all our household goods, our family portraits, all kinds of mementoes and keepsakes, all my letters from the front during the war, and lots of correspondence from Lincoln and other men. None of 'em can be replaced. O, well, worse things than that have happened to me." I don't remember his ever mentioning it seriously again. He seemed to have dismissed it from his mind. What was the use? No regrets or lamentations could do any good and would only make him unhappy.

A year later his youngest daughter, two years old, died after a week's illness. She was the maturest baby I ever knew. Her name was Emma Savannah, because she was born on the Christmas day that her father, a major-general in Sherman's army, entered Savannah. Her intelligent personality was felt in a room of adults. Her speech, in form, but especially in thought, was that of a well-grown, well-educated girl. One listened to her with far more respect than condescension. She even understood and enjoyed not too elaborate and sophisticated humor. It was my privilege to be one of her favorites, for she could freeze people away. But these attractions were only omens and symptoms of her fate. Unexpectedly she succumbed to an attack of brain disease. Just before expiring, on being told that I had called, she whispered, "I'm too tired to talk, but I always did like Holden." Grief like her father's is rare;

Digitized by Google

so profound that its surface was scarcely stirred. Only once did he manifest it in my presence. As we stood looking at her charming, still rosy face, with its crown of golden curls, the tears stole slowly from his eyes. "Wasn't she glorious," he exclaimed in tones and voice that might well be called thrilling, eloquent, beyond the actor's or orator's art. The next day, he was the calm, serene, dignified man, going about his daily affairs, with no further sign of the agony which he had conquered and controlled.

Though capable of great severity in his criticisms of other public men, he was as much as possible, impersonal in his condemnations. Nor was he ever visibly perturbed by severe retorts, ridicule and abuse. I never saw him irritated by attacks upon him, however undeserved or contemptible; but the ill-doing, the intellectual or gross dishonesty, of a certain type of politician aroused his ire.

In Michigan, at least, his foreign birth was something of a handicap. The native American newspaper men resented his presumption in daring to compete with them in their mother-tongue; while the German leaders were afraid of his overshadowing them.

His family life was a model; a noble husband, a fond father, and affectionate, obedient but companionable children. In her feminine traits his wife was fully his equal—devoted, domestically capable, witty, keen-minded, accomplished, cosmopolitan. Sharing his ambitions to the full, she was able greatly to promote them. Her family derivation, I fancy, was superior socially to his own. However, under her tuition perhaps, they were both unquestionally well-bred and conversant with the most exacting conventionalities. They stood that severest of all tests, one's table manners, most successfully. A daughter

Digitized by Google

of a rich Hamburg manufacturer was learning English in a London school, when she fell in love with her music teacher. She had already made him her hero, for his exploits as a Prussian Revolutionist and a fugitive with a price on his head. Her marriage was about as acceptable to her family as now-a-days would be the alliance of a wild anarchist to a Wall Street magnate. They promptly disowned her, only to be astonished and ashamed when his continental fame in this country spread to his native land,—the two had soon set out for the Land of Opportunity across the seas.

They and their two elder daughters were quickly and heartily admitted to the social privileges of Detroit, honored guests at dinners, receptions, and the various functions of that sort. This was all the more significant as their hotel life prevented them from reciprocating this lavish hospitality. I have always suspected that their failure to take a house was due to his doubt of his permanent residence or occupation in the State. Therefore his sojourn there, while decidedly impressive and grateful to those who came into intimate contact with him, was to the public merely a soon-forgotten incident.

Notwithstanding his experience in the German Revolution and the Civil War here, he was, or became, a sturdy foe to militarism. He scarcely ever spoke, much less boasted, of his military career. In a conversation with me, shortly after the election of Roosevelt to the Presidency, he spoke of that public man as one of most charming personality, but "likely if tolerated too long and too far, to be a menace to the country, because of his enthusiasm for physical force, and his robust activities." "He is," he said, "a sincere believer in war and big national armaments."

Mr. Schurz also told me of a conversation he held with

Digitized by Google

Prince Henry, brother of the Emperor of Germany, during a visit to this country. The Prince was highly elated with the enormous and elaborate war preparations Germany had then begun making, and how they soon expected to equal, if not surpass, the navy of the United States. "But your Highness," said Schurz, "*provided Germany is in the right,* in any controversy with this country the Fatherland has already the votes of millions of German origin. They are far better allies than all its fleets."

During the past six months I have often wondered *what* he would have said or thought about the attitude of some German-American citizens of the United States on the Great War. Of one thing I feel well assured, he would recognize in his old enemy Prussia the aggressor, and knowing her responsible for the war, he would be brave enough, honest enough, to speak his mind, wholly regardless of any personal consequences to himself, for a man with greater moral courage, without fanaticism, scarcely ever lived. He "always stood four-square to all the winds that blew."

Digitized by Google

Indian Legends of Northern Michigan

By John C. Wright
Harbor Springs

In the year 1800 a little girl was born on the banks of Grand River, in the vicinity of what is now the village of Muir. Her father was a noted French trader and her mother an Indian princess, or daughter of a chief. At that period the Grand River Valley was one of the most beautiful regions in the whole country, as indeed it is today, and the little girl spent many happy days playing along the shore or paddling in her birch bark canoe. She often accompanied her father on his trips, frequently going with him over portages and rivers as far as Detroit.

When this little girl was thirteen years of age her father hired two trusty Indians to take her in a canoe from Grand River to Mackinac Island, whither he had preceded her. Drifting down the beautiful river one bright summer's day they emerged into Lake Michigan and turning the prow of their little boat northward started on their long journey through this remote region. They put up a blanket for a sail when the wind was favorable, and paddled along by easy stages when it was calm. At night they slept by huge campfires, and the little princess heard many tales and legends of savage life.

She heard that at one time heaven and earth were connected by a great vine down which fairies and spiritual beings descended to the earth. Mortals were forbidden by the Great Spirit to ascend this vine, but once a young man became sick and in

Digitized by Google

a delirious state climbed up far out of sight. His aged mother was so sad at thus losing her boy that she started after him, but her added weight broke the vine and both came down in a heap. Then the Great Spirit was very angry with the people. "Now," he said, "sickness and disease will prevail amongst you, and instead of living on forever you will die when you grow old. There is only one thing left for you to do. Remember that everything that grows has some value—nothing was made in vain. Therefore you will gather roots and herbs and compound medicines and these will help you when in distress." Thus was born the medicine lodge and all who were initiated into it's mysteries were told this story in great detail, wonderfully embellished.

As the canoe proceeded on its way, its occupants caught glimpses of roving bands of savages and of deer, elk and wolves as they came down to the lake to drink. Eagles, wild geese and turkeys were seen in great numbers.

When the canoe was caught out on the lake in the darkness the Indians were guided by the stars, and one night the little girl listened with open-eyed wonderment to the pretty legend of the North Star. She had a retentive memory and remembered all these stories. The Indians worshiped her father, and did their best to keep their precious charge entertained.

Not all Indians believed in marriage, they told her. When a brave refused to wed, others said to him that he belonged to the Two Cousins. This was because, years before, two exemplary young men became very fond of one another and made a vow never to separate. They lived with their grandmother who prepared their meals and dressed their game. But one day the old woman grew weary of her work, and while the young hunters were absent, invited two beautiful maidens from

Digitized by Google

the south to enter the wigwam. When the young hunters returned she said:

"My children, I am growing old and weak. The work of dressing all the game you bring is too great a task; therefore I have asked these two beautiful young women to become your wives, which they have consented to do."

At the first the young men knew not what to say. They went about their affairs as usual and made no effort to cultivate the company of the beautiful maidens. But the latter were so pleasant all the time that finally the younger of the hunters fell in love, and the next day when he and his friend started out again to hunt, he could scarcely kill anything because he kept thinking of his sweetheart. He secured only three bear-skins while his cousin took twenty-one. Then he confessed that he intended to return home and get married.

"If that is the case, I shall leave and never set foot this way again," said the other.

His friend tried to dissuade him, but he started off towards the north.

"Although I leave you," he said, "remember, if you are ever alone at night and need a friend, you will see me up there in the northern heavens. If you ever get lost in the forest or at any time cannot find your way in the darkness, I will be there to guide your footsteps."

True to his word, he then began to mount up towards the skies, where he assumed the form of a star; and there he is to this day—the bright North Star—chasing the bear as was his wont in the days of old when he hunted through the woods of Michigan.

The other hunter was so chagrined over the loss of his friend that he pined and wasted away before he could reach home, and

Digitized by Google

became only a shadow. Ever since that day he has roamed the hills and valleys, and hides from every mortal being among the rocks and cliffs. His name is Bah-swa-way (Echo), and he passes his time by mocking and laughing at everybody.

The two beautiful maidens waited and waited for the return of their lovers, and finally in disappointment arose high in the air to watch for them from the skies. They are the Morning and Evening stars.

Day by day the little canoe advanced northward along the wild shores of Lake Michigan. One day they passed the little stream where Father Marquette had been buried. The old cross was still standing.

Not long afterwards they could see the Sleeping Bear, and the little princess listened to the story of how in the long ago a great famine had spread over the land. Longingly a mother bear and two famished cubs walked the shore on the Wisconsin side, gazing wistfully at Michigan, which in those days was the land of plenty as it is today. Finally hunger overcame timidity and the bears launched out. Nearer and nearer they approached the goal as the mother's words of encouragement urged on the weary cubs.

When only twelve miles from the land of plenty, the mother's heart was rent as she saw a babe sink. With the remaining cub she struggled to gain the beach. Two miles of slow dragging, and the second of her cherished ones sank.

The mother reached the beach and crept to a resting place where she lay down facing the restless waters that covered her lost ones. As she gazed, two beautiful islands slowly rose to mark the graves. These were called the Manitous—the home of the departed spirits.

The little princess watched the Sleeping Bear, which was

Digitized by Google

very real in those days, until they passed out of sight. After awhile they came to a most beautiful indentation of the coast line—Grand Traverse Bay. They cut across this to save many miles of travel, and camped for the night near Pine River. The little girl was not weary nor sad; she was jovial and unafraid. There was real adventure, excitement and lots of fun, too. The Indians told many amusing things. They were not stoics, sullen nor cruel. They saw humor in everything. They told their little passenger of the scheme of the old squaw who wished to appear young.

An old woman, wrinkled and decrepit, was seized by the strange hallucination that she still possessed charms sufficient to attract the young men of her village. In this belief she dressed up in her best skins and furs and sat down by her wigwam door, smiling and accosting the young braves as they passed along. Of course none of them paid any attention to her. Then some of the maidens of the tribe, noticing her foolish behavior, went to the old woman and said:

"Look here, No-ko-mis" (grandmother); "you are old and wrinkled, and your beauty has all faded like that of the dead flowers of the forest. No young man will ever be attracted to your wigwam. You may as well cease all your efforts and live quietly and peacefully, calmly awaiting the end. Your days are numbered; your beauty gone—you nevermore can be like one of us."

At these words the old woman became furious. "Be gone!" she said, to her tormenters. "I'll show you whether I am too old or not!"

Then taking a string made from basswood bark, she tied to it the lower part of one of her ears, and passing it around the back of her head, drew it taut and looped it over the

Digitized by Google

lobe of the other ear, fastening it securely. In this way she drew all the wrinkles out of her face; and oiling her hair nicely with a mixture of pounded charcoal and grease and drawing it down over the string so the latter could not show, she sat down in the glow of her campfire and waited. The soft light shining on her features which were now smooth and perfect, made her look beautiful indeed.

The first young man to pass that way was immediately fascinated by her appearance, and sat down to visit. The old woman regaled him with many stories and charmed him completely with her wonderful conversation. The next night and the next following that, found the young man again at the wigwam of the old woman; while several maidens, having heard of the strange affair, approached and gazed on wonderingly from a distance. They could not understand the situation at all.

On the third evening, however, while the old woman, beaming with smiles, was talking and making gestures, the string behind her ears suddenly snapped and her face became a mass of wrinkles even worse than before.

The young brave jumped to his feet horror-stricken and bounded out of the wigwam; while the maidens fairly rolled on the ground with laughter. The young man would probably be running yet had he not met a beautiful girl whom he captivated and then led in honor to his wigwam.

The next day our travellers reached Bear River, now Petoskey. There was no settlement on the shore at that time, but there was an Indian village at Bear Lake, the source of Bear River (now Walloon Lake). They only tarried a little while, then crossed Little Traverse Bay to the harbor on the north side, called by the Indians, Wequetonsing. Here there was

Digitized by Google

only a little high ground, and but one wigwam. Farther up the shore, however, was a very large village, the famous crooked Tree, or L'Arbre Croche of the early French. Here our friends were well received and stopped a whole day. Many stories were related, and the little princess heard the wonderful tradition of Petoskey and the discovery of the Happy Hunting Grounds.

The next day the little party started on what they supposed to be the last lap of their journey. When they arrived at Mackinac Island, the battle between the British and Americans was taking place, and the booming of cannon and the strains of martial music could be plainly heard. All was excitement. The little girl along with all the women and children of the Island were placed in an old abandoned distillery on the west side for safety. But the father of the little girl, who thought worlds of his daughter, not knowing what might happen, asked the two Indians if they would not take her on to St. Paul, Minn., where her oldest brother was conducting a trading post. At first they refused to undertake so perilous a trip, but his offer was so generous that finally they consented.

Skirting the northern shore of the lake over precisely the route traveled by Pere Marquette, they entered Green Bay, passed through the Fox and Wisconsin rivers and floated out upon the broad bosom of the Mississippi. They passed through a hostile country where at times they dared not speak above a whisper for fear of being discovered. Their adventures and experiences were many, but at last the faithful Indians and their protegé reached St. Paul in safety. Here the little girl remained a few years and then returned to Mackinac over the same route. She was adopted by the famous Madame La-Framboise and received a liberal education in French. After-

Digitized by Google

wards she taught school at St. Ignace for fifteen years. She once entertained President Zachary Taylor; knew Schoolcraft the historian, and Beaumont the famous physician; she met "King" Strang, Governor Cass and many other notables. She was at home with bishops, scholars and statesmen, and was the friend of all.

This little girl with her remarkable experiences and history afterwards became the grandmother of the writer, and related all these stories and many others to him when a lad. The little girl's name was Sophia Bailly, and at Mackinac Island she married Henry G. Graveraet, Jr., the son of a German soldier of the American Revolution. They moved to Little Traverse (now Harbor Springs), just previous to the Civil War. Their son, Garrett A. Graveraet, an accomplished musician and artist, organized an Indian company in this vicinity in response to his country's call. It was known as Company K, First Michigan Sharpshooters. Both Garrett and his father were killed in the campaign before Richmond.

The Indians were mustered into service in 1863, and with Grant crossed the Rapidan and plunged into the terrible battle of the Wilderness. After their baptism of fire they fought heroically through the desperate encounters at Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor and Petersburg and covered themselves with honor. Half their number were killed outright and the rest wounded. At the present time there is not a survivor. Their shattered remnants were among the first to enter the rebel capital and share in the great victory of the North. Although dispossessed of their property, such is the glory that our Indians helped to spread over the State of Michigan. I think we owe them a debt of gratitude and should be most considerate in our dealings with them. It may not be many

Digitized by Google

years until to see an Indian anywhere on our streets will be a rare thing. When that times comes I hope the great State of Michigan will have no regrets as to the position it has taken with reference to this vanishing race.

Digitized by Google

History of The Equal Suffrage Movement in Michigan*

By Karolena M. Fox

THE part which Michigan has played in the nation- and world-wide movement for equal suffrage seems small when compared with the activities and achievements of some of the western States. Yet it is marked by distinguishing features, and bears a most significant relation to the woman's movement as a whole,—a movement which has expressed itself in demands for educational, professional, personal, and finally political equality.

Michigan was the second State in the Union in which an equal suffrage campaign was conducted; but twenty-four years were spent in efforts to gain the power to vote even before organized work was begun.[1] As early as 1846, Ernestine L. Rose addressed the State Legislature on the right and need of women to the elective franchise, but received little encouragement until 1849.[2] That honored pioneer of the Grand River Valley, Rix Robinson, was one of the first of the State legislators to recognize women's appeals. With the other members of the constitutional amendment committee, Dwight Webb and E. H. Thompson, he reported favorably the first Senate document which provided for a suffrage amendment.[3]

*The research for this study was carried out under the direction of Professor E. R. Turner, at the University of Michigan.

1. Anthony and Stanton, *History of Woman Suffrage*, II, 229. The first campaign was conducted in Kansas in 1867.
2. *Michigan House Journal*, 1846, p. 342.
3. *Michigan Senate Journal*, 1849, pp. 66, 67, 107, 114.

Digitized by Google

Objections to such action were not wanting. They were based upon the unusualness and seeming needlessness of granting the franchise to women. The subject was greeted with ridicule and adverse criticism when again presented in 1855 by the women of Lenawee County.[4] In 1857 the legislators received the petitions with more respect and seriousness, but they did no more than render a favorable report.[5]

The climax of the first part of this movement came in 1859. In the Senate the committee on State affairs considered urgent petitions for suffrage, but regretted that it was compelled to dismiss the subject so summarily. In its opinion the questions propounded and the radical changes asked for were of such grave character that they involved if they did not insure the degradation of woman rather than her elevation.[6] In the House the action was even more radical, and the report stated that in regard to constitutional amendments in favor of universal suffrage, the committee favored extending the franchise to colored men, but was doubtful about the wisdom of extending it to women.[7]

For ten years after this decision little effort was made to revive the discussion in the Legislature. Meanwhile leaders of the women devoted all their attention to attaining educational privileges. The protest which greeted this phase of the movement was as strong as that directed against woman's political activity. The campaign was long and arguments now obsolete were carefully considered. Fears for the future welfare of women checked hasty action, but at last the work

4. *Michigan House Journal*, 1855, p. 451.
5. *Michigan Senate Journal*, 1857, pp. 95, 122, 137, 150. *Senate Document*, Number 27.
6. *Michigan Senate Journal*, 1859, p. 679.
7. *Michigan House Journal*, 1859, p. 599.

Digitized by Google

of the leaders, Dr. James A. B. Stone and Lucinda H. Stone, was rewarded when in 1869 the University of Michigan opened its doors to women, the first State university to take this action.[8]

In the midst of this agitation the State Constitutional Convention assembled in Lansing. One of the problems considered was the advisability of extending the franchise to Indians and Negroes who were citizens of the State. Besieged by petitions from over five thousand persons of whom twenty-six hundred were women, the convention was forced also to consider the question of granting the franchise to women. Such an amendment was voted on and the result published: thirty-one votes for it and thirty-four against it.[9] Nevertheless it was at this time that the first success in the suffrage movement was attained. In 1867 the Legislature granted school suffrage to the women of the State who were taxpayers.[10] The following year one hundred and twenty women voted unchallenged in the village of Sturgis and certain newspapers commented favorably on the successful attempt of the women in their demand for rights as citizens.[11]

This success and the attitude of President E. O. Haven and leading educators in other States did much to formulate public opinion favorable to the granting of both higher educational and political privileges to women. Organizations to promote coeducation and political equality were established. The Michigan Suffrage Association was formed in January, 1870, and the Northwestern Association in November of the same

8. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, May 2, 1914.
   Michigan Public Acts, 1869, I, 436.
9. *Debates of the Constitutional Convention*, 1867, II, 275, 766, 789.
10. *Constitution of Michigan*, 1867, Article 13, Section 145.
11. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, May 2, 1914.

Digitized by Google

year.[12] In this way the public mind was prepared for the serious consideration of a suffrage amendment to the State Constitution which was submitted in 1874. With the overwhelming defeat of this measure, 40,077 voting for the amendment and 135,957 against it, the women received a set-back from which they did not easily recover.[13] The State Suffrage Association went out of existence, and only a glimmer of the former enthusiasm and life was seen when in 1881 the Legislature extended school suffrage to parents and guardians of children of school age.[14]

During the thirty-five years of petition and campaign which had elapsed since the demand for equal suffrage was first presented to the legislators, it had become an issue of some importance in political affairs. Although the leaders failed to attain the desired results, they did establish a precedent which served as a stimulus to those who took up the work in 1881, and which enabled them to make the progress so notable in the second period of the history of the State movement.

Within the last thirty-five years, four characteristics of the movement have become evident: the increased efficiency of the administration of suffrage work through the State organization, the periodic recurrence of public interest in the question, the rise of opposition to suffrage among the women themselves, and the increase in the scope and importance of public service which the women are rendering to the State.

In 1884 the present Michigan Equal Suffrage Association was formed at Battle Creek under the leadership of Mrs. Mary

12. Anthony and Stanton, *History of Woman Suffrage*, I, 516, note.
13. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, May 2, 1914.
14. *General School Laws of Michigan*, 1881, p. 13.
Compare also *Public Acts*, 1881, Number 164.

Digitized by Google

Doe, president, and Governor Begole, vice-president.[15] Its legislative committee began a systematic campaign for the passage of a municipal suffrage bill. Just how much of the renewal of interest was caused by the determined efforts of this organization cannot be estimated, but when the bill was defeated in the Senate by one vote, the intensity of feeling was greater than at any time since the defeat of the amendment in 1874.[16] As was the case after 1859, a period of ten years elapsed during which the interest grew in intensity and volume until in 1893 the Legislature caught the spirit and passed a municipal suffrage bill to which Governor Begole gladly affixed his signature.[17] But trouble arose in Detroit when an attempt was made to conduct an election in conformity with the law. A test case was carried up to the Supreme Court where the decision was rendered that the Legislature had no right to create a new class of voters and the law was therefore unconstitutional.[18] Again the interest waned and after one more attempt in 1895 to gain the franchise through a constitutional amendment bill which was defeated in the House by a close majority, suffragists turned their attention to the attaining of laws for ameliorating the condition of women.[19]

It might be asked why the women of Michigan were so persistent in their determination to participate in public affairs. Michigan legislation for the protection of its women

15. Anthony and Stanton, *History of Woman Suffrage*, IV, 755.
16. *Proceedings of the National Woman's Suffrage Association*, 1894, pp. 199-202.
17. *Michigan House Journal*, 1893, III, 1911. *Senate Journal*, 1893, II, 1543.
18. *Michigan Reports of Cases Decided in the Supreme Court*, 97: 188.
19. *Michigan House Journal*, 1895, III, 2414.

Digitized by Google

and children far excelled that in some of the suffrage States.[20] Up to 1897 certain inequalities of justice did exist in property rights and the right to control children. Although the ownership of property was vested in the husband, he could not buy or sell real estate without the joint signature of his wife.[21] A widow could claim either the right of dower or the provisions of the will,[22] and was the legal guardian of the children until they reached the age of twelve, while the husband was the sole owner and controller of all property left by a deceased wife and was guardian of the children until their majority.[23] A wife could control or sell property owned before marriage, or gained by gift after marriage, but the husband could claim any earning of his wife acquired outside of the home and could sue and collect it even though it had once been paid to his wife.[24] But on all school matters, mothers had equal and corresponding rights with fathers.[25] All educational institutions in the municipalities and in the State were coeducational with the exception of a few private or denominational schools. A woman held the office of State Librarian. It is true that women were not appointed to manage the relief of the poor in any official capacity. Five men constituted the Board of Corrections and Charities. There were no women-physicians in asylums for the insane, but there were matrons in all wards for women. State and municipal boards of health

20. *The Woman's Protest*, February, 1913.
21. *Compiled Laws of Michigan*, 1897, Paragraphs 10322, 10359.
22. *Compiled Laws of Michigan*, 1897, Paragraphs 3924, 8935, 8936.
23. *Compiled Laws of Michigan*, 1897, Paragraph 8689.
24. *Proceedings of the National Woman's Suffrage Association*, 1894-1898, p. 73.
25. Compare above notes 10 and 14.

Digitized by Google

were composed entirely of men. No women were confined in the State prison except for murder.[26]

Legislative action has removed some of these legal inequalities and has corrected evils arising with the economic and industrial changes which have caused so many women to seek employment outside of the home. Laws were passed in 1895 regulating hours of labor of girls and women, the age at which girls might be employed, and improving the sanitary and moral conditions of places of labor.[27] In the same year the age of consent was raised from fourteen to sixteen years where it has still remained.[28] In 1896 the Governor appointed Mrs. Jane M. Kinney a member of the Board of the Eastern Asylum for the Insane for a term of six years. Police matrons were placed in cities with a population of more than ten thousand inhabitants.[29] The employment of women as barkeepers, servers of liquor, dancers, or furnishers of music in saloons or any place where liquors were sold was forbidden.[30] Laws were enacted also, prohibiting the use of indecent, immoral, obscene or insulting language in the presence of any woman or child within the State.[31] In 1901 women physicians were provided in asylums for the insane and homes of the feeble-minded.[32] The report of the Michigan Labor Commissioner for the same year revealed, what was well known, that while the product of woman's labor excelled that of man's, there was nevertheless a marked disparity in wages for the

26. *Proceedings of the National Woman's Suffrage Association*, 1897.
27. *Ibid.*
28. *Compiled Laws of Michigan*, 1897, Paragraph 11489.
29. *Ibid*, 1897, Sections 3491-3498.
30. *Ibid*, 1897, Section 5361.
31. *Ibid*, 1897, Section 11737.
32. *Ibid*, 1901, p. 124, No. 85.

Digitized by Google

same work.[33] A new field of service was opened to women with the creation of the office of Factory Inspector.[34] Ella A. Whipple, the first woman to hold this office, reported in 1902 that the women of Michigan had invaded the field of man's labor because they were unable to live on the wages paid for what formerly had been denominated as woman's work.[35] In 1909 two deputy factory inspectors were added to the staff to investigate labor conditions of women.[36] By the year following, a ten-hour day was established, no Sunday labor was permitted and women under twenty-one years of age were barred from occupations endangering life, health, or morals.[37] With the minimum age for child laborers fixed at fourteen, and the ten-hour day shortened to nine hours, or fifty-four hours for the week, a truer standard of justice was established.[38] In 1911 the Legislature removed the power of the husband over money earned by the wife outside of the home. Since that time "each and every married woman is absolutely entitled to have, hold, retain and enjoy any and all earnings acquired by her own personal efforts.[39] And finally in 1913 a State commission composed of one woman and two men was appointed by the Governor to investigate State conditions in order to fix a suitable minimum wage standard for women.[40]

Thus the discontent of the women in Michigan was not to to be attributed to unequal or unfair laws. Neither was it

33. *Nineteenth Annual Report of the Michigan Bureau of Labor and State Factory Inspection*, 1902, xvii.
34. *Michigan Public Acts*, 1901, p. 164.
35. *Annual Report of Michigan Labor Commissioner*, 1902, p. 162.
36. *United States Labor Bulletin*, No. 19, p. 638.
37. Hecker, *History of Woman's Rights*, p. 202.
38. *United States Labor Bulletin*, No. 23, pp. 1138 and 1140.
39. *Michigan Compiled Laws*, 1911, p. 330.
40. Detroit *Free Press*, April 18, 1913.

Digitized by Google

due as in England to there being more women than men in the State.[41] In 1874 there were 60,565 more men than women in the commonwealth; in 1884, they exceeded the women by 95,278; in 1894 by 79,439, and in 1904 they still outnumbered the women by 67,292.[42] It is necessary then, to look for some other explanation of a propaganda which has continued intermittently in the past generations, particularly in 1859, 1867, 1874, 1884, 1894, and again with accumulated force in 1908, 1911, 1912, 1913, and later. Most probably it was only the natural accompaniment of the educational and economic changes which have occurred. Trained to exercise their minds in the same manner as men, awakened to possibilities of accomplishment, freed by modern invention from old-time drudgery and time-wasting methods of housekeeping, it was natural that women should seek some channel through which they could make more effective use of their powers.

Indirectly women were responsible for much of the legislation outlined above. They could have done little without cooperation from the legislators, but much of what they have brought about was the result of systematic organization which improved every year. Attracted by the accomplishments of the State Equal Suffrage Association, other organized social and political groups of the State affiliated themselves with the central body.

Among the organizations which first recognized the value of cooperation were the State Grange and the Woman's Christian Temperance Union, which always had equal oppor-

41. E. R. Turner, *American Political Science Review*, VII, November, 1913.

42. *Michigan Census*, 1904, p. lxxxiii.

Digitized by Google

tunity for women as one of their goals.[43] At different times also, the State Association of Farmers' Clubs and the Daughters of the American Revolution formally signified their willingness to forward this work.[44] With the hearty cooperation of the Michigan Diocesan and the State Homeopathic Medical Society, the suffrage organization was able to broaden its field of activity.[45] Many educators of the State also endorsed the movement through the Michigan State Teachers' Association.[46] Finally the political parties came to recognize in the organization and the movement a powerful ally. The Prohibition and the Progressive parties even incorporated a woman suffrage clause in their political platforms in 1914.[47]

With this increase in the number of workers, there came a natural awakening of sentiment for and against woman's suffrage. Gradually the second wave of interest rose, gathered momentum through eight years of agitation and petition, and broke over the State in the campaign of 1908. This feeling was almost imperceptible in 1901, only four petitions being recorded in the legislative journals.[48] These petitions represented citizens of Hillsdale, Jackson and Ottawa counties and asked for woman suffrage with a property qualification. In 1903 citizens of Jackson County asked for women members of certain State boards, and citizens of Kalamazoo favored an amendment to their city charter permitting women who paid taxes to vote upon certain questions.[49] Through a peti-

43. *The Michigan Suffragist*, I, No. 3.
44. Detroit *Free Press*, January 24, 1900; April 6, 1913.
45. Detroit *Times*, June 3, 1912.
46. Chicago *Tribune*, October 31, 1914.
47. *The Michigan Suffragist*, I, No. 9.
48. *Michigan House Journal*, 1901, II, 988, 1385, 1569, 1624.
49. *Michigan House Journal*, 1903, II, 1156.

Digitized by Google

tion presented by Mr. Lockerby, citizens of Branch and Hillsdale counties voiced a request for the granting of suffrage to women.[50] In March, 1907, Mr. Yeomans introduced into the Senate a bill to grant to women who were taxpayers the right to vote upon questions pertaining to the raising of money by taxation in the State. Although the bill was not reported favorably, it represented a public sentiment which repeated the demand the following year.[51]

In 1907 and 1908 a constitutional convention composed of ninety-six members met to frame a new State constitution. By this time the suffragist agitation had reached such a point that the number of names on the petitions for woman suffrage received by this convention was greater than the number on the petitions for all other important issues combined,—these questions including the initiative, the referendum, prohibition and direct legislation.[52] In the debates of the convention the attitude of many was expressed by Mr. Walbridge, who said, "There is absolutely no reason why the women of this State should not have the franchise if they desire it."[53] In the public hearing which was held in Lansing, January 8, 1908, it was said that two hundred and twenty-five thousand people were represented of whom seventy-five thousand were women.[54] But when the action of the convention was taken, the measure for full enfranchisement of women by the constitution was defeated by a vote of thirty-eight for and fifty-seven against the submission of a suffrage clause. Members of the conven-

50. *Michigan House Journal*, 1903, I, 703.
51. *Michigan Senate Journal*, 1907, I, 765.
52. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, May 2, 1914.
53. *Proceedings and Debates of the Constitutional Convention*, 1908, I, 586.
54. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, May 2, 1914.

Digitized by Google

tion said that many who voted against the incorporation of the equal suffrage article in the constitution were not opposed to woman suffrage but were fearful that the new constitution would be defeated at the polls if it should contain this clause. A compromise which was made appeared in the taxpaying clause, which allowed women who paid taxes the right to vote upon local bonding issues or upon any question involving the direct expenditure of public money.[55]

The suspense which accompanied the work of the convention was but the first indication of a movement which increased in intensity with the campaigns of 1911 and 1912 and reached a high point in 1913. In 1911 the House considered resolutions relative to woman suffrage, but after reconsideration failed to pass them.[56] The same legislators invited Miss Sylvia Pankhurst to address the Senate and the House, March 24, and on her favorite subject, "Universal Suffrage," and expressed their thanks to her "who so eloquently addressed them."[57] But with the endorsement of the movement by Governor Osborn in his message to the first special session of the Legislature in March, 1912, greater dignity and a deeper significance was given to the work:[58]

Gentlemen: You are authorized and requested to consider legislation by and through which the question of an amendment to the Constitution shall be submitted to the electors of Michigan providing for giving and insuring the right of suffrage to the women of Michigan.

The history of the bill which was framed in accordance with

55. *State Constitution*, Article III, Section 4.
56. *Michigan House Journal*, 1911, 1171.
57. *Ibid*, pp. 902, 903, 920.
58. *Michigan House Journal*, 1912 (First Extra Session), p. 81.

Digitized by Google

this request reveals the increasing hesitancy of the legislators to take decisive action. It was defeated in the Senate.[59] Efforts were made to impress the members of the second special session with the seriousness of the problem by petition and letters as well as by the Governor's message. A resolution proposing an amendment to the State Constitution relative to the right of women to vote was introduced. With its passage the most intensive of all the campaigns was begun.[60] Seven months later the election was held. According to the first reports the amendment had been passed and for two weeks the women of the State seemed to enjoy political equality. Then a recount turned their victory into defeat, as an adverse majority of seven hundred and sixty-two votes was revealed.[61] Immediate action was taken to submit the question to the voters at the next election, April, 1913. Nine petitions and one protest relative to re-submission were introduced into the House.[62] A second constitutional amendment bill was passed, the campaign was resumed, and the second election was held.[63] Now, however, public sentiment swung strongly against it, and this time the defeat could not be questioned. There were 264,882 nays and 168,738 yeas reported.[64]

It was during these months of campaign that the organized opposition to suffrage arose among the women of the State. In 1913 was formed the Michigan Association Opposed to Equal Suffrage. Within five weeks the membership grew to

59. *Michigan Senate Journal*, 1912 (First Extra Session), p. 129.
60. *Ibid*, p. 41.
61. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, May 2, 1914.
62. *Michigan House Journal*, 1913, 218, 253, 294, 303, 320, 520.
63. *Ibid*, 534.
64. *Daily News Almanac and Year Book*, 1913, p. 399.

Digitized by Google

include over seven hundred men and several hundred women.[65] At the time of the election, April 1913, the association enrolled over two thousand members in Wayne County and had branches in several parts of the State, exhibiting unexpected strength in the rural communities.[66] "A dangerous foe for suffrage," said one of the newspapers, "appears with the establishment of the Michigan branch of the National Association Opposed to Equal Suffrage. The anti-organization was kept out of Michigan last fall only by the employment of Indian warfare tactics, the managers of the suffrage campaign staying under cover as far as possible and steadily discouraging the arousing of antagonisms. The showing at the polls awakened the antis whose arguments on the whole are more weighty and logical than the pro arguments."[67]

As both parties drew their arguments from literature distributed by the national associations there were few distinctive or local characteristics seen in the controversy.[68] The opponents of suffrage declared that the exercise of the franchise by women would be detrimental to the individual, the home, the State, and the Nation. Women would suffer physically from the addition of excitement to lives already overexcited. The moral effect would be even more deplorable. The ballot would bring temptation to weak women, it would deprive all of the present refining, personal influence and would cause deterioration in the moral tone of the characters

65. *The Woman's Protest*, February, 1913; Detroit *Free Press*, March 13, 1913.

66. Mrs. H. F. Lyster, President Michigan Association Opposed to Equal Suffrage, letter to the author, December 2, 1914.

67. Detroit *Free Press*, January 2, 1913 (editorial).

68. Pamphlets and leaflets referred to are circulated by the National Woman's Suffrage Association, New York, and the National Association Opposed to Equal Suffrage, New York.

Digitized by Google

of most women who participated in political life. The ballot in the hands of women, who would be educated in chicanery, cunning, and the arts of party management, would introduce new and dangerous forms of corruption. There would be danger from the votes of a certain class of women and the unstable proletariat vote would be increased.[69] By nature woman is not fitted for political life. Unreliable, inconsistent, easily influenced, she could not be a vital help to the community politically. Furthermore, the granting of the ballot to women would be a veritable opening of Pandora's box in every home. A new strain would be placed upon the family relations, resulting in the disintegration of the family unit. As stated by the venerable Cardinal Gibbons, "Woman suffrage will tend to increase this searing social evil, divorce. For woman suffrage will tend to bring about moral looseness, discord and dishonor in the sacred family cricle."[70] The close affiliation between suffragists and socialists, which the former had never repudiated and which had always been asserted by the latter would present a serious problem in State government.[71] Students of history know that the extension of suffrage has often been but a step from too great liberty to the power of a tyrant.[72] Moreover, the granting of suffrage to women would introduce a terrible risk into the life of the State, because once given it would be unalterable, and women would not be able to enforce their votes by bearing arms.[73] Women would naturally vote with their male relatives and

69. *Bibliotheca Sacra*, 67: 335-346.
70. Detroit *Free Press*, March 31, 1913.
71. Mrs. H. F. Lyster, letter to the author, December 2, 1914.
72. Detroit *Free Press*, February 10, 1913.
73. *The Woman's Protest*, February, 1913.

Digitized by Google

the result would be a multiplication of laws which could not be enforced.[74]

It was asserted also that there was little need of argument when the majority of women, especially of the better classes, did not desire an extension of the franchise beyond that which they already possessed and did not exercise.[75] Women could not improve the government of the State, in which they were already represented fairly by the men.[76] "Man's government is just," they said, "the State laws are inclusive, progressive and fair to women. In all contests women are given the preference, and they are the most favored in all the laws."[77] There were those, too, who foresaw danger to the nation in the fact that the individual woman was advancing at the expense of the race. All self-respecting women of the State viewed with apprehension the militant methods employed by prominent suffragists of this country, the inevitable injection of the race problem into modern society through the enfranchisement of thousands of ignorant foreign and Negro women, and the destruction through party strife and petty jealousy of the spirit of sisterhood which had been fostered and strengthened through years of effort.[78]

On the other hand, the champions of equal suffrage pointed with pride to the modern woman, alert to her opportunities for exerting her influence in the larger household, the community, and physically able to bear her share of the burdens. A prominent scientist maintained that from a biological point of view it was evident that not only would the proper and

74. *Ibid.*
75. *A Protest* (Leaflet).
76. Detroit *Free Press*, March 30, 1913.
77. *Ibid.*
78. Detroit *Free Press*, March 31, 1913.

Digitized by Google

adequate rearing of children and care of the household not prevent the modern woman from entering public life and taking part in a wide range of activities outside the home, but on the contrary it would absolutely demand that she should do so.[79] Would the physical strain in attending the casting of the ballot and the enforcing of pure food legislation be greater than that now experienced in the fighting of disease contracted through use of contaminated food stuffs? It was pointed out that the home was no longer isolated. Every department of a woman's household was now regulated or controlled by officials in politics.[80] If a woman would fulfill her traditional responsibility to her own children, she would have to bring herself to use the ballot,—the latest weapon of self-government.[81] That a radical change had come over American domestic conditions did not affect the natural instincts of woman. She was still the woman with the selfsame powers, capabilities and desires. The only difference was that today these functions found their expression under different conditions and under different auspices.[82] It was not uncommon to hear of women sacrificing their very lives in service for the wounded and the oppressed. "If," said a member of a constitutional convention, "they can go into the haunts of degradation and vice on errands of mercy, if they can sacrifice themselves in this way and be respected by the vilest of men,—can they not go to the polls along with us and still escape contamination?"[83]

It was a poor argument that women did not want to vote.

79. Dr. Woods Hutchinson, *That Biological Argument* (Leaflet).
80. *The Justice and Expediency of Woman Suffrage* (Leaflet).
81. Jane Addams, *Why Women Should Vote* (Booklet), p. 20.
82. *Why Man Needs Woman's Ballot* (Booklet), p. 7.
83. *Debates of Michigan Constitutional Convention*, 1897, II, 771.

Digitized by Google

Seventy-five years ago women did not go to college. Was this indifference an unanswerable argument in favor of illiteracy for women?[84] It had been a simple historical fact that the majority of women had never rebelled, no matter how unfair the conditions experienced. Every improvement in the condition of women had been secured not by the general demand from the majority of women, but by the arguments, entreaties, and "continual coming" of a persistent few who were habitually regarded with disfavor by most of those whom the proposed reforms were to benefit.[85]

It was maintained too that in the present age many other forces were at work which were responsible for the increasing evil of divorce; and the granting of the privilege to direct legislation against many of the existing conditions of graft and vice would tend to save the home, not destroy it. "Women have not invaded politics, politics have invaded woman's sphere," said Bishop Charles D. Williams of Detroit.[86] The influence upon the State of the extension of suffrage to women should not be over-estimated. It was not believed that the ballot in the hands of women would serve as a panacea for all existing evils, but it was thought that it would hasten corrective legislation. The legislators of suffrage States had shown much greater readiness to protect women from over-work than the legislatures in most non-suffrage communities. Three suffrage States had passed laws limiting the day's labor to eight hours, while no non-suffrage State had yet done so and

84. *The Unanswerable Argument Answered* (Leaflet).
85. *Women Do Not Want It* (Leaflet). An official vote taken under the auspices of the University Woman's League, November, 1914, was as follows: for suffrage, 191; against, 44; neutral, 65.
86. Detroit *Free Press*, April 2, 1913.

Digitized by Google

only five States had a nine-hour limit.[87] As only two per cent of the women of the State were criminals, the influence of their vote was not to be feared.[88] Furthermore, it was asserted that the larger the number of voters, the less would the disturbing forces of bribery and fraud be likely to operate. Add one hundred per cent to the voting population of this country and you would decrease the proportionate power of the disturbing forces operating to overcome the simple law and the interest of the nation which should direct and control its government.[89]

These discussions re-echoed in every home and crept into church and school. The defeat of the amendment drew from Hon. Woodbridge N. Ferris the exclamation, "I would sooner have been defeated as Governor of Michigan than that the suffrage amendment should have been lost."[90] Instead of gaining power by this campaign the women had lost a cherished privilege. The legislators enacted the law that henceforth only qualified voters of the State should have the power to propose constitutional amendments through petitions which should be signed by at least ten per cent of the State's legal voters.[91] Deprived of this means of procedure, the women gave their attention to civic and social problems.[92]

87. *The Wage Earning Woman and the State* (Booklet), p. 17.
88. Detroit *Free Press*, April 6, 1913.
89. *Century*, 48: 605-613.
90. Detroit *Free Press*, April 6, 1913.
91. *Compiled Laws of Michigan*, 1913, p. 780.
92. Mrs. Clara B. Arthur of Detroit, former president of the State Equal Suffrage Association, has been instrumental in the establishment of public baths, playgrounds, and a tuberculosis hospital. Grand Rapids leaders have been working to obtain playgrounds, tuberculosis hospital, a mother's pension bill, and free clinics for children.

Digitized by Google

Such has been the course of the feminist movement in Michigan. It began in the earliest years of the history of the State and may be regarded merely as one phase of a movement which has been developing in most parts of the English-speaking world. In Michigan, probably, there has been a mingling of the radical spirit of western communities and the more conservative spirit of the East. The results have been in accord with this, for while educational equality has been established, and legal advancement has been exceptional, political progress has been slow, going no further than the obtaining of local equality in matters pertaining to the direct expenditure of public money.

Digitized by Google

Coming of the Italians to Detroit.

By Rev. John C. Vismara, D. D.
Kalamazoo

If we seek a record of the first Italians who settled in Detroit, we will be obliged to go back to the days of De La Mothe Cadillac. His lieutenant, Alphonse De Tonty, was none other than Alfonso Tonti, brother of the famous Henri De Tonty (Enrico Tonti) the companion and faithful aide of La Salle on his voyages of discovery, and a son of Lorenzo Tonti of Gaeta, Italy, the founder of the famous Tontine system of life insurance. Alfonso Tonti, the lieutenant and for a while great friend of Cadillac, became commandant in Detroit in the year 1704 and held the post until 1706. He was again made commandant in 1717 and remained in office until 1728. It was this Italian who foresaw the great Detroit of today as early as 1702, for it was he who wrote at that time, "The ground is very good there for building eventually a large town." And his vision was correct.

But the purpose of this paper is not to give a record of the names of the Italians who lived in Detroit. Surely, since they were great mariners, many of them must have followed the examples of their fellow countrymen, the great Columbus, and the Cabots, and Amerigo Vespucci, and Verrazzano, and have come to this land, and have also penetrated into the interior especially in the region of the Great Lakes. This statement is upheld by the story told by the early Italians of the colony (Lagorio, for instance) who say that there were a number

Digitized by Google

of them employed in the Great Lakes' traffic at the time they settled in Detroit.—The purpose of this paper is rather to trace the origin of an effort to establish a colony of Italians in the City of the Straits. Individuals may settle a place, but unless their enthusiasm urges them to call others to enjoy the advantages they enjoy and help them bring their community to the fore, they exercise but a perfunctory role in the development of that community. As to Detroit, I can say that there was no effort made to attract Italians to the city in the beginning; it was only at a later date that this was done. I have been fortunate enough to find still living in Detroit the man who is the pioneer of Italian immigration, and he tells me that up to the date of his arrival, 1855, no effort had been made to attract others of his nation to the city.

The Italians came to Detroit for the same reason for which they came to America,—to make their fortune. They came to America, and incidentally to Detroit. Poverty drove them from the land of their birth, and they thought the New Land would give them opportunities they had not at home. They were not warriors who came to conquer, they were not capitalists who came to invest their money, they were laborers, mostly ignorant men and women whose sole capital consisted in a sturdy pair of arms and a determination to get enough of this world's goods to sustain them and their families. They were usually young men and women, just married, who desired to start their families in the new land of promise. They had no idea of the extent of the territory of the new land, and I remember in this connection how, as late as 1907, when I was in Italy prosecuting my studies for the priesthood, a poor farmer, hearing that I was from Detroit in America, asked me to remember him to his son in Portland, Me. He was very

Digitized by Google

much surprised to hear how far Detroit was from Portland.—They came from Italy to America in quest of their fortune, and they traveled from town to town until they found a favorable place, and they settled there. These men came in small groups, from different sections of Italy, and having found a good place, some of them wrote back to their friends or relatives and invited them over to share with them their good fortune. In view of this you can understand how it is that we are able to distinguish three periods of immigration in the Italian colony of Detroit. The first is the period of immigration from that maritime nation the Genoese; the second, the period of the Lombard immigration; the third, the period of the Sicilian immigration.

At the head of the Italian immigration to Detroit, we must put the Lagorios, who came at the invitation of Mr. Forni, a Swiss-Italian, in 1855. Nicholas and Angela Lagorio came from Ponte Giacomo in the Province of Genoa, Italy, sailing from the city of Genoa in 1854. After six weeks' journey they landed in New York. There they remained three months, and proceeding westward came to Detroit. On their arrival in 1855 they met the following families which were already there:

Vitale Forni, who invited them to the city;

Giorgio Raggio, a Genoese, who conducted a bar and boarding house;

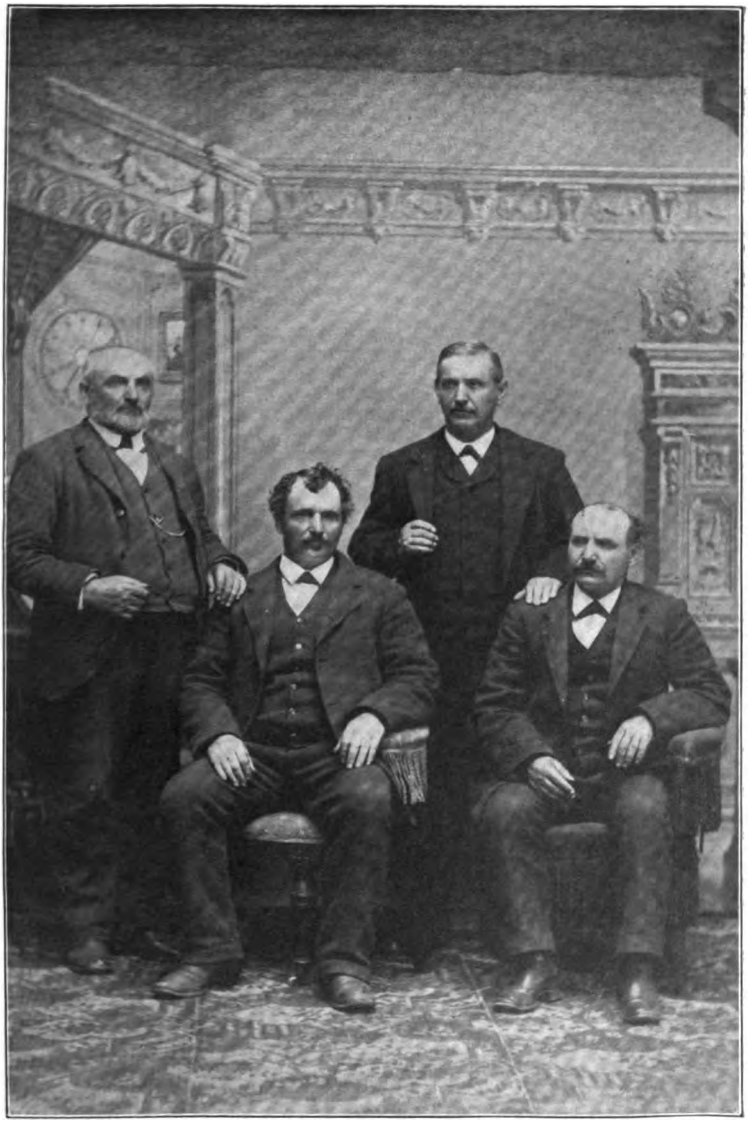
Pasquale Palmieri, a Neapolitan, who conducted an artist studio;

Mr. and Mrs. Cavari, who conducted a bar and boarding house;

Mr. Bozzevi, a Genoese;

Mr. Mazzoli, a Tuscan, a maker of statues;

Digitized by Google



THE LAGORIOS

Thomas John August Domenic

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Francesco Cardoni, a native of Como, an importer of statues and afterwards a maker of monuments;

Giovanni Arcetti.

The Lagorios settled on what is now the corner of Russell Street and Forest Avenue, and, having purchased a cow, they went into the milk business. They had taken with them their two sons, John and Thomas, of whom Thomas is still alive, and living near his original homestead on Russell Street. Thomas is an old man now and entirely blind. After three years their other two sons, Domenic and August, came to join them. August subsequently went to South America, but Thomas, John, and Domenic married and settled in Detroit. Thomas had only one daughter, now dead. Domenic was blessed with thirteen children, all of whom with the exception of Edward, are dead. Domenic purchased quite a bit of real estate on what is now the corner of Division and Rivard Sts., and conducted a boarding house. He died on March 10, 1904. John too has gone to his reward.

Of the Lagorios I can say in all truth that they did a wonderful work for the cause of the Italian immigration to Detroit. Their charity knew no limits, and they were always glad to do a favor. Thomas and Domenic especially were very solicitous and their homes were always open to the poor immigrant, and their services were always at his disposal. From what I have been able to gather from the survivors of the original Lombard group in Detroit, it was the charity of the Lagorios that saved the day for them and made possible the influx of this most desirable class of immigrants to the city. When the second group of Lombards arrived in 1881, they were practically penniless after a few days' stay at the Wayne Hotel opposite the old Michigan Central Depot. Evidently by

Digitized by Google

this time the immigration had become quite perceptible, for we find that Lagorio went to the proprietor of the hotel to inquire if any Italians had come since his last visit. He was answered that in the hotel there were some people who spoke a peculiar language. Lagorio investigated, and finding them to be Italians he took them to the home of his mother. This was a very opportune visit on his part, for some of these poor families had about reached the end of their resources. The Lagorios were very kind to these new arrivals. They gave them a home, furnished them with eatables and supplied them with cooking utensils, and charged them nothing for all this, telling them to pay when they should be able to do so. These and many other like acts which they were always doing to help their countrymen greatly endeared the family to the colony, and there was great sorrow and weeping when Domenic passed away on March 10, 1904; and his funeral from San Francesco Church was largely attended by those whom he had befriended in time of need and to whom he had given a start on the road to prosperity in the New World.

From the arrival of the Lagorios we can say that the immigration to Detroit started. The colony was joined soon after by a certain Mr. Chelli. Then, in 1865, Stefano Garbarino arrived with his family. They came from Monte Bruno in the Province of Genoa, and engaged in the carpenter trade. Stefano is still living, and his family of six children are engaged in different lines of work.

At about the same time came John Schiappacasse. He sailed from Genoa on February 2, 1865, made the voyage in a sailboat and landed in New York on April 4, 1865. John sent word to his two brothers, Louis and Joseph, and they arrived in 1870. Joseph was the father of fourteen children of whom

Digitized by Google

LOUIS SCHIAPPACASSE (Detroit)
Early Italian Immigrant

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

nine are still alive. He died in Italy on August 23, 1908, on the occasion of a visit to his old home. Of the three brothers Schiappacasse, Louis is perhaps the best known. He walked from New York, and when he arrived in Detroit he started a fruit stand on Woodward Avenue. His business was a success, and it was not long before he started a second and then a third stand, until he had seven stands. These stands he put in charge of the Genoese who were coming to the city quite regularly by that time, and he attended to the furnishing of the stands and to collecting the receipts. Now being obliged to buy in large quantities he realized that he received better prices than when he had bought in small lots, and consequently that his profits were greater. Therefore he determined to sell out his stands and go into the wholesale fruit business, knowing that he would have the stand merchants for his customers. His new venture was a success and his business increased to such an extent that at the time of his death, which occurred June 29, 1916, he was reputed one of the largest wholesale fruit merchants in the city of Detroit and very wealthy. He left a family of seven children, one of whom, Joseph, is a lawyer with offices in the *Free Press* building. Joseph was the first of the Italians to receive a college education, he having made his studies in Detroit College, now the University of Detroit.

One of the original Italians, who was in the city of Detroit even before the Lagorios came in 1855, was Francesco Cardoni. On his arrival he engaged in the statue importing business, and soon won an enviable reputation as a connoisseur. He had his offices near Grand Circus Park. The money he made he invested in real estate north of the City, north of the Caniffe Road. He was reputed wealthy at the time, but the crisis of

Digitized by Google

the Cleveland administration involved him heavily. In order to tide over for a while, he decided to open a monument factory on what is the corner of Fort and Wayne Streets. In this factory he employed the Comascans, people from Como, his native Province in North Italy, and he was doing well. But even this could not save his investments, and he lost all, dying a poor man in 1904. Cardoni was an able man, a man of great foresight. He was very much respected in the community and looked up to as a man of superior ability. He had great faith in Detroit, and even when things looked darkest for him, he insisted that some day in the near future Detroit would be a great city and would extend as far north as his property reached. He was laughed at for his optimism, but he held fast to his views, and surely events proved the truth of his predictions, for the property that once was his is now looked upon as most desirable and the city extends even farther north. Had he been able to survive the crisis he would have been extremely wealthy, but this was not to be for him. He left a widow and one son, Francesco. In his day Mr. Cardoni was looked upon as the champion of the cause and the name of the Italians of Detroit. He was always proud of his nationality, and at the same time a most loyal American citizen. He wrote a number of articles in defense of his fellow Italians. It is to be regretted that a scrap-book which he compiled and which contained much valuable information concerning the Italians of Detroit has been lost. Mrs. Facchinetti who lives on a piece of what was the old Cardoni farm, is a niece of his, and came to Detroit to keep house for him. She is the mother of a large family of children of whom one is now a Sister of St. Joseph in Kalamazoo, another a teacher in the

Digitized by Google

Russell School in Detroit, and a son who is a student in the engineering department of the University of Detroit.

In 1868 Tommaso De Niccola came to Detroit, and he found the following families: Pasquale Palmieri, Antonio Dondero, Rinaldo Panicali, the Lagorios, Muti, Vincenzo Vecchio, Parozzi, Andreoli, Paolo Bozzalla, S. Garbarino, J. Schiappacasse, F. Cardoni, Bricchetto,—all of whom are dead except De Niccola and Thos. Lagorio. Among them we must also number Francesco Panuzzi (Frank Panett) a Civil War veteran, a native of San Giovanni in Calabria. Mr. Panett still lives. After these we find Gabriel Chiera, founder of the Parisian laundry and the Oriental hotel, and one of the prominent business men of Detroit today. He came from Chicago after the fire of 1873. He started a little candy shop and factory opposite the Public Library, and subsequently the laundry. Some of the other Italians who were in Detroit at this time or shortly afterward are: Francesco Landucci, Costantino Zappelli, Pietro Poli, Alessandro Bussolino, Antonio Pastorino, Arcangelo Luisi, Luigi Arata, Antonino Marchese, Carlo Viviani, Giuseppe Pechini, Domenico Cherubini, Casimiro Paganelli, Pietro Martelli, Giovanni Cavagnaro, Louis and Joseph Schiappacasse, and Umberto Garbarino.

The Lombard immigration dates back to 1880. It came from Cuggiono, a town of about 15,000 inhabitants some 20 miles from Milan in northern Italy. The first families were:

Mr. and Mrs. John Colombo and their son Frank;

Mr. and Mrs. John Oldani and their daughter Caroline;

Mr. and Mrs. Louis Cucchi and their daughter Louise;

Mr. and Mrs. Enrico Biotti;

Mr. and Mrs. Angelo Gualdoni;

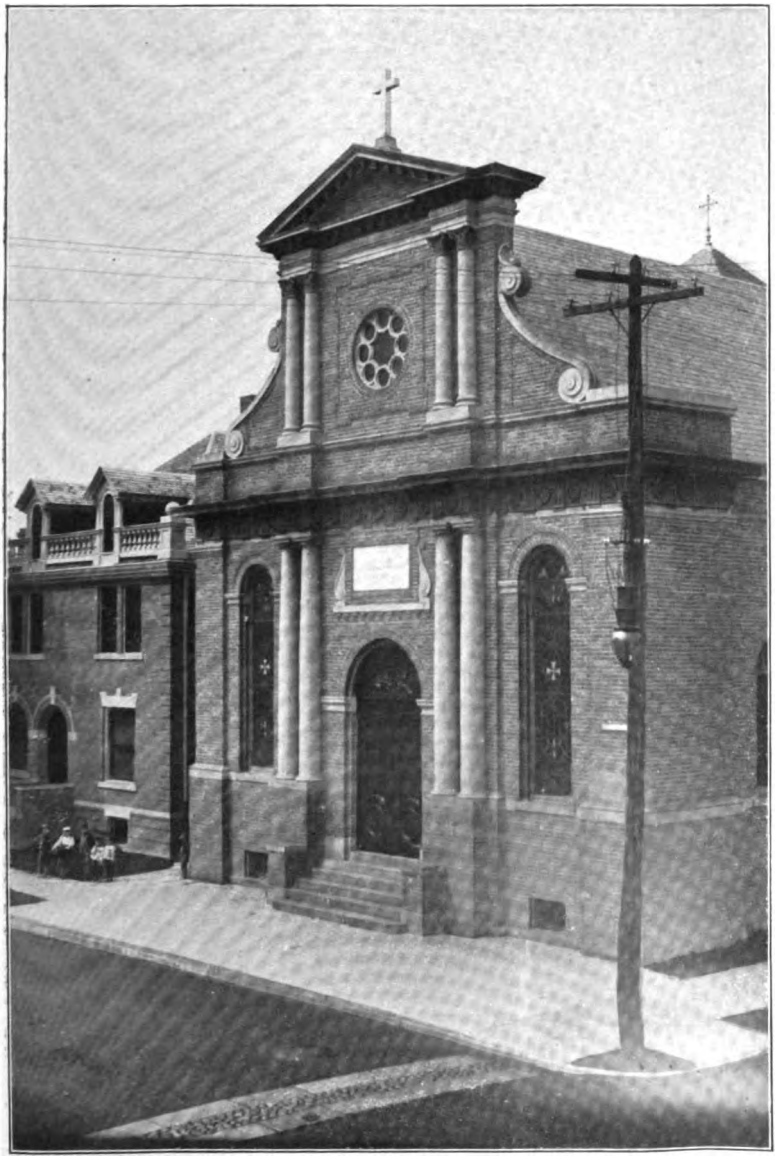
Digitized by Google

Mr. and Mrs. Enrico Re';

Mr. Louis Moroni, and Mr. Pietro Cucchi.

They sailed from Havre in France on September 27, 1880, and arrived in New York on the old French liner "Labrador" on October 16, 1880. The trip was arranged by Pietro Cucchi who had worked for a while in Germany and Switzerland, and the party had never heard of Detroit. Attorneys Louis and Paul Colombo, whose offices are in the Whitney Building, Detroit, sons of John Colombo, one of the original group, were able to give me information as to the reason why their parents settled in Detroit. Peter Cucchi had arranged for the journey and had bought tickets through to Calumet, Mich. On arriving in Detroit they were met by a statue vendor (Mazzoli) and by him they were directed to the Garibaldi restaurant on Monroe Avenue. Having had their meal, they were walking leisurely along the street while waiting for train time to come, and were talking their language. During the course of their walk they happened to pass in front of Pasquale Palmieri's studio, and he, hearing them, opened a window on the second story and in Italian asked them to come up. He inquired of them who they were, and hearing that they were going to Calumet, he told them they had better stay in Detroit, and that they would never regret their choice. They heeded his advice and stayed. They were directed by him to Peter Martelli who conducted a boarding house, and from this place they went to Lagorio's home on Division Street. This original group soon wrote home about their fortunes in the New World, and soon they were joined by another group of Italians from their native town. These left Havre on January 3, 1881, and arrived on January 18, 1881, aboard the French liner "Gascoyne." They were:

Digitized by Google



SAN FRANCESCO CHURCH AND RECTORY, 1898

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Mr. and Mrs. Paul Berra and their son Caesar;

Mr. and Mrs. Angelo Vismara and their daughter Rose;

Mr. and Mrs. Angelo Merlo and their son Louis;

Mr. and Mrs. Battista Calcaterra;

Mr. and Mrs. Giuseppe Gualdoni.

These families arrived in very straitened circumstances, and it was only through the kindness of the Lagorios, who received them in their home, that they were able to get a start in the New World. The Lombards started working as section hands for the Michigan Central Railroad. Their pay was very small and they were able to save but little. So they quit the section and began working around Detroit as trench-diggers and hod-carriers. They were very industrious and frugal and all of them began laying plans for buying homes, an ambition they all realized. As their families grew up they saw to it that their children received an education, and three of the families, John Colombo, Carlo Oldani (a more recent arrival), and Mrs. Angelo Vismara, gave their boys a college education in the University of Detroit. It meant sacrifice for them but they made it willingly, and they were very proud when they saw their three boys graduated, as Attorney Paul P. Colombo, Dr. John P. Oldani, a physician, and the writer, a priest.

The third period is that of the Sicilian immigration. The original group was made up of natives of Terrasina, Province of Palermo, Sicily. These families came to Detroit from Cleveland, where the fruit business in which they were engaged was bad at the time. They came in 1883. They were:

Mr. and Mrs. Filippo Curro';

Mr. and Mrs. Mariano (also called Mark) Curro', a brother to Filippo;

Digitized by Google

Mr. and Mrs. Giuseppe Bova;

Mr. and Mrs. Giacomo Comella;

Mr. and Mrs. Giacomo Tantanella.

In their native home they were fruit merchants, and on coming to Detroit they did quite a business in the city and in the neighboring towns of Pontiac, Royal Oak and Windsor. These families drew others, and the colony grew apace. The Curro' Brothers now have a thriving wholesale fruit business on the Eastern Market.

From these three groups the colony grew. In 1897, Fr. Francis Beccherini, the newly appointed pastor of the Detroit Italians, took up a census to see if he had a sufficient number of people to warrant his building a church for them, and he found:

62 Families of Lombards;

54 Families of Genoese;

60 Families of Sicilians;

14 Families of Neapolitans;

8 Families of Tuscans;

9 Families of Venetians.

In all 207 families.

In this census he found that he had: 1,103 adults; 630 children—1,733 individuals.

In April, 1873, the Italians founded a Mutual Aid Society: "Societa' di Unione e Fratellanza Italiana." It was organized with nineteen members: Pasquale Palmieri, Antonio Dondero, Vitale Forni, Francesco Landucci, Costantino Zapelli, Pietro Poli, Alessandro Bussolino, Giuseppe Pechini, Casimiro Paganelli, Rinaldo Panicali, Domenico Cherubini, Arcangelo Luisi, Paolo Bozzalla, Giovanni Arcetti, Giovanni Lagorio, Vincenzo Vecchio, Nicola Lagorio, Antonio Lagorio, Carlo

Digitized by Google

Viviani. The purpose of the society was to give aid to the Italians especially in times of sickness. They now give a weekly subsidy to the sick member of $5 a week, and will send the Society's physician if the member so wishes, free of charge. The society is in a most flourishing condition. The requisites for membership are that the applicant be an Italian and of good character. Any member of the society who shall have been condemned by a criminal court for a crime is expelled from the society, and anyone with a criminal record is excluded from becoming a member. Provisions were also made by the society whereby a handy sum of money would be given the widow or relatives of the deceased besides the weekly subsidies given during the illness. Needless to say, this society, as also the "Lombarda" which was organized a little later for Lombards only, proved of incalculable benefit to a great many.

The Italians wanted a Church. Fr. Anthony Svenson of St. Elizabeth Church, and Fr. Ernest Van Dyke of St. Aloysius Church (Detroit), on account of their long stay in Italy where they had made their clerical studies, had become well acquainted with the language, and they took care of the spiritual and at times the temporal needs of these early settlers. Many are the kind acts done by these good priests for the early Italians and their memory lives in the minds of the grateful recipients of their kindnesses.

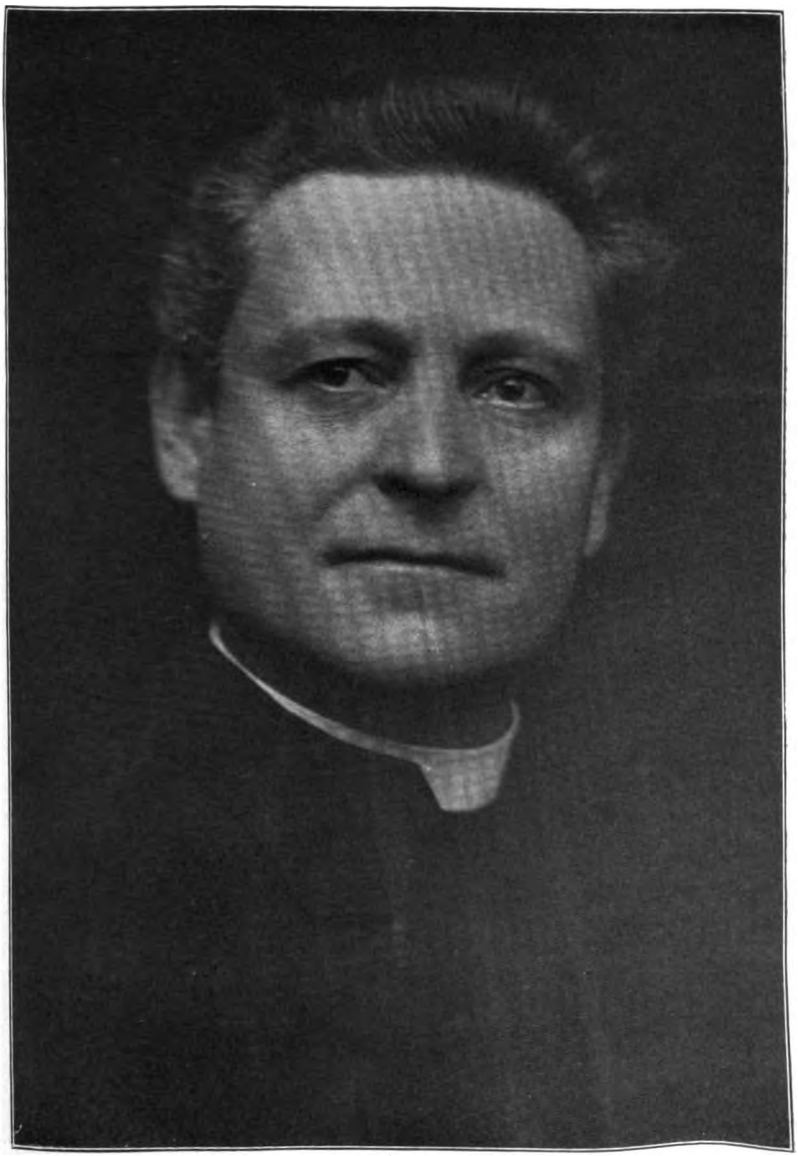
The first Italian priest to come to Detroit was Fr. Molinari. He came in the year 1894, and stayed six months. The number of people did not seem large enough as yet to warrant a resident pastor. About the middle of 1895 Fr. Benjamin Berto' came. He said the first mass in the old C. M. B. A. hall on Rivard Street, between Watson and Erskine Streets.

Digitized by Google

This place was used for services for two Sundays, and then having fitted out as a chapel a former Sunday School on St. Joseph Street, they transferred the parish services to that place. Fr. Berto' stayed for a year and a half, and on October 31, 1897, Fr. Francis Beccherini, the present pastor, came to take charge. In his inspiring way he promised the people a new Church within a year if they helped. They responded generously, and in less than a year property was secured on the corner of Brewster and Rivard Streets, and the foundations for the new building were excavated. The corner-stone of the first Italian Church in Detroit was laid by the Rt. Rev. Mons. Edward Joos, then Vicar General of the Diocese of Detroit. Archbishop (later Cardinal) Sebastian Martinelli, then Apostolic Delegate of the Holy See to the United States, dedicated the Church in November, 1898. This was a gala day for the Italians, for at last their dream of a Church had come true. About two years later a residence was built for the pastor on land adjoining the Church property. In 1912 a school was started in connection with the parish, the old frame building belonging to the Sacred Heart Parish being rented for the purpose, and this is being occupied at the present time. There are now 457 children in the school, and they are being taught by the School Sisters of Notre Dame, a brilliant teaching Order whose mother house is in Milwaukee, Wis.

The building of the Church was a great boom for the Italian immigration to Detroit. They now came from all parts of Italy, and the Sicilian immigration especially increased by leaps and bounds. The Sicilians settled on the south side of the city, on Fort, Congress, and Larned Streets East. Fr. Beccherini opened the school for them in 1902 in a building

Digitized by Google



REV. FRANCIS BECCHERINI

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

loaned him for the purpose by the Jesuit Fathers. The school opened with an attendance of 97 children, and they were taught by the Sisters of Charity. This added work proved too much for Fr. Beccherini, and so in 1905 he asked the Jesuits if they would mind taking charge of the Italians of their section of the city. They promptly responded by calling Fr. D'Orsi, a priest of their Order, and placing him in charge. Fr. D'Orsi remained for a year, and was succeeded by Fr. Kiefer, S. J., who remained until Feb. 14, 1907, when Fr. John Boschi, S. J., the present efficient pastor took up the work. Services were being held at that time in what is the Sodality Chapel of Sts. Peter and Paul Church, and Fr. Boschi thought it best to build a Church for his people. He accordingly set out to gather funds, and through the cooperation of the Fathers of the Jesuit Order, notably through the efforts of Fr. Stritch, S. J., who gave several lectures for the benefit of the new church, he was able to gather enough to buy property on the corner of Hastings and Fort Streets. Here he put up a pretty building, calling it Holy Family Church. The corner-stone was laid on Dec. 5, 1909, and on Nov. 20, 1910, Holy Family Parish was formally started. These are at present the only two Italian parishes in Detroit.

At the present time there are between 30,000 and 35,000 Italians in the city of Detroit, and the peculiar thing about the Detroit colony, a thing that distinguishes it from all the others, is that it has representatives from all parts of Italy. A number of them served as soldiers in the Spanish-American War, and they have now a number of soldiers in the regular army of the United States. Those that remain in Detroit soon become citizens of the land and I can safely say there are none prouder of their citizenship. The colony has also at the present time

Digitized by Google

many prominent business and professional men, and news is distributed by the two Italian newspapers *La Voce Del Popolo* and *La Tribuna,* two weeklies. There is also an Italian consulate in Detroit, Mr. Pietro Cardiello, the Consul, having come in November, 1899, and the consulate having been opened on Jan. 1, 1900.

If the present prosperity of the colony can be attributed to any one man in particular, that man is Fr. Francis Beccherini. The good he has done for the Italian citizenry of Detroit would well deserve to be written of in a book. He has been all to all, a spiritual father and a friend in temporal needs. There is nothing he has left undone, from caring for their souls to getting work for them. He never considers a request as being too frequent or too insistent; to see others happy seems to be his one aim in life. It was he who instilled the idea of higher education in the minds of his people, and he has tried ever to create in them a love for the higher things of life. He is proud of his people and with pride points to their achievements, and he is too modest to take any of the credit to himself. No one is more pleased at the success of his boys than he. He is indeed a friend, a moulder of men, of whom Our Country can well be proud. In recognition of his work among the Italians he was knighted by the Italian Government, but he will not wear the title.

These are the principal items which I thought would be worthy of record as regards the history of the Italian immigration to Detroit. The Melting Pot of America can well include them and the fusion of their sturdy blood in our national life will be for the good of our glorious Land.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MARQUETTE AT ST. IGNACE DE MICHILIMACKINAC, 1673, STARTING TO EXPLORE THE MISSISSIPPI

Digitized by Google

FATHER MARQUETTE AT MICHILIMACKINAC*

BY HON. EDWIN O. WOOD, LL.D.
NEW YORK CITY

THE name of Jacques Marquette is one that will ever be associated with the history of Mackinac. One of a family of six children, he was born June 1, 1637, in the "celebrated old hill town" of Laon, France. He came of a family which was prominent in the history of Laon a century before the discovery of America by Columbus and apparently his father's home was one of wealth as well as of distinction. From his mother he inherited that strong religious nature and from his father those qualities of the soldier which made him the successful soldier of the Cross in the wilds of the New World. Educated in the Jesuit College at Nancy he early yearned for the life of the missionary and when not yet thirty years of age found himself at Quebec, in 1666. By physique he was fitted for the school rather than the Indian mission, and the extreme hardships of forest life were to limit his work to only nine years.

Until 1668 Marquette studied the Indian languages, under the instruction of Father Druillettes. In that year he was appointed to the Ottawa country where, we are told, he "founded a Mission on the southern side of the Sault Ste. Marie, the earliest in what is now the State of Michigan. Here he was joined by Father Dablon, and in September, 1669,

*A chapter from Vol. I of Mr. Wood's forthcoming *Historic Mackinac.*

Digitized by Google

Marquette was sent to La Pointe to take the place of Allouez, who had other work to do."[1]

Marquette himself tells the story of his work at La Pointe, in a letter to the Superior of the Missions,[2] and most significant for his later work are his words about the Illinois Indians and his desire to establish a Mission among them. It had already been planned that he should do so as soon as he could be relieved at La Pointe and he therefore learned all he could about those people from the Indians who came to La Pointe. He says:[3] "With this purpose in view, the Outaouaks gave me a young man who had lately come from the Illinois, and he furnished me the rudiments of the language, during the leisure allowed me by the savages at La Pointe in the course of the winter. One can scarcely understand it, although it is somewhat like the Algonquin; still, I hope by the Grace of God, to understand and be understood, if God in his goodness lead me to that country."

That Marquette had clearly in mind the intention to explore a "great river" of which he had heard as flowing through the country of the Illinois, appears from his statement[4] that "when the Illinois come to La Pointe, they cross a great river which is nearly a league in width, flows from north to south, and to such a distance that the Illinois, who do not know what a canoe is, have not yet heard any mention of its mouth. . . . . It is hard to believe that that great river discharges its waters in Virginia, and we think rather that it has its mouth in California. If the savages who promise to make me

1. Winsor, *Cartier to Frontenac*, p. 199.
2. *Jesuit Relations*, LIV, 169, 195.
3. *Ibid*, LIV, 187.
4. *Ibid*, LIV, 189, 191.

Digitized by Google

a canoe do not break their word to me, we shall explore this river as far as we can, with a Frenchman and this young man who was given me, who knows something of those languages and has a faculty for learning the others. We shall visit the Nations dwelling there, in order to open the passage to such of our Fathers as have been awaiting this good fortune for so long a time. This discovery will give us full knowledge either of the South Sea or of the Western Sea."

Disturbances among the Indians at La Pointe were soon to end the Mission there and bring about the founding of a new Mission at Michilimackinac. The Sioux, the "Iroquois of the North" as they are called by Dablon who gives an account of these troubles,[5] were at war with all nations "in consequence of a general league formed against themselves as against a common foe." The Ottawas and Hurons at La Pointe became embroiled with them during Marquette's stay there. Murders were committed on both sides. Both Ottawas and Hurons concluded it would be safer to move than to risk battle, and began to migrate the following spring, the Ottawas to Manitoulin Island, and the Hurons to "that famous Island of Missilimackinac, where we last winter began the Mission of St. Ignace."

Dablon explains:[6] "Their purpose was to repair to that land where they had already dwelt in times past, and which they have reason to prefer to many others because of its attractions and also because its climate seems to be utterly different from that of the surrounding regions. For the winter there is rather short, not beginning until long after Christmas,

5. *Jesuit Relations*, LV, 169, 173.

6 *Ibid*, LV, 173.

Digitized by Google

and ending toward the middle of March, at which season we have witnessed here the new birth of spring."

In the same report Father Dablon sets forth at length the attractions of the Island for the Indians and its advantages for a Mission:[7] "It is situated exactly in the strait connecting the Lake of the Hurons and that of the Illinois [Michigan] and forms the key and the door, so to speak, for all the peoples of the South, as does the Sault for those of the North; for in these regions there are only those two passages by water for very many nations, who must seek one or the other of the two if they wish to visit the French settlements. This circumstance makes it very easy both to instruct these poor people when they pass, and to gain ready access to their countries."

The Indians were attracted to the Island waters especially by the abundance of fish. They regarded the place as being in a peculiar sense the home of the fish. "This spot is the most noted in all these regions for its abundance of fish," says Dablon, "since in savage parlance, this is its native country. No other place, however it may abound in fish, is properly its abode, which is only in the neighborhood of Missilimackinac." Indeed these waters contained fish not common to all the region: "besides the fish common to all the other Nations there are here found three kinds of trout; one, the common kind; the second, larger, being three feet in length and one in width; and the third, monstrous, for no other word expresses it. Now, they are so abundant that one man will pierce with his javelin as many as forty or fifty, under the ice, in three hours' time."

These advantages had attracted to the Island and its vicinity

7. *Jesuit Relations*, LV, 157-167.

Digitized by Google

most of the Indians of the region excepting those who had been dispersed by fear of the Iroquois. The Indians now at Green Bay had formerly lived on the mainland to the south of the Island. A part of the Indians now at the Sault had occupied lands to the west in the vicinity of the present city of St. Ignace; "and the rest," says the *Relation,* "also regard that region as their country for passing the winter, during which there are no fish at the Sault."

Dablon tells us that "the Hurons lived for some years on the Island itself, taking refuge from the Iroquois. Four villages of the Ottawas had also lived in these regions. But especially those who bore the name of the Island and were called Missilimackinac, were so numerous that some of them still living declare that they constituted thirty villages, and that they all intrenched themselves in a fort a league and a half in circumference, when the Iroquois elated at gaining a victory over three thousand men of that Nation, came and defeated them."

The abundance of fish and the excellence of the soil for Indian corn strongly attracted the Indians, for whom these were the chief articles of food. The return of the tribes to the Island and vicinity was in a real sense a home-coming. The Indians, "seeing the apparent stability of the peace with the Iroquois, are turning their eyes toward so advantageous a location as this, with the intention of returning hither, each to his own country, in imitation of those who have already made such a beginning on the Islands of Lake Huron."

This happy circumstance tended to concentrate the Indians and make the vicinity of Mackinac Island a convenient center for missionary work. "The Lake, by this means," says Dablon, "will be peopled with nations almost from one end to the

Digitized by Google

other,—which would be very desirable for facilitating the instruction of these tribes, as we would not be obliged, in that case, to go in quest of them two and three hundred leagues on these great Lakes, with inconceivable danger on our part."

As we have seen, Dablon specifically states that "we" began a mission on Mackinac Island "last winter"; that is, the winter which Marquette spent at La Pointe, 1670-71, since Dablon is writing in 1671. He now explains again that "to promote the execution of the plan announced to us by a number of savages, to settle this country anew,—some of them having already passed the winter here, hunting in the neighborhood,—we have also wintered here, in order to form plans for the Mission of Saint Ignace, whence it will be very easy to gain access to all the Missions of Lake Huron when the nations shall have returned each to its own district."

We get a glimpse of the work of this Mission on the Island even before the arrival of Marquette. Says Dablon:[8] "We consecrated this new Festival by the Baptism of five children, conferring it with all the ceremonies of the Church in our chapel. God makes use even of children for the salvation of children. In the case of one of those whom we baptized, no sooner had it been born, in the heart of the forests, than all the other children, although hardly able to speak, could find no end to their congratulations, and rejoiced with it, one telling it again and again that it would be baptized at Missilimackinac, as it really was."

In the spring of 1671 Marquette left La Pointe to follow his Indians. On the way he stopped at the Sault, where he spent a little time with his old instructor Druillettes, now in

8. *Jesuit Relations*, LV, 167.

Digitized by Google

charge there. On leaving the Sault, Marquette went either to Mackinac Island or to Point St. Ignace.

"It has been held by some historians," says Dr. Thwaites,[9] "that St. Ignace Mission was always located upon the mainland, to the north of the Island, where is now the little city of St. Ignace, Michigan, which contains a monument erected on the supposed site of the old chapel. That the Mission was first upon the Island and probably within the present village of Mackinac, a careful reading of the *Relations* should convince any one. That it was afterward moved to the mainland, to the St. Ignace of today, there can be no reasonable doubt. It is reasonable to suppose that the removal took place in the year after Marquette's arrival. . . . Quite likely the island, at first resorted to because of its safety from attack by foes, was found too small for the villages and fields of the Indians who now centered here in large numbers; and, moreover, was found difficult of approach in time of summer storms, or when the ice was weak in spring and early winter. The long continuance of peace with the Iroquois removed for the time all danger from that quarter, and events proved that they had made their last attack upon the tribesmen of these far western waters." According to the same authority, "it was probably midsummer when Marquette and his Hurons, after slowly threading their way between the forest-clad islets which stud the northwest shore of Lake Huron, finally arrived at the Island of Michilimackinac."

Referring to the Island in Marquette's day, Dr. Thwaites says:[10] Mackinac Island is a beauty spot today. . . . But in the days of good Father Marquette, Michilimackinac

9. Thwaites, *Father Marquette*, p. 105.
10. *Ibid*, pp. 107-109.

Digitized by Google

was indeed an earthly paradise. The sky hereabout was unusually clear; light breezes, wafting over the wide waters, brought relief in the warmest days; the air was freighted with the odor of the balsam; the Island was heavily wooded, chiefly with cedars, beeches, oaks, and maples, presenting a pleasing variety of form and color, when seen from the highest bluffs, which, rising over three hundred feet above the straits, gave to the missionary a far-reaching view of land and water almost incomparable."

"Eastward, but over the edge of the horizon, his Ottawa friends were encamped upon the Great Manitoulin Island, with Father André as their priestly counselor. Northeastward, a long and tortuous journey by canoe, but only fifty miles away in a bee-line over the tops of the trees, he could from his vantage-point almost see the Sault, where he had lately left Father Druillettes at his hopeless but beloved task. But to the west no doubt his eyes most often wandered. Over the waters of Lake Michigan he saw in fancy rise the land of the Winnebagoes, the Pottawattomies, and the Mascoutins; the land where Father Allouez, whom he had succeeded at La Pointe, was still laboring for the salvation of the forest clans; the land where flowed the Mississippi, upon whose banks he hoped to discover new nations to whom might be told the fruitful story of the Cross."

Dr. Shea does not seem to take the view of Marquette's sojourn on the Island, though admitting that a mission was "already in a manner begun" on the Island the year before Marquette came. Curiously, he uses the word "Mackinaw" to cover Point St. Ignace. "Mackinaw," he says,[11] "where

11. Shea, *Discovery of the Mississippi*, p. lxi.

Digitized by Google

they [the Hurons] now rested, was a point of land almost encompassed by wind tossed lakes. Stationed in this new spot, Father Marquette's first care was to raise a chapel. Such was the origin of the Mission of St. Ignatius, or Michilimackinac, already in a manner begun the previous year by missionary labors on the island of that name."

Winsor places Marquette in 1671[12] "among the Hurons on the north shore of the Straits of Mackinac, where they had stopped in their flight, and here Marquette founded the Mission of St. Ignace."

Father Christian Le Clerq, a Recollet, writing about 1691, speaks of the Mission "of Michilimackinack Island";[13] on which Dr. Shea comments: "The Mission was not on the Island but on the north shore," and cities Hennepin's "clear and explicit" statement about his arrival at Missilimackinac in 1679, that "Missilimackinac is a point of land at the entrance and north side of the strait."[14]

In the careful words of Judge Edward O. Brown:[15] "It is impossible to tell with absolute certainty even on the closest investigation, whether it was on the Island of Mackinac, or on the mainland, known now as Point St. Ignace, that Father Marquette and his Indian flock first established themselves. It may have well been that the rendezvous was made on the Island, but that it was intended from the first that the permanent settlement would be on the mainland, where communica-

12. Winsor, *Cartier to Frontenac*, p. 202.
13. Shea's edition, II, 105.
14. Shea's edition of Hennepin's *Description de la Louisiane*, p. 97.
15. Brown, *Two Missionary Priests at Mackinac*, p. 11.
See also Shea's discussion, in the *Catholic World* for March, 1877, pp. 273-274; *also* Marquette's letter in *Jesuit Relations*, LVII, 249.

Digitized by Google

tion with other points would not be at times altogether cut off by waters too stormy for the canoes, which were their only craft, to venture upon. In 1672, at all events, a settlement had been made at the present site of St. Ignace,—a chapel had been built surrounded by the cabins of the Indians, and the whole village enclosed within a stockade for better protection against enemies."

We have no account of Marquette's work during his first year at Mackinac, but of his second year we possess detailed knowledge in a letter written by Marquette himself in 1672 to Father Dablon.[16] He makes no mention of having changed the location of an original Mission. It is clear from his letter that Marquette and his Mission were meeting with a promising degree of success. The Hurons "began last year [1671] a fort, enclosing all their cabins." They had come regularly to prayers and listened attentively to Marquette's instructions. "Having been obliged," he says,[17] "to go to St. Marie du Sault with Father Allouez last summer, the Hurons came to the chapel during my absence as regularly as if I had been there, the girls singing what prayers they knew. They counted the days of my absence, and constantly asked when I was to be back; I was absent only fourteen days, and on my arrival all assembled to chapel, some coming even from the fields, which are at a very considerable distance." In his opinion the minds of the Hurons at this Mission "are now more mild, tractable, and better disposed to receive instructions, than in any other part."

Nevertheless, he hints to his Father Superior the great ambition that lay closest to his heart: "I am ready, however,"

16. *Jesuit Relations*, LVII, 249ff.
17. Shea's translation, *Discovery of the Mississippi*, p. lxii.

Digitized by Google

he says, "to leave it in the hands of another missionary, to go on your order to seek new nations toward the South Sea, who are still unknown to us, and to teach them of our great God whom they have hitherto not known." From the pen of a well-known writer[18] on Mackinac we have the following graceful tribute to Marquette at this stage of his work when about to set out upon his great voyage of discovery.

"One bright summer day we [the writer and her party] sailed to Point St. Ignace, where the little church, with its spire cross, keeps watch over the Indian village. Many points of this new continent of ours possess historic interest, but few of our busy people are aware that around Point St. Ignatius, in the Straits of Mackinac, cluster ancient traditions and legends worthy to be crystallized into enduring fame by the poet's pen and the painter's brush. When the stern Puritans were enforcing their doctrines on the barren shores of New England, and protecting themselves carefully in little villages on the edge of the great wilderness, never dreaming of penetrating its depths, the French missionaries were following the courses of the western rivers, and planting the cross of Christ a thousand miles towards the setting sun.

"In the year 1670, the celebrated Père Marquette, advancing westward through the wilderness, carrying the good tidings of salvation to the red men, entered the Straits of Mackinac through the western gateway, and beached his canoe at the old Indian town, on what was then called Iroquois Point. Here he planted the cross, and rested some days among the friendly Indians, who listened with curiosity to

18. Constance Fenimore Woolson, "Fairy Island," in *Putnam's Magazine*, July, 1870, pp. 63-64.

Digitized by Google

the tidings that a Savior was born for them afar off towards the rising sun,—a Savior who gave up His life on the cross that they might be saved, to meet him in the land of good spirits beyond the clouds.

"The woods on both sides of the Straits, and the Islands lying between the gates, were filled at this time with Indian villages, for game was abundant, and the deep water around Fairy Island was called the 'home of the fishes.' Day after day the canoes assembled at Iroquois Point, and the young missionary saw his congregation grow, as, standing by the rude cross, he preached to them the glad tidings of great joy.

"Encouraged by his success, Père Marquette erected here a log chapel; and soon the sound of a little bell echoed through the forest, calling the new-made converts to their devotions. Earnestly devoted to his work, speaking no less than nine different Indian tongues, fiery in his eloquence and warm-hearted in his love, is it any wonder that Marquette became the idol of the red men who thronged his chapel, learned his prayers, and, kneeling on the beach, received the sacred symbol of salvation upon their dark foreheads in the sparkling waters of the beautiful Straits.

"The next year, Marquette and his companions erected a college within the enclosure, the first institution of the kind west of New England. Here he gathered the children together, and instructed them in the truths of religion, hoping thus to reach the hearts of the fierce warriors, who, adorned with reeking scalps, assembled to hear the words of peace.

"In 1672, while Marquette was thus engrossed with his dusky converts, he was called upon to join an expedition through the far West, in company with Joliet, another member of that self-sacrificing band of Jesuit missionaries whose ad-

Digitized by Google

ventures outshine the wildest pages of romance. Their object was to explore the course of the Mississippi River, then supposed to flow into the Gulf of California; and, with that implicit obedience which rules the Order, Marquette prepared to leave his resting place and move onward through the pathless forest. On a bright May morning, the boats containing the missionaries were started down the Straits towards the western gateway, accompanied by a numerous flotilla of canoes filled with sorrowing Indians. It is recorded that Père Marquette sat shading his eyes with his hand, looking back earnestly at the little chapel of St. Ignatius, which he was never more to see."[19]

"At the western gateway, Marquette arose in his canoe, and, extending his arms over the water, gave a parting benediction to the silent Indians, who sat motionless until the last boat had disappeared into Lake Michigan, and then returned sorrowing to their island homes."

Marquette had been appointed by Father Dablon to accompany Louis Joliet, whom Talon, the Intendant of New France, had recommended to Governor Frontenac as "a suitable agent for the discovery of the Mississippi." Joliet, eight years younger than Marquette, was born at Quebec, the son of a wagon-maker. He early resolved to be a priest, but became a fur-trader. We have seen him, in 1669, on his journey to the copper mines of Lake Superior and on the Straits newly discovered by him between lakes Huron and Erie. He was a warm friend of the Jesuits. On December

19. This is an error, according to Winsor, *Cartier to Frontenac*, p. 244. Speaking of the return of Marquette and Joliet, he says: "Leaving Marquette at Mackinac, in much need of rest, for he had been grievously ill on the return trip, Joliet passed on to the Sault Ste. Marie."

Digitized by Google

8, 1672, "the intrepid explorer beached his craft upon the strand of Point St. Ignace, and, embracing his priestly friend, placed within his eager hands the fateful message which was to link their names upon a page of history." The *Relation* says of this voyage that "they had frequently agreed upon it together."[20] Joliet was at Michilimackinac all that winter, and together they sought all the information it was possible to obtain about the new countries they were to visit.

Of these two friends at the Mission of St. Ignatius, Dr. Thwaites has given us a pleasing picture.[21] "Marquette," he says, "was of a gentle, joyous disposition, ever looking upon the bright side of life, and burned with that zeal which has through all time inspired the martyrs of religious faith; to him no experiences could be distasteful that were endured for the glory of the church. Joliet appears likewise to have been imbued with youthful enthusiasm, and was strongly in sympathy with the aspirations of his missionary comrade; but, as a man of the world, he carefully calculated the means employed, and whereas Marquette sought merely to widen the realms of Christianity, he in his turn was mindful of fame and of official preferment in case the exploration were successful. Together, they completely represented the buoyant, vigorous spirit of their time—Marquette, the idealist, but thirty-six years of age; and Joliet, the man of affairs, aged twenty-eight."

Were it our purpose to sketch the larger subject of western discovery and exploration, we would now follow these friends and their companions to the Mississippi, where, gazing rap-

20. *Jesuit Relations*, LVIII, 95. For Joliet and his relation to Marquette, *see* Shea's edition of *Charlevoix*, N. Y., 1900, Vol. 3, p. 179 n.

21. Thwaites, *Father Marquette*, p. 138. *See* Dablon's appreciation of Joliet, *Jesuit Relations*, LIX, 89.

Digitized by Google

turously upon the great river, Marquette experienced, as he says, "a joy that I cannot express."[22]

They explored the river to some distance below the mouth of the Arkansas, satisfying themselves that it emptied not into a western sea but into the Gulf of Mexico. In a little more than four months they had paddled their canoes over two thousand miles, met numerous strange tribes and mapped and described their discoveries. Joliet returned to Montreal, but on the way his canoe was upset, causing the loss of all his manuscripts of the voyage. This left Marquette to be practically the sole narrator and in the popular mind long the hero of the expedition.

Marquette after recovering from a serious illness set out again, but in 1675 worn out with his great exertions, death overtook him while he was trying to reach his Mission at Michilimackinac. "Feeling the approach of death," says the writer above quoted,[23] "the dying man's thoughts turned to his little chapel in the Straits, and he expressed a wish to rest under its walls, where the shadow of the cross he had raised might fall upon him. Loving hands carried him to the

22. For Marquette's journal of his first voyage, see *Jesuit Relations*, LIX, 87-163; Shea, *Discovery of the Mississippi*, pp. 3-52; *Mich. Pion. and Hist. Colls.*, XXI, 467-488. For the unfinished journal of his second voyage, together with Dablon's account, see *Jesuit Relations*, LIX, 165-211; Shea, *Discovery of the Mississippi*, 53-66; *Mich. Pion. and Hist. Colls.*, XXI, 488-494. Parkman gives a clear and appreciative account in *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West*, pp. 60-82. For an interesting phase of these explorations see a paper by L. G. Weld, *Joliet and Marquette in Iowa*. Mr. George A. Baker, Secretary of the Northern Indiana Historical Society, has contributed an important geographical paper on *The St. Joseph-Kankakee Portage. Its location and use by Marquette, La Salle and the French voyageurs.*

23. Woolson, *op. cit.*, p. 64. See Dablon's account in *Jesuit Relations*, LIX, 193-205.

Digitized by Google

canoe, and all speed was made toward the Straits; but death overtook them, and the patient eyes closed without again beholding the beloved cross of St. Ignatius. They buried him on the banks of the river, which still bears his name; but when the Indians of the Straits heard of his last wishes, they assembled a vast fleet of canoes, and paddled swiftly down the lake after the body of their good father. On reaching the river, they inclosed the simple coffin in robes of choice furs and beadwork, and then, in solemn procession, they turned back towards the Straits, joined ever and anon by delegations from other tribes, all pressing to do honor to the holy man. As the flotilla entered the sunset gate, it was met by all the island Indians; and as they neared Point St. Ignatius, the missionaries in charge came down to the beach, clad in their vestments, and singing the funeral chant, while the coffin was silently borne ashore on the very spot which the good father's foot had first pressed five years before."

It was not however until after many years that the document containing this information came to the knowledge of scholars. Over a century later, in 1821, Father Richard visited what he supposed to be the resting-place of Marquette, on the northern shore of Lake Michigan near Ludington, where Marquette had died in 1675.[24] Not until more than half a century after Richard's visit was Marquette's real resting-place found. The story of this discovery is closely connected with the discussion about the situation of Marquette's chapel, whether on Mackinac Island or at Point St. Ignace. As told by Father Hedges in his book on Father Marquette:[25]

24. *Walter March*, p. 22, note.

25. Hedges, *Father Marquette*, pp. 88-90. For details, see Father Jacker's long and excellent account, showing the great care

Digitized by Google

"Mr. Murray [of St. Ignace] being determined to add a large garden plot to his yard, began to clear away the trees and brushwood adjoining his home. When the work had been completed, there appeared, to his great astonishment, the outlines of a building's foundation. Mr. Murray was a devout Catholic and knew the history of the region, and was fully cognizant of the traditions of St. Ignace concerning Marquette and the old Mission of St. Ignace. Divining that he had struck on some relic of importance connected with the old Mission, he sent for Father Jacker, and together they made a careful investigation. Both being satisfied that they had actually discovered the site of the old Mission, Mr. Murray, at Father Jacker's request, left the clearing undisturbed, till documents and information could be obtained from Montreal and elsewhere to fully establish their surmise as a fact; then was set on foot a systematic and scientific investigation, the outcome of which was to establish beyond a doubt the fact that they had not only discovered the site of the old Mission of St. Ignace, but also Marquette's grave, the very box in which his bones had rested, and portions of the bones themselves. In course of time all that was found of Marquette's remains, save two portions of bone which belonged to an arm which were given to Marquette College at Milwaukee and are there lovingly and piously preserved by the Jesuit Fathers, was interred in the very grave from which they were taken, and in

used in the researches for identification; it is contained in Shea's "Romance and Reality of the Death of Father Marquette and the Recent Discovery of the Remains," *Catholic World*, March, 1877, pp. 276-281. Compare Mr. Murray's letter, in Hedge's *Father Marquette*, pp. 98-107. See also the contribution by the Rev. George Duffield, in *Mich. Pion. and Hist. Colls.*, II, 134-145.

Digitized by Google

the year 1882, the citizens of St. Ignace erected a modest monument to mark the spot."

On September 1, 1909, was unveiled the Marquette Statue on Mackinac Island. It is fitting to quote here the closing words of the address delivered by Mr. Justice William R. Day of the Supreme Court of the United States, on that occasion:

"Upon the statue which marks Wisconsin's tribute, in the old Hall of the House at Washington, are inscribed these words: 'James Marquette, who with Louis Joliet discovered the Mississippi River at Prairie du Chien, Wisconsin, July 17, 1673.' Were we to write his epitaph today, we might take the simple words, which at his own request mark the last resting place of a great American, and write upon this enduring granite the summary of Marquette's life and character,—'He was Faithful.'"

In the words of Rev. T. J. Campbell, S. J.,[26]: "The name of quette will ever be venerated in America. You meet it everywhere. There is a city named after him, and a county, and a township, and a river, and several villages, in Michigan, Wisconsin, Kansas and Nebraska. His Jesuit brethren of the twentieth century have built a Marquette University in Milwaukee, which rejoices in the possession of some of the relics that were given to it when the grave was opened at Pointe St. Ignace." It would be well for the youth of today to ponder well the fact that with all his great achievements, Marquette, at the time of his death, was only thirty-eight years old.

26. See Father Dablon's fine tribute in *Jesuit Relations*, LIX, 207; also that of the Rev. T. J. Campbell, S. J., in *Pioneer Priests of America*, III, 182. For several good sketches in addition to the references in this chapter, see C. I. Walker "Father Marquette and the Early Jesuits of Michigan," in *Mich. Pion. and Hist. Colls.*, VIII, 368 ff, and an article entitled, "F. James Marquette, S. J.," in *Catholic World* for February, 1873, pp. 688-702.

Digitized by Google

Congregationalism as a Factor in the Making of Michigan

By Rev. John P. Sanderson, D.D.
Chicago

THE factors which constitute the making of a commonwealth are diverse. Historically, the primitive type is one of adventure; sometimes, mingled with religious zeal. The outposts are first established. Military occupancy and governmental control and direction follow. The home-seeking pioneer cuts down the forests, breaks the fallow ground and establishes a home. Society develops with small beginnings in limited groups in natural centers. Commercial interests immediately evolve. Religious and educational life takes on form and organization. Economic, social, political, religious and educational forces are interlaced and interwoven into the making of the fabric which we call the state or commonwealth—delimited in its area and determined in its extent by the relation it bears to the commonwealths represented in the larger fabric of the union of states of which it is a component part.

The history of a commonwealth takes cognizance of all these factors and relates their genesis, progress and mutual relation in the evolution of the state. They are in fact inseparable factors mutually influencing each other and determining the character of the whole. The commercial development and the religious life of a commonwealth are bound together. Social and educational progress go hand in hand. Each is markedly

Digitized by Google

and potentially influenced by the other. This law of action and reaction needs recognition in the consideration of any single contributing factor. Its elimination is impracticable were it attempted. If attention is focussed upon one factor at a time it must be in full recognition that such factor is indissolubly bound up with other factors, influencing them and being influenced by them. In the social fabric we are constructing in the twentieth century the unity of all contributing factors becomes more and more apparent.

In this paper, we are considering the religious factor in the development of a commonwealth, and this only in a limited expression. The religious history of Michigan is composite in its character. It comprises various streams of influence which have given character and quality to the spirit and life of the State. These streams have risen in different eras of its history and from various sources, and have significantly changed the history and the character of the State. It is the province of this paper to determine or indicate what special religious and educational contribution has been made to Michigan from the stream of Congregationalism. It is with some modesty and yet with very earnest conviction that I essay this task.

With modesty, for I recognize at once the delimitation which the religious and educational influence undergoes when I confine myself to the bounds of influence exerted by one religious denomination, but this is the task to which I have been summoned, and I have only to say to our Presbyterian, Methodist, Baptist, Episcopalian and to our Roman Catholic friends—"Go to and do likewise!" With earnest conviction, for I am very clear that Congregationalism has had, is having, and will increasingly continue to have a very large

Digitized by Google

and potential influence in the making of this great peninsular Commonwealth.

Historically, other religious forces antedated the coming of Congregationalism. The great explorers, Marquette, LaSalle and the Jesuit missionaries planted Catholic missions, and the early prophecy was for a French Canadian State; later there came large numbers of Scotch Presbyterians, a considerable colony of Quakers; then the intide of a large New England population which would have given Michigan a more positive Congregational type had they not been men and women of a second generation whose parents had settled in western New York in the days when our fathers in New England thought Congregationalism should not pass beyond the Hudson River. These young men and women, the sons and daughters of New England fathers and mothers, came to Michigan from the strong Presbyterian centers of New York, and especially from the region about Buffalo, Rochester and Utica, and soon became leaders in the Presbyterian Churches of Detroit and other Michigan towns. No adequate estimate therefore of the influence of Congregational life and thought upon the State of Michigan can be made without fullest recognition of the New England strain which found expression in the religious life of early Presbyterianism in the State. The types of Presbyterian and of Congregational life were so kindred that the organization of Congregational Churches was for many years regarded as unwise, impracticable and a breach of Christian and denominational courtesy.

Later, as the State developed, and especially after the Civil War, there was a large influx of population from Canada, where Congregationalism has always had a relatively small following. So far as this population was of Presbyterian

Digitized by Google

origin, it together with the Scotch Presbyterian element materially modified the original Presbyterian character, so that in time it became distinctly differentiated from the Congregational type. The Methodists were the first of the Protestant forces on the ground in the city of Detroit; followed by the Baptists, Presbyterians and Episcopalians. These four, with the Congregationalists, have formed the major portion of the Protestant forces of the State. When Michigan became a State, in 1837, there were very few churches of the Congregational order and most of these had originally been organized as Presbyterian Churches. Organized Congregationalism in Michigan dates back to October, 1842. It was not until two years later that the First Congregational Church of Detroit came into being.

The history of Congregationalism, through the period almost exactly coterminous with that of Michigan's statehood, is ample justification of its initiation as a new evangelical force in the Commonwealth, for from the small beginnings of eighty years ago there has developed a potential religious factor, with three hundred churches, thirty-five thousand communicants, with property valued at three and a quarter million dollars, and with annual current expenses of a half-million dollars and benevolent gifts of $70,000. But streams of influence are not defined or measured by statistics. These poorly express the results of Congregational influence in the making of Michigan. Unless Congregationalism has made some distinctive contribution to the character of the Commonwealth it has failed in its mission. The main interrogation then remains, "What has been the distinctive character of Congregationalism in Michigan and how has it affected the development of the Common-

Digitized by Google

wealth?" To this inquiry I make answer, in four distinct lines:

In democratizing the life of the State;
In promoting higher education;
In broadening religious thought;
In promoting social order.

I am not for a moment assuming that these lines of development are confined to Congregational influences. Anyone familiar with the history of the State as outlined in Cooley's *Michigan* cannot fail of gratitude for the important part played in the early part of the State's history by that Roman Catholic patriot, Father Richard; or for the large initial movement given to our educational system by the Presbyterian father Rev. John Monteith. All communions have exerted large and beneficent influence. But Congregationalism came into Michigan with a well defined history back of it and with commanding ideals of a true democracy rooted in its life and thought. I turn then to these four lines of influence:

I.—In democratizing the life of the State. Congregationalism in Michigan had its origin in the profound conviction that a Christian Church could determine its own affairs independent of external control. It began its life when freedom was in the air. Those were the days of Kinsley S. Bingham, Member of Congress, Governor of the State, and United States Senator; and of James G. Birney, the gentleman and scholar and anti-slavery candidate for the presidency of the United States. The Rev. John P. Cleveland, who was the Presbyterian Bishop of Michigan at that time, gave kindly welcome to young Congregational ministerial recruits from New England, but counseled them to unite with the Presbytery, as Congregationalism was declared to be unsuited to the lawless West.

Digitized by Google

The statement challenged both the orderliness of Michigan society and the courage of our missionaries. It was discredited by the rapid evolution of Congregational Churches, notwithstanding the serious handicap of their late coming. Scores of Presbyterian Churches became Congregational and the self-governing and independent Congregational Churches, together with their Baptist brethren of like Congregational polity, provided a distinct democratic force in the religious life of the State.

The passing of the years has very quietly but very steadily wrought certain interdenominational influences, so that Congregationalism has become less independent and its several members more closely coordinated in a common program, while other ecclesiastical orders have become increasingly democratic in their form. The Congregational type, whether under its specific name, or that of Baptists, Free-Baptists, and Disciple, has impressed itself positively upon the political life of the Commonwealth. It has found expression in every movement which has brought the government of the State nearer to the people, and in that conception of citizenship which extends its privileges to all races and to both sexes. The democracy of the Congregational form breeds democracy wherever it touches the springs of action in church or state. It trusts the individual. It believes in government, but in the least possible government, and that constituted government should be flexible, elastic and responsive in its changing organization to the voice of the people. It has found natural alignment and leadership in the great movement which has made Michigan a prohibition State. In the future evolution of the State this democratic individualism will always be found to be a pioneer and initiative influence in its further democratization. More

Digitized by Google

than any other polity it breeds leaders in the advance lines of public thought.

II.—In promoting higher education. The dominating principle of Congregationalism places responsibility upon the individual, and calls upon him to do his best for himself and for mankind. The educational progress of this country has been resultant of such individual initiative. Such Congregational individual initiative is especially noteworthy in the promotion of higher education in Michigan. The founder of Olivet College, Father Shipherd, was also the founder of Oberlin College, and an original Congregationalist. As early as 1801, David Bacon opened a school in Detroit in his own home, in which home was born the elder Leonard Bacon. Large credit must be given to Rev. John Monteith, Presbyterian, for initial steps in the development of Michigan's educational system, but Judge Cooley gave credit for the real constitution of the common-school and university education of the State to Rev. John D. Pierce, a Congregational Home Missionary. Mr. Pierce held the first religious meeting in Jackson, Calhoun, and Eaton counties, in 1831, and solemnized the first marriage and officiated at the first funeral taken in charge by a Protestant clergyman in western Michigan. Six years later when the Territory became a State he was made the first Superintendent of Public Instruction, and the founder of Michigan's educational system, including the University of Michigan, the first of the great State universities.

Other incumbents in the office of State Superintendent of Public Instruction were well-known Congregationalists: Prof. Oramel Hosford, Hon. C. A. Gower, Prof. Joseph Estabrook and others. Not only have important centers of educational influence been maintained at Olivet and Benzonia,

Digitized by Google

and in earlier years at Romeo and St. Clair, but Congregational leadership and influence have been notable in the development of the various State institutions. President Angell of the University had undisputed place among the foremost American educators and diplomats. President Abbott and several of his successors, Dr. Kedzie, and many other professors of the State Agricultural College; Professors Estabrook, D'Ooge, George, Barbour, Ripley, Strong and many others in the State Normal College at Ypsilanti; Lyman P. Alden, for many years head of the State Public School at Coldwater; and so many heads of the State institutions that lack of space forbids their mention; in the judiciary such noted jurists as Thomas M. Cooley and C. I. Walker; to all of whom might be added scores of names—Charles Kendall Adams, Charles A. Kent, Martin L. D'Ooge, Henry C. Adams, Charles Cooley and innumerable others—all Congregationalists, making safe the assertion that no denomination has contributed such large educational leadership as has the Congregational fellowship, though out-ranked by other denominations numerically.

III.—In broadening religious thought. Congregationalism is distinctly differentiated from other denominations. Never was this more true than in this day of mutual inter-denominational approach and of federated church unity. Congregationalism is more than a polity. Other denominations maintain the same ideals of government. Congregationalism is a spirit and an idea. It is distinct in its entity from that of any other Christian fellowship; in polity from the Catholic, Episcopalian, Methodist and Presbyterian orders; in conception of the Church and its rights and ceremonies from the Lutherans, Baptists and Disciples. It is inclusive without

Digitized by Google

being exclusive. It has room for all; it excludes none. It is broadminded in its attitude to truth. It welcomes truth wherever it is to be found; in the Divine oracles, commonly known as the Word of God; in the equally Divine word, the book of nature; in the attained results of science and philosophy. It believes in the unity of all revelation and is ever ready to modify theological preconceptions when challenged by the truth from other sources of knowledge. It is bound by no creed, symbol or confession. It knows no series of judicatories to challenge its freedom of faith.

Michigan Congregationalism has comprised in its ministerial ranks and roll of churches those of widely variant views; from those who might find comfortable fellowship with the ultra-orthodox to those who welcome the most modern view of the Scriptures, of the person and work of Christ and of the future life, but it has had no theological quarrels and no one has ever been summoned for doctrinal heresy. This broadmindedness has made it a commanding figure in the intellectual development of the State, and it has contributed its large share in liberalizing public thought and in determining public leadership. In the certain evolution of religious and philosophical thinking and in the newer psychology which exalts character and action over emotion, Congregational ministers and educators stand as representative leaders.

IV.—In promoting social order. The old interpretation of the chief function of the Church as securing individual salvation, is yielding to the broader understanding of its social obligation. Evangelism and the saving of men remain the clear duty of the Church, but recognition is made of the larger function of the Church in its relation to society. Congregationalism has always been closely related to the great ques-

Digitized by Google

tions of social regeneration. Its voice was so clear and outspoken on the slavery issue that it was in peril of becoming a sectional church. It has met all social issues fearlessly and numbers in its ranks such tireless and able advocates of social justice as Josiah Strong, Washington Gladden and many others. In the determination of right industrial relations it recognizes the Church as a creative and directing agency, not as an arbiter but as a creator of right public opinion, and as a director and inspirer of Christly action. Its leaders in the Congregational pulpits of Michigan and among representative laymen of influence have always been leaders of social righteousness who have rendered efficient aid in the creation of public sentiment which has found expression in legislative enactment for social welfare. The changed conditions of 1837 and 1917 have been marked by social cleavage, class distinctions and industrial problems involving the happiness and rights of millions, and the leveling and humanizing influence of the Gospel has been recognized as the one social solvent to be confidently relied upon. The problems before us loom larger. In their solution Michigan Congregationalism, if true to the traditions of the past, will, by reason of its love of democracy, its intelligent sympathy with all classes and conditions of men, its broad interpretation of Truth and its fearless welcome of freest debate and counsel, contribute its large share.

In no one of these contributions to the development of the life of Michigan has Congregationalism had a monopoly. In all these lines of activity the other Christian forces have been sharers, but in the combination of all, in the truest and broadest democracy, in the promotion of the higher education as represented by its outstanding educators, in its liberalizing

Digitized by Google

and broadening of the public thought, and in its contribution to the social order, I am clear in the conviction that no other force has excelled the contribution made by Michigan Congregationalism in forming the character of the great State of Michigan.

Digitized by Google

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE UNIVERSITY OF DETRIOT

BY PRESIDENT WM. T. DORAN, LL.D.
DETROIT

WHEN Bishop Résé came to take possession of his newly erected See, in 1833, he brought with him to Detroit two Oratorian Fathers to establish a "college for ecclesiastical students and young men." The college of Saint Philip Neri was begun, and flourished for a time, but sickness and the death of its founders, added to a scarcity of priests in the diocese, were serious drawbacks, and when the college building was struck by lightning in 1842, St. Philip Neri closed its doors forever.

Three years before this mishap Bishop Résé had sailed for Rome, never to return, and it was during the administration of Bishop Lefèvre, coadjutor of Detroit, that the college was destroyed. Though Bishop Lefèvre took the greatest interest in Catholic education, yet he found it impossible to reopen the college or to establish another. When the Right Reverend Caspar Borgess succeeded to the See of Detroit in 1871 his first thought was for the education of the young of his flock. In 1873 he issued his famous pastoral on the subject of parochial schools and thenceforward gave his best efforts to the establishment of a college.

In July, 1877, it was announced that "the Fathers of the Society of Jesus are about to open in the city of Detroit an educational institution to be known under the name and title of Detroit College." No wonder that the announcement was

Digitized by Google

FIRST BUILDING USED FOR CLASSES 1877

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

a cause of joy to the Bishop, who in the words of a newspaper writer of the time saw in it "the realization of one of his dearest projects for the benefit of his people." "It gives me more than ordinary pleasure," said the Bishop at the first public appearance of the students, "to be present at the first academic exercises of the new college." To make the college an accomplished fact Bishop Borgess had indeed done all in his power. On April 5, 1877, an agreement had been entered into between his Lordship and the General Superior of the Jesuits in these parts by which the Bishop transferred in fee-simple to the Jesuit Fathers the cathedral of St. Peter and Paul and the adjoining residence. The sole condition was that they should establish and maintain in the city of Detroit a college or school for the education of youth.

Friday, June 1, 1877, saw the advent of four fathers who were to take charge of the parish and prepare for the future college. They arrived late in the evening and spent Saturday in the confessional, and on Sunday, June 3, held their first public services in the Church, where a solemn High Mass was sung. The Superior, Rev. John B. Miege, S. J., was the celebrant of the Mass, Rev. James Walsh, S. J., was deacon, and Rev. Eugene Brady, S. J., subdeacon. The sermon on the occasion was preached by the Rev. E. A. Higgins, S. J., the Rector of St. Xavier College, Cincinnati. The post of Master of Ceremonies was filled by the Rev. M. O'Donovan, the former pastor of the church, a priest of the diocese of Detroit.

Divine Providence was doubly generous in giving to the new college as its founder and first president John Baptist Miege, scholar and administrator. For twenty years before coming to Detroit he had efficiently ruled, as Bishop, the diocese of Leavenworth when that diocese embraced all the territory be-

Digitized by Google

tween the State of Missouri and the Rocky Mountains. So lightly did the purple dignity rest upon him that he had asked repeatedly to be allowed to lay aside his episcopal robes and once again don the sombre Jesuit habit. But his work was so efficacious that he was required to continue his episcopal duties for more than twenty years. At length humility prevailed, his prayer was heard, and the Bishop of Leavenworth became plain Father Miege and retired to St. Louis University, whence twenty years previously he had gone forth to build the Western Church. But he was not long to enjoy the quiet of private life. His superiors had accepted Detroit, and an able and experienced man was needed to begin this new work. Father Miege was the choice of all, so despite his years he assumed the burden. Arriving in Detroit in the early part of June he had all in readiness for the opening of classes in September.

Naturally he would have preferred to purchase the building adjoining the pastoral residence for his first classes, but at the time that was not possible. Very opportunely for the new school a spacious residence on the opposite side of the avenue was vacant and for sale. It occupied a lot 100 by 200 feet. This was purchased for twenty-three thousand dollars. As it became evident during the second year that this building would soon be too small, an additional story was built which made the building three stories high.

The beginning had been made, but like most beginnings it was a very modest one. The first year saw eighty-four pupils on the roll; the second, ninety-eight; the third, one hundred and thirty-two. When the number of boys had passed two hundred, the old quarters began to be uncomfortably crowded and new accommodations became an imperative necessity.

Digitized by Google

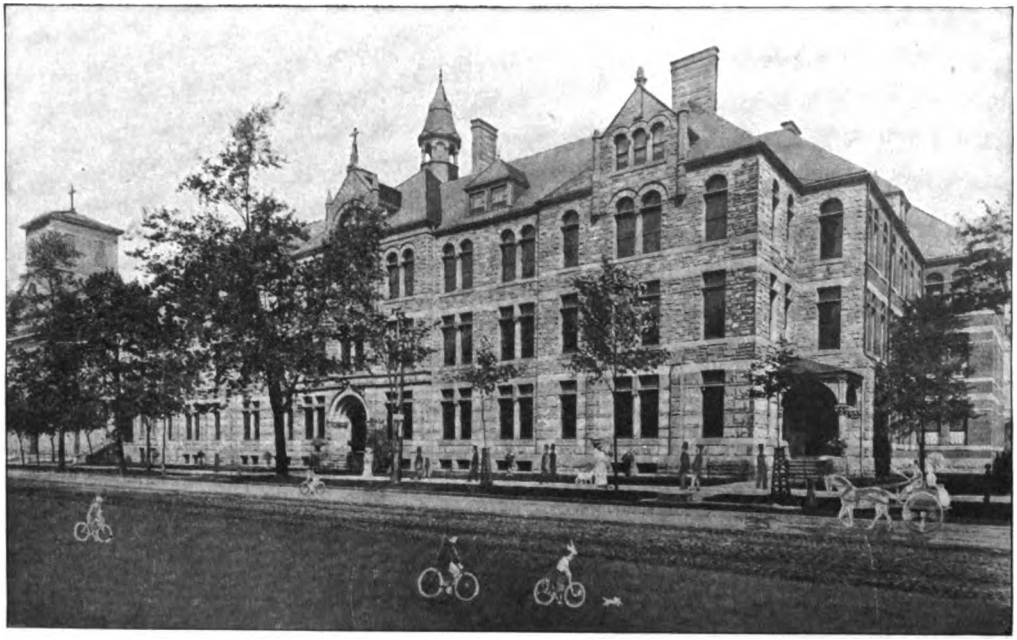
Providence again favored the school. Opposite the college, and hence on the same side of the street as the church and rectory but separated from the latter by three intervening residences, a mansion occupying a lot 53 by 200 feet was offered for sale at the modest price of thirteen thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars. An expenditure of some five hundred dollars converted this dwelling into quite a respectable school building, and in May, 1885, the collegiate and scientific departments took possession of their new quarters. This was the first practical step toward the realization of a plan which had been entertained almost from the opening of the college, and which matured as the necessity for more ample accommodations became manifest and the inconveniences of being separated from the college by an intervening and much frequented street forced itself more and more on superiors and professors. The hopes of the faculty were constantly taking a more tangible shape: still the end seemed as yet far off. Already a heavy debt weighed on the college. The ordinary income was too scant to justify a further augmentation of the debt, yet something had to be done. And it was done. Rev. John P. Frieden, S. J., represented the needs of the college to some of the wealthy Catholics of the city, and six responded with a donation of five thousand dollars each. Other subscriptions totaled twenty thousand dollars more. The outlook now was more encouraging. In February, 1889, the third of the three houses mentioned was secured for eighteen thousand dollars. Just at this juncture a change of Rectors took place. Father Frieden was made General Superior of the Jesuits in the Middle West and was succeeded in the office of President by Rev. Michael P. Dowling, S. J. This was in March, 1889. Father Dowling at once

Digitized by Google

threw himself enthusiastically into the work. Plans were drawn, and ere long approved by higher superiors. Early in August the first stone of the foundation was laid. The work prospered as long as the weather remained favorable. Early in the spring a carpenters' strike made all progress on the wood-work impossible. It began to look as if the new building would not be finished by the opening of school. But the alarm was ungrounded. The strike was of short duration and the building was ready for occupancy in August 1890. The new building was open for inspection on August 25, and laudatory descriptions of it appeared in the daily papers. "With the opening of this building in September," said the Sunday *News,* "Detroit will have the finest equipped and best arranged as well as the handsomest and most substantial edifice for educational purposes in the State. The building will be a valuable acquisition to the architectural beauties of Detroit." The *Tribune* called it "a college building that would compare favorably with any similar institution in the land," and added, "the structure presents a magnificent appearance in its ornamental architecture." The *Free Press* and the *Michigan Catholic* had illustrated articles on the building.

The praise of the new building justifies us in saying a word about the two men to whom its inception and completion were due. It seems to us that scarcely less than to the beloved founder is Detroit College indebted to the two worthy successors of the great John Baptist Miege, namely, John Pièrre Frieden and Michael Patrick Dowling. Both were men of generous proportions, physically and intellectually; both were men of immense energy and uncommon capacity for hard work. Father Frieden planned the main building, but before he could execute his plan, was transferred to a wider field.

Digitized by Google



BUILDING OF 1889, NOW USED AS HIGH SCHOOL

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

His mantle fell on worthy shoulders when it fell on the shoulders of Father Dowling, for he was a more capable administrator and a scholar of the highest type. No man in the Middle West stood higher as an educator. He had no peer in inspiring his men to make their college equal to any in the land.

To Father Dowling old Detroit College owes much. Preeminently a college man who stood for the best in education, he possessed that rare faculty of inspiring professors and students with a love of solid learning, and thus he established a standard of genuine scholarship without which an institution cannot produce efficient educational work.

Until 1897 the building erected by Father Dowling in 1889 sufficed. It was during that year that the Rev. Richard Slevin, S. J., added the commodious gymnasium building on Larned Street. This building contains six recitation rooms and two lecture rooms, and laboratories for the science department. The gymnasium also served as an auditorium for the various public exhibitions and lectures given by the students.

This material expansion was recognized by many of the distinguished Alumni as necessary to the increasing intellectual development of the institution, and it received the loyal support of the eminent clergymen, physicians, journalists, lawyers and prosperous business men who had received their education in the College and who realized its power and influence.

The growth of the plant, the increasing prominence of the Alumni, and most of all the almost unprecedented growth of the city in population and industrial supremacy, warranted and indeed demanded new developments in the educational work of the institution. For this reason, at the expiration of

Digitized by Google

the charter of 1881, in the year 1911, the authorities of the school effected a new organization on a broader basis and incorporated under the title "University of Detroit."

Providence certainly favored the university and the city in appointing as the first president of the newly organized school the Rev. William Dooley, S. J. Father Miege had well founded the School of Arts, and his successors had built thereon a noble superstructure. Father Dooley broadened that first foundation and raised an equally imposing superstructure for technical schools, and this work he carried to success in four short years. He came to Detroit in manhood's prime, his mind filled with great plans, and his soul equal to undertaking them. In his vocabulary there was no such word as "fail." With him, to plan was to execute, to resolve was to accomplish, to determine was to do. Hence it is in no way surprising that in four years he not only established a school of Engineering and a school of Law, but planned, began and almost completed a beautiful structure in concrete and stone that will serve as a worthy monument to his tireless energy and heroic courage.

In the first year of Father Dooley's incumbency he opened an Engineering School. The organization of such a school was imperative if the demands of the students and the needs of the city were considered. This engineering school is run on the cooperative plan. This plan aims to harmonize the practical and the theoretical in technical educational courses. Its practical operation consists in dividing the classes into two equal sections. One section pursues the usual class-room studies at the University for a two-weeks period, while the other section is employed in industrial establishments in lines allied to the theoretical courses. At the end of each two-weeks period the sections are interchanged. To each position in the

Digitized by Google

industries one student in each section is assigned; thus, the position is constantly occupied first by one and then the other student in bi-weekly periods.

Through the arrangement by the University with the engineering, manufacturing and public service establishments, students taken into their employ have the advantage of the most elaborate and modern equipment known for educational purposes. The employment available and most desirable for engineering students is mutually under the control and direction of the University and employer. By careful supervision the employment of the student is kept parallel with his theoretical studies, and thus becomes an integral part of his education.

Previous to the development of the cooperative plan employers were constantly complaining of the lack of practical knowledge possessed by the technical graduate fresh from college. Some employers went to the extreme of accusing technical faculties of not being in sympathy with industrial needs. A superficial survey of technical schools may leave the impression that these employers were correct and that technical schools were at fault. However, the real difficulty was that technical schools, organized and equipped to meet the needs of society at the time of their organization, were unable to revise the traditional curricula to satisfy ever-changing demands of industry. The older members of society have lived to see the development of the modern industrial establishment, the electric railway, the electric lighting system, the universal use of the telephone, the steam turbine, the gas engine, steel ships of commerce and war, reinforced concrete building construction; the use of mechanical power in agriculture, and many other creations of the engineer, which we are now ac-

Digitized by Google

customed to think of as necessities. With the advent of many highly specialized activities, which have changed numerous intensely rural districts into large industrial centers, have come increasing demands on the technical schools. The old idea of a school shop, where the student acquired an uncertain knowledge of some of the simpler processes of foundry work, wood and iron turning, must be abandoned as inadequate to meet modern requirements. The teaching time that is now devoted to these subjects should be directed along more practical lines.

The bi-weekly periods of study at the University are devoted to theoretical instruction, which is a progressive arrangement of the fundamental sciences, general education and professional studies. Their purpose is to teach fundamental principles which are the basis of all engineering; to train the mind to make logical deductions and the senses to accurate habits of observation; and to impart a knowledge of good drafting practice, methods of computation, and the use and limitations of instruments.

Four complete courses are offered—Chemical, Civil, Electrical and Mechanical Engineering. Each course extends through a period of five years. The bi-weekly employment periods are continuous throughout the course, thus allowing twenty-six weeks of actual experience each year. The bi-weekly study periods at the University are arranged to allow a recess at Thanksgiving, Christmas, Easter and during the summer. Thus twenty-one weeks are devoted to theoretical study each year. After the satisfactory completion of an engineering course, the degree of Chemical Engineer, Civil Engineer, Electrical Engineer or Mechanical Engineer is conferred.

In the Fall of 1912, Father Dooley opened a second depart-

Digitized by Google

ENGINEERING BUILDING, 1915

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ment, that of Law. In the organization of this school, he was greatly helped by many of the city's most prominent jurists. The very first year the faculty was made up of the best legal talent in the city; amongst others, Judges Hosmer, Connolly, Hally, Murphy, Hulbert, Hanley and Murfin. A splendid library was secured which at present numbers over 8,000 volumes. Additions are constantly being made to it and it is the ambition of the faculty to make the law library second to none in Michigan.

By 1915 the University had outgrown the original building erected in 1889 and the addition of 1907. Hence it was determined to erect a building for the Engineering and Law departments. Plans were drawn on an elaborate scale and a building costing $175,000 was erected. There have been few additions to the architecture of Jefferson Avenue which are of quite as high style as the new school. It is on the south side of the avenue and it fits well into the group with which it forms the neighborhood, the Art Museum and the Administration Building. The facade of the new structure is of Bedford stone, highly ornamented. Although the building as a whole is of concrete and stone structure, the front wall is an independent piece of self-supported masonry, resting wholly on its own foundation.

The style of the structure is collegiate Gothic, being the type prevailing in several new structures at Oxford and Cambridge Universities. The cornice level of the first story is ornamented by a number of well modelled studies in Bedford stone, these being grotesques of students, while above the third-story windows are placed a number of shields, these carrying serially symbols representing order, learning, the society of educators who control the institution, and the American national shield.

Digitized by Google

The structure is wholly fireproof, is 100 by 200 feet in size, and extends from the property line on Jefferson Avenue to that on Woodbridge Street. Some interesting features of the construction are that there is not a piece of wood in the building outside of the class-room floors and the doors. The corridors and the laboratory are all in masterbuilder cement finish, and the window-sash of steel.

This splendid structure stands a lasting monument to the memory of Father Dooley. He had planned the building and had begun it, but did not live to see it completed. In the midsummer of life, with his work not as yet done, he passed away. Not before in the history of the institution had one of its presidents died in office. But Father Dooley's work neither ceased nor faltered, for the society of which he was an ornament had given him efficient co-workers filled with his spirit, who continued what he had so efficaciously begun.

Digitized by Google

The Factional Character of Early Michigan Politics

By Floyd B. Streeter, M. A.
Lansing

MUCH has been written on the leading events in the early history of Michigan. Many writers have dwelt at length on the pioneer life of the people, the wild-cat banking era, the elaborate plan of internal improvements upon which this State launched in its youth, on the period of wild speculation, and on the financial distress which followed the panic of 1837; little has been told, however, about the factional character of its early politics. In this respect Michigan was typically western. The factions in its politics were largely due to the origin of the population, the character of the early settlers and the development of sectional jealousy.

The greater portion of the early settlers were of American nativity, who came from western New York and New England.[1] These were preceded by the French inhabitants in southeastern Michigan[2] and by people of Southern birth who located lands in the southwest.[3] Western New York furnished a very large per cent of the early inhabitants. They or their ancestors had originally emigrated from the New England States.[4] Since these settlers had resided in western New

1. *Compendium of the U. S. Census of* 1850, pp. 116-118.
2. Fuller, in *Michigan Historical Collections*, XXXVIII, 548-549.
3. Coolidge, *History of Berrien County*, p. 26; *Michigan Historical Collections*, V, 151.
4. *Michigan Historical Collections*, XXXVIII, 357-359.

Digitized by Google

York before they came to Michigan their political philosophy was the product of two frontiers; it was the American spirit doubly distilled. In both political parties with some exceptions the politicians, who came from New England, eastern New York and from Virginia were found at the head of the conservative factions, while the former residents of western New York led the radical element.[5]

Most of the early immigrants were young[6] and did not have much money, but they came with great faith in the future of the West and with the intention of bettering their condition in the wilderness which promised so much. Nevertheless a considerable number had money, which they invested in business enterprises or in land.[7] Wealth gave social prestige to this class and made them very conservative.

The counties in southeastern Michigan were the most thickly settled and the central tier, that is, the tier of counties west from Detroit, had a larger population than the counties on the southern border or in the north.[8] Detroit, in the

5. This statement is based upon a study of the career of each member of these factions and of all the important men in antebellum times, making a total of about 700.

6. *Michigan Historical Collections*, XXXVIII, 554.

7. Coolidge, *History of Berrien County*, pp. 141-142; Collin, *History of Branch County*, pp. 79-80; Glover, *History of Cass County*, pp. 154-155, 183-187; *History of Calhoun County* (1877), p. 52; *Michigan Historical Collections*, VII, 240; Farmer, *History of Detroit*, II, 1034; Lanman, *History of Michigan* (1839), pp. 282, 284, 290, 291, 293-294. This author gives statistics gathered from the census report.

8. See census statistics for 1837 in Lanman, *History of Michigan* (1839), pp. 305-306. The five most populous counties were: Monroe, 10,611; Lenawee, 14,540; Oakland, 20,163; Washtenaw, 21,817; and Wayne, 23,400. The total population of the State was 175,000.

Digitized by Google

central tier, was the oldest and largest city in the State,[9] and during the Territorial period the politicians of this city had pretty largely dominated political affairs. When settlers began to come in large numbers new cities and communities arose; and since many of these had new or rival interests, bitter sectional jealousy was fostered.

In the early period there was a tendency for the leaders in the northeastern counties and in the southern tier to unite against those in the center, and finally for the politicians in the western counties to combine their forces against those in the east.[10] In each case the weak sections united against the strong.

From this sectional rivalry, and from the difference in social standing and origin of the leaders, four factions developed in the Democratic party: namely, the office-holding,[11] the conservative, the western, and the radical; and two factions in the Whig party: the conservative and the radical.

The organization headed by the Democratic office-holders grew up in the following manner. During Jackson's administration most of the Territorial officials were Democrats. Since the vast majority of the early settlers were young and poor and a large portion of them had been reared in western New York which was in a frontier condition, the political philosophy of Andrew Jackson, who could fight better than he could spell, made a special appeal to them. Furthermore the political theory of the Jacksonian Democrats permitted

9. Detroit had a population of about 8,000.

10. The internal improvement issue was a prominent factor in determining these sectional alliances. Three railroads were projected across the State and each section tried to get its road completed as soon as possible.

11. The office-holders had the best organized faction.

Digitized by Google

the rise of a strong executive and powerful leaders who represented the masses against an aristocratic legislature.[12] Then too the Democrats had a party organization some time before the well-to-do element formed the Whig party.[13] The Territorial officials had taken advantage of these opportunities to build up a well organized following. The leaders had such strong control over their supporters that this group soon took on the character of a faction.

Head and shoulders above other leaders of this faction stood John Norvell, the postmaster at Detroit. He was the son of a Virginian and was born in Kentucky in 1789.[14] He studied law, but later went into newspaper work, and after spending several years in Philadelphia as a journalist came to Detroit in 1831 to take charge of the postoffice. With an inclination toward politics he soon became a boss in his party and regarded every leader who was not his political friend, as his foe.[15] Hated by the more conservative Democrats and despised by the Whigs,[16] he continued to perfect his organization and make his power more secure.

12. Merriam, *American Political Theories*, pp. 182-183.
13. The Democrats had a party organization as early as 1832. The merchants of Detroit started a movement for a Whig organization in December, 1834. Detroit *Journal and Michigan Advertiser*, December 17 and 24, 1834.
14. *Michigan Biographies* (1888), pp. 496-497.
15. This was the experience of Lucius Lyon. On March 22, 1836, he wrote: "I presume there is no man who shares more of his hatred than I do at the present time because I have never closed with him in any of his propositions for our mutual advancement. I know perfectly the cause of his feelings and I know too that I could have been on the very best of terms with him simply by saying I would be his political friend." *Michigan Historical Collections*, XXVII, 488.
16. *Woodbridge Papers*, in Burton Historical Collection, Vol. 129, pp. 125, 210, 214, 221, 226, 235.

Digitized by Google

Norvell's following was composed largely of lawyers, small farmers, and politicians who were supported by the poorer element in the country districts in east-central Michigan and in Lenawee County on the southern border, and by the laboring class and foreigners in the cities. Many of the leading men in this faction were former New Yorkers, though there were a few New Englanders, and some politicians of foreign extraction.[17] Opposed to the office-holders was a group of conservative Democrats, a faction loosely organized which formed a temporary coalition for the purpose of crushing the power of the Detroit boss.

Notable among the leaders of the conservatives were Lucius Lyon of Kalamazoo, and Elon Farnsworth of Detroit, both of whom had come to Detroit from Vermont the same year.[18] Lyon was a land surveyor and civil engineer by occupation, and a member of the Swedenborgian Church; while Farnsworth was a lawyer by profession and an Episcopalian in religious faith. The former had large land interests and during his public life held the offices of Territorial delegate in Congress, United States Senator and Representative in Congress. The latter was Chancellor of the State, Attorney General, and in 1839 was a candidate for the office of Governor.[19]

The members of the conservative Democratic faction were mostly well-to-do lawyers, merchants, and large land owners. The greater portion of them had come from New England,[20]

17. Isaac E. Crary, a member of this faction was a New Englander. He was the first Representative in Congress. Louis Beaufait was of French extraction.

18. They came in 1822.

19. *Michigan Biographies* (1888), pp. 259, 426.

20. Among the prominent conservative Democrats of New England birth were Elon Farnsworth, Lucius Lyon, Lewis Cass, Edward D. Ellis, Warner Wing, John S. Barry and Alpheus Felch.

Digitized by Google

several of whom had settled in the counties in the northeast, on the southern border, and in the southwest. Though these counties had a relatively small population it would seem that the people in each community elected the leading citizen to represent them. This was therefore largely a union of the well-to-do representatives of the north and south for the purpose of breaking down the power of a strongly intrenched faction in Lenawee and the east central counties which was supported by the less well-to-do element.

The first division of the leaders of the Democratic party into the conservative and office-holding factions occurred in the Constitutional Convention of 1835 over the question of the elective franchise. John Norvell, chairman of the committee on the elective franchise, and his followers, wished to extend to every white male inhabitant twenty-one years of age who had resided in the United States two years and in the State six months and had declared his intention of becoming a citizen, and to every white male inhabitant who was a resident of the Territory on the day when the delegates to the Constitutional Convention were elected, the privilege of voting at all elections.[21] On the other hand, Lucius Lyon[22] and the conservative Democrats strenuously opposed this measure and demanded a citizenship requirement;[23] the few Whig delegates wanted equally as stringent restrictions.[24] On June 17, undoubtedly as a concession to the conservative wing, Norvell

21. *Journal of the Constitutional Convention*, pp. 52, 56, 57, 58, 60, 62, 65, 66.
22. Lyon Letters, *Michigan Historical Collections*, XXVII, 469.
23. *Journal of the Convention*, pp. 65-66, 67. The purpose of the office-holders was undoubtedly to secure the support of the foreign element.
24. *Ibid.* pp. 106-110.

Digitized by Google

moved as a substitute a section which required citizenship,[25] and with a slight change in wording this provision was incorporated in the Constitution.[26]

The office-holding faction dominated the Democratic State Convention in August, 1835, which nominated the party's candidates for Governor and Lieutenant-governor,[27] who received an overwhelming majority of the votes in the election.[28] Shortly after the election the first State Legislature assembled in Detroit. Many of the men who had been members of the Constitutional Convention took their seat in this body;[29] consequently the alignment of factions according to sections was about the same as on the previous occasion. The Senate was composed entirely of Democrats, who were about equally divided between the two factions, while the office-holders had a small majority in the House.[30]

Scarcely had the Legislature assembled when the factions began to battle; the fight took place over the election of the United States Senators. Both houses unanimously nominated Lucius Lyon for the four-year term;[31] the split occurred on the nomination of a candidate for the six-year term. The conservative Democrats in both houses and the Whigs in the lower house cast their votes for John Biddle, a Detroit Whig, while the office-holders supported their leader John Norvell.

25. *Ibid*, p. 187.
26. *Ibid*, p. 207; Constitution of 1835, Article II, Section I.
27. Niles *Gazette and Intelligencer*, September 12, 1835. The Whig organ at Detroit called this a caucus meeting. Detroit *Journal and Courier*, August 26, 1835.
28. *Senate Journal* (1835-36), Doc. 2; Mason received 7,508 votes and Biddle, the Whig candidate, 814.
29. Among the more prominent were Barry, Ellis, Felch, Comstock, McDonnell, Raynale, Stockton and Ten Eyck.
30. Detroit *Free Press*, October 21, 1835, for a list of the members.
31. *House Journal* (1835-36), p. 31; *Senate Journal* (1835-36), p. 16.

Digitized by Google

In the Senate, on the first trial, each candidate received 8 votes;[32] but on the second Biddle was nominated by 10 to 6.[33] In the House, on the other hand, Norvell was nominated, by a vote of 27 to 20.[34] In the joint session, since the vote of the Senate was equally divided, the majority of seven in the House elected Norvell.[35] In the House, Norvell received the support of the representative from the Grand River Valley and of a few scattered members in addition to the solid vote of those from Wayne, Washtenaw and Lenawee counties.

In 1836 the question of the relinquishment to Ohio of a portion of the Territory on the southern border was the occasion for another breach between the office-holders and the conservatives. This time the latter joined forces with the Whigs against the former. The same factional alignment, according to sections, recurred.

The story of the boundary controversy takes us back to the Ordinance of 1787. According to the Ordinance, Congress had the power to divide the territory lying north of an "east and west line drawn through the southerly end or extreme of Lake Michigan" into one or two States.[36] The act of 1802, enabling the people of Ohio to form a State Constitution, prescribed this line as the northern boundary of the future State.[37] Wishing to secure to the State the jurisdiction over the outlet of the Maumee River into Lake Erie, the delegates in the Constitutional Convention added a proviso to the Constitution, requesting Congress to extend the boundary to a line

32. *Senate Journal* (1835-36), p. 16.
33. *Ibid*, p. 16.
34. *House Journal* (1835-36), p. 31.
35. *Ibid*, p. 32.
36. *Ordinance of* 1787, Article V.
37. *U. S. Statutes at Large*, II, 173.

Digitized by Google

from the southern end of Lake Michigan to the "most northerly cape of Maumee Bay,"[38] should the line set forth in the enabling act not include the coveted outlet. However, Congress admitted Ohio as a State without settling the boundary question. From the organization of Michigan as a Territory in 1805 until she sought admission into the Union, her Territorial officials exercised jurisdiction over the disputed area.

Early in 1836 Congress began considering a bill for the admission of Michigan.[39] The members from Ohio fought fearlessly for a settlement of the boundary in favor of that State. Since the establishment of the northern boundary of Ohio and the admission of Michigan were inseparable questions,[40] the contest in Congress was long and severe. Finally, in June, Congress agreed upon a proposition for the admission of Michigan on condition that the State would resign the disputed area to Ohio and accept instead the large territory on the north known since as the Upper Peninsula.[41]

In a special session, the State Legislature authorized the submission of the proposal of Congress to a convention which was to be held at Ann Arbor in September. This body also provided for the election of delegates to this convention.[42]

On June 23 Congress passed two acts which had a far-reaching effect on the controversy; one offered to the people of Michigan, for the purpose of making internal improvements, five per cent of the net proceeds on the sales of public lands

38. *Senate Documents*, 23d Cong., 1st Sess., III, 4-5; Soule, *The Southern and Western Boundaries of Michigan*, p. 5.
39. Serious consideration of this bill began the latter part of March. *Register of Debates*, 24th Cong., 1st Sess., Vol. 12, Pt. 1, p. 1006.
40. These measures were incorporated in the same bill.
41. *U. S. Statutes at Large*, V, 49.
42. *Laws of Michigan* (1835-36), pp. 16-18.

Digitized by Google

within the State which should be sold after July 1, together with other lands; the other act provided that on January 1, 1837, the surplus in the treasury above $5,000,000 should be deposited with the States in proportion to their representation in Congress.[43]

Until the passage of these acts by Congress, the people of Michigan were united in their determination to uphold the rights of the State to the disputed territory. The organs of both parties denounced the claims of Ohio.[44] In his annual message in February 1836 the Governor declared that any attempt of Congress to bestow this district on Ohio would be "unauthorized and unconstitutional."[45] On March 8, Democrats and Whigs held a meeting in Detroit for the purpose of remonstrating against the bill under consideration in Congress; they drew up a memorial to that body and appointed a committee to obtain signatures to this document.[46]

When the condition of admission and the offer of land and money became known to the people, they divided on the question of the acceptance of the Congressional proposal. The Whigs as a party, and the conservative Democratic leaders, opposed the acceptance of the proposal; the office-holders and their friends led those who were willing to assent to the terms of admission.[47] Since 1836 was the year for the Presidential election the leaders of the latter faction probably took this

43. *U. S. Statutes at Large*, V, 52-56, 59.
44. Detroit *Journal and Courier*, March 11 and 25, September 17, October 19, 1835; Detroit *Daily Free Press*, March 15 and 17, and April 19, 1836.
45. *House Journal* (1835-36), p. 70.
46. Detroit *Free Press*, March 19, 1836.
47. Several of the office-holders were elected to the Ann Arbor Convention in September and voted in favor of the proposal. The entire delegation from Wayne County voted "yea."

Digitized by Google

stand because they did not want to injure the Democratic party by resistance.

The Detroit *Free Press* was the leading organ of the submissionists, while the *Daily Advertiser* was the chief spokesman of the dissenters. The former paper insisted that until the people assented to the terms of admission the State would receive no part of the five per cent fund or of the proffered lands and would lose her share of surplus revenue.[48] The latter published a series of articles informing its readers that the arguments of the opponents were "imaginary terrors" trumped up by the "Ohio party."[49]

As has been stated, the convention authorized to act on the proposal of Congress was to be held at Ann Arbor in September. The two parties made nominations and the election took place. The delegates assembled at Ann Arbor on the 26th and rejected the terms of admission by a vote of 28 to 21.[50]

On the 29th a group of conservative Democrats and Whigs held a meeting in the same city and organized a State Rights party, the purpose of which was to nominate and elect as members of the Legislature such "persons as will sustain the rights of Michigan against the unjust claims of Ohio." Those present also adopted measures to make this party a state-wide organization.[51] The *Daily Advertiser* was the party organ. The purpose of this coalition was not merely to fight for the rights of Michigan to the contested area; it was also

48. *Ibid*, August 9 and 13, 1836. According to this paper the Monroe *Times* was the only Democratic paper which did not favor the acceptance of the Congressional proposal. *Free Press*, August 24, 1836.
49. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, August 5 and 13, 1836.
50. *Journal of the Convention*, p. 19.
51. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, October 12, 1836.

Digitized by Google

a revolt against the domination of the office-holders.[52] On November 5 the *Free Press* said:

> "The Whig and malcontent *leaders* of the dissenting party have all along avowed one of their objects, in rejecting the terms of admission, to be the prostitution of those whom the people and the legislature have elected to fill the principal offices in and from the State."

Both the State Rights men[53] and their opponents, who called themselves Democrats,[54] held conventions and nominated candidates for members of the Legislature. A vigorous campaign was waged. Though many campaigns were more exciting, few equaled this one in the violence of the language used by the press and in the personal invectives directed by each side against its opponents. Neither side spared its adversary.

The reports of the election given by the opposing party organs disagree[55] but the one published in the *Advertiser* seems to be the more accurate, according to which twenty-five Democrats and twenty-three State Rights members were elected in the House while the Senate was listed with ten Democrats, four State Rights men and two doubtful.[56]

The office-holders were determined, nevertheless, that assent should be given to the Congressional proposal. On October 29 a portion of the Wayne County Democrats held a meeting over which Norvell and his friends dominated. The members

52. *Ibid*, October 12 and 25, 1836; *Woodbridge Papers*, Burton Historical Collection, Vol. 130, p. 41.
53. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, October 12 and 25, 1836.
54. Detroit *Free Press*, October 20, 1836.
55. *Ibid*, November 29, 1836. According to this paper the State Rights party elected twelve members to the House and two to the Senate.
56. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, December 5, 1836.

Digitized by Google

present adopted a resolution recommending similar meetings in all counties for the purpose of calling another convention to effect the admission of the State and another pledging their united energies in breaking up the "unrighteous coalition at the approaching election."[57] The Democrats of Washtenaw County issued a call for a convention.[58]

On November 14 the Democratic State Central Committee, the members of which were political allies of the office-holders, issued a circular urging the Democrats in each county to elect delegates to a convention to be held at Ann Arbor on December 14.[59] The members of this party responded in only a portion of the counties. The State Rights men placed no ticket in the field.[60] On the appointed day the delegates met in what has been known in Michigan history as the "frost-bitten convention" and in the name of the people of the State gave assent to the terms of admission.[61]

In the next few years two more important factions developed in the Democratic party. The first one was composed of politicians in the western part of the State who combined in order to work for the interests of that section. The western counties were much less thickly settled and had a much smaller

57. Detroit *Free Press*, November 1, 1836; John Norvell, John S. Bagg and M. J. Bacon took a leading part.

58. Cambell, *Outlines of the Political History of Michigan*, pp. 476-477.

59. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, November 17, 1836. McKinstry, Bacon, Wilkins, McDonell and Whipple were the members of this committee. McKinstry, McDonell and Wilkins were delegates to the September convention and had voted in favor of the acceptance of the terms of admission.

60. A writer at Ann Arbor stated that "The only opposition was to prevent persons from attending the polls." Detroit *Free Press*, December 12, 1836.

61. *Journal of the Convention*, p. 48.

Digitized by Google

population than those in the east. The west was however increasing rapidly in population and the people began to feel that their section was not receiving its share of the internal improvements.[62] Though Lucius Lyon was the recognized leader of the west in the early days Flavius J. Littlejohn of Allegan, the most eloquent of Michigan's ante-bellum politicians, made the fight for internal improvements.[63] The mantle of leadership soon fell however on the shoulders of the future prophet of the west, Epaphroditus Ransom of Kalamazoo.

Judge Ransom was a native of Massachusetts[64] and came to Kalamazoo in 1834. During his career he held the offices of Associate Justice of the Supreme Court, Chief Justice, and Governor. Being interested in agriculture and owning the best farm in his section, he was the true representative of the west. In 1849 he came forth as an advocate of the Wilmot Proviso[65] and thus united the western faction and the anti-slavery radicals.[66] As captain of this coalition he opposed the election of General Cass to the United States Senate and made a fight which shook Democracy to its foundations.[67]

As we have said, the internal improvement issue promoted the development of the western faction. In 1837 the Legislature launched upon an elaborate plan of internal improvements, consisting of three railroads east and west across the State,

62. Petitions from citizens of the west, *House Journal* (1843), pp. 172, 256; Detroit *Daily Gazette*, February 14 and 20, 1843.

63. Detroit *Daily Gazette*, February 14, 1843.

64. *Michigan Biographies* (1888), pp. 542-544.

65. *Joint Documents* (1849), Doc. I, p. 17.

66. This radical faction was the outgrowth of the Bingham faction which is discussed in this paper.

67. *House Journal* (1849), pp. 35, 117-118; *Senate Journal* (1849), pp. 34-102 *passim*.

Digitized by Google

three canals and the improvement of three rivers.[68] The work was begun on the eastern end of the railroads. The following year the commissioners of internal improvements were directed to expend on the eastern end of each of these works the money which had been appropriated.[69] To this the representatives of the west objected,[70] but since there were only a few members from that section their opposition was futile. Though the panic of 1837 struck this part of the State very hard the population continued to increase, and thus the need of improvements became greater. Since the State debt was very large the people in the western part of the State were suffering from a heavy taxation.[71] In 1843 the legislators of this section desired the completion of the Central Railroad.[72] They believed that when completed this road would bring revenue sufficient to pay the interest on the State debt and part of the principal.[73] The representatives from the east, especially from the northeast and southeast, opposed the appropriation bill and for several days the struggle over this measure consumed the entire time of the House. Finally it was passed by a vote of 30 to 22.[74]

The fourth and last faction which we shall consider developed about the year 1838, out of the extreme radical wing of the supporters of Norvell. This element was opposed to chartered banks, monopolies, slavery, and, according to a Whig paper, was "anti-everything."[75] When these radicals began to wage

68. *Laws of Michigan* (1837), pp. 132-133.
69. *Ibid*, (1838), p. 154.
70. *House Journal* (1838), pp. 266-267.
71. Detroit *Daily Gazette*, February 14, 1843.
72. *Ibid*, February 14 and 20, 1843.
73. *Ibid*, February 11, 1843.
74. *House Journal* (1843), pp. 269-289, 308.
75. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, September 5, 1839.

Digitized by Google

war against the extension of slavery they became a very distinct faction in the Democratic party. This wing supported the Free Soil movement in 1848 and formed an important element in the Republican party six years later. In the early period the majority of this faction were natives of western New York,[76] who represented the poorer classes in the agricultural districts. Their leader was Kinsley S. Bingham.[77]

Bingham had emigrated from west-central New York and had settled on a farm in Livingston County in 1833.[78] Having an attractive personality and a rare ability to convert people to his opinions, he dominated the party in his county and soon became a prominent figure in State politics. His influence over the farmer class was equaled by few ante-bellum leaders. He was a bitter opponent of slavery; as congressman he was a Wilmot Provisoist of the deepest dye;[79] and he opposed the bill for the more effective rendition of fugitive slaves.[80] After being read out of the Democratic party in 1850[81] Bingham became a Free Soiler,[82] and four years later the Republicans elected him Governor.

In 1838 Bingham and his friends showed their radical tendencies by opposing the bill suspending the operation of the general banking law.[83] This law was the child of the economic

76. This statement is based on a study of the members of this faction.
77. Bingham's constituency was the farmer element. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, September 5, 1839.
78. *Michigan Biographies* (1888), pp. 99-100.
79. See Bingham's speeches on August 7, 1848 and June 4, 1850. Published in pamphlet form.
80 *Cong. Globe*, 1st Sess., 31st Cong., p. 1807.
81. Detroit *Daily Free Press*, September 16, 1850.
82. He was the Free Soil candidate for Governor in 1854.
83. *House Journal* (1838), pp. 289-290.

Digitized by Google

thought of the frontier; the poorer classes in the West cried out against chartered banks;[84] they said that these institutions were monopolies which the aristocracy used for the purpose of controlling elections,—monied monsters which had no regard for the welfare of the people.[85] The masses demanded that banking should be free so that the poor man as well as the rich might have a chance.[86] As a result, the Legislature passed the general banking law, which permitted freeholders who had a limited amount of capital[87] to start a bank. And just as this law was the child of frontier philosophy, so were the wild-cat banks, which followed, the illegitimate second generation.[88] Seeing the cause of the trouble, the conservative Democrats and Whigs wanted to suspend the operation of the law for a year. These banks spread financial ruin and distress far and wide.[89]

By 1839 party unity was gone, all semblance of harmony had disappeared. Each faction demanded the nomination of its leader as candidate for Governor.[90] A Whig paper predicted that the office-holders and radicals would unite upon Bingham.[91] Though the leader of the radicals received a con-

84. *Michigan Historical Collections*, V, 211.
85. Detroit *Daily Free Press*, November 14, 1837, February 6 and 27, March 1, April 5, 1841.
86. Utley, *Michigan as a province, Territory and State*, III, 99.
87. *Laws of Michigan* (1837), pp. 76-88. Any ten or more freeholders having a capital of not less than fifty thousand and not more than three hundred thousand dollars could form a banking corporation. Thirty per cent of the stock had to be paid in specie before the bank could do business.
88. Under this law by April 3, 1838, forty-nine banks had gone into operation. *See* list of the banks in *Michigan Historical Collections*, V, 214-215.
89. *Ibid*, II, 122-123.
90. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, September 5, 1839.
91. *Michigan State Journal*, July 24, 1839.

Digitized by Google

siderable number of votes in the convention, Chancellor Farnsworth, the choice of the conservatives was nominated.[92] Lyon, who was popular in the western part of the State, gave the chancellor his hearty support, but Norvell was disgruntled and remained obstinate.[93] The office-holders in Calhoun and Kalamazoo counties threw their votes to the Whig candidate.[94] As a result of this factional quarrel and the hard times the Whigs came into power.

The leaders of the Whig party were divided into two factions, one of which was led by a group of Detroit politicians contemptuously styled by their opponents in the same party, as "the Canandaigua Clique,"[95] or the city faction.[96] The majority of the leading men in this wing were lawyers and office-seekers in the cities. Many of them were natives of New York, while some of the leaders in Detroit had formerly resided at Canandaigua in the Empire State.[97] Most of these men were comparatively young and took an active part in politics.[98] In the interior of the State the members of this faction and their constituents were bitter opponents of slavery and furnished a large per cent of the recruits to the Free Soil and Republican

92. Detroit *Free Press*, September 13, 1839. Farnsworth received 104 votes, Bingham 22, Fitzgerald 8 and Ransom 1.

93. Lucius Lyon to Elon Farnsworth, November 1, 1839, *Michigan Historical Collections*, XXVII, 525.

94. Same to same, November 8, 1839, *Ibid*, p. 525.

95. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 133, p. 103; Vol. 136, p. 73.

96. Richard Butler to Wm. Woodbridge, *Ibid*, Vol. 132, p. 73.

97. This faction probably received its name from the fact that such men as Augustus S. Porter and George C. Bates were born at Canandaigua, New York. Asher B. Bates, a brother of the latter, was a native of New York and Philo C. Fuller had resided in that State.

98. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 138, p. 130.

Digitized by Google

parties. In these respects this group formed the radical faction in the Whig party.

In the early forties the most active member of this faction was Asher B. Bates, though Augustus S. Porter was the best known. Both men were prominent lawyers in Detroit and were natives of New York.[99] The latter was born at Canandaigua, and the father of the former was a resident of that city for some time. Bates had only a local reputation, while Porter at this time was in the United States Senate.

The other faction was composed mainly of monied men and large landowners who took little part in politics. Several of them were born in New England, though some came from eastern New York and Virginia.[100] These men represented the wealthiest class in the State. They regarded the citizens of foreign birth as a reckless and ignorant element under control of the Democratic politicians.[101] They shuddered at the thought of the "aliens" supported by the Democrats ever seizing control of the government.[102] The leaders of this wing especially revered the Whig party and tried in vain to prevent its disruption in 1854. Finding this a hopeless task a large number of them formed the Know-Nothing organization. If their love for their party, their unfavorable opinion of the foreigners, and opposition to slavery agitation, be taken as the test, they were the conservative faction in the Whig party.

99. Farmer, *History of Detroit*, II, 1035-1036; *Michigan Biographies* (1888), p. 530.

100. Prominent among the eastern New Yorkers were Townsend E. Gidley of Jackson County and S. V. R. Trowbridge of Oakland County.

101. See protest of the Whig members in the *Journal of the Constitutional Convention* of 1835, pp. 106-110; Detroit *Journal and Courier*, June 24, 1835; *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 129, p. 184.

102. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 136, p. 156.

Digitized by Google

William Woodbridge, who was elected Governor in 1839, was the most influential leader of this wing. He was one of Michigan's most noted politicians in ante-bellum times and one of the most conservative men of his day. He was born and educated in Connecticut, lived in Ohio for some years, and at the close of the war of 1812[103] he removed to Detroit, having been appointed Secretary of Michigan Territory. During his public career he was Secretary of the Territory, Territorial delegate in Congress, Judge of the Supreme Court of the Territory, Governor of the State, and served as State Senator and as United States Senator. As a member of the Congregational Church, Woodbridge was in both public and private life the strictest type of Puritan. Having rather a frail constitution, he spent much of his time at home among his books and consequently did not mingle with the people as much as most men in public life; nevertheless he won their support by his high sense of duty, by his rigid honesty, and by force of character.

The first split in the party occurred in the election of a United States Senator to succeed John Norvell. In 1840 the Whigs, having a majority in the Legislature, elected Augustus S. Porter as successor to Senator Lyon.[104] In 1841 Senator Norvell's term closed. Lieutenant-governor Gordon, the choice of the city faction, was the Whig caucus candidate.[105] When the election took place in the Senate on February 2, only one Whig member opposed him;[106] but in the House the conservatives refused to be bound by the dictates of the Detroit politi-

103. *Michigan Biographies* (1888), p. 713.
104. *House Journal* (1840), p. 81; *Senate Journal* (1840), p. 109.
105. Richard Butler to Wm. Woodbridge, *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 132, p. 73.
106. *Senate Journal* (1841), p. 133.

Digitized by Google

cians.[107] The conservatives however were not united upon any candidate. On the first trial the Whig vote stood twenty for Gordon, four for Woodbridge, two for Conger and one each for two others.[108] Conger's name had been put forward for the purpose of dividing Woodbridge's friends in the north.[109] The following day the Democratic members and the Whig opponents of Gordon cast their votes for Woodbridge.[110] In the joint session Woodbridge was elected by a coalition of conservative Whigs and Democrats.[111]

The factional hostility continued through the election of 1841. The Whigs nominated as candidate for Governor Philo C. Fuller, who was unsatisfactory to the conservative leaders.[112] He was probably the choice of the radical faction; at least he was a political ally of that group.[113] He was a native of Massachusetts, but before coming to Michigan he had resided in New York where he practiced law and was a member of the Legislature.[114] The unpopularity of the candidate[115] and the dissatisfaction with Tyler's administration[116] played a prominent part in the defeat of the party this year.

The Whigs continued to quarrel and the breach became wider after Tyler was read out of the party. As several of the

107. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 132, p. 73.
108. *House Journal* (1841), pp. 189-190.
109. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 132, p. 73.
110. *House Journal* (1841), pp. 198-199.
111. *Ibid*, p. 200.
112. Detroit *Daily Free Press*, October 21, 1841.
113. Henry T. Backus to Wm. Woodbridge, *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 133, p. 47.
114. *Michigan Biographies* (1888), p. 279.
115. Detroit *Advertiser*, July 1, 1843.
116. *Ibid*, August 23, 1841; *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 132, pp. 187, 227.

Digitized by Google

group of Detroit politicians were office-holders they supported the President,[117] while the conservatives were hostile to him. The most active of the office-holders was Colonel Brooks,[118] collector of the port of Detroit. In 1843 Brooks supported the Democratic candidate for Governor[119] and the following year he and his friends came out in favor of Tyler for President.[120]

During 1842 and 1843 the leaders of the city faction tried to control the appointments to office in Michigan.[121] They demanded the removal of Sheldon McKnight,[122] the Democratic postmaster of Detroit, in order that one of their friends might be appointed.[123] Being informed of the plan of these men by his son-in-law Henry T. Backus,[124] Senator Woodbridge decided that if anyone was appointed it should be Major Rowland, one of his friends.[125] When the report reached Detroit that Rowland had been appointed it gave, according to one writer, much consternation to the "Canandaigua Clique."[126] Backus said he preferred that McKnight should remain in

117. W. Howard to Wm. Woodbridge, *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 135, p. 106.
118. *Ibid*, p. 89; Vol. 133, p. 192.
119. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, July 4, 1843; Detroit *Daily Gazette*, June 12, 1843.
120. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 135, p. 246.
121. In 1847 Woodbridge said that this clique had been active for 10 years; that they were determined to "rule or ruin" and that they sought "to lay on the shelf" all who were in the way. *Ibid*, Vol. 138, p. 130.
122. John S. Barry to Wm. Woodbridge, *Ibid*, Vol. 133, p. 52; A. B. Bates to J. S. Rowland, *Ibid*, p. 48.
123. Henry T. Backus to Wm. Woodbridge, *Ibid*, p. 49.
124. *Ibid*, pp. 47, 49. Backus was a native of Connecticut and was a lawyer in Detroit. He served in the Legislature as both Representative and Senator.
125. Wm. Woodbridge to John S. Barry, *Ibid*, p. 93.
126. John McDowell to Wm. Woodbridge, *Ibid*, p. 103.

Digitized by Google

office rather than that a friend of this group should be in that place.[127] In July Major Rowland informed Woodbridge that Colonel Brooks was going to Washington to counteract influence hostile to him; men whom the Colonel had turned out of office, the writer said, had combined against him.[128]

The breach in the party continued throughout the following decade.[129] Though the election of 1844 united the factions for a time, the quarrel was soon resumed.

In 1848 the conservatives seized the helm[130] and directed the course of the party through the Presidential campaign. In view of the social and political disturbances in the Old World and the spirit of restlessness and the lust of conquest

127. *Ibid*, p. 49.

128. Descriptive of the personal hatred and illustrative of the factional animosity are the following extracts from letters of Henry T. Backus. Writing to Woodbridge on February 18, 1842 he said:

"The Legislature have adjourned without accomplishing much either to their own or the satisfaction of their constituency; if the Whigs had anything like a common bond or common honesty among themselves they might I doubt not again succeed, but this does not exist among the true strength of the party; with such a set of office holders and office seekers we can never get along and we ought not to."

In regard to the possibility of Clay's election to the Presidency and the probability of Whig success he said in January of the following year:

"I fear they never can sustain power indeed I am certain they can't with such appointments as they have in this State of men like Brooks, Bates, etc., who now decry the Whigs as much as they once lauded Whiggery when they had an office ahead. As things are now I had much rather see a pure *loco foco* reign."

129. See the account in the letter of Wm. Woodbridge to Jabez W. Hunting, September 20, 1847, *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 138, p. 130.

130. One of the conservatives purchased the Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, *Ibid*, p. 144.

Digitized by Google

which had taken possession of the people of this country, they believed that a firm and conservative executive was necessary. They regarded General Taylor as the proper man to direct affairs at this time[131]

The faction headed by the Detroit politicians was more radical than the followers of Woodbridge on the slavery question; also the former group was more willing to sacrifice its party organization to gain desired political ends.[132] Though members of both wings[133] joined the Free Soil party in 1848, the majority were the radical leaders and their constituents in the interior agricultural districts.[134] This year the Whigs and Free Soilers united upon the nomination of a preacher of the Methodist denomination for congressman in the second district. This coalition was doubtless brought about by the radical faction;[135] at least soon after his election the preacher became a political ally of that group.[136] In 1849 the Whig State Convention under the domination of the radical faction nominated as the party candidate for Governor, Littlejohn, who headed the Free Soil ticket;[137] as a result, the conservatives refused to support him.[138] In 1854 the radical faction and their constituents went as a body into the Republican party.

131. *Ibid*, p. 199.
132. *Ibid*, p. 182.
133. *Ibid*, p. 212.
134. The greater per cent of both the Liberty and Free Soil parties came from the small farmer class in the interior.
135. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vol. 138, p. 226.
136. *Ibid*, Vol. 139, p. 104.
137. See extracts from the speeches in the convention, in Detroit *Free Press*, September 29, 1849.
138. Niles *Republican*, October 6 and 20, 1849; Kalamazoo *Gazette*, November 2, 1849; Detroit *Advertiser*, November 9 and 13, 1849; Detroit *Free Press*, October 27, November 15, 1849.

Digitized by Google

On the other hand, the conservatives wanted to retain their party organization; they opposed the nomination of the Free Soiler on the Whig ticket in 1849, and though a portion of this wing joined the Republican party in 1854, the more conservative strove in vain to save the Whig organization.[139] When they found that this was impossible, many of them became Native Americans,[140] while a few cast their lot with the Democrats.[141]

The radical faction in the Democratic party was strongly opposed to slavery. In 1845 Robert McClelland of Monroe and James B. Hunt of Pontiac, two of the congressmen from Michigan, were spokesmen for this portion of their constituents when they voted against the annexation of Texas.[142] Both men were members of Congress while the Wilmot Proviso was the burning issue, and both supported this measure.[143] In 1848 a portion of the radicals joined the Free Soilers.

This year the conservative Democratic faction accepted the doctrine of "popular sovereignty."[144] Most of the members of this group now represented the counties in eastern Michigan[145] and reflected the views of General Cass on national questions. The western faction and the radicals adhered to the principle that Congress had jurisdiction over slavery in

139. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, July 8, 25, 28, August 2, 3, 5, 8, 9, 10, 15, 16, 21, 24, 29, 30, 1854; Kalamazoo *Gazette*, July 28, August 18, 1854; Supplement to the Detroit *Daily Post and Tribune*, July 6, 1879.

140. Several of the leading conservatives were found in the Know Nothing party.

141. Detroit *Free Press*, July 4 and 15, August 9 and 23, 1856.

142. *Cong. Globe*, 2d Sess., 28th Cong., p. 194.

143. *Ibid*, 1st Sess., 29th Cong., p. 1218.

144. Detroit *Free Press*, January 24, 1848.

145. The Norvell faction had been broken down about 1842.

Digitized by Google

the Territories.[146] Though these wings of the party suppressed their differences[147] during the Presidential campaign, a furious factional struggle burst forth the following year over the election of United States Senator.

In 1847 the western Democratic faction demanded the election of its leader as United States Senator,[148] but the members from that section were out-voted in the caucus meeting by the easterners;[149] therefore in 1849 the westerners were determined to elect a man from their part of the State to succeed General Cass.[150] When the conservatives in the Legislature gave their support to the author of the Nicholson letter, the western men, the radicals and the Whigs united in opposition to him,[151] and the contest which followed almost split the party.

The movement for southern independence from 1847 to 1852, and the corresponding reaction in the North against slavery agitation, united the conservatives and westerners.[152] However Bingham, who was now a member of Congress, was unwilling to make any concessions to the South and would resort to force if the people of that section attempted to leave the Union.[153] The law for the more effective rendition of fugitive

146. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, September 25, 1846; Governor Ransom's message *Joint Documents* (1849), Doc. I, p. 17; Grand Rapids *Enquirer*, October 3, 1849.

147. Detroit *Free Press*, June 9, 1848; *Felch* Papers, Vol. 831, pp. 58, 77; Loomis, *Free Thoughts on Michigan Politics*, (Pamphlet), p. 3; Grand Rapids *Enquirer*, January 10, 1849.

148. Kalamazoo *Gazette*, December 25, 1846; Niles *Republican*, December 26, 1846; Grand Rapids *Enquirer*, January 13, 1847.

149. *Woodbridge Papers*, Vols. 137, p. 76; 138, p. 69.

150. Grand Rapids *Enquirer*, December 27, January 17, 1849; Niles *Republican*, December 30, 1848.

151. *House Journal* (1849), pp. 35, 117-118, 121-122; *Senate Journal* (1849), pp. 34-102 *passim*.

152. The reaction began to take place in 1849.

153. Speech on June 4, 1850, in pamphlet form.

Digitized by Google

slaves made Bingham's constituents[154] more radical and widened the almost impassable gulf between them and the main wing of the party. When the Democrats read Bingham out of the party in 1850[155] he became the leader of the Free Soil organization. Four years later he and his followers formed a very important element in the Republican party.[156]

154. Such fugitive-slave cases as the Adam Crosswhite case, the Kentucky raid in Cass County, and the Giles Rose case in Detroit made many people determined opponents of this law.

155. Detroit *Free Press*, September 16, 1850.

156. Bingham became the first Governor on the Republican ticket.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Bad O.K.

MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

VOL. II, No. 2 APRIL, 1918 WHOLE No. 4

HISTORICAL NEWS, NOTES AND COMMENT

HANDBOOK OF THE WAR FOR PUBLIC SPEAKERS, a little pamphlet of some 125 pages, should be in the hands of everyone who would take an intelligent part in helping forward the great campaign of patriotic education that is sweeping over America. It can be secured for a mere nominal price to cover the cost of printing (25 cents) from The National Security League, 19 West Forty-fourth Street, New York City. Its form fits a coat pocket so that it can be easily carried. Specially important are the chapters "Why the United States had to enter the war," and "Why the United States must continue in the war."

The facts this little book contains are well authenticated. The senior editor is Dr. Albert Bushnell Hart, Professor of Government in Harvard University, author of *The War in Europe: Its Causes and Results;* also *National Ideals Historically Traced;* and various works on American history and government. As one of the founders and leaders of the American Historical Association and one of the foremost American historical thinkers and writers, he has in editing this volume personally vouched for the truth of the statements respecting America's entrance into the war as presented in this handbook. The volume may well serve as the touchstone for citizens as well as speakers upon the issues of the war.

Digitized by Google

A brief summary of the material in the two chapters above noted may be of immediate use to readers of the Magazine.

The United States is in the war principally for two reasons: First, because the German Government made war upon us; second, because of the kind of world we would have to live in if Germany should win,—a world in which the relations between nations would be determined by the doctrine of the survival of the physically strongest,—a world of big armaments and constant war.

Before we entered the war, Germany had killed some 250 American citizens who were exercising rights unquestioned under the law of nations. They were traveling on the high seas under the presumed protection of their Government.

The United States solemnly warned Germany (Feb. 10, 1915) that such acts were "an indefensible violation of neutral rights," that she would be held to "strict accountability," and that we would take any steps necessary "to safeguard American lives and to secure to American citizens the full enjoyment of their acknowledged rights on the high seas."

The warning was repeated more than once. It was earnestly hoped, and by many believed, that Germany would mend her ways, and we waited to see. The American democracy, any democracy, is not easily provoked to war. The great masses of the people desire peace; and for this reason democracy is the hope of the world. The American Government is controlled by public opinion, and even under repeated insult, public opinion must be given time to crystallize,—this Lincoln knew, when he waited two years before issuing the emancipation proclamation freeing the slaves. Germany knew this well, and for two years she continued to kill American citizens on the high seas.

Digitized by Google

After the sinking of the Lusitania, President Wilson again solemnly protested and warned Germany that the United States could not recognize any right of the Imperial German Government to kill American citizens bound on peaceful errands, whether or not in a war zone. With the utmost earnestness he set forth "the practical impossibility of employing submarines in the destruction of an enemy's commerce" without "inevitable violation of many sacred principles of justice and humanity"; because, it is practically impossible for a submarine to examine the papers and cargo of a merchant vessel at sea, or to make prize of her, or to sink her without endangering the lives of all on board.

Further, he pointed out that "no warning that an unlawful and inhumane act will be committed can possibly be accepted as an excuse or palliation for that act or as an abatement of the responsibility for its commission."

At the same time, a most solemn warning was conveyed in these words: "The Imperial German Government will not expect the Government of the United States to omit any word or any act necessary to the performance of its sacred duty of maintaining the rights of the United States and its citizens and of safeguarding their free exercise and enjoyment."

These words were unmistakable. But Germany did not take them seriously. Germany's whole diplomatic dealings with us are shown by documents now widely published to have been grossly perfidious. Whatever slight concessions she made were solely to gain time, until she should be able to make submarines enough to launch a campaign of ruthless destruction of commerce in spite of our warnings.

In addition to the submarine attacks, the German Government went further. Throughout 1915 and 1916 it carried on

Digitized by Google

in the United States, in our very midst, a secret campaign to cripple and disable us so that even when public opinion should be aroused we would not be able to retaliate. It fomented strikes and hired agents to destroy munitions plants. It subsidized a propaganda of disloyalty among citizens of German birth and with consumate effrontery placed spies even in our offices of government. It organized upon American soil unlawful conspiracies and military expeditions against countries with which we were at peace. It incited to insurrection in Cuba, in Haiti, in San Domingo. It subsidized papers and supported speakers to arouse bitterness of feeling against us in South America, in Mexico, and Japan, to embroil us in war. It became clear that even if we should give up our right to travel on the sea, and surrender to Germany's threats, Germany's activities right in our midst and among our neighbors were becoming too serious to be ignored.

The "Zimmermann note" is fresh in the memory of all; at the very time that Germany was expressing a cordial friendship for the people of the United States, this note was passed, dated January 19, 1917, from the German Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs (Zimmermann) to the German Minister in Mexico:

"On the 1st of February we intend to begin submarine warfare unrestricted. In spite of this, it is our intention to endeavor to keep neutral the United States of America.

"If this attempt is not successful, we propose an alliance on the following basis with Mexico.

"That we shall make war together and together make peace. We shall give general financial support and it is understood that Mexico is to reconquer the lost territory in New Mexico, Texas and Arizona. The details are left to you for settlement.

Digitized by Google

"You are instructed to inform the President of Mexico of the above in the greatest confidence as soon as it is certain that there will be an outbreak of war with the United States, and suggest that the President of Mexico, on his own initiative, should communicate with Japan suggesting adherence at once with this plan; at the same time, offer to mediate between Germany and Japan.

"Please call to the attention of the President of Mexico that the employment of ruthless submarine warfare now promises to compel England to make peace in a few months.

(Signed) "Zimmermann."

Twelve days after this (Jan. 31, 1917) Germany proclaimed her ruthless submarine campaign. She said they would destroy without warning and without safeguard for passengers or seamen all ships, whatever the nationality, found by German submarines in certain vast areas of the high seas. It would make no difference what cargoes these ships might carry nor to what destinations they might be bound.

This was defiance. The plan was speedily carried out. Several American ships, all of them bound on peaceful missions, some of them for American ports, were destroyed with loss of American lives.

This was war. These acts constituted acts of war by Germany against the United States just as much as if war had been actually declared by the German Government. Congress could not but recognize them as such, and did so, April 4th and 6th. We had no alternative except cowardly submission to lawless force.

We are at war, then, in the first place, because Germany made war upon us. The American citizen who professes that

Digitized by Google

he can not see this has something fundamentally the matter with his Americanism.

It may be difficult to maintain the poise of a judge now that we have become a participant in the great struggle. Ought American citizens to have kept off of these boats? Listen to these words of President Wilson, in his letter to Senator Stone (Feb. 24, 1916):

"For my own part, I can not consent to any abridgement of the rights of American citizens in any respect. The honor and self-respect of the Nation are involved. We covet peace, and shall preserve it at any cost but the loss of honor. To forbid our people to exercise their rights for fear we might be called upon to vindicate them would be a deep humiliation indeed. It would be an implicit, all but an explicit, acquiesence in the violation of the rights of mankind everywhere, and of whatever nation or allegiance. It would be a deliberate abdication of our hitherto proud position as spokesman, even amidst the turmoil of war, for the law and the right. It would make everything this Government has attempted, and everything it has achieved during this terrible struggle of nations, meaningless and futile."

Again, ought we to have stopped selling munitions to the belligerents? Suppose we had yielded to Germany in this matter, it is clear what this would have meant ultimately. If such a principle were written into international law, that neutrals should not sell munitions to warring nations, we could not consistently in a war of our own obtain munitions from neutrals. Hence that nation which in time of peace had accumulated the largest war supplies would be assured of victory. In other words the militarist state, the autocratic state like Germany that invested its money in reserves of

Digitized by Google

munitions, would be at a fatal advantage over a free people who invested their wealth in schools. It would mean, ultimately to hand over the world to that nation which should maintain the largest armament factories.

The fact that Germany was not in position to buy munitions from us does not alter the principle. Both Germany and Austria sold munitions to warring states so late as the Balkan wars of 1912-13. In effect, what Germany asked of us was, to become her ally; and such we would have become had we yielded to her demands, for in doing so we would have acted upon no moral principle or recognized agreement governing the relations of nations. On the other hand, we would have denied to the Allies an international right recognized even by Germany's own practice. To have refused to sell munitions to the Allies would have been, under the circumstances, essentially an act hostile to the Allies, and would have worked powerfully toward the end of securing a German victory.

But there are deeper reasons for our entrance into the war with the German Government. They lie in the spirit and character of that Government. And these deeper reasons are why we must continue to bear our part in the struggle until the essential objects are accomplished.

Submission to Germany's denial of our rights would not have ended there. It would have meant that the American Republic would have become to all peoples a legitimate object of contempt. It would have been an unmistakable proof that the most solemn declarations of the United States were mere empty words. Thereafter the United States would neither have received nor deserved consideration in the councils of the nations.

Digitized by Google

It is a narrow-minded provincial and unworthy outlook to argue that Americans "should have stayed home and minded their business." Because, whether we will or not, America does not and cannot live alone. She is a member of a group of nations and she must bear her part honorably in the international questions involved in that relation. Had America submitted to Germany, her ability in the future to serve those ideals for which she stands would have been weakened beyond measure.

Entirely apart from Germany's direct attacks upon us, if we had to choose war, there could be no question of where that choice would lie, for our own safety and the safety of democracy in the world. The ideals for which America stands the German Government despises. To her these ideals are negative and weak,—how else, indeed, to an aggressive hereditary autocracy claiming to rule not by the will of the governed but by "divine right," and recognizing in its relations with other nations no moral obligations. Opposite as the poles to this is the spirit of the Allies,—of England, of France, of New Russia, of Italy. As it is, Germany compelled us to choose whether we would tacitly and cravenly fight with her, or fight against her. Our choice of the latter was in accord with every consideration of loyalty to our national ideals and of prudence in safeguarding our national security.

Consider what even a partial victory for Germany would mean. First, it would mean that the German method of initiating and conducting war would be vindicated by success. In the minds of the German people thereafter, this would be the model to be followed in future wars. It would be likely to be the model for any other ambitious nation which might be tempted by Germany's victory to seek national aggrandizement by war.

Digitized by Google

The essential principle of that method is that "military necessity knows no law." And, as a corollary, it knows no considerations of humanity, good faith, honor or chivalry; on this principle, neutrals have no rights that Germany is bound to respect if she finds it advantageous to violate them. The inspiring of fear and terror is reduced to a science in dealing with conquered peoples; the presence of German armies on foreign soil is to be made so terrible to the civilian population that all peoples may be made afraid to oppose so ruthless a force. This method, as actually employed by the German Government in this war, has included the drowning of women and children of neutral nations on the high seas, sinking hospital ships and drowning wounded soldiers and Red Cross nurses, bombing hospitals and schoolhouses, killing innocent hostages in occupied lands, deporting thousands of non-combatants to work at forced labor against their kindred, violating nunneries, and tearing women and young girls from their homes to a life worse than death.

Listen to this statement by an eminent German authority on war, in a book widely read in Germany: "Whoever uses force, without any consideration and without sparing blood, has sooner or later the advantage if the enemy does not proceed in the same way. One can not introduce a principle of moderation into the philosophy of war without committing an absurdity. It is a vain and erroneous tendency to wish to neglect the element of brutality in war merely because we dislike it."—(Quoted from Von Clausewitz, *Vom Kriege,* Vol. I, page 4.)

Another: "It would be giving up ourselves to a chimera not to realize that war in the present will have to be conducted more recklessly, less scrupulously, more violently,

Digitized by Google

more ruthlessly, than ever in the past . . . . Distress, the deep misery of war, must not be spared to the enemy state . . . . The burden must be and must remain crushing. The necessity of imposing it follows from the very idea of national war."—(General J. von Hartmann, cited in Lavisse and Andler, *German Theory and Practice of War.*)

It must be made clear by this war, that any Government that adopts such principles and employs such methods, and that any people which can knowingly tolerate such a Government, will bring upon itself not merely the condemnation, but the effectual opposition of the civilized world.

Imagine what a German victory would mean to every peace-loving nation on the face of the earth. A German victory gained by these methods would be based upon treaty-breaking, violation of international law and international compacts, for all of these methods have been condemned by most nations as barbarous and pertaining to unenlightened ages. But these methods would be glorified by a German victory. It would mean that hereafter all laws and compacts between nations would have little or no force. No nation, after such a shining example of the futility of such agreements, for its own safety, could afford to place reliance in them. All international obligations would be reduced to "scraps of paper," and the world become an armed camp. A victory over Germany therefore is essential to all peaceful peoples who desire that among nations as among individuals respect for contracts shall be enforced and a reign of law shall prevail.

Germany offers peace, but a German peace. Can the nations honorably make peace with Germany now, on the basis of "no annexations, no indemnities?" Assuming even the restoration of all conquered areas, the damage Germany has done

Digitized by Google

to them will cripple them for generations of the future. Much less can be pardoned the shameful dishonor and grossly criminal conduct of a brutal soldiery to helpless women and children and to the aged who had to witness these crimes and then were enslaved or murdered in cold blood. Germany must be punished, then we can talk of peace with honor.

Moreover, what reason have we to suppose that Germany would keep her plighted word? Until that time when she shall be stripped of her power for harm, no lasting peace for the world is possible. A peace without either such a defeat of Germany as will weaken the German power and influence over central Europe, or else a radical transformation of the temper as well as the form of the German Government, would mean that all Europe must continue to be menaced by the most formidable and heartless political and military combination the world has seen. A victorious Germany would be left in virtual control of a compact body of more than 150,000,000 people, comprising Germany, Austria-Hungary, Bulgaria, and Turkey, and probably eventually the Balkan states. The German people, expanding in the national pride of success, would be confirmed in their belief in the profitableness of aggression. Bitter would be their hostility to the democracies which had recently opposed them! Under such conditions it would be impossible that the world should be "safe for democracy," or that there should be any prospect of a lasting peace.

A victorious Germany wielding such an increase of power, prestige, and influence, with ambitions unsatiated and with a special grievance against the United States as opposed to her ideals and aggressions, would make this country a special object of her intrigue and ultimate attack. These many years

Digitized by Google

the British navy and the French army have stood between German aggression and the New World. With these bulwarks removed, the Monroe Doctrine would be in grave danger. It is entirely logical to assume that if England and France were decisively beaten and compelled to accept terms dictated by Germany, that Germany would demand concessions of land to the north of us in Canada and to the south of us in South America, where she would be within easy striking distance of the United States. How then could we escape the burden of military preparation to meet this attack, such as Germany has forced upon France for generations?

The object of this war should be, if possible, to end war. But the success of Germany would cause the shadow of war to rest for generations upon mankind. The affairs of the entire globe would be dominated by a vast Power contemptuous of other peoples, without regard for its plighted word, alien to the spirit of kindliness and fraternity, looking upon force and sinister intrigue as the only means for the adjustment of relations between states, and hostile to the ideals of free government.

In behalf of the German people as distinguished from the German Government, let us recall these words of President Wilson in the war message to Congress: "We have no quarrel with the German people. We have no feeling toward them but one of sympathy and friendship. It was not upon their impulse that their Government acted in entering the War. It was not with their previous knowledge or approval. It was a war determined upon as wars used to be determined upon in the old unhappy days, when peoples were nowhere consulted by their rulers and wars were provoked and waged in the

Digitized by Google

interest of dynasties or of little groups of ambitious men who were accustomed to use their fellowmen as pawns and tools."

And for emphasis, again he says in the same message: "We are, let me say again, the sincere friends of the German people and shall desire nothing so much as the early reestablishment of intimate relations of mutual advantage between us, however hard it may be for them for the time being to believe that this is spoken from our hearts."

In July of 1914 when war threatened, there was a strong peace party in Germany. Earnest protests were made against war. In Berlin on one day, 28 mass meetings were held to denounce the war, and one of them is said to have been attended by 70,000 people. That was before war began. But how is it now?

The German press, German speakers, every source of knowledge for the people, has been absolutely controlled by the German Government since the beginning of the war. It has systematically molded public opinion, and the public will. It has falsified the aims of the Allies, and glorified the "achievements" of the armies of the Fatherland. It can say, with truth, no enemy has yet set foot on German soil,—and it can point to substantial conquests of enemy lands, still in their hands. Not only have they filled the German mind with the pride of conquest, but they have fired the ambition of the German people to believe that "with God's aid" the German nation is to conquer the world and to rule supreme as God's chosen people.

Listen to this, from Pastor W. Lehmann: "Germany is the center of God's plan for the world." And this, from Dr. Preuss, "It was the hidden meaning of God that he made

Digitized by Google

Israel the forerunner of the Messiah, and in the same way he has by his hidden intent designated the German people to be His successor."

But listen to the true meaning of this appeal to God for the deception of the German people, in Friedrich Naumann's "Briefe ueber Religion," printed before the war, in which he says: "The more exclusively Jesus is preached, the less does he help to form states; and where Christianity attempted to come forward as a constructive force, that is, to form states, to dominate civilization, there it was furthest away from the Gospel of Jesus. Now this means, for our practical life, that we construct our house of the state, not with the cedars of Lebanon, but with the building stones from the Roman Capitol . . . . Hence we do not consult Jesus when we are concerned with things which belong to the domain of the construction of the state and of Political Economy."

It would affront the intelligence of American citizens to comment further upon what this sort of doctrine means. The German people have tolerated a Government which stands for such doctrine and for the ideals that make possible the atrocities of the German army. The most physically fit of the German people are now in the German army. The German army is the weapon of the German Government. Is there doubt in the mind of any true American about his own duty or the duty of the American soldier?

Listen to Otto Kahn, one of the most prominent of German Americans, speaking June 1, 1917:

"Speaking as one born of German parents, I do not hesitate to state it as my deep conviction that the greatest service which men of German birth or antecedents can render to the country of their origin is to proclaim, and to stand up for

Digitized by Google

those great and fine ideals and national qualities and traditions which they inherited from their ancestors, and to set their faces like flint against monstrous doctrines and acts of a rulership which have robbed them of the Germany which they loved and in which they took just pride, the Germany which had the good will, respect and admiration of the world.

"I do not hesitate to state it as my solemn conviction that the more unmistakably and whole-heartedly Americans of German origin throw themselves into the struggle which this country has entered in order to rescue Germany, no less than America and the rest of the world from those sinister forces that are, in President Wilson's language, the enemy of all mankind, the better they protect and serve the repute of the old German name and the true advantage of the German people."

What, then, is now being settled on the battlefields of Europe? It is the character of the coming world-order. Shall it be ruled in the spirit of the German Emperor, or shall it be ruled in the spirit of Lincoln? Listen once again, to a contrast of ideals. Friedrich von Bernhardi, the German Lieutenant General who speaks for the Imperial German Government, says in his *Germany and the Next War:*

"Might is at once the supreme right, and the dispute as to what is right is decided by the arbitrament of war" (page 23); again (page 37): "The inevitableness, the idealism, and the blessedness of war as the indispensable and stimulating law of development must be repeatedly emphasized."

Over against this, place Lincoln: "With malice toward none, with charity for all, with firmness in the right as God gives us to see the right, let us finish the work we are in—to bind up one another's wounds, to care for him who shall have

Digitized by Google

borne the battle, and for his widow and orphans; to do all which may achieve and cherish a just and lasting peace among ourselves and with all nations."—(Second Inaugural Address, 1865.)

America is for a permanent world peace. This is America's war, to end war. In it is at stake all that America has stood for, all that our fathers have died for, the hope of mankind. The world can not endure half for peace and half for war. It is for us to decide which of these ideals shall prevail.

THE TEACHING OF MICHIGAN HISTORY will always be a subject of interest to Michigan people. That it should be taught, most will agree. But how it should be taught, and when, and where, and how much, are questions that have not yet been answered fully.

In the January number of the Magazine attention was called to the careful thought of Miss Minetta Warren upon this subject, in a review of a paper presented at the last meeting of the Michigan State Teachers' Association at Grand Rapids. At that meeting there was read also a paper by Miss Mary Harden, of the South High School, Grand Rapids, which she has on request sent to us. The significant feature of this paper is the special emphasis laid upon teaching Michigan in its relations with American national development, particularly the extension of the frontier and the growth of the Middle West.

Indeed State history as a part of the United States history is a fruitful thought. In this connection Miss Harden points out that history consists essentially of the relationships of a community's life, and that Michigan as one of the vital

Digitized by Google

organs of the American Union can be understood only when her many and varied relationships to the Union are understood. The sum of those relations is a time relation as well as a place relation,—a causal relation of people, ideas and institutions,—hence the necessity of studying Michigan in her relations with national growth for the larger outlook and for the real meaning of her life as a State.

This view appeals to us at once when we consider what the master historians tell us of the proper study of United States history. The United States, as a nation, is one of the sister nations of the earth, and the proper study of its history involves the interpretation of its life in relation to the life of all nations, and of all time, for the stream of historic causality reaches to us from remotest antiquity. This truth, almost a commonplace, is now being impressed with startling reality by the Great War which shows how closely the world has been knitted together, especially in these latter days, by the complexities of human interests, due largely to scientific triumphs is annihilating the separations of time and space.

"America for Americans" has never been a slogan that appealed to very many thoughtful people. "Michigan for Michigan people," as a slogan of the same type, is sensed by all to be a very narrow and selfish way to celebrate the high human interests of the State. "Michigan for all the Union" is better, and is in fact in keeping with what the people of Michigan have as a whole throughout their history actually lived, in war as well as in peace. They lived this principle in the Civil War, in all of the wars of the Union; and today, if one may judge by their enthusiasm for the world cause of democracy at stake in the Great War, they are actually, even consciously, living "Michigan for the World." This is involved in the

Digitized by Google

happy phrase used by President Wilson, "to make the world safe for democracy," whereby only can the world be safe for Michigan and for all that it stands.

Yet just as we may study the internal history, the so-called "domestic" history, of the United States, so we may study the "domestic," internal, history of Michigan, a phase that must not be lost out of view. It is an essential means to the larger outlook, and in studying this internal history there is scarcely a point at which its national bearings can not be pointed out by the "teacher who knows."

As Miss Harden suggests, here may be the crux of the problem,—to get teachers of history sufficiently familiar with Michigan's internal history to be able to connect it up with its national bearings. For example, how many history teachers can name Michigan's first Governor, or give the date of his inauguration,—not to speak of the national matter of why our first Governor came from Virginia, or the national situation that involved his administration in difficulties which proved fatal to him as Governor and a serious embarrassment to Michigan as a State.

Teachers are perhaps not to blame for not knowing more about Michigan history. The demand upon their time and energy to prepare for teaching well the great variety of subjects of a crowded curriculum has left them little initiative to take up independently a subject not imperatively and officially required, and little room in the history courses for it if even they should choose to do so.

Teachers in the Eastern States who would teach their State's history may of course teach the early part of it as the beginnings of American colonial history, and much of it for many years after 1789 as being near the focus of national

Digitized by Google

history. But with the increasing consciousness of the meaning of the expansion of the American frontier westward not only for American institutions but for democracy as a universal principle, the history of Michigan as a part of that expansion takes on the importance of "beginnings." For the centuries of American life which are to come, Michigan is making "beginnings" along with the other States of the conquered frontier. Some definite place and way ought to be made for teaching it.

But in one respect teachers of State history in our Eastern States have an advantage, namely, they can teach the colonial beginnings of their States in more direct relation with English institutional growth. As it is trite to speak of a child's debt to its mother, so is it to speak of America's institutional debt to England, which is the "mother country" literally in all that is best in our democracy. The American Revolution was not so much a struggle between England and the colonies as between liberals and conservatives on both sides of the water. War was precipitated by the stubborn autocracy of the Teutonic King George III, who in one of his intervals between fits of insanity goaded the colonies to a crisis. The greatest statesmen in England of that day defended the colonies in Parliament. And while by the aid of France the colonies won a liberal government through independence, the very same liberties were won later for England in many a stormy scene in the English Parliament between autocracy and democracy. What the emigrating Englishmen gained by war and independent development, the Englishmen who stayed at home have gained by Reform Bills, and the study of the inter-relations of that growth in England with the American States and with our National Government is for us a meaningful study.

Digitized by Google

Miss Harden in her paper may well look askance at the idea of "compulsory Michigan history" in the schools, when in many of our schools as yet there is no distinct place for the thorough teaching of the foundations of American liberty and democracy as developed in the history of England. The German professors tell us that the institutions of human liberty were born in the forests of the Fatherland, and carried to England by the Angles, Saxons and Jutes. They point to the flourishing economic condition of the "common people" of Germany, to the social legislation which they say is "just being copied in England and America," to their "great literature," to their "free schools and compulsory education," etc. But the American boy or girl who is deceived by this as a result of lack of historical instruction in the meaning of "Prussian autocracy" as over against "English democracy" may well lay a heavy charge at the door of the history teaching of his native land. Until we have "compulsory English history," it would seem wise to talk less about forcing Michigan history on the schools.

There is a place for Michigan history in the schools, in connection with our national history, as pointed out by Miss Harden. It should be used to illustrate the westward migration and transplanting of those ideals and institutions of Democracy which America has received as an original inheritance, and which our national life has taken up and transformed into the Union of States between the oceans. At the end of the course in American history, it would indeed be well and proper to bring together the main threads of our State history, by from four to six weeks of intensive study, using Hemans' *History of Michigan,* or Mr. Pattengill's little book, or Professor Larzelere's when it is ready, and such aids as the Michigan Historical Commission provides.

Digitized by Google

Of Professor Larzelere's book, whose author hardly needs an introduction to Michigan teachers, who have known him many years in connection with the history department of the Central Michigan Normal School at Mt. Pleasant, a word further may be said. He states that his plan is to make a small book that will be suitable for the upper grammar grades, and that while it is designed as a text-book, he is trying to put into it those features which will make it interesting to young people without sacrificing essentials. He is trying to avoid the bare outline method of treatment, with its mere names, dates, and statistics, and give a readable treatment of the big events and movements. At the end of each chapter he is preparing references for supplementary reading.

To supply the supplementary material for this and other text-books, the long-needed volume of "readings in Michigan history" is being prepared by the Michigan Historical Commission. The Commission is preparing two volumes of this kind, a small volume for grade use, more largely narrative and descriptive, and another to contain the heavier materials illustrating the economic, social and political phases of the State's history. These volumes will not take the place of text-books such as those mentioned, but will furnish ample supplementary reading for all class purposes.

In view of the immediate needs of teachers at the close of the school year, the editor has prepared the following outline, and will be glad to hear from teachers as to their use of it, or upon any other subject related to the study and teaching of Michigan history.

To use this outline to best advantage, teachers should have access to the *Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections*, which will be supplied free of charge to any Public or School

Digitized by Google

Library. These 39 volumes have two index volumes, making 41 volumes in the set. In addition, in the back of volume 39 is an author-and-subject index. By means of these indexes abundant material can be found upon the topics in this outline, excepting perhaps the last two, for which the several numbers of the *Michigan History Magazine* and the *Bulletins* of the Historical Commission will be found useful.

TWENTY-FIVE TOPICS IN MICHIGAN HISTORY

I. Discovery and exploration
   1. Cartier
   2. Champlain
   3. Nicolet
   4. Marquette and Joliet
   5. LaSalle
   6. Duluth

II. The Indians
   1. Prehistoric man in Michigan
   2. Tribes of the Great Lakes
   3. Myths, legends and folk-lore
   4. Manners and customs
   5. Inter-tribal wars

III. The Missionaries
   1. Jogues and Raymbault
   2. Menard and Allouez
   3. Dablon and Marquette

IV. Early French Settlements
   1. Fur trade and traders
   2. Sault Ste. Marie and Mackinac

Digitized by Google

3. Cadillac at Detroit
4. Old French manners, customs, and traditions
5. Cadillac's successors
6. Settlements on St. Joseph River

V. Under the British Flag
1. French and English commercial rivalry
2. Border wars; end of French regime
3. Pontiac and the massacres of 1763
4. British rule at Detroit and Mackinac

VI. Coming of the Americans
1. Moravians and Friends
2. Ordinance of 1787; Northwest Territory
3. Wayne and the Indians; treaty of 1795
4. Northwestern posts; Jay's treaty
5. Detroit in 1796
6. Wayne County
7. Organization of Michigan Territory
8. Detroit's great fire in 1805
9. Governor Hull
10. Judge Woodward
11. Indian treaty of 1807

VII. Michigan and the War of 1812
1. Indian allies of the British
2. Battles of the war
3. Treaty of Ghent
4. Detroit after the war
5. Advantages and disadvantages of the war for Michigan

Digitized by Google

VIII. Settlement of Michigan after the War
1. Beginning of public land sales at Detroit (1818)
2. Treaty of Saginaw
3. Detroit in 1819
4. "Walk-in-the-Water"; steam navigation on the Great Lakes
5. Organization of eastern shore counties: Wayne, Monroe, Macomb, St. Clair
6. First inland counties: Oakland, Washtenaw, Lenawee
7. Chicago Road
8. Erie Canal
9. St. Joseph Valley
10. Kalamazoo Valley and Territorial Road
11. Grand River region
12. Saginaw country
13. Harriet Martineau's visit to Michigan
14. Cholera epidemics (1832-34)
15. Black Hawk War scare
16. Negro riot in Detroit
17. Early newspapers

IX. Representative Men of Michigan Territory
1. Lewis Cass
2. William Woodbridge
3. Father Gabriel Richard
4. Henry R. Schoolcraft
5. Stevens T. Mason

X. Questions of Boundary and Statehood
1. Dispute with Ohio; "Toledo War"

Digitized by Google

2. First constitutional convention
3. First State constitution
4. First State officers
5. Lucius Lyon and John Norvell
6. "Frost-bitten convention"
7. Upper Peninsula
8. Michigan-Indiana boundary
9. Western boundary
10. International boundary

XI. Michigan a State
1. Admission to the Union; Michigan Day
2. The "Boy Governor"
3. Conditions and resources in 1837
4. Churches and schools; Primary School Law
5. Isaac E. Crary and John D. Pierce
6. University and its branches

XII. Some Costly Experience
1. "Wild-cat" banking
2. Plans for "public improvements"
3. "Five million dollar loan"
4. "Hard times"
5. "Political revolution" of 1840
6. Abandonment of "improvement" schemes

XIII. Settlement of Northern Michigan
1. "Counties with Indian names"
2. King Strang and the Mormons on Beaver Island
3. First Upper Peninsula counties
4. Copper and copper mining

Digitized by Google

5. Douglas Houghton
6. Iron and iron mining
7. "Soo" Canal
8. Lake commerce
9. Railroads
10. Lumbering

XIV. Michigan and Slavery
1. First legislative resolutions regarding slavery
2. Crosswhite case
3. Zachariah Chandler
4. Birth of a new party at Jackson "under the oaks"
5. Battle Creek and the "underground railroad"
6. Sojourner Truth
7. Election of Abraham Lincoln

XV. Michigan in the Civil War
1. Michigan's "War Governor"
2. Response to President Lincoln's call for troops
3. War legislation
4. Michigan regiments
5. Battles
6. Roll of honor
7. Michigan war poems and addresses

XVI. Political and Social Questions
1. The "greenback" in politics
2. Liquor question
3. Equal suffrage
4. Australian ballot
5. Labor questions
6. Constitution of 1909

Digitized by Google

XVII. Commemoration of Important Events
1. Centennial of 1876
2. Michigan's fiftieth birthday
3. Michigan at the "World's Fair"

XVIII. Notable Disasters
1. Forest fires
2. Financial panics, 1873 and 1893

XIX. Industrial Development
1. Agriculture
2. Lumbering
3. Mining
4. Manufacturing
5. Immigration

XX. Transportation and Communication
1. Railroad building
2. Electric railroads
3. Telegraph and telephone
4. Press
5. Ship canals
6. Lake commerce

XXI. Penal and Reformatory Institutions
1. Prisons (Jackson, Marquette)
2. Industrial School for Boys (Lansing)
3. Industrial Home for Girls (Adrian)
4. Michigan Reformatory (Ionia)

XXII. Charitable Institutions
1. Michigan School for the Blind (Lansing)
2. Michigan Employment Institution for the Blind (Saginaw)

Digitized by Google

3. Michigan School for the Deaf (Flint)
4. State Public School (Coldwater)
5. Michigan Soldiers' Home (Grand Rapids)
6. State hospitals (Kalamazoo, Pontiac, Traverse City, Newberry, Ionia)
7. Michigan Home and Training School (Lapeer)
8. Michigan Farm Colony for Epileptics (Wahjamega)
9. Sanatoriums (near Howell, and in Midland County)

XXIII. Educational Institutions
1. University of Michigan (Ann Arbor)
2. Normal Schools (Ypsilanti, Mt. Pleasant, Marquette, Kalamazoo)
3. Michigan Agricultural College (East Lansing)
4. Michigan College of Mines (Houghton)

XXIV. Michigan in the Great War

XXV. Historical Work
1. Michigan Historical Society of 1828
2. Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society
3. Michigan Historical Commission
4. Local historical societies
5. Cooperative work of Michigan Clubs

THE ANNUAL MEETING of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society for 1918 will be held in Lansing, May 28 and 29, jointly with the Midwinter Meeting which was to have been held at Bay City but was postponed on account of war conditions.

Digitized by Google

As announced in the January number of the Magazine, the program will be in keeping with the spirit which animates all in this crisis of our national life. Among the speakers will be ex-Governors Woodbridge N. Ferris and Chase S. Osborn, who will talk upon the war. Speakers who will represent the Bay City Meeting are Hon. William S. Linton of Saginaw, Mr. James Cook Mills of Saginaw, Mr. Fred Dustin of Saginaw, and Miss Cornelia Richardson of Bay City. Other speakers are Mrs. William H. Wait of Ann Arbor, Miss Sue I. Silliman of Three Rivers, Prof. R. Clyde Ford of Ypsilanti, Rev. Seth Reed of Flint, Hon. Edward Frensdorf of Jackson, Mr. C. E. Bement of Lansing, Mr. W. L. Jenks of Port Huron, and Mr. Norman B. Wood of Elsie.

The subjects will be of wide range and interesting to all. Music of patriotic nature and old-time songs will be sung, and the pioneers and old soldiers will find this one of the most inspiring meetings the Society has held. There will be ample time and a special place on the program for reminiscences of pioneer days and war times, and the meeting should bring to all that spirit of uplift and courage needed in times which try the souls of patriots.

THE LIFE AND WORK OF GEORGE SYLVESTER MORRIS: A CHAPTER IN THE HISTORY OF AMERICAN THOUGHT IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY, by Prof. Robert M. Wenley, of the Department of Philosophy of the University of Michigan, has been brought out by the Macmillan Company as a number in the University of Michigan *Publications*. In nine chapters, comprising 326 pages of text, the author has covered, as indicated by the sub-title, the significant aspects of the philosophical

Digitized by Google

thought in the last century in America with which the life of Professor Morris was coincident and in which it was a living factor. The work, therefore, is a biography in the sense of an interpretation of a life, in relation to that larger intellectual life in which the personality of Professor Morris so nicely functioned.

None but perfect work might be expected from the author. The degree of success with which he has accomplished his task is reflected in the words of President G. Stanley Hall of Clark University, who regards the book as the best biography ever written of any American thinker, and expresses the hope that it may inspire others to similar tasks in behalf of other Michigan men. Unquestionably such work should be undertaken only by eminent men who have the large view so needful for the proper setting of a great life. Professor Morris is most fortunate in having for his biographer a scholar equipped not only with breadth of view and technical skill, but with that intellectual and spiritual sympathy natural to a successor of Prof. Morris in the Department of Philosophy at Michigan, a sympathy felt on every page by the reader as sincere appreciation of the service rendered by Professor Morris to the University.

The rather scant biographical treatment hitherto accorded to men of Michigan is touched upon by Professor Wenley in his preface. He suggests that perhaps this apparent neglect is because the worth of great men is taken for granted. No adequate lives have been written of Tappan, Frieze, Watson, Olney, Hinsdale, all of whom have built their lives into the University. Indeed there is room for another history of the University itself, such as the older institutions of New England and the Eastern States are proud to have inspired. The

Digitized by Google

recent work done for Yale is typical of what might be done for the great Middle Western center of learning and culture at Ann Arbor. It is earnestly to be wished that Professor Wenley may undertake the task, at least from the point where his predecessor, Andrew Ten Brook, left off, at the close of the Haven administration. At least may we not hope to have from him an interpretation of the life of Dr. Angell, whose years spanned so much that was vital to the University during the last quarter of the nineteenth century, a work which would nicely supplement the Morris "Life," rounding out the period immediately subsequent to that covered by Professor Ten Brook in his *American State Universities* (published in 1875).

Professor Morris came to the University in 1870, as Professor of Modern Languages and Literature, and continued in that work until 1880. In 1881 he began his connection with the Department of Philosophy, where he remained until his death, at Ann Arbor, in 1889. Professor Morris' work as a teacher (Chapter IX) will doubtless be for the general reader the most interesting part of the book, a chapter made up of well-selected quotations of personal evaluations by students and colleagues.

Dr. Angell there speaks of "the humane sweetness of the man which, nevertheless, did not prevent him from holding positive opinions and exhibiting great courage in their expression."

Prof. John Dewey, whose chief Prof. Morris was during many years, writes:

"There is, indeed, nothing to be said of him as a class-room instructor that is not to be said of him as a man. Nothing could have been more foreign to his character than to assume

Digitized by Google

in any respect an attitude or quality in the class-room different from that which marked him elsewhere. There was the same sincerity, the same simplicity, the same force of enthusiasm in him in one place as in another. No 'officialism,' such as sometimes gathers about the work of teaching, ever touched him. He was everywhere simply and only a man.

"But Professor Morris had unusual gifts as a philosophic instructor. He was, among other things, a commentator of the first order. That is, he had the selective eye which made at once for the heart of an author under discussion; he had the pregnant phrase that lays bare this heart to the eye of the student. He had the gift of inspiring in his pupils the same disinterested devotion to truth that marked himself. He conveyed in large measure what, in his essay upon *University Education,* he himself calls 'the power to detect and will to condemn all essential shams and falsehoods.' Scholarship never lost itself in pedantry; culture never masqueraded as mere intellectualism, without ethical inspiration and backing. He was especially successful in arousing pupils with any particular aptitude for philosophy to advanced and independent work. The spirit of his work was that which he declared should be the spirit of all truly University work—a free teacher face to face with a free student. He once defined idealism as faith in the human spirit; this faith he had, and his voice and his influence were always for broadening the scope and methods of college work, without in any way relaxing the solidity and thoroughness of mental discipline."

The late Professor Hough writes of Morris as a teacher:

"Professor Morris was one of the high type of teachers who draw the interest and thought of their students to the work, rather than force the work upon them. He was an inspirer

Digitized by Google

and guide, not a master. But he did not inspire his hearers by eloquence; he cared little for such effects. You were rather drawn to him and to his teaching by his transparent goodness, his perfect simplicity and sincerity, by the charming, almost fascinating, sweetness of his manner, but above all, I think, by the real substance of what he said, and by the illumination, the flood of light, which his mind always cast upon *his* theme. Thus if I were asked to say in a word what it was that drew you most to him, I should say it was the beauty of light, the attractive force and satisfaction of light, as conveyed in his thought, and as manifested in his person and presence."

Tributes from two of Prof. Morris' students, as reflecting the "benches," are of special interest,—one by Mrs. Harold B. Wilson, the other by Dr. Elmer E. Brown, formerly United States Commissioner of Education, now Chancellor of New York University. Mrs. Wilson says in part:

"Many teachers get wonderful results through a strong appeal to the individual, with a quick insight into the needs of each. Dr. Morris never made any appeal to this innocent vanity, and no one could be less concerned than he to 'advertise' himself in any way—even by the most refined and indirect methods. One did not feel that this was because he belittled himself or his office, but rather because of a certain austere dignity of character, as well as a lack of self-consciousness . . . .

"Even after twenty-five years, it is not possible to speak of Dr. Morris, and all his teaching did for me, without being deeply moved. The intimate, heart-stirring appeal that he made, in his quiet, self-effacing way, to all classes of students, was shown at the time of his death. No one would have been

Digitized by Google

more surprised than he at the impressive, solemnizing outburst; for he was a beloved element in University life, even to those who had never studied with him; and, for those who were his disciples, it was a period of great sorrow."

Chancellor Brown says, writing to Dr. Wenley under date of Feb. 1916: "When I went to the University of Michigan, after some experience in teaching, and older by some years than the average freshman, it was with a well-defined intellectual hunger in several directions. One of these was in the direction of aesthetic appreciation. Another, much more vague, was a desire to understand how philosophy deals with the problems of life. I had known nothing of Professor Morris, but was quickly attracted by his courses in the history of philosophy and in aesthetics. As I remember it now, I made my way into his classes with my first semester in college, and took as much work with him as circumstances and regulations permitted.

"The fineness and elevation of his personal character appealed to me strongly from the start,—the quiet manner, the deliberate and temperate expression, the unmistakable devotion to his subject, even enthusiasm for it, which never flamed out in any violence of expression, but was rather a deep and pervasive glow. I was not at first aware of this warmth. I thought rather of a philosophical detachment and even indifference. But it was not long before I felt the personal conviction of the teacher and his intense loyalty to the doctrines which he set forth . . . .

"The news of his death shocked and saddened the whole University. The great body of students, who had never come in personal contact with him, knew that one of the great teachers of the institution was gone. And those of us who

Digitized by Google

were studying under his direction felt that we had suffered a personal and irreparable loss."

Of the content of Prof. Morris' teaching, his preparation, his early home training, his school and college life, his service in the Civil War, his student days in Europe, and his practical life experiences, Dr. Wenley speaks at length in the body of the book. Incisive and of fascinating interest is the analysis of his subject's "intellectual history" in Chapters VII and VIII. As a general summary of Morris' growth, of his place in the development of American philosophical thought and of his influence on the University, Dr. Wenley says in his preface:

"Although Morris died in his prime and, thanks to an unusual combination of circumstances, just as he was beginning to achieve a final standpoint, his rare personality stamped itself upon this University. Moreover, thanks to his complete equipment in scholarship, he punctuated an epoch in philosophical education at our institutions of the higher learning. What is most significant, perhaps, his intellectual history, despite its sudden end, epitomises that of many minds in his day, because it embodies a representative human experience peculiar to the second half of the nineteenth century, particularly in the English-speaking world. At grave disadvantages in certain respects, he yet takes his place with James Hutchison Stirling, John Caird, Edward Caird, Thomas Hill Green, William Wallace, Robert Adamson, William T. Harris, and C. C. Everett, the idealists of the first generation, who deflected the thought characteristic of Great Britain and the United States, and brought it into the main stream of post-Kantian philosophy. He attained this difficult fellowship late in his career, and only after numerous mental trials, which

Digitized by Google

beset him through one half of his awakened years. This spiritual drama it is that lends present, possibly permanent, interest to the man. At all events, I do not know another figure who typifies so fully the struggles through which we have been enabled to enter upon a larger outlook."

INDIAN LEGENDARY POEMS AND SONGS OF CHEER, by Rev. William Edgar Brown, of Dexter, a member of the Michigan Author's Association, is a little volume delightfully in harmony with the spirit of Spring. Mr. Brown is soon to bring out a larger volume of similar nature which will contain a bibliography of important works on the Indian myths, legends, and traditions, together with a critical evaluation of the legends as to their authenticity and their beauty and interest.

The author has made a study of his subject during some twenty years of close contact with various tribes, as an Indian missionary. He has had access to the best works upon the subject and has used them discriminatingly. His task has been to glean from all available sources the literary gems among the legends and weave them into poetic form to bring out hidden beauty and spiritual truths. Mr. Brown's skill in this work is shown in "The Birth of the Arbutus," "The Legend of the River," "The Lily of the Forest," "The Valley of the Ontonagon," and "Point Iroquois," in the volume now before us.

The new book will contain some 200 pages. In the historical features Mr. Brown is being assisted by the Michigan Historical Commission and in its literary features by instructors at the University of Michigan. It is believed that the work will be a distinct credit to the author and to the State of Michigan.

Digitized by Google

THE "HISTORICAL MAGAZINE" in one form or another has come to be recognized as a useful publication feature by most historical societies and commissions, State and national. Most readers of the *Michigan History Magazine* will be acquainted with the official organ of the American Historical Association (*The American Historical Review,* published by the Macmillan Co., 64-66 Fifth Ave., New York City), and that of the Mississippi Valley Historical Association (*The Mississippi Valley Historical Review,* published at Cedar Rapids, Iowa), and some may wish to know about similar publications in States near Michigan.

The most recent of these, *The Wisconsin Magazine of History,* issued its first number last September, and a second number in December. The March number had not reached us when we went to press. This Magazine is excellent in every way. Its appearance is very attractive, the cover in blue bearing the Wisconsin State flag, and the text printed in large type with generous margins on high grade paper. Its valuable contents are edited in the usual scholarly manner of Supt. Milo M. Quaife of the Wisconsin State Historical Society. A department of the Magazine that will be specially useful to Michigan people is the Survey of Historical Activities, which pays attention not only to Wisconsin history but to all the historical endeavors of the Middle West. It presents the past year of the Wisconsin Historical Society as one of unusual activity in researching and publishing. Three volumes, two bulletins, and minor publications were issued. Needless to say, this compares to Wisconsin's advantage with the foremost historical societies in America, not excepting the older societies of New England. Michigan welcomes this generous rival which sets a pace for her in public historical service.

Digitized by Google

Following is a list of the quarterly State historical magazines likely to be of most interest to Michigan people, with auspices and place of publication:

Illinois—*Journal of the Illinois State Historical Society*
Ill. State Hist. Society, Springfield, Ill.

Indiana—*Indiana Magazine of History*
Dept. of History of Indiana University: Indiana Hist. Society; and Indiana State Library. (Managing Editor, Bloomington, Indiana)

Iowa—*Iowa Journal of History and Politics*
State Hist. Society of Iowa, Iowa City, Ia.

Minnesota—*Minnesota History Bulletin*
Minn. Hist. Society, St. Paul, Minn.

Missouri—*Missouri Historical Review*
State Hist. Society of Missouri, Columbia, Mo.

New York—*Quarterly Bulletin, New York Historical Society*
New York Hist. Society, 170 Central Park West, New York City.

Ohio—*Ohio Archeological and Historical Quarterly*
Ohio Archeological and Historical Society, Columbus, O.

Ohio—*Quarterly Publication of the Historical and Philosophical Society of Ohio*
Hist. and Philosophical Society of Ohio, Cincinnati, O.

Digitized by Google

Pennsylvania—*Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography*
Hist. Society of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Pa.

Tennessee—*Tennessee Historical Magazine*
Tenn. Hist. Society, Nashville, Tenn.

Wisconsin—*Wisconsin Magazine of History*
State Hist. Society of Wisconsin, Madison, Wis.

A VOLUME OF POEMS, ADDRESSES AND TRIBUTES has been issued by the Michigan Historical Commission in memory of the late Hon. Lawton T. Hemans, who was a member of the Commission and its president at the time of his death, Nov. 17, 1916. The volume contains a biographical sketch by Mrs. Hemans, also the memorial address delivered by ex-Governor Woodbridge N. Ferris at the annual meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society last May. The volume has been widely distributed to Michigan schools and libraries and a few copies may still be had at the office of the Commission.

PRIZE ESSAYS WRITTEN BY PUPILS OF MICHIGAN SCHOOLS IN THE LOCAL HISTORY CONTEST FOR 1916-17 is published by the Historical Commission as Bulletin No. 9, the subject of the essays being "The First School and the Children Who Attended It," in the city or town or school district of the writer. For an extended note on this contest, see the October number of the Magazine for 1917, p. 114.

Digitized by Google

THE DIFFICULTIES DR. WENLEY ENCOUNTERED in making his study of the life of Professor Morris, in respect of materials, are of the unfortunate kind to which attention has been repeatedly called by the State Historical Society and Commission. No sooner had he begun to gather his sources, than he found himself "amidst a sea of troubles," as appears in the following, taken from his preface:

"The facts indispensable to an adequate biography had been permitted to lapse. To reassemble them, twenty-five years after Morris had entered into rest, I have been compelled to take endless trouble. These difficulties would have been mitigated had his Michigan contemporaries discerned his strategic position in the development of American culture. Moreover, at some points I have been baffled, despite all pains; for those who could have set the situation in proper perspective from personal knowledge had passed away. Nevertheless, on the whole, thanks to the co-operation of Mrs. and Miss Morris, I have met with more success than seemed possible at the first blush. But, I would warn others, that efforts should be made to preserve even details connected with the activities of prominent or influential men. These may very well appear trivial at the moment. Yet, just such trivial things serve to offer important clues after years have elapsed, for, as is obvious, they form the links of every life. How serious the difficulties, due to the lapse of evidence, have been, may be gathered from these facts. I began my researches in the summer of 1910. I was able to begin to write only in October, 1913, and to finish the first draft of the Introduction and Chapters I.—VIII. in January, 1915. Delays caused by obscure episodes were constant. Since the first draft was finished, I have sought to elucidate incidents which remained dark, despite

Digitized by Google

every care. For example, only late in 1915 was I enabled to identify Mr. Larrowe unequivocally. Hundreds of letters were necessary, and many, addressed at a venture to those who had known Morris, either failed to reach their destination or had been sent to dead men."

It is to be hoped that by the cooperation of individuals, libraries and other institutions with the Historical Commission, the facilities for such work as Dr. Wenley has achieved may be increasingly easier with the years in respect of the fullness and accessibility of source materials.

PRESIDENT WINFIELD LIONEL SCOTT, of the Michigan Authors' Association, has sent us the following sketch of Dr. James Henderson, Michigan poet and artist, and member of the Association:

Dr. Henderson was born on a farm near Ingersoll, Canada, April 7, 1857. He is of Irish parentage. His grandfather, Squire Henderson, attained to the age of one hundred and eight years, his wife to the age of ninety-two years.

Dr. Henderson attended school in Ingersoll. As a pupil he was quiet and studious, and a general favorite with teachers and among his schoolmates.

His first poem was written about the year 1875, was published in a Toronto paper and received the highest encomiums of praise from its editor.

His career as a physician was very successful. His Alma Mater was the Hahnemann Homeopathic College, Chicago, Ill. He took up the practice of his profession in Bad Axe, Michigan, in 1888, continuing there until 1911, at which time he had

Digitized by Google

to give up his practice entirely on account of rheumatism which had rendered him completely helpless, and he has since been a "Shut In."

Being of a happy disposition, however, he has made the best of his affliction, and busies himself with his literary and art work, finding great pleasure therein. As an artist, he has done some creditable work in landscape painting, both in oil and watercolor.

As a writer, Dr. Henderson has long been a recognized poet of merit. His poems have appeared in many of the leading periodicals of this country, and have been widely copied abroad. He is now a contributor to a number of weekly papers in the cities of our land. He is a voluminous writer. His poems have reached the number of five thousand, besides essays, sketches and short stories.

In 1891 Dr. Henderson published a volume of verse, entitled "Threads from the Woof of Melody," which was well received.

Since coming to the United States, in 1880, he has resided here almost continually, becoming a citizen in 1890. In 1896 he was elected delegate to the National Populist Convention held in St. Louis, Missouri, and in 1898 his party nominated him for Congress from the seventh Michigan District. He has been County Physician and Coroner of Huron County, and for many years was Health Officer for the city of Bad Axe.

Dr. Henderson's life has been active. During his extensive country practice, day and night he was on the roads, even in the most inclement weather, ministering to the sick and especially to the poorer classes. He never refused a call, giving up all else to his practice, and the thought that he has been a help and comfort to the afflicted affords him great consolation in his present affliction.

Digitized by Google

He is a genial companion, loyal as a friend, simple in his tastes, and very fond of his home. He has been twice married. His first wife was Miss Jennie Fisher, of Caseville, Mich., wedded 1881. There were several children. Only one survives. The first Mrs. Henderson died in 1901.

In 1904 he was married to Miss Josephine Smith of Ingersoll, Ontario, a very estimable lady, a ministering angel to him in his nearly helpless condition. They reside in their own home at 121 Belmont Ave., Detroit.

Digitized by Google

Report on the Archives in the Executive Department, State Capitol, Lansing.

THE executive archives cover the period from 1812 to the present time. They are filed in two vaults, an upper and a lower in the Governor's office, and in lockers and a store room on the fourth floor. The archives in the store room belong to the Pardon Board and consist largely of stub-books and papers filed in pigeon holes.

Most of the papers in all the filing places are unclassified. In many instances papers relating to the same subject are scattered through a number of file boxes among materials bearing on other matters. For this reason in many cases it is possible only to approximate the amount of material and in no case can more definite information be given than to state in which of the four filing places the papers are located.

(A)=Upper Vault
(B)=Lower Vault
(C)=Fourth floor lockers
(D)=Pardon Board's store room
fb=Filebox

Census

Returns from Michigan counties by townships, 1834, 1 fb. (A)

Commissions

Appointive officers, 1906-1912, 3 stub-books. (A)

Expired commissions, list of, 1834.[1] (A)

1. Where the number of file boxes is not stated, part or all of the material in question is filed in boxes with other kinds of material.

Digitized by Google

Notaries Public

Commissions issued by Gov. Wisner, 1859. (A)

Unclaimed commissions, 1 fb. (B)

Orders for commissions

Appointive officers, Nos. 1501 to 2250, January 6, 1912 to January 6, 1916, 3 stub-books. (B)

Commissioners of Deeds, Nos. 1 to 226, January 28, 1897 to May 31, 1917, 1 stub-book. (B)

Military appointments, Nos. 1 to 53, January 12, 1901 to March 1, 1907, 1 stub-book. (B)

Notaries Public, 1909 to 1912; Nos. 3251 to 4250, March 18, 1912 to June 6, 1917, 5 v: 1 v. (A); 4 v. (B)

Territorial and State officials, 1833 to 1839. (A)

Correspondence

Bound records

Appointments by the Governor, January 12, 1887 to January, 1893, 1 v. (C)

Letter books

Executive Clerk, E. C. Austin, January 4, 1915 to August 13, 1915, 1 v. (B)

Governor, January to September, 1873, 1877 to 1896, January 4, 1901 to January 2, 1911, 1913 to 1916, 133 v: 1873, 1877 to 1896, 1901 to 1905, 89 v.[2] (A); 1901 to 1911, 29 v.[3] (C); 1913 to 1916, 15 v. (B)

Inspectors, State Board of, 1891 to 1893, 1 v. (C)

Pardons, Board of, 1901 to 1907, 15 v. (A)

Private Secretary to the Governor, August 12, 1885 to August 29, 1887, 1915 to 1916, 6 v: 1885 to 1887, 1

2. Thirty-three binding cases of letters written to the Governor, 1901 to 1905.

3. Letter copy books.

Digitized by Google

v. (A); 1915-1916, 5 v. (B)

Resignations, 1905, 1 binding case. (A)

Letters

Affairs outside of the State

Foreign, samples of letters issued to foreign travelers, 1 fb. (B)

National, communications from the Federal Government, 1833 to 1839, 1890-1892, 1 fb. (A)

Other States, communications from, 1833 to 1865, 2 fb. (A)

Appointments

Applications and recommendations, 1824 to 1917:[4] 1824 to 1900, 1910 to 1914 (A); 1901-1905, 1911, 1915 to 1917 (B); 1907 to 1909, 5 bundles. (C)

Applications acted on, 1838-1839, 1850-1851, 1 file case and 3 file boxes. (A)

Protests against appointments, 1830 to 1834. (A)

Resignations and removals, 1828 to 1839, 1857 to 1893, 1901 to 1904, 1907 to 1908, 5 file boxes, parts of others, and 1 bundle: 1828 to 1893, 1907-8 (A); 1901-4 (B)

Boundary, correspondence of Lucius Lyon and others relative to the southern boundary of Michigan, 1834, 1 fb. (A)

Charges and complaints against officials, 1831 to 1904, 1915, approximately 14 file boxes and 1 transfer case: 1831 to 1900 (A); 1901-4 (B); 1915 (C)

Delegates

Celebrations, conferences, etc., 1913-1914, 1 bundle. (C)

Conventions, 1905 to 1907, 1 fb. (B)

4. Files for 1906 not found; 1911 in both the upper and lower vaults.

Digitized by Google

Governors, 1831 to 1852, 1859 to 1877, 1885 to 1896, 1899 to 1900, 1906 to 1915, 105 file boxes, 56 file cases, 78 transfer cases and 27 bundles: 1831 to 1896, 1907-11 (A); 1899-1900, 1911 to 1915 (C)

Immigration, correspondence relative to German immigrants, 1859 to 1861, 1 fb. (A)

Indian affairs, 1823 and 1832, approximately 4 fb. (A)

Internal improvements, 1835 to 1864. (A)

Canal around the Falls of the St. Mary's River

Improvement of the Muskegon Flats

Opening of the channel of the Black River

Matters under control of the Board of Internal Improvements

State roads

Labor questions, strikes, etc.

Convict labor, 1898. (A)

Eight-hour law, 1898. (A)

Saginaw strike, 1885, 1 fb. (A)

Seeberville tragedy, 1913 to 1916, 1 box. (B)

Strike in Copper country, letters received, 1913-1914, 4 transfer cases. (A)

Lands

Agricultural College lands, 1 fb. (B)

Claims to lands, 1835 to 1839. (A)

Public lands, general correspondence, 1834 to 1864, 1 fb. (A)

Railroad grants, 1852 to 1892, 2 fb. (A)

Swamp lands, 1842 to 1860, 1888. (A)

University lands, 1830. (A)

Military

Military correspondence of Gov. Fred M. Warner, 1907-8, 1 bundle. (A)

Digitized by Google

Offers of service in Spanish-American War by prisoners in Marquette prison, 1898. (A)

State Militia, 1838 to 1841. (A)

Miscellaneous

Anonymous and "crank," 1904 to 1911, 1 fb. (B)

Cholera, quarantine measures, 1832. (A)

Cuba, suffering of people. (A)

Fire Relief Commission, 1882. (A)

Frontier, exposed condition of, 1835 to 1839. (A)

Grange, letters of Gov. Luce from brothers in the Grange, 1881 to 1887. (A)

Keweenaw County, organization, 1861. (A)

Miscellaneous correspondence, 1905 to 1910, 1 fb. (B)

Morris Canal and Banking Company, 1838-39. (A)

Personal, 1831 to 1863, 1881 to 1887. (A)

Postal matters, 1832. (A)

Receptions, 1898. (A)

Requests, mainly for documents and information, 1831 to 1863, 1874 to 1882. (A)

Seeds to farmers from Michigan in Kansas, 1857. (A)

Societies, communications from. (A)

U. S. Ship "*Yantic*," 1897-98. (A)

Water supply of Newberry, 1893. (A)

Political, 1881 to 1887, 2 fb. (A)

Railroad matters, 1852 to 1892, 1897, 2 fb. (A)

State boards, departments and commissions

Canvassers, State Board of, letters relative to methods of making canvass, 1894, 1 fb. (A)

Pardon Board

Correspondence, 1914-1915, 6 transfer cases.[5] (C)

5. Includes reports of paroled persons.

Digitized by Google

Letters to Executive Clerk and Secretary of Pardon Board, 1901 to 1904, 4 file cases. (A)

Letters received, 1913, 2 transfer cases. (A)

Railroad Commission, 1910, 1 fb. (B)

State, Department of, letters rogatory, January 1, 1911, 1 fb. (B)

State institutions

Asylums for insane

Asylum at Kalamazoo, 1895, 1 fb. (A)

Relative to transfer of insane persons, 1 fb. (B)

Industrial Home for Girls, correspondence relative to girls in the Home, 1891-2, 1897 to 1900. (A)

Industrial School for Boys, correspondence relative to boys, 1897-98. (A)

Soldiers' Home at Grand Rapids, 1897-98. (A)

State prisons, 1881 to 1887, 1890 to 1896. (A)

State Public School, letters relative to children, 1897 to 1899. (A)

State officers, letters to the Governor, 1914, 6 transfer cases. (C)

Elections

Ballots, proof sheets, primary election, 1914, 1 letter file. (B)

Certificates of election

Delegate to Congress, 1827. (A)

U. S. Senator, 1887, 1 fb. (A)

Correspondence

Army post elections, 1883. (A)

Congratulation, letters of, 1881 to 1887. (A)

Election expenses, 1881 to 1887. (A)

Results of elections, 1826-27, 1830-31. (A)

Digitized by Google

Returns, 1827 to 1833, 1836, 1884, 1897 to 1901, 1904, 1908 to 1917, approximately 18 file boxes, 8 transfer cases and 16 bundles: 1827 to 1884, 1909 to 1915 (A); 1912 to 1914,[6] 1916-17 (B); 1897 to 1901, 1904, 1908. (C)

Voters, typewritten list of first voters of Michigan by districts, no date. (C)

Extradition

Affidavits, 1832 to 1900. (A)

Applications

Extradition of fugitives, 1881 to 1890, 1 fb. (A)

Requisition hearings, 1911, 1 fb. (B)

Requisition orders, Nos. 601 to 899, Jan. 20, 1911 to Sept. 13, 1915, 1 stub-book. (B)

Requisitions, 1905 to 1913, 1 stub-book and 1 file box: stub-book (A); file box (B)

Requisitions on other States, January 5, 1869 to August 8, 1876. (C)

Communications

Instructions from the Dept. of State, Washington, relative to extradition, 1876.[7] (A)

Letters relative to extradition and requisitions, 1832 to 1900. (A)

Laws of Alabama, Michigan, New Hampshire and Ohio on extradition.[8] (A)

Official papers filed by Governor Baldwin relative to requisitions, 1869 to 1872, 1 fb. (A)

---

6. Returns for 1912 to 1914 are filed in both the upper and lower vaults.
7. In file box marked "Requisitions."
8. *Ibid.*

Digitized by Google

Requisitions
Denied and held up, 1893 to 1896, 1901 to 1911, 1913, 4 file boxes and 3 transfer cases: 1893 to 1911 (A); 1913 (B)
From other states
Orders, January 15, 1897 to January 31, 1902, 1 stub-book. (C)
Requisitions, February 2, 1889 to November 2, 1894, 1902 to 1911, 2 stub-books: 1889 to 1894 (C); 1902 to 1911 (A)
On other states
Demand for requisition hearing, 1901 to 1903, 1 fb. (B)
Requisitions, September 18, 1876 to December 1, 1883, 1 v. (C)
Under Governor Winans, 1891-92, 1 fb. (A)
Sheriffs' returns in extradition cases, 1911 to 1913, 1 fb. (B)
Warrants
Orders for Governors' warrants, June, 1911 to October, 1915, 1 stub-book. (B)
Requisition warrants, January 19, 1869 to July 22, 1878, 1 stub-book. (C)
Returns on warrants for extradition granted by the Governor, 1911, 1 fb. (B)
Warrants for extradition ordered by the Governor, January 1, 1911 to ——, 1 fb. (B)
Legislative
Acts, bills and resolutions
Copies of a few bills and resolutions of the Michigan Legislature, 1826 to 1898. (A)
House bills approved, 1901, 1 stub-book. (A)

Digitized by Google

National, act for the admission of Michigan, June 23, 1836. (A)

Other States, resolutions of, 1835 to 1839. (A)

Communications

Approval, letters of, 1844-45, 1889, 2 fb. (A)

Confirmations, 1835, 1842 to 1845, 1849 to 1851, 1891, 1903, 1905, approximately 4 file boxes and 2 binding cases. (A)

Letters

Governor Barry transmitting resolutions, 1850. (A)

House of Representatives, 1903, 1 binding case. (A)

Senate, 1903, 1 binding case. (A)

To and from members of Legislature relative to special session, 1913, 1 fb. (B)

Nominations, 1834 to 1839, 1842 to 1845, 1851-52, approximately 5 fb. (A)

Vetoes of appropriation bills, 1845, 1 fb. (A)

Messages

Approval of House and Senate bills, 1835 to 1839, 1846, 1849 to 1851, 1905 to 1917, 6 volumes, 8 stub-books and 1 file box: 1835 to 1851, 1911 to 1915 (A); 1917 (B); 1905 to 1909 (C)

Annual, biennial, special and veto, 1827, 1829, 1834 to 1839, 1846, 1849 to 1851, 1861, 4 fb. (A)

Miscellaneous

Letters from Circuit Judges relative to the proposed law requiring a history of criminal cases, 1894, 4 file jackets. (A)

Papers relative to Acts and bills, special session and other matters, 1869 to 1872, 1895, 1901 to 1909, 3 file boxes and 8 transfer cases. (A)

Digitized by Google

Receipts from the Secretary of State for bills of the Legislature, 1871 to 1875, 1879 to 1895, 1913, 2 file boxes, 1 file case and 2 stub-books. (A)

Record of bills presented for approval, 1901 and 1903, 2 v. (C)

Maps, plats and plans

Agricultural "College farm." (A)

Black River channel. (A)

Hickory Township, Macomb County. (A)

Michigan Building at Panama Exhibition, San Francisco, 1 roll. (B)

Muskegon Flats, improvement of, 1860. (A)

Portage Lake Ship Canal and Grand Marais Harbor, plat of lands of. (A)

Papers

Accounts

Current accounts of the State, 1837 to 1840. (A)

Michigan's indebtedness to the United States, 1911. (B)

Affidavits, 1826 to 1858, 1869. (A)

Appointments

Blank book to be filled when appointments are made. (B)

Executive appointments, 1901 to 1911, 1 book. (B)

Lists of appointments made, 1826 to 1828, 1834. (A)

Attorney General, opinions, 1850, 1893 to 1897. (A)

Banks, statements of condition. (A)

Beulah Farm, complaints regarding management of, 1900, 1 fb. (B)

Blair Monument Commission, 1898, 1 fb. (A)

Calumet and Hecla Mining Company, answers to 110 questions submitted by Walter B. Palmer, special agent, U. S. Dept. of Labor, 1913, 1 bundle. (B)

Digitized by Google

Cases of individuals, 1826, 1830, 1880, 1885, 1889, 1893, 1899, 1906 to 1910, 1911, 1916-17, 3 letter files, 1 bundle and 5 file boxes: 1826 to 1899 (A); 1906 to 1917 (B)

Charges against officials, testimonies, removal proceedings, etc., 1834, 1876-77, 1883, 1887 to 1896, 1904 to 1914, 28 file boxes, 1 transfer file and 1 bundle: 1834 to 1896 (A); 1904 to 1914 (B)

Claims, 1834, 1886 to 1891, 2 fb. (A)

Clinical history of insane persons ordered transferred from other Asylums to the Ionia Asylum, 1885 to 1896, 1 fb. (A)

Crary, Isaac E., transfer of portrait, 1907; article on Crary by John C. Paterson, 1907, 1 fb. (B)

Custer Monument Commission, 1908 to 1910, 1 fb. (B)

Dens of infamy in Northern Peninsula, charge investigated, 1888, 1 fb. (A)

Fisher, Hon. S. O., speech at Democratic rally, Saginaw, Sept. 27, 1894, MS., 1 fb. (A)

Fur trade, a few papers, mainly in the twenties. (A)

Geological Survey Papers, 1852 to 1861. (A)

Gettysburg monument, dedication, June 12, 1889, 1 fb. (A)

Governors, official papers filed by

Appointments and removals, 1863 to 1872, 6 fb. (A)

Canals, 1859 to 1861, 1865 to 1877, 8 fb. (A)

Capitol, 1869 to 1877, 1 file box and 1 file case. (A)

Claims of Michigan against U. S., 1865 to 1869, 1 fb. (A)

Commissioners of deeds, 1869 to 1877, 2 file boxes and 1 file case. (A)

Deputy State Land Commissioner, charges against, 1865 to 1869, 1 fb. (A)

Dewey and Hazelton Mortgage, 1865 to 1869, 1 fb. (A)

Digitized by Google

Emigration Agency, 1869 to 1876, 2 fb. (A)
Geological Survey, 1869 to 1877, 3 fb. (A)
Gettysburg Cemetery, 1865 to 1869, 1 fb. (A)
Judiciary matters, 1869 to 1872. (A)
Lands, 1841 to 1845, 1865 to 1877, 5 fb. (A)
Military, 1842 to 1846, 1865 to 1872, 4 fb. (A)
Miscellaneous, 1864 to 1877, 2 fb. (A)
Railroads and railroad companies, 1865 to 1877, 5 fb. (A)
Salt and lumber inspection, 1869 to 1872, 1 fb. (A)
State institutions, 1850, 1869 to 1877, 9 fb. (A)
State roads, 1859-60, 1869 to 1872, 2 fb. (A)

Indian affairs, bonds, licenses, claims, etc., 1814 to 1863. (A)

Labor troubles, telegrams relating to a strike at Ironwood, 1894, 1 fb. (A)

Lands, 1839, 1844, 1849, 1875 to 1897, 4 fb.: 3 fb. (A); 1 fb. (B)

Military, abstracts of names, lists of soldiers, orders, circulars, etc., 1817 to 1863, 1896 to 1899, 1901 to 1904, 5 file boxes and 2 bound volumes: 1817 to 1904 (A); 1901 to 1904 (B)

Miscellaneous, assessment roll of Shelby Township, contract, delegates appointed, hearing *in re* Order of Owls and John F. Bible, memorandum pads, miscellaneous papers of governors, etc., 1833, 1836, 1857 to 1860, 1887 to 1896, 1911, 1914, 7 fb.: 1833 to 1896 (A); 1911 and 1914 (B); memorandum pads (C)

Officers, boards and commissions
Board of Agriculture, minutes of meeting, February, 1897. (A)
Judges, designation of judges to hold court, January 29,

Digitized by Google

1898 to December 8, 1914, 1 stub-book. (B)

Land grants to railroads, Board of Control, 1857 to 1863. (A)

Oath of office

Petitions to the board

Proceedings of meetings

Lists of officers, one in 1834. (A)

Live Stock Sanitary Commission, certificates of appraisement, 1887 to 1900, 3 fb. (A)

Local Fire Relief Committee, 1881. (A)

Medicine, Board of Registration, 1907 to 1910, 1 fb. (B)

Military Board meetings, 1905 to 1910, 2 fb. (B)

Public Accountant, orders for certificates for certified Public Accountant, September 5, 1906 to January 18, 1917, 1 stub-book. (B)

State Swamp Lands, Board of Control, resolutions adopted at a meeting in 1882. (A)

Telegrams from State officials, 1898. (A)

Treasury Department, list of State depositories, 1909-10, 1 book. (A)

Railroads, land grants, suits and statistics, 1854 to 1897, 1902 to 1911, 6 file boxes and 1 bound volume: 1854 to 1897 (A); 1902 to 1911 (B)

Salt inspection, final papers, 1 box. (B)

Signatures of governors and seals of States, 1881, 1893 to 1895, 2 fb. (A); 1 undated (B)

State institutions

Investigations of Industrial School management, 1910; Marquette Prison, 1911, 2 fb. (B)

Orders for transfer to State Asylum, August 23, 1897 to January 23, 1917, 1 stub-book. (B)

Digitized by Google

Soldiers' Home, Industrial School for Boys and the University, 1869 to 1872, 1885 to 1894, 3 fb. (A)

Supply requisitions, Governor's office, 1901 to 1911, 1 file case. (B)

Pardons and paroles

Bound records

Applications and reports, January, 1885 to January, 1893, 1 v. (C)

Correspondence, 1889, 1 binding case. (A)

Indeterminate sentences, Nos. 1 to 2000, March 11, 1907 to 1912, 10 books. (C)

Index, Old Board and New Board, 1885, 1 book. (C)

Indexes to names, 1908 to 1910, 3 memorandum books. (C)

Judges' statements, 2 v. (C)

Letter copybooks, Nos. 9 to 16, September 28, 1907 to December 31, 1910, 8 v. (C)

Paroles, 1895 to 1910, 1914 to 1917: Paroles Nos. 1 to 384, August 8, 1895 to December 29, 1900, 1 v.; Nos. 385 to 770, December 29, 1900 to January 27, 1904, 1 book; Book No. 1, Board of Pardons, February 1, 1904 to October 21, 1910, 1 book; February 8, 1910 to August 22, 1910, 2 v; Paroles Nos. 3529 to 6371, February 2, 1914 to June 21, 1917, 19 v. (C)

Recapitulation of parole docket, loose-leaf blank book, December, 1915 to November, 1916, 1 book. (B)

Record Books

Executive pardon record, December 12, 1835 to December, 1882, 1 v. (C)

Flat sentence, record book of W. E. Wilson, M. D., February 20, 1907 to October 18, 1909, 1 v. (C)

Digitized by Google

Indeterminate sentences: record books of W. E. Wilson, M. D., November 4, 1904 to March 27, 1908, 15 v.; record books of Nelson C. Rice, April 23, 1906 to February 26, 1913, 17 v.; record books of Henry F. Thomas, M. D., March 27, 1908 to April 13, 1910, 14 v.; record books of James F. Rumer, M. D., April 13, 1910 to October 14, 1910, 4 v. and index. (C)

Loose-leaf record book, 1910, 2 v.[9] (C)

People *vs.* John Higgins, Lenawee County Circuit Court, typewritten transcript record of the case, 1898 to 1900, 1 v. (C)

Record of listed cases, 1912 to 1914, 1 v. (C)

Record books of Will E. Reardon, Secretary, June 6, 1902 to November 17, 1904, 6 v. (C)

Stub-books

Commutation

Orders for commutation, Nos. 1 to 249, July 15, 1897 to December 17, 1908, 1 stub-book. (C)

Orders for warrants of commutations of sentence, December 18, 1908 to August 18, 1917, 1 stub-book. (B)

Pardons, orders to Secretary of State for issue of pardons, Nos. 1 to 230, January 28, 1897 to November 28, 1916, 1 stub-book. (B)

Paroles

Orders for paroles, Nos. 1 to 750, August 8, 1895 to December 11, 1912; Executive orders, Nos. 1 to 401, December 16, 1912 to June 25, 1917, 6 stub-books: 1895 to 1903 (C); 1903 to 1917 (B)

Paroles, Nos. 2074 to 2251, November 30, 1909 to

9. Duplicate copies.

Digitized by Google

March 15, 1910; Nos. 2516 to 3526, September 6, 1910 to February 2, 1914, 18 stub-books: 1909-10 (C); 1910 to 1914 (D)

Permits for paroles, Nos. 2 to 192, August 28, 1909 to August 8, 1917, 1 stub-book. (B)

Letters and papers

Applications for parole and commutation, 37 jackets. (D)

Card index of names, office and occupation, 1 bundle. (C)

Correspondence, miscellaneous, 1831 to 1863, 1896, 1910, 1 file box, 1 file case and 1 bundle: 1831 to 1869 (A); 1910 (B)

Miscellaneous

In re Frank G. Glazier, 1911, 3 letter files. (D)

Pardon cases, 1883 to 1892, 1 fb. (A)

Pardon papers, 1835 to 1877, 1883 to 1885, 2 fb. (A)

Old pardons left from former boards, 1887 to 1894, 1 fb. (A)

Pardon Board

Minutes of Board meetings, 1903, 1904, 1911, 1 bundle. (C)

Recommendations, 1885 to 1892, 1 fb. (A)

Pardons declined, 1835 to 1891, 39 fb. (A)

Pardons granted, 1835 to 1891, 1893 to 1896, 31 fb. (A)

Petition for pardon for F. L. Hoffman, Port Huron, September 28, 1908, 1 paper. (C)

Prison records, Nos. 700 to 9820, 1898 to 1914, 363 pigeon holes.[10] (D)

10. Most of records since 1914 are kept in the inner room of the Governor's office. The records mentioned above are in jackets, numbered and named.

Digitized by Google

Statements, Nos. 1050 to 1079, 1760 to 1782, 2918 to 2972, 3301 to 3398, 1897 to 1902, 4 fb. (C)

Petitions, memorials and remonstrances

To the Governor and State Legislature, cover 1831 to 1898, 1905 to 1914; relate mainly to appointments and removals, changes of boundary lines, city charters, good roads, labor difficulties, suffering in certain sections, and enforcement of liquor laws, 8 full file boxes and parts of several others, 1 file case, 1 roll, 2 bound volumes: 1835 to 1898 (A); 1905 to 1914 (B); 1 roll (C)

Printed matter

Congressional Record, 64th Cong., 1st and 2d sess., bound volumes. (C)

National Board of Health, Bulletins, 2 fb. (B)

Proclamations

Proctor, Colonel Henry, "Civil Regulations of the Government of Michigan Territory," Detroit, August 21, 1812, 1 fb. (A)

Special Day and other proclamations[11]

Michigan, 1885 to 1917, 11 fb.: 1885 to 1896 (A); 1896 to 1917 (B)

Other States, 1870 to 1872, 1879 to 1882, 1887 to 1895, 1897 to 1915, 13 fb.: 1870 to 1895 (A); 1897 to 1915 (B)

Reports

Agents and delegates

County agents

Kent County agent, June 30, 1912 and June 30, 1914, 2 rolls. (C)

Wayne County agent, June 30, 1912, 1 roll. (C)

11. Part printed copies.

Digitized by Google

German Emigrant Agent, Rudolph Diepenbeck, 1859 to 1860. (A)

Nicaragua Canal delegates, New Orleans Convention, 1892, 1 fb. (A)

County Treasurers' reports of unpaid liquor taxes, 1877 to 1879, 2 fb. (A)

Detroit Medical College, Dental Department, 1894, 1 fb.[12] (A)

Michigan Fire Relief Association, 1909, 1 fb. (B)

Legislative and investigation committees, 1891-92, 1911, 2 fb.: 1891-2 (A); 1911 (B)

Miscellaneous matters, covering 1859 to 1899. (A)

Reports due the Governor annually, chart and list. (B)

Salt interests in Michigan, 1860. (A)

State boards, 1852 to 1861, 1876 to 1912, 10 file boxes, 9 bound volumes: 1852 to 1905 (A); 1895 to 1912 (B); 1886 to 1889.[13] (C)

State commissions and commissioners, 1856, 1869-70, 1881, 1886, 1889, 1895, 1898 to 1915, 6 file boxes and parts of others, 1 bound volume and 1 bundle: 1856 to 1900, 1911 (A); 1898 to 1915 (B)

State departments, 1893, 1897 to 1899, 1901-2, 1909, 4 fb.: 1893 to 1899 (A); 1901-2, 1909 (B)

State institutions, 1848, 1855 to 1860, 1876 to 1917, 12 file boxes and parts of others, 3 transfer cases, 2 bundles and 1 roll: 1855 to 1912 (A); 1900 to 1917 (B); 1907 to 1910,

12. Filed with papers of D. H. Obetz, Detroit, regarding Medical Department, University of Michigan.

13. Annual reports of the Michigan Board of Pharmacy, 1886 to 1889 (1st to 4th), are filed in the fourth floor lockers. Postage reports of the Board of Auditors and the reports of other State boards, 1895 to 1912, are filed in the lower vault.

Digitized by Google

1 bundle, (C); 1913, 1 bundle. (D)

State officers, 1835 to 1841, 1857, 1873 to 1892, 1895 to 1911, 14 file boxes and parts of others: 1835 to 1900 (A); 1899 to 1911 (B)

State roads, 1845 to 1864, 1 fb. (A)

Vouchers and receipts

Receipts

Geological Survey reports, 1874 to 1889, 4 fb. (A)

"Michigan in the War," 1881-82, 1 fb. (A)

Miscellaneous receipts from the State Treasurer, 1900 to 1910, 1 fb. (B)

Notary fees, 1887 to 1890, 1897 to 1909, 1915-16, 4 fb.: 1887 to 1890 (A); 1897 to 1916 (B)

Postage receipts, 1895 to 1909, 1915-16, 2 fb. (B)

Public money, mainly U. S. payments, 1885 to 1895, 1 fb. (A)

San Francisco Earthquake Relief Fund, 1 v. (C)

Soldiers' Home, 1891 to 1910, 2 fb.: 1891-2 (A); 1893 to 1910 (B)

State publications, 1881-82, 1 fb. (A)

Vouchers

Deaf and Dumb School, October, 1873 to December, 1876, 1 fb. (A)

Geological Survey, 1886 to 1896, 5 fb. (A)

Immigration fund, 1881 to 1885, 1 fb. (A)

Pomological exhibition, Grand Rapids, 1885, 1 fb. (A)

Spanish-American War, Nos. 1 to 1760, 1898 to December 4, 1899. (C)

Digitized by Google

PAPERS

Digitized by Google

In France

By Winfield Lionel Scott
(president, michigan authors' association)

Yes, he is over there in France somewhere!
Fared forth with heart of steel, my only son;
Nor asked he leave, when duty called him there,
He's gone to serve until the war is done.
And there beneath our starry banner's fold,
He dares his strong right arm to interpose—
He smiles at fear! Our honor to uphold
Firm as a rock he'll stand against her foes.

In khaki clad, it is his country's garb,
More courtly far than proudest sovereign's wear;
Though battle-stained and frayed with many a barb,
What matter? he'll wear it nobly over there.
I'm pleased to know he could so wisely choose
Career that would my pride in him enhance;
And now if leave were asked, could I refuse?
Nay! though his dust must mingle with the soil of France.

Like him, to cause of right I yield my all,
And yet we had our dreams of high success
He might achieve; but now if he should fall,
Think not he valued life and love the less,
But freely laid upon the altar there
His brave, young life, he has no more to give;
In field and trench he serves in France somewhere,
To make this world a better place to live.

Digitized by Google

MICHIGAN IN THE GREAT WAR

BY MAJOR ROY C. VANDERCOOK
(SECRETARY MICHIGAN WAR PREPAREDNESS BOARD)
LANSING

THE History of Michigan in the Great War up to and into 1918 is a record of achievement which places the State well in the forefront of all commonwealths. The Red Cross campaigns and the Liberty Loan quotas have been over-subscribed. Our troops in the field are more numerous, proportionately, than those of a great majority of other commonwealths, since we have more than doubled our quota of regular army enlistments. In short, the pulse of patriotism beats as strongly as in any State, and the tide of war activities rises ever higher.

If Michigan continues as she has started, her war-story will be one of the most glorious chapters in her history. And it is the purpose of the men who are directing her affairs to see that there shall be no slacking. These men are the State officers who constitute the Michigan War Preparedness Board. What Michigan has accomplished to date, has been accomplished, except in a few instances, through the War Board; therefore, an account of the transactions of the Board, coupled with a record of the results which have followed, describes accurately Michigan's part in the first nine months of the struggle.

When it was seen that war was inevitable, early last spring, legislation was framed and introduced which put the business of the war on a sound and well-financed basis. At the adoption by Congress of a war resolution in April and its approval

Digitized by Google

by the President, thus making war on Germany an actuality, the Michigan Legislature adopted with splendid enthusiasm the State's own war measure.

This was Senate Bill No. 328 (Enrolled Bill No. 57), which became by unanimous vote Act No. 97 of the Public Acts of 1917. Through it the people of the State of Michigan enacted that $5,000,000 be borrowed at not to exceed four per cent, the sum or any part of it to be used "for the purpose of repelling invasion and defending the State and nation in time of war against all enemies and opposers whatsoever." In brief detail, the law specifies that the money may be used for the following purposes: For the carrying on of recruitment service to obtain the quota of men and organizations required by the Federal Government; to provide a fund for the care of dependents of the enlisted force raised by this State under such rules and regulations as may be prescribed; for the preparation, maintenance and equipment of mobilization camps and stations within this State; to provide suitable equipment for enlisted men and officers; to provide an insurance or beneficiary fund for soldiers or their dependents in case of death or disability growing out of their military service; for an organization of home defense units and the proper equipment of same; for training schools for officers and the maintenance thereof; for the organization of auxiliary relief work within the State; for such other purposes not herein specifically enumerated as may be deemed necessary in the discretion of the Governor for the purpose of State and national defense.

The War Preparedness Board, under this Act, consists of Governor Albert E. Sleeper, chairman; Attorney General Alex. J. Groesbeck; Auditor General Oramel B. Fuller; State Treasurer Samuel Odell; Secretary of State Coleman C. Vaughan;

Digitized by Google

and Superintendent of Public Instruction Fred L. Keeler. These gentlemen have been faithful in attendance at the sessions of the Board and have frequently given of their time to make personal investigation of questions which have come up for settlement.

Pressing problems were waiting and the Board attacked them with what proved to be characteristic energy. A food preparedness committee consisting of former Governor Fred M. Warner as chairman, William J. Orr of Saginaw, Nathan F. Simpson of Hartford, George W. McCormick of Menominee, Nathan P. Hull of Dimondale, Wm. K. Prudden of Lansing, and John S. Haggerty of Detroit, was appointed to meet the question of increasing the food supply and furnishing farm labor. As a result of the activities of this committee, it is estimated that the acreage under cultivation in the State during the summer of 1917 was increased by nearly one-third. A corps of thirty-six county agricultural agents was hired out of War Board funds, augmenting the Government force, so that every neighborhood and every farmer in the State had an authoritative agency to which to turn in difficulties like getting seed, transporting farm products, and furnishing hired men.

This fall, when the Government had arranged to take over food-directing as a national enterprise, the committee tendered its resignation, and the work was taken up by Food Director George A. Prescott, of Tawas, former Secretary of State. Mr. Prescott has an office in the Capitol and is carrying out successfully the orders of Director Hoover. Michigan, at the end of the campaign to secure signatures of housewives to food pledges, had more than any other State. Close cooperation between Mr. Prescott and Mr. Hoover kept Michigan in an enviable position from the standpoint of food conservation.

Digitized by Google

When the Government asked that the draft law be put into effect, the salaries for many of the clerical positions on the Boards were entirely inadequate. The Board stepped in with the announcement that competent employees would be paid the difference between the Government's $2.00 per day and the pay these employees had been receiving. As a result, the draft in Michigan was conducted with little friction or delay.

Allied with the handling of food conservation is that of making the fuel supply last, despite the shortage of mine labor and of railroad transportation. Willian K. Prudden, a Lansing manufacturer, accepted the position of fuel director when affairs were in a chaotic condition, and with his staff has prevented the actual closing of many manufacturing plants for lack of coal by a fair division of the small supply available. Private consumers were also helped by the director's office, which is continuing its work. An appropriation of $1,200 per month supports the fuel administrator's office, and a similar sum has been allotted to the food director. Mr. Prudden has his task well in hand and is now laboring to increase the amount of fuel allotted the State by the mines.

The people of Michigan have indicated, now that so many of their young men have been called by the draft, that they desire every available bit of labor used. Accordingly, boys will be put to work on the farm this spring to assist in the planting. Boy-labor was not used as freely as it might have been last spring, but a national director of juvenile farm labor has been appointed in the person of Charles A. Parcells, of Detroit, and he is laying his plans to get thousands of schoolboys into the open as assistants to the farmer. The people of the State, through the War Board, are supporting this movement by furnishing necessary funds for office and organization expenses from the loan.

Digitized by Google

In every national movement the Michigan War Board has been quick to respond to appeals for assistance and has financed the Red Cross and the Liberty Loan campaigns to the extent of several thousand dollars. This aid was appreciated and proved effective, as Michigan's record in these great undertakings proves. In the first Liberty Loan, the State's allotment was $68,119,000, and the amount actually subscribed was $70,826,000, an over-subscription of $2,707,000. In the second Loan, the minimum allotment was $79,500,000, and the maximum $132,500,000. The State's total subscription was $117,296,000, which is far over the minimum and proportionately farther toward the maximum than most other States of the Union.

The Red Cross called on Michigan for $3,000,000 in its big drive, and the State responded for $4,075,643. Figures are not available for other Red Cross activities since, but it is known that the response has been equally generous.

State transportation problems have been met and solved as they have arisen, through the assistance of Charles E. Webb, Secretary of the Michigan Railroads Association of Detroit. Mr. Webb has been loaned to the State by his employer, and is secretary of the transportation committee. In several instances, through his technical knowledge, he has been enabled to move many cars of supplies urgently needed for Government purposes when apparently they were either tied up or lost.

An explosives committee, of which Mr. A. E. Stevenson of Port Huron is Michigan executive, was formed at the request of the Federal Government. State Treasurer Odell is a member of the national explosives committee. The organization of the Michigan branch of the National Council of Defense,

Digitized by Google

Woman's Section, was encouraged. Mrs. Caroline Bartlett Crane of Kalamazoo is head of that committee, which is doing an important work in listing women for positions which they must fill as the drain on man-power becomes more pronounced.

There was considerable delay in the adoption by Congress of a law providing for dependents' relief, and the administration of this law to bring relief to dependents has not yet begun, so far as this State is concerned. To meet this condition, within a few days after war was declared the State began issuing aid to soldiers' and sailors' dependents, on the basis of $20 per month to wife or mother, with $7.50 for each minor child. At the present time, 800 Michigan families are receiving from $10 to $40 per month, totaling $15,000 monthly. This relief will not cease until the Government system is in full operation.

One of the smallest investments which the Board has made is paying out in a manner so important as to be startling. Dr. R. M. Olin, of the State Board of Health, was allowed $500 to put into effect a plan to control sexual disease in the vicinity of Camp Custer, where Michigan's quota of the national army was sent. His plan was simple. He traced cases of venereal trouble to the author and segregated such a man or woman. Soon the system extended all over the State, and Dr. Olin predicts that venereal disease, which has been causing the medical profession grave concern because of its terrible effects and wide distribution, will hereafter be as rare, and as controlled, as smallpox.

Dr. Olin's work attracted national attention, and he was summoned to Washington by Dr. Gorgas, Surgeon-General of the United States, and there offered the position of national supervisor so that the plan could be applied everywhere. He

Digitized by Google

refused in order to continue the work in Michigan, but agreed to take charge of five other States for General Gorgas. Dr. Olin asked for but $500. Governor Sleeper has assured him that his fund will never have less than that sum in the future. Dr. Olin was assisted and backed up by a committee of prominent physicians of the State.

Most of the activities outlined above and made possible by the war fund are civil in their character. There is an equally long list of military achievements by loyal Michigan citizens through their War Board. For the defense and protection of the State there has been organized and equipped a force of 200 men in a State constabulary known as the Permanent Force, Michigan State Troops. These troops which are under control of the Governor, were organized and developed by Col. Roy C. Vandercook and have done most excellent service.

The Permanent Force broke an I. W. W. strike which threatened to close the iron mines of the Upper Peninsula early last summer. Paid organizers, desperate men with a lavish supply of German money, had gathered a mob of 300 malcontents, mostly unmarried foreigners, and were actually marching on the mines to intimidate patriotic men who desired to work, when the First Troop, hurried to the spot by special train, filed out of the cars at Bessemer, mounted and charged them. The parade scattered through the fields. A second attempt to organize was smashed with equal dispatch. The next day the organizers left town. The importance of this action of the constabulary may be gathered from the fact that the I. W. W. have terrorized several Pacific Coast States for months and have caused serious disorders, fires, dynamiting and even murders throughout the country. This Troop has remained in the Upper Peninsula and has maintained absolute industrial peace.

Digitized by Google

The Constabulary has gone on with its good work and there are a dozen detachments at the present time scattered throughout the State, guarding munitions plants, food storehouses, tunnels, stockyards, and shipbuilding plants. The Governor is in receipt of scores of letters from citizens everywhere praising the Constabulary and the work they are doing. The Force is carefully picked and consists of men of courage, judgment and training. They compare favorably with the famous Royal Canadian Northwest Mounted Police.

The Home Guard division of the Michigan State Troops, now consisting of about 105 companies partially organized into regiments and battalions and containing about 6,000 men, were brought into the State service by the Board's order under supervision of Major M. J. Phillips. These companies are partially equipped with rifles and uniforms and have served a worthy purpose, assisting in patriotic meetings and other demonstrations, and they have quickened recruiting in their respective neighborhoods. They are ready to combat any widespread disorder, but their work is soon to be taken over by the Federal Guard organized by the War Department for internal defense purposes.

Equipment valued at about $150,000 was purchased under the Board's direction for the Permanent Force, the Home Guard and the National Guard in Federal Service. When the National Guard was called last summer, a number of the companies needed shoes, blankets, cots and other articles, and relief could not be obtained from the Government. The supplies purchased by the forethought of the War Preparedness Board were immediately made available. When the companies who were helped received their supplies from the Government weeks later, they returned equipment in kind, with the

Digitized by Google

result that the State has an emergency supply of 2,500 pairs of shoes, 3,000 blankets, 3,000 leggings, and 2,500 hats, as well as about 2,500 cotton uniforms in its warehouses.

There were no funds available when the call for active service came to recruit National Guard companies to war strength, and the War Board, believing that the people of the State wanted their young men to go forth with overflowing ranks and as distinctively Michigan organizations, put on a recruiting campaign. Newspaper articles and display advertising were used liberally to stimulate recruiting; the wages of the captain, first sergeant and company clerk of each company were paid by the Board, that these men might go on duty as recruiting parties before the Government called them; and their expenses and the expenses of recruits were paid when trips were made to adjoining towns. As a result, the Michigan brigade mobilized at Grayling with every unit up to war strength.

The three regiments of Michigan Infantry have been consolidated into two regiments, the 125th and 126th, of the National Army. Their surgeons reported that a considerable amount of medicine and supplies is needed outside of the Government lists, and in order to supplement these supplies an allowance of $15.00 per month was made to each regiment. This sum operates as a credit with Parke, Davis & Company of Detroit, who have agencies in all important cities of the world.

Another military activity was the building of good roads to the Battle Creek cantonment; to Selfridge Field, Mt. Clemens, where hundreds of aviators are training; and between Detroit and Toledo, so that Government supplies might be shipped overland to the Atlantic coast by trucks. The

Digitized by Google

counties could not afford to bear the entire expense of such roads; but the roads will help to win the war, and War Board funds were put into them.

Proposed civil activities of the Board in the near future are the organization of county preparedness boards to make even more efficient Michigan's War aid, and the financing of the "Four-Minute Men," a great force of volunteer speakers who address theater audiences weekly on patriotic subjects. Heretofore this latter work has been privately financed and handled.

Of the $5,000,000 fund about $840,000 has been expended, an average of slightly under $100,000 monthly. The more important items are as follows: War Board office expenses, publications, etc., $17,771.04; food preparedness committee, $50,258.63; State Troops, Permanent Force, $286,148.14; Michigan Naval Brigade, recruiting, etc., $4,869.05; Michigan National Guard, $76,334.45; military reservation at Grayling, building hospital, kitchens, roads, etc., $67,348.05; Michigan State Troops, Home Guard, $47,919.18; dependents' relief, $62,739.75; registration and draft boards, $5,008.86; Selfridge Camp Road, $84,021.03; Woman's Committee, $4,212.86; Harmonia Road (Camp Custer), $71,612.01; Augusta Harmonia Road, $6,967.32; Camp Custer health activities, $500; fuel administration, $1,408.66; Federal food administration, $3,531.85; Liberty Loan advertising campaign, $3,815.45; Dixie Detour Road (Monroe-Toledo), $20,438.38.

A number of citizens came to the Governor and members of the Board with the statement that junior officers of the army are finding it exceedingly difficult to meet the requirements of the Government in providing themselves with uniforms and equipment for active service. The Board was in-

Digitized by Google

formed that this equipment cost from $400 to $800 for an officer and that unless some means could be found to loan these officers the necessary funds it would be difficult for them to remain in the service, and this information was confirmed by older officers in the Army. In view of the need of trained men to lead the troops the Board decided that some assistance should be granted in these cases. A resolution was adopted under which junior officers in the Federal service can borrow from the Board not to exceed $400 each without interest, on a note running for one year; the money to be used only for the purchase of necessary uniforms and equipment. Approximately $35,000 has been loaned under this plan.

Not every appeal for funds has been approved by the Board, because it is felt that even greater calls may be made on the State in view of the fact that no man can tell what sacrifice is going to be necessary to bring success to our arms across the sea. As in all of the other great work of the war, the Board has had to depend upon past experiences so far as the members could benefit from them and work with as broad a vision as possible, realizing as in other activities that there can be no definite plan prepared nor any program adopted which will meet the emergencies that are constantly arising, but endeavoring in all of its work to uphold the honor of the State and to do efficiently the things which the State should do.

Digitized by Google

The Creation of the Territory of Michigan

By William L. Jenks, M. A.
Port Huron

THE Ordinance of 1787 provided for the ultimate division of the Territory of the United States northwest of the River Ohio into not less than three nor more than five States. If into three, the north and south dividing lines were to extend from the Ohio River to the International Boundary, the eastern dividing line to start at the mouth of the Great Miami River. If more than three States were created, an east and west line drawn through the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan would form the northern boundary of three States, and the territory north of that line might at the option of Congress be put into either one or two States. If the "three States" plan had been adopted the Lower Peninsula of Michigan would have been about equally divided between the eastern and central States, while the Upper Peninsula would have formed part of all three States.

Eleven years after the adoption of the Ordinance, the population of the Northwest Territory was found to be upwards of five thousand, and, following the provisions of the Ordinance, a legislature was instituted, containing elected members, thus bringing all parts of the Territory into intimate connection with the governing powers.

In May, 1800, Congress passed an Act dividing the Territory into two parts, the dividing line starting at the Ohio River, opposite the mouth of the Kentucky River, thence passing northward to Fort Recovery, and from there north to

Digitized by Google

the International Boundary. The western part, which covered much the larger area, was named the Indiana Territory, the eastern part retaining the original name. This dividing line did not quite agree with the line fixed by the Ordinance, being a little to the westward, but when the State of Ohio came to be created two years later, the Ordinance line was adopted as the division line between Ohio and Indiana Territory.

In 1800, and for some years afterward, there were no accurate maps of the Great Lakes and the surrounding region, and it was uncertain where the dividing line between the Northwest and Indiana Territories struck the Upper Peninsula of Michigan, and whether the settlement at Mackinaw was on the east or the west of the line. In Jan., 1802, the legislature of the Northwest Territory adopted a resolution instructing their delegate in Congress, Paul Fearing, to use his endeavors to have Congress pass a law declaring the Island of Michillimackinac and its adjacent settlements to be in and under the jurisdiction of the Northwest Territory.[1] Perhaps aroused by this action, in February, 1802, a Grand Jury of Knox County, Indiana Territory, passed resolutions claiming the Island of Michillimackinac and its dependencies as an integral part of their territory, and these resolutions were presented to the House of Representatives by Gov. Harrison.[2]

The matter was promptly referred to a special committee of the House, but the question soon became obsolete through the creation of the State of Ohio out of the southern part of the Northwest Territory, and the attaching of both peninsulas to Indiana Territory, and therefore no report was made by the committee, or further action taken.

1. *St. Clair Papers*, II, 546.
2. *Annals of Congress*, 7th Cong., 1st Sess.

Digitized by Google

Governor St. Clair had not looked with favor upon the reduction of his territorial jurisdiction by the creating of Indiana Territory, and sometime before that event, had worked out a plan of division which he hoped would prevent any action being taken in the creation of States.[3] It seems most probable that in this he was largely actuated by apprehension lest if States were created his position and authority would be gone. Opposition to him and his political ideals had been increasing, but he was still in control, and influential. He was a strong Federalist, while many of the later comers into the Territory were Democrats, to whom the Governor seemed an autocratic tyrant, and who not only wished to rid themselves of his offensive authority, but also wanted a State government which would be governed by officers elected by the people.

In order to carry out St. Clair's idea, his friends in the Territorial Assembly passed an Act, approved by him, December 21, 1801, giving the assent of the Territory to an alteration of the Ordinance. It recited that it would be inconvenient and injurious to the interests of the citizens of the Northwest Territory if it should be divided into States according to the Ordinance, as these States would be extremely unequal in territory and population, and the eastern State particularly would be too extensive for good government; and it enacted, that whenever Congress should assent, the Ordinance should be so altered that the western of the three States provided for should be bounded on the east by the western boundary of lands granted to General George Rogers Clark, his officers and soldiers, and a line from there to the head of Chicago River, up that stream to Lake Michigan, and thence due north to the International Boundary. The middle State

3. *St. Clair Papers*, I, 215.

Digitized by Google

would have as its eastern boundary the Scioto River, from its mouth to the Indian boundary line fixed by the Treaty of Greenville, thence to the southwest corner of the Connecticut Reserve, and from there due north to the International Boundary.[4]

The eastern State would comprise the area between that line and Pennsylvania. It was expressly provided that it was not intended to affect the authority of Congress to form one or two States north of the east and west line drawn through the southerly bend of Lake Michigan.

This action, whatever the motive, was an ill-considered one. It aroused and accentuated the opposition to Gov. St. Clair, and was the immediate cause of bringing about the very result which he so much deprecated. His enemies charged that the Act was induced by him, and had as its sole purpose the indefinite retention of the Territorial system, which meant government by an appointed governor with autocratic powers.

The adoption of the Act was carried in the Legislative House by a vote of 12 affirmative to 8 negative votes. Included in the affirmative were three votes from Detroit,—Joncaire, McDougall and Schieffelin.[5] The fact that these Detroit votes were all in favor of St. Clair's scheme undoubtedly had considerable bearing upon the subsequent action of Congress. They indicated that the sentiment of Wayne County was predominatingly Federalist, and in political sympathy with the Governor. The eight negative votes included Massie, Morrow and Worthington, three very prominent, active and influential men in the opposition to St. Clair. A speedy and very un-

4. *Laws of the Territory of the United States Northwest of the River Ohio*, Vol. III (Ed. Chillicothe, 1802), Chapter XVIII, pp. 130-132.

5. *St. Clair Papers*, I, 224.

Digitized by Google

expected result followed this legislative Act. The legislative opponents entered a formal protest on the record, and began to stir up political sentiment against it. A committee was organized, petitions were actively circulated, and Thomas Worthington, later United States Senator and Governor of Ohio, was sent to Philadelphia where Congress was in session, to obtain if possible the authority of Congress to establish a State within the eastern boundary fixed by the Ordinance.[6]

In the meantime, Governor St. Clair had sent the Act to Paul Fearing, delegate of the Northwest Territory, who presented it to the House of Representatives January 20, 1802. On the same day Mr. W. B. Giles, a member from Virginia, an extreme anti-Federalist, stated to the House that he had petitions signed by more than 1,000 inhabitants of the Territory against the law, whose only purpose was to perpetuate the office of Governor and the Territorial Legislature.[7] Worthington had naturally gone for assistance to Giles, as both Worthington and Massie were from Virginia, as were many others of the early settlers of Ohio; and Giles, a thoroughgoing Democrat, was strongly opposed to the Federalist St. Clair, and was the leader of the House of Representatives, in which his party had a large majority.

Seven days later, the House considered the matter, and by a nearly unanimous vote—81 to 5—refused the assent of Congress to the Act, even the Federalists feeling that it could not be defended.

Not satisfied with this negative result, and stimulated by the protests and petitions pouring in, the opponents of Governor St. Clair and his friends determined to go further, take

6. *Ibid*, I, 238.
7. *Annals of Congress*, 7th Cong., 1st Sess., p. 427.

Digitized by Google

advantage of the evident friendly feeling in Congress, and have a new State created. March 30, a report by Mr. Giles recommending the establishment of a new State was considered. The framer of this report evidently had in mind the political complexion of the people of Detroit and vicinity, and feared that they, together with the Federalists in Cincinnati and some other sections of the Territory, might be sufficient in number to seriously embarrass the Democratic plans. The simple and effective way, therefore, was to leave them out of the new State. The report, accordingly, provided that the north line of the new State should be an east and west line drawn through the southerly extreme of Lake Michigan, until it intersected Lake Erie or the Territorial line, and made no arrangement whatever for the people north of this proposed line.[8] The following day, the question of the northern boundary came before the House, and Mr. Fearing insisted that if the proposed north line were adopted, the resulting inconvenience to the section not incorporated in the new State would be very great, especially if this were attached to Indiana Territory, as he understod was contemplated. Mr. Bayard of Delaware, a Federalist, and an able orator and statesman followed, by saying that the proposed division was manifestly unjust to the people north of the line. If attached to Indiana Territory, they would be obliged to cross the new State and go a considerable distance further to reach their own seat of government. In addition, having reached, as part of the Northwest Territory, the second grade of Territorial government (with an elective assembly), this Act would reduce them to the first grade, in which Indiana stood,—gov-

8. *Annals of Congress*, 7th Cong., 1st Sess., pp. 1097 ff.

Digitized by Google

ernment by Governor and Judges,—a form extremely odious. He urged that it would be just and politic to include them in the new State, reserving the right to change the boundary later.[9]

Mr. Giles supported his report by saying that probably the section north of the line would be attached to Indiana,—no great hardship; and that in any event it was not the fault of Congress, but of the local situation.

Mr. Bayard moved that the boundaries of the new State be made coterminous with those of the Northwest Territory; but this was lost by a vote of 38 to 18.

April 7, a Bill based upon the foregoing report was considered by the House, and Mr. Fearing moved that the Bill be so amended that all of the area east of the Indiana line should be included within the new State. This amendment was vigorously debated, it being contended, on one side, that the exclusion of the inhabitants north of the proposed line—about 3,000 in number—from the privileges of statehood, was both unconstitutional and inexpedient; and, on the other, that neither of these objections was well founded.[10]

The constitutional objection was based upon the provision of the Ordinance which authorized the division of the Northwest Territory into three, four or five States, and it was contended this did not permit the eastern division to be put part into a State and part into a Territory.

The eccentric John Randolph favored the amendment, chiefly because he wished to avoid the introduction of too many small States into the Union. The amendment was lost, by the small majority of four.

9. *Ibid*, pp. 1120-1121.
10. *Annals of Congress*, 7th Cong., 1st Sess., pp. 1155-1156.

Digitized by Google

The following day the Bill was under discussion, and the attempt was again made to have the entire Territory included in the new State; but this time the adverse majority increased to seventeen; the next day the Bill, passed by a vote of 47 to 29, went to the Senate, where after discussion and amendments it passed on April 28 by a majority of 10; the amendments being accepted by the House, the Bill was signed by the President, and became a law on April 30.[11]

The Act, in its final form, provided that the part of the Territory north of the State line should be attached to Indiana Territory, subject, however, to the right of Congress to make it subsequently a part of the new State by the Act created.

By this Act all of what is now Michigan became a part of Indiana Territory, whose seat of government was at St. Vincennes, on the Wabash,—400 miles from Detroit by direct line, and many more by the ordinary route of travel. By the census of 1800 there were 3,206 persons in Wayne County and 551 at Mackinac, and all of these, with scarcely an exception, were decidedly opposed in politics to the party which had just carried through this legislation. This, no doubt, explains to a considerable degree, both why they were excluded from the new State, which was expected to strengthen the administration by sending to Congress two senators and a representative, and why the matter was not submitted to the popular vote of the whole Territory. The law went into effect, the

11. In a pamphlet written by Worthington in 1802, addressed to the citizens of the Northwest Territory opposed to the alteration of the boundaries of the State as established by Congress, he charges that every gentleman of the Federalist party present voted against the Bill.

Digitized by Google

State of Ohio was organized; and it sent to Washington, as one of its Senators, Thomas Worthington.[12]

As soon as the law became known, the people of Detroit and vicinity remonstrated against it with much warmth, and claimed the right of becoming a part of the new State and remaining so until their numbers should entitle them to a State government of their own. They claimed the exclusion was unconstitutional and oppressive, and declared they would not submit to it. The argument, however, soon began to be made that the law might, on the whole, result favorably for Detroit, because Congress would soon see that it was necessary to establish a Territorial government at Detroit; if that were done, there would be numerous offices to be filled, and naturally they would not be filled by critics and opponents of the administration. The energies of the protestants began to be turned toward the creation of an independent government for the people of Detroit and territory adjacent to them.

Senator Worthington had suggested a petition to Congress, but before receipt of his suggestion a memorial was drawn up at Detroit, dated March 20, 1803, and addressed to the Senate and House of Representatives.[13] It urged that the citizens of the United States north of the east and west line

12. Gov. St. Clair, who was summarily removed from his office by the President in Nov., 1802, for alleged "intemperance and indecorum of language," in a spirited reply to Secretary Madison said "the transferring of above five thousand people, without their knowledge or consent, from a country where they were in possession of self-government, to another where they will be, at least for some time, deprived of that privilege and subjected to many other inconveniences, was something worse than 'intemperate and indecorous,'" and that, had it happened in Germany, where such things have happened, no man in America would have hesitated to have used a harsher term.

13. *Senate Files*, 8th Cong., 1st Sess.

Digitized by Google

extending through the southerly bend of Lake Michigan had, since the cession by the British of the western posts, experienced many inconveniences which had been patiently submitted to in the hope of improvement, but the Act attaching them to Indiana Territory was so hostile to their growth and prosperity that they could not remain silent. The memorialists were confident that Congress would not have taken that step if it had been possessed of accurate and full information. The immense distance of Vincennes from the settlements of the Lakes—700 miles from Detroit and 1,100 miles from Mackinac and Sault Ste. Marie—united with the extreme difficulty of carrying on intercourse through a country filled with Indians often at war among themselves as well as hostile to travelers, made their situation critical and alarming.

From a commercial point of view, there was necessity as well as policy in being part of an independent Territory. Important questions had already arisen in which the United States as well as individuals were interested, but owing to their isolated situation courts were seldom held, and ruinous delay in judicial proceedings resulted. During more than six years, while connected with the Northwest Territory, only two Superior Courts were held in Wayne County, and many cases were still undecided, although pending three or four years. This trouble, under the present circumstances, must increase.

From another standpoint, a liberal treatment by Congress, and an independent government, would bring immigration, relieve the Federal Government from a considerable expense, and increase its revenue.

An intimation followed, calculated to hasten action, that citizens would not be expected to feel interested in a govern-

Digitized by Google

ment which was of no benefit to them, but would rather be likely to quit a country which was not able or willing to protect their persons or property.

For all these reasons, they asked that a Territory be established north of the east and west line mentioned, with a government similar to the one provided for the Northwest Territory.

The memorial was written in both English and French, and numerously signed, 308 persons in all signing; and it was transmitted to Thomas Worthington, Senator from Ohio.[14]

Without knowledge of the preparation of this memorial, Senator Worthington on April 20, 1803, wrote to Solomon Sibley of Detroit, an old friend, although of different political faith, suggesting a petition to Congress, and adding, "A new Territory will be formed at the next session of Congress (to a certainty, if the people wish it, and of this, I presume there can be little doubt) including Detroit and the adjacent settlements. I speak positively on this subject from a knowledge of the sentiments of the President, some of the heads of the departments, and many of the members of the Senate and House

14. In the letter accompanying the petition, Mr. Sibley said there was not a man of sense in the country who did not fervently pray for the success of the measure. In a letter written in October, 1803, to Seth Hastings, a Federalist member of Congress from Mass., Mr. Sibley says that not a single citizen to whom it was presented declined to sign the petition, and although it was not sent to Mackinaw, he was assured the citizens there were unanimously in favor of it. In this letter an interesting side light is thrown on the situation by the statement that the petition was sent to Senator Worthington because "We considered it policy to entrust the business with him, in hopes thereby to secure support from his side of the House, not doubting but what our Federal friends would still feel disposed to favor us. This, however, I state in confidence and that you may not suppose we are all turned Democrats."

Digitized by Google

of Representatives. The measure might have been effected at the last session of Congress if it had been taken up.[15] On October 12, 1803, Senator Worthington presented the Memorial to the Senate, which at once ordered it referred to a committee consisting of Worthington, Breckenridge from Kentucky, and Franklin from North Carolina. Oct. 27, Mr. Worthington, for the committee, made a report that the local situation of the inhabitants at Detroit and the adjacent settlements required the special attention of the General Government. On the one side, they joined the British Province of Canada, on the other they were surrounded by Indian tribes; they were also subject to unreasonable delays and difficulties in the administration of justice owing to the distance from Vincennes, the residence of the Governor and other principal officers of the Territory, and as, according to the last census, there were 3,792 free white inhabitants in the district proposed to be set off, they recommended that all of Indiana Territory lying north of a line drawn east from the southernmost extreme of Lake Michigan to Lake Erie and west to the Mississippi be made a separate Territory.[16]

The report was received and laid on the table for consideration. On November 1, it was taken from the table, considered and adopted, and the same committee instructed to bring in a Bill for the purpose. On November 4, the Committee brought in "A Bill to divide the Indiana Territory into two separate governments, and giving the assent of Congress to the proposition of the Convention of the State of Ohio, contained in the 6th section of the 7th Article of the Constitution of that State," which was read and ordered to the second reading.

---

15. *Burton Mss.*
16. *Annals of Congress*, 8th Cong., 1st Sess.

Digitized by Google

The Bill contained, as its seventh section, the same provision regarding the boundary line between Ohio and the new Territory as the people of Ohio had inserted in their Constitution. This was, that if the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan should extend so far south that a line drawn due east from it should not intersect Lake Erie, or if it should intersect the said Lake Erie east of the mouth of the Miami River of the Lake, then with the assent of Congress the north boundary of the State should be a direct line from the southern extremity of Lake Michigan to the most northerly cape of the Miami Bay.[17] November 7 the bill was read a second time, and referred to a new committee of five, of which Mr. Bradley of Vermont was chairman and Worthington and Franklin were members.

While the committee had the Bill under consideration, Mr. Worthington received another petition upon the same subject, dated September 1, 1803, signed by Louis Beaufait and 136 others, which he presented to the Senate November 15, and it was at once referred to the same committee of five. This petition was also in both English and French, but was signed almost exclusively by French. It was short, and based the need of a government separate from the Indiana Territory chiefly upon the geographical situation, and left the matter to the wisdom and patriotism of Congress.[18]

November 16 Mr. Bradley reported back the Bill with some amendments, the most important of which were the striking out of the entire seventh section which conceded to Ohio all its claims of right to change the boundary line fixed in the Ordinance of 1787, and the amendment of the title of the

17. *Senate Files*, 8th Cong., 1st Sess.
18. *Ibid.*

Digitized by Google

Bill to correspond. The report was laid on the table and on December 5 taken up, considered, amended and the Bill passed to the third reading. The following day it was read a third time, further amended, and passed. In its final form, this Bill gave to the proposed Territory the name "Northwest Territory."[19]

December 8, the House received the Bill, read it twice, and sent it to a committee of five, of which Mr. Lucas of Pennsylvania was chairman and Mr. Morrow a member. December 30 they made a report, which was read and referred to the Committee of the Whole for January 3d. It was not reached, however, until February 20, when it was taken up and considered. The committee was of the opinion that nearly all the people in the proposed Territory were convenient to the State of Ohio, and being within the boundaries of that State as fixed by the Ordinance of 1787, might properly be attached to that State for the present, especially as the expense of a separate Territorial government was considerable. For these reasons the committee regretfully concluded that the Bill ought not to pass.[20] In the debate upon the report, Gregg of Pennsylvania and Lyon of Kentucky supported it, on the ground that the population around Detroit was too small to justify a separate Territorial government, and that several detached settlements in Mississippi and Louisiana Territories might, with equal justice, demand separate governments. Lucas of Pennsylvania, Jackson of Virginia, Sloan of New Jersey, and Morrow of Ohio, argued strongly that a small population was entitled to justice and protection just as much as a large one; that this community

19. *Ibid.*
20. *House Files*, 8th Cong., 1st Sess.

Digitized by Google

was so far from Vincennes as to deprive the people of the benefits of a government, and that Mackinac, which was an important business point bringing a revenue to the United States of $17,000, was 800 miles from Vincennes.[21] Their arguments carried the day, and the report was rejected, with only 34 votes in its favor. The Bill, which provided that the same old name, Northwest Territory, should be attached to the new Territory, was then amended by substituting the name "Michigan"[22]—which was the first time that name had ever been applied to a land area—and the third reading was postponed to the following day.

During the night adverse influences from some source were at work. When the Bill came up for third reading, Mr. Holland of North Carolina moved to postpone further consideration until the following November—a method of easy death,—but, after argument, this was defeated by 62 nays to 56 yeas. The opposition, however, was strengthening, and when the question was put on the passage of the Bill, it was lost by one vote, 58 yeas to 59 nays.[23] If one member had changed his vote, the Territory of Michigan would have come into existence one year earlier than it did.

The next session of Congress opened November 5, 1804, and the citizens of Detroit, who had endured another year of deprivation of the benefits of citizens of the United States, and had been greatly disappointed at the failure of their previous petitions, again besought Congress for relief. December 5 Mr. Worthington presented the memorial of James May and 74 others, citizens and inhabitants of the Indiana Territory

21. *Annals of Congress*, 8th Cong., 1st Sess., pp. 1040-1041.
22. *Ibid.*, p. 1041.
23. *Ibid.*, p. 1042.

Digitized by Google

north of an east and west line extending through the southerly bend of Lake Michigan, praying that a separate Territory be erected north of that line. The petition, dated October 24, 1804, is in both English and French, and is in the handwriting of Peter Audrain who accompanied the army of General Wayne when it took possession of Detroit in 1796, and who had remained as its first and only prothonotary, and clerk of every society, committee or association.[24] The petition referred to the unhappy fate of former petitions and the present distressing situation of the petitioners. There was but one sentiment in the community upon both the expediency and necessity of a separate Territorial government. As one illustration of conditions, in September, 1803, the petitioners understood that several laws were passed by the Legislature of Indiana Territory affecting their rights, but no one in Detroit had ever seen one of them, although they had been passed upwards of a year. They therefore renewed their prayer to be erected into a separate Territory.

The next day Mr. Worthington presented another petition for the same purpose, and both the petitions were referred to a committee of which he was chairman.

The first petition was signed by many of the "Memorial of 1803" signers, but some new names appeared. W. McCoskry, Christian Clemens, Daniel McNeal, Archibald Horner, James Harsen, Jno. Goff, James Fraser, Adam Gentle, Robert H. McNiff, Henry J. Hunt, Benjamin Chittenden, J. McDonnell, and Abraham Cook, were some of the new signers.

---

24. This petition was the immediate outcome of a public meeting held in Detroit, Oct. 13, 1804, called by the Trustees of the Town, who adopted a resolution at their session, Oct. 1, reciting that it was very necessary that a new memorial be framed and prepared and forwarded to Congress for the purpose of obtaining a division of the Indiana Territory.

Digitized by Google

The second petition was from the "Democratic Republicans of the County of Wayne," by Robert Abbott their Chairman, and George Hoffman, Secretary. As Congress and the administration were overwhelmingly of this political faith, it was a shrewd move to obtain by partisan appeal a more favorable hearing than they might otherwise have obtained. They asked a division of Indiana Territory and a separate government for the settlement composing Wayne County, with the southern boundary of the New Territory a line drawn from the southern extremity of Lake Michigan to Lake Erie in such a manner as to include the small settlements at old Fort Defiance and Fort Miami. They referred to the many embarrassments from which they suffered, the necessity of travelling 700 miles through inhospitable forests to obtain justice and redress of wrongs, the consequent immunity from punishment of wrong-doers, and the delay and expense in civil matters. They had had but two civil courts in the last eight years, and one result was that although justice was not *sold,* it cost more than many of them were able to pay. Through a change in the post route, intercourse with Vincennes, circuitous and difficult, was practically at an end, except by express or by casual opportunity. An argument of expediency and policy for granting this petition was the nearness of Upper Canada, a British Province, which might tend to strengthen anti-Republican notions; and as many, through frequent changes of allegiance, were destitute of patriotic feeling, it would be highly desirable to tie them closely to the General Government, and render them in the future faithful protectors of the frontier.

The Sheriff of Wayne County had lately received from Governor Harrison a proclamation requiring him to take a vote

Digitized by Google

of the people upon the question of proceeding to the second or Representative form of government, but although in the minority they were positively opposed to the measure; filled with confidence in Congress they submitted themselves to its decision.[25]

December 14 Mr. Worthington, having previously secured leave to do so, brought in a Bill to divide the Territory of Indiana and set off a new Territory north of a line drawn east from the southernmost extreme of Lake Michigan to Lake Erie and west to the Mississippi River. It was passed rapidly through the states of first and second reading, and on December 24 was amended so that the new Territory was bounded on the west by a line drawn from said southerly extreme of Lake Michigan through the middle of the Lake to its northern extremity, and thence due north to the northern boundary of the United States, and the name "Michigan" was given to it, and it then passed without division.[26]

December 26 the Bill was read twice in the House, and referred to a select committee of five, of which Gregg of Pennsylvania who had opposed the creation of the new Territory the year before, was chairman. January 2, 1805, the Bill was reported without amendment; January 4 it was considered in Committee of the Whole, and the first section amended. January 7 it was read the third time, and passed without division, showing that during the year a considerable change had taken place in the sentiment of members. The same day the Bill went to the Senate, which considered it, and the following day concurred in the amendment; on Friday, January 11,

25. *Senate Files*, 8th Cong., 2d Sess.
26. *Annals of Cong.*, 8th Cong., 2d Sess.

Digitized by Google

1805, President Jefferson approved it, and Michigan Territory was created to come into being June 30 following.[27]

27. In preparing this Bill Mr. Worthington overlooked some points of importance to which Mr. Sibley had called his attention the year before and which, if they had been acted upon, would have saved much trouble and discussion. These were: (1) The Governor and Judges should be permitted to *enact* laws and not be confined to adopting laws from other States. (2) Congress should declare to be in force in the new Territory until changed by the Governor and Judges, the laws passed by the Legislature of the Northwest Territory prior to the creation of Ohio; (3) A suggestion by Mr. Sibley was inserted in the Act to the effect that all cases pending in the courts of Indiana Territory which would properly be within the jurisdiction of the courts of the new Territory should be transferred to such courts for determination.

Digitized by Google

History of Prohibition Legislation in Michigan

By Floyd B. Streeter, M. A.
Lansing

THE adoption of the recent constitutional amendment prohibiting the manufacture and sale of alcoholic and intoxicating liquors in Michigan and the increasing possibility of national prohibition impels one to investigate the subject and find out about the origin, extent and character of the legislation on this question in Michigan.

If we take into consideration the laws relating to the sale of intoxicating drinks in force in the Northwest Territory, this legislation has covered approximately a century and a quarter of time. During the first half of this period laws were enacted mainly for the purpose of regulating and restricting the sale of liquor to the people as a whole and of prohibiting it only to certain groups; there was no attempt to suppress the manufacture of it or to prohibit its sale generally in the Territory or State. In the last sixty years on the other hand, a number of acts looking toward State-wide prohibition have been placed on the statute books and relatively fewer for the regulation of the traffic. Though most of these laws did not accomplish the purpose for which they were enacted, yet out of the experiences and experiments of the past, measures have evolved which may meet the wishes of the most ardent prohibitionists. The acts in the past have failed however more because of the lack of sympathy and indifference among the people, or neglect of duty on the part of officials, than because of defects in the laws. The present laws will be effective just

Digitized by Google

in proportion to the amount of support they receive from the people and from the officers enforcing them.

As might be expected, prohibitory legislation in its earliest form was enacted to suppress the sale or gift of intoxicating liquor to Indians, in order to prevent the dangerous abuses resulting from the traffic. On July 19, 1790, a law was passed providing that a trader or other person residing in or passing through the Northwest Territory who should "furnish, vend, sell or give," or "direct or procure to be furnished, vended, sold or given" intoxicating drinks to any Indian in the Territory, was subject to the fines specified in this Act.[1] Shortly after the declaration of war in 1812 the Governor and Judges of Michigan Territory adopted a law which declared that any person selling, bartering or disposing of intoxicants to Indians in the Territory, or conveying or helping to convey liquor out of it for this purpose, was subject to a fine of not less than five dollars nor more than one hundred dollars, together with the cost of the suit and the forfeiture of the article received in exchange for the beverage.[2] Three years later, persons licensed to sell liquor were prohibited from selling it to Indians without the permission of the Superintendent of Indian Affairs or some person duly authorized by him.[3]

At an equally early date the sale of intoxicating beverages to soldiers was restricted. A law of July 26, 1790, prohibited persons from selling intoxicants to soldiers in the service of the United States in the Northwest Territory within ten miles of a military post without a written order from a com-

1. *Laws of the Territory Northwest of the River Ohio* (1790), Chapter XI.
2. *Laws of Michigan Territory*, I, 180-181.
3. *Ibid*, 201-202.

Digitized by Google

missioned officer serving with the troops.[4] A similar measure was adopted from the laws of New York and Ohio by the Governor and Judges of Michigan Territory in 1815, which provided that intoxicating drinks should not be sold or given to any soldier or member of the militia in service without the written permission of the officer in command.[5]

Laws were also placed on the statute books to prevent the sale of strong drinks to minors, servants and slaves. In 1795 an Act to license and regulate taverns adopted from the Pennsylvania code, placed a rather heavy penalty on any innkeeper or retailer of liquor who should harbor or trust a minor or servant, and provided that no person should "furnish, supply or sell" intoxicating beverages to a bond servant or slave without permission from the master, nor could such servant or slave be arrested or attached for a debt contracted for liquor.[6] Five years later a law was passed repealing the Act of 1795 and imposing a heavier penalty on the sale of intoxicants to minors and servants.[7]

Among the prohibitory measures was one making it the duty of sheriffs and gaolers of each county to prevent the use of spirituous liquors except small beer by persons committed on criminal process.[8] Another Act prohibited the sale or gift of intoxicants within two miles of a place where a religious society assembled for worship,[9] while as early as 1815

4. *Laws of the Territory Northwest of the River Ohio* (1790), Chapter XII.
5. *Laws of Michigan Territory*, I, 201-202.
6. *Laws of the Territory Northwest of the Ohio, Adopted May 29 to August 25*, 1795. Pub. Cincinnati, 1796, pp. 96-101.
7. *Laws of the Territory Northwest of the River Ohio.* Cincinnati, 1801, pp. 52-55.
8. *Laws of Michigan Territory*, I, 469.
9. *Revised Statutes* (1846), p. 684.

Digitized by Google

provision was made that persons licensed to keep taverns or sell liquor should not sell or give away ardent spirits on Sunday except to lodgers and travelers.[10]

The greater part of the legislation of this period attempted however to regulate the sale of alcoholic drinks by requiring licenses of persons wishing to open taverns, ale-houses and public houses of entertainment. Under the license laws drunkenness and unlawful games were usually prohibited, and in order to limit the number of houses and secure the most respectable class of proprietors some of the Acts provided that an applicant for a license should be recommended by worthy persons. The character of this legislation can be illustrated by stating the main provisions of the early Acts. According to the law of 1792 granting licenses to merchants, traders and tavern keepers, passed by the Governor and Judges of the Northwest Territory, a fine of five dollars and costs was imposed on any tavern keeper or retailer of liquor who sold alcoholic beverages in small quantities without a license. The Governor was authorized to appoint one commissioner in each county who should grant the necessary licenses to persons recommended by the justices of the general quarter sessions of the peace.[11] Three years later a law was adopted from the Pennsylvania code providing that no person should keep a "public inn, tavern, ale-house, or dram-shop, or public house of entertainment" without first being recommended by the justices in the court of quarter sessions.[12] In 1800 this law was repealed and another enacted declaring that the keeper of such a place, in order to obtain a license,

10. *Laws of Michigan Territory*, I, 201-202.
11. *Laws of the Northwest Territory*. Philadelphia, 1794, pp. 5-12.
12. *Ibid*, Cincinnati, 1796, pp. 96-101.

Digitized by Google

had to be recommended by twelve respectable freeholders in the county in which he did business, and imposed a fine of twenty dollars and costs on the selling of liquor in quantities of less than one quart without a license.[13] Scarcely had the Governor and Judges arrived in Michigan Territory when they adopted a law from the Ohio statutes placing rather a heavy fine on any person who without a license sold strong drinks in a less quantity than one quart.[14] The license laws of the Territory continued in force after Michigan was admitted as a State in the Union.[15]

In 1845 a new step was taken when the granting of licenses was placed under popular control. Under a law enacted this year the people at each township and charter election were permitted to decide by vote whether or not licenses might be issued in their respective township or city. If the majority voted in favor of license, the local authorities might "in their discretion, grant licenses for the sale of intoxicating liquors, according to the provisions of existing laws."[16]

By 1850 the license system was regarded as a failure, and consequently the question was fully discussed in the Constitutional Convention that year. During the debate a member from Oakland County declared that "for every dollar put into the treasury by the sale of licenses, fifty to one hundred are abstracted in the way of poor taxes, criminal prosecutions, and the thousand other expenses consequent upon this business,"[17] while another member said that in his county the expense of pauperism and crime resulting from the sale of

13. *Ibid*, Cincinnati, 1801, pp. 52-55.
14. *Laws of Michigan Territory*, I, 40-44, 79-80, 195.
15. *Revised Statutes* (1838), pp. 203-207.
16. *Laws of Michigan* (1845), pp. 56-57.
17. *Constitutional Convention Debates* (1850), p. 399.

Digitized by Google

liquor was a thousand dollars a year, and that the amount paid for licenses was a mere pittance.[18] A large number of petitions were presented asking for the incorporation of a provision in the Constitution, prohibiting the manufacture and sale of liquor or preventing the Legislature from legalizing the traffic.[19] The members finally decided upon the following section: "The Legislature shall not pass any act authorizing the grant of license for the sale of ardent spirits or other intoxicating liquors."[20] This remained in the Constitution until an amendment striking it out[21] was adopted by the people in 1876 by a vote of 60,639 to 52,569.[22] The incorporation of the above section in the State Constitution marked the opening of a new era in prohibition legislation. The Legislature no longer confined most of its effort to the regulation of the traffic; it now attempted State-wide prohibition of both the manufacture and the sale of ardent spirits by means of laws or constitutional amendments.

In the early fifties the law in force in the State of Maine had many vehement advocates in Michigan. In his annual message on January 5, 1853, Governor McClelland called the attention of the Legislature to the need of remodelling the existing law.[23] Accordingly each house appointed a committee on the manufacture and sale of liquor.[24] Both Houses were

18. *Ibid*, p. 400.
19. *Ibid*, pp. 93, 159, 239, 326, 341, 358, 428, 465, 483, 510, 522, 558, 590, 604, 621, 698; *Journal of the Constitutional Convention* (1850), pp. 74, 97, 121, 161, 162, 166, 175, 202, 226, 240, 256, 263, 264, 275, 281, 287, 293, 308.
20. Constitution of 1850, Article IV, Section 47.
21. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1875), p. 305.
22. *Michigan Manual* (1877), pp. 295-298.
23. *Joint Documents* (1853); Doc. I, p. 18.
24. The committee in the Senate was appointed January 8. *Senate Journal* (1853), p. 18.

Digitized by Google

flooded with petitions, most of them asking for the enactment of a law similar to that on the statute books of Maine. On January 20 the House Select Committee reported that thus far the names signed to the petitions numbered 70,000. Because of the unanimous desire of the people for the enactment of a law, the Committee said that one should be passed, and accordingly submitted a bill[25] which was adopted in the House on February 3 by a vote of 57 to 12[26]; while the Senate, after making amendments in which the House later concurred,[27] adopted the measure on the 8th by a vote of 23 to 9.[28] The opposition consisted of two Whigs and ten Democrats in the House and nine Democrats in the Senate.

This Act provided that no person should manufacture or sell at any time "any spirituous or intoxicating liquors, or any mixed liquors, a part of which is spirituous or intoxicating," with one exception, namely: That the township or village board or common council of an incorporated city or village each fall might appoint for one year some person to sell liquors for mechanical and medicinal purposes only. Provision was also made for the submission of this Act to the electors in June for their approval or disapproval.[29] When the vote was polled it was found that the law was approved by a large majority.[30]

This Act had scarcely become effective when it was practically nullified by the equal division of the members of the Supreme Court on the question of its constitutionality, in the

25. *House Journal* (1853), pp. 139-140.
26. *Ibid*, pp. 290-291.
27. *Ibid*, pp. 357-358.
28. *Senate Journal* (1853), pp. 254-255.
29. *Laws of Michigan* (1853), pp. 100-111.
30. Pontiac *Gazette*, June 25, 1853.

Digitized by Google

case of the *People vs. Collins*. This case came into the Supreme Court on reservation by the presiding judge of the Wayne Circuit Court on the question whether or not the prohibition law "was constitutionally in force." On this question the court was equally divided, four judges holding the affirmative and four the negative. In his opinion Judge Pratt of the negative emphasized the point that the provision submitting the law to the people was a delegation of legislative power to them, which was unauthorized by the Constitution. Judge Green, holding the affirmative, maintained on the other hand that the submission of this measure to the electors was not a delegation of legislative power, because the law was complete when it passed from the hands of the Legislature and the people neither added nor subtracted anything.[31]

When the next Legislature met, the newly organized Republican party was in power in Michigan. A word may be useful at this point about the composition of political parties in the fifties and their attitude toward liquor legislation. The Free Democrats, who were the most radical opponents of slavery and among the strongest advocates of temperance in the State,[32] adopted a resolution in their mass convention in 1852 asking for the adoption of a law similar to that in force in Maine[33]; and two years later they urged the re-enactment of a prohibitory law free from constitutional objections.[34] The Republican party, organized in 1854, was composed of practically all the Free Democrats, the radical Whigs, the radical Democrats, most of the ministers of the Protestant churches, a large portion of the members of the Baptist, Congregational,

31. *Michigan Reports*, III, 343.
32. New York *Daily Tribune*, April 26, 1854.
33. Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, September 6, 1852.
34. Detroit *Daily Democrat*, February 23, 1854.

Digitized by Google

Methodist Episcopal, Quaker and Wesleyan Methodist churches,[35] and a majority of the members of the temperance organization.[36] In other words, it was a union of all the radical elements in the State. The party was especially strong in the interior rural counties where the small farmers were predominant. The vehement allegiance of the Protestant clergymen and the temperance advocates gave a pronounced moral tone to the party. Thus it is quite natural that the Republicans should have supported the prohibition movement. On the other hand the Democratic party was becoming more conservative. In its ranks in the fifties were a large number of conservative and wealthy men, especially in eastern Michigan,[37] a portion of the conservative Whigs, many Presbyterians and Episcopalians, and most of the Catholics.[38] The majority of the foreigners, who in the early days had united with the Democratic party because its economic, social and political principles were their own, and because of the aristocratic traditions and nativistic tendencies of the Whigs, still held their allegiance to it. Their loyalty was undoubtedly more firm because of the temperance principles of the Republicans. A radical German in the Saginaw Valley said he did not see much choice in politics at this time with "slavery on the one side, the temperance humbug on the other."[39] The

35. Result obtained by a study of church statistics and party votes in the fifties.
36. Grand Rapids *Enquirer*, November 11, 1854; Detroit *Free Press*, July 22, 1856; Livingstone, *History of the Republican Party*, I, 50.
37. The returns of the election of 1854 are in the Marshall *Statesman*, December 27, 1854.
38. Data gathered in a study of the statistics of the period.
39. Frank, *Pionierjahre der Familien Frank-Kerler in Michigan und Wisconsin*, p. 290.

Digitized by Google

desire of the Democrats to keep the temperance question out of politics,[40] their opposition to the prohibition bill in the Legislature of 1855, and their adoption of a resolution in the State convention the following year demanding the repeal of this law because it was inefficient and not enforced,[41] offered an excellent opportunity for such charges as the one made in 1854 by a New York newspaper that the Democratic party in Michigan "draws much of its vitality from variously disguised whiskey and lager beer."[42]

The Legislature of 1855 was composed of a large majority of Republicans. In his inaugural message Governor Bingham recommended the passage of a prohibitory law free from constitutional objections.[43] This portion of his message was referred to a select committee in the House[44]; a bill was introduced which passed the House on January 24 by a vote of 51 to 21[45] and the Senate on February 1 by 23 to 0;[46] amendments made in the Senate were concurred in by the House.[47] The Democratic members cast all the dissenting votes.

This law was entitled an "act to prevent the manufacture and sale of spirituous or intoxicating liquors as a beverage." It prohibited all persons from selling or manufacturing intoxicating drinks; declared that all payments of money for liquor were illegal; that agreements made contrary to its provisions were null and void and that no suits at law could

40. *Michigan Argus*, April 27, 1854; Detroit *Free Press*, July 10, 1855.
41. Detroit *Free Press*, August 8, 1856.
42. New York *Daily Tribune*, April 26, 1854.
43. *Joint Documents* (1855), Doc. 12, pp. 10-11.
44. *House Journal* (1855), p. 97.
45. *Ibid*, p. 209.
46. *Senate Journal* (1855), p. 202.
47. *Ibid*, p. 212.

Digitized by Google

be maintained in such cases. This law also repealed the Act of 1853.[48]

The next legislation of importance occurred in 1867. This year the Legislature passed an Act making it unlawful for anyone to sell ardent spirits to students attending public or private institutions of learning and to minors, or to allow them to play cards, dice, billiards and games of chance in a building where liquors were sold. The offender was liable to a fine of twenty dollars and the costs of prosecution and, in default of payment, imprisonment in the county jail for sixty days.[49] The prohibition question received its share of attention from the Constitutional Convention this year. The discussion centered about the proposed section containing the provision in the Constitution of 1850, and a substitute providing for the submission of alternative sections to the people: the one prohibiting all licenses for the sale of intoxicating drinks as a beverage, the other a provision for the regulation of the sale of liquors by a tax, license or some other means.[50] The convention finally submitted to the people a measure which if accepted was to form an additional section to the Constitution. This provided that the Legislature should not pass any Act authorizing the grant of license, but should prohibit the sale of liquor as a beverage.[51] The proposed measure was rejected however by a popular vote of 72,468 to 86,143.[52]

By the early seventies the prohibition law was practically a dead letter on the statute books; consequently there was a

48. *Laws of Michigan* (1855), pp. 13-25.
49. *Ibid*, (1867), I, 128-129.
50. *Journal of the Constitutional Convention of* 1867, pp. 16, 32, 76, 203, 544, 772-779, 917; *Debates and Proceedings*, I, 596; II, 664-688, 772-779.
51. *Journal of the Constitutional Convention*, pp. 880-881.
52. *Michigan Manual* (1889), p. 441.

Digitized by Google

demand for something different, chiefly for the regulation of the traffic by means of a tax. The Constitutional Commission of 1873 agreed upon a section which was to be submitted to the electorate along with the amended constitution. This provided for an annual tax which should be levied on all persons and firms engaged in selling or disposing of liquor other than for medicinal, mechanical and chemical purposes; it prohibited the sale of intoxicating drinks to minors, insane people and persons under guardianship, and permitted the Legislature to increase the annual tax and make further regulations.[53] In 1875 the Governor called the attention of the Legislature to the fact that there were considerably over six thousand places in the State selling liquor, and that over five thousand persons were daily violating the prohibition law. He urged this body as an experiment to enact stringent laws regulating the sale of liquor, prohibiting its sale to minors, apprentices and habitual drunkards, compelling the saloons to close on holy days and at a reasonable hour at night, and levying a tax on the business. This legislation he believed would reduce the number of liquor shops one-half.[54] The Legislature passed laws embodying part of the Governor's suggestions. One of these imposed an annual tax on all persons in Michigan selling liquors shipped in from outside the State;[55] another made provision for taxing the manufacture and sale of intoxicating drinks and repealed the prohibitory law of 1855 and all amendatory Acts thereto;[56] while a third measure made the sale and delivery of ardent spirits to minors and habitual

53. *Journal of the Constitutional Commission* (1873), pp. 216-217.
54. *Message of John J. Bagley* (1875), pp. 30-31.
55. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1875), pp. 271-272.
56. *Ibid*, pp. 274-275.

Digitized by Google

drunkards unlawful.[57] A joint resolution was also passed amending the Constitution by striking out the clause relating to licenses,[58] which was adopted by the people by a vote of 60,639 to 52,561.[59] In 1877 the Governor stated that statistics showed there was a great decrease in drunkenness and in the number of saloons in the two years. He suggested however that a law should be passed fixing the time within which the liquor tax might be collected, because many of the local officials were neglecting their duties.[60] The Legislature acted according to his suggestions.[61] This and succeeding Legislatures also enacted additional laws relating to minors, increased the amount of the annual tax and made the penalty for violation heavier.[62]

In the following decade there was a great demand for the submission to the electorate of a constitutional amendment to suppress the traffic in intoxicating drinks. According to Governor Begole, "petitions signed by scores of thousands of the good people of the State" were presented to the Legislature in 1883.[63] Governor Alger in his retiring message in 1887, and Governor Luce in his inaugural message the same year, recommended the submission of such an amendment to the people.[64] Accordingly the Legislature adopted a joint resolution permitting the electors to vote in April on an amendment pro-

57. *Ibid*, pp. 283-284.
58. *Ibid*, p. 305.
59. *Michigan Manual* (1877), pp. 295-298.
60. *Message of John J. Bagley* (1877), pp. 30-31.
61. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1877), pp. 231-239.
62. *Ibid*, (1877), pp. 212-214, 231-239; (1879), pp. 293-298; (1881), pp. 73, 148-149, 350-357; (1887), pp. 445-460; (1889), pp. 301-315.
63. *Message of Josiah W. Begole* (1885), p. 15.
64. *Message of Russell A. Alger* (1887), p. 12; *Message of Cyrus G. Luce* (1887), p. 14.

Digitized by Google

hibiting the manufacture, gift or sale of spirituous, malt or vinous liquors in Michigan except for medicinal, mechanical, chemical or scientific purposes.[65] The people were divided however between prohibition and regulation by taxation. A very vigorous campaign was waged in which the temperance question was thoroughly discussed,[66] but in the election the amendment was rejected by a vote of 178,470 to 184,305.[67]

The Legislature of 1887 also passed the first Local Option Law in Michigan. The bill, entitled "an act to regulate the manufacture and sale" of intoxicating drinks in the several counties of the State, was adopted in the House on June 8 by a vote of 51 to 40,[68] and in the Senate a week later by 21 to 7.[69] It provided that on application by a petition signed by not less than one-fifth of the voters in any county as shown by the poll lists of the last gubernatorial election, the county clerk should call an election within forty days. If the majority of the electors in the county should vote in favor of prohibition, the general laws relating to liquor were to be suspended and the sale of intoxicating liquors after the first Monday in May following the election was to be illegal; the penalty for violation of this Act was a fine of not less than $50 nor more than $500 or imprisonment in the county jail not less than ten days nor more than six months, or both fine and imprisonment in the discretion of the court.[70].

Though thirty-five out of the thirty-seven counties which

65. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1887), p. 466.
66. Van Buren, "Our Temperance Conflict" in the *Michigan Historical Collections*, XIII, 403.
67. *Ibid*, p. 404.
68. *House Journal* (1887), p. 2449.
69. *Senate Journal* (1887), p. 1946.
70. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1887), pp. 212-213.

Digitized by Google

voted on local option[71] immediately adopted the measure by large majorities, the Act was very short-lived. In the April term, 1888, the question of its constitutionality was brought before the Supreme Court *in re* Charles Hauck. In his decision Judge Champlin declared that the law was unconstitutional, because its object was *to prohibit* the sale of the kinds of liquor mentioned in it, while in the title the expression "to regulate" was used. He also pointed out six other defects fatal to its validity.[72]

At the opening of the next Legislature the Governor urged the enactment of a law free from constitutional objections.[73] In accordance with his recommendation, this body by a majority of thirteen in the House[74] and ten in the Senate[75] adopted the Local Option Act which with amendments has remained on the statute books to the present time. It provided that upon a written application and petition signed by not less than one-fourth of the qualified voters of any county, the county clerk should call a meeting of the board of supervisors and present the matter to them. Thereupon the supervisors were to issue an order for an election to be held on a Monday within not less than forty nor more than sixty days. If the prohibition measure should be carried, the supervisors were required to order all saloons closed, and it would be unlawful for anyone to sell, keep or manufacture liquor in the county after the first of the following May.[76] In 1895 this Act was amended so as to prevent the fraudulent use of names as

71. *Message of Hon. Cyrus G. Luce* (1889), p. 21.
72. *Michigan Reports*, LXX, 396-413.
73. *Message of Hon. Cyrus G. Luce* (1889), pp. 21-22.
74. *House Journal* (1889), p. 1633.
75. *Senate Journal* (1889), p. 1199.
76. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1889), pp. 286-295.

Digitized by Google

signatures to petitions,[77] and four years later the necessary number of names to the petition and application was increased to one-third.[78]

Between 1890 and 1917, seventy-six counties voted on local option.[79] Prior to 1900 only ten counties voted on the question; seven of these adopted prohibition at the first election. Of all this number Van Buren is the only county which has remained dry to the present day. Twenty counties have been dry since 1912; while during the twenty-seven years, out of the seventy-six counties twenty-two have opposed prohibition at every election when it was an issue.

In the past third of a century several liquor laws have been enacted. The provisions have been various. The sale of intoxicants has been prohibited within one mile of the home for disabled soldiers, sailors and marines.[80] Elections have been forbidden to be held in a saloon,[81] and the sale of liquor prohibited on election day.[82] Boards of registration should not meet in saloons.[83] The selling or giving intoxicating drinks to prisoners except under the direction of a physician should

77. *Ibid*, (1895), p. 543. The signatures on a petition in one township were to be kept separate from those in other local places, the lists of names were to be posted in three conspicuous places in the township and the petition was to be accompanied by a transcript of the poll list.
78. *Ibid*, (1899), pp. 276-277.
79. *Michigan Manual* (1917), pp. 338-347, 951.
80. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1887), p. 30.
81. *Ibid*, (1891), p. 270; *Local Option Law and Laws Relating to the Manufacture and Use of Spirituous Liquors* (1915), pp. 71, 74.
82. *Local Option Law and Laws Relating to the Manufacture and Use of Spirituous Liquors* (1915), p. 72: Act 190, P. A. 1877; p. 73: Act 281, P. A. 1909.
83. *Ibid*, p. 74: Act 23, P. A. 1889.

Digitized by Google

be illegal.[84] Cities of the fourth class and villages have been empowered to regulate and suppress the liquor traffic.[85] Railroad companies should not employ any person who used "intoxicating drinks as a beverage."[86] Minors under seventeen years of age and those attending school should not be allowed to spend their time in saloons.[87] Children should not be bound out, apprentised or given to a saloonkeeper.[88] Every boy between the ages of ten and sixteen, and every girl between ten and seventeen, who should frequent or lounge about saloons, was to be regarded as a truant and disorderly child.[89] Persons under twenty-one years of age should not be permitted to work in theaters, concert halls or places of amusement where intoxicating drinks were on sale. No girl or woman should be permitted to act as barkeeper or to dance in a saloon or other place where liquor was sold.[90]

The Legislature of 1909 passed an Act greatly aiding the temperance movement, which provided that the number of retail liquor dealers in each township, village or city should not exceed one to every five hundred inhabitants.[91] As a result, more than two hundred saloons in the Upper Peninsula went out of business on May 1, 1912.[92]

The adoption of the constitutional amendment in April,

84. *Ibid*, pp. 75-77: Act 17, P. A. 1909; Act 118, P. A. 1893; extract from *Revised Statutes* (1846).
85. *Ibid*, pp. 77-79: Acts 3 and 215, P. A. 1895; Acts 278 and 279, P. A. 1909.
86. *Ibid*, p. 80: Act 198, P. A. 1873.
87. *Ibid*, p. 82: Act 260, P. A. 1881.
88. *Ibid*, pp. 80-81: Act 193, P. A. 1887.
89. *Ibid*, pp. 81-82: Act 222, P. A. 1887.
90. *Ibid*, p. 83: Act 285, P. A. 1909.
91. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1909), p. 686: Act 291, Sec. 39.
92. *Anti-Saloon League Year Book* (1916), p. 225.

Digitized by Google

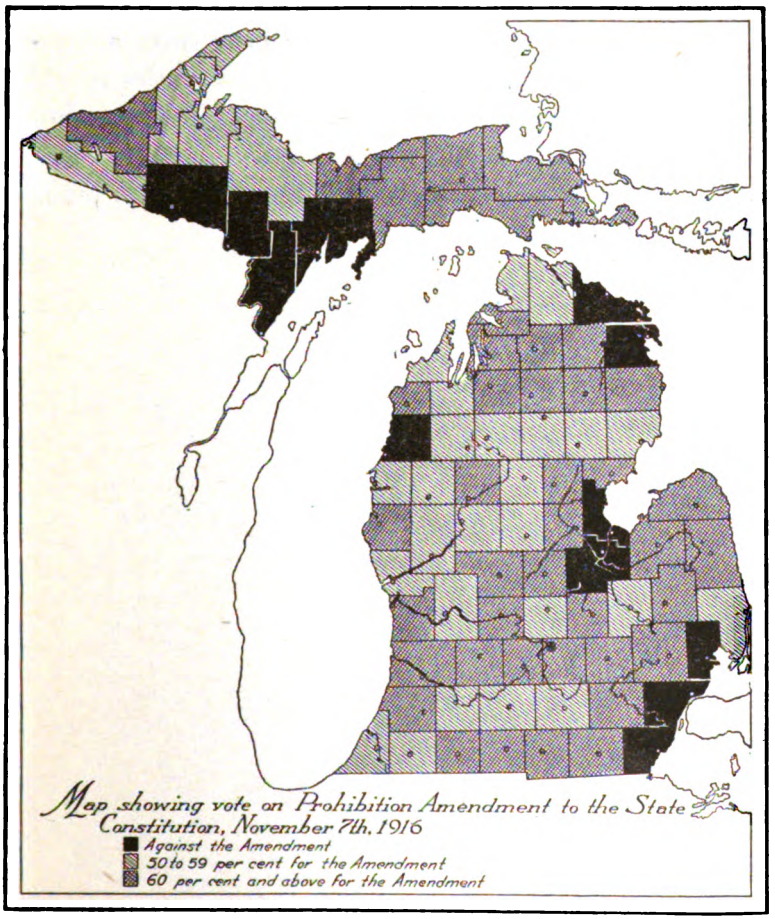
1913,[93] providing that amendments might be proposed by a petition signed by not less than ten per cent of the legal voters[94] paved the way for the anti-saloon forces to secure the submission of a prohibition amendment to the people. Accordingly a mass meeting was held in Lansing on November 2, 1915, and petitions were circulated relative to an amendment to be submitted to the electorate in the fall of 1916.[95] This provided that the "manufacture, sale, keeping for sale, giving away, bartering or furnishing of any vinous, malt, brewed, fermented, spirituous or intoxicating liquors, except for medicinal, mechanical, chemical, scientific or sacramental purposes," should be prohibited after April 30, 1918, and that the Legislature should regulate by law the sale of such liquors as might be sold. The people adopted the amendment on November 7, 1916, by a vote of 353,378 to 284,754,[96] and the Legislature of 1917 enacted the laws necessary to carry out the provisions of the amendment.[97]

A study based on the 1910 census[98] and the votes on local option and the constitutional amendment, reveals certain tendencies toward an alignment of the people on the prohibition issue according to sections and economic interests. In the more sparsely settled northern counties, in the counties in which a very large per cent of the voting population is foreign-born or of alien parentage, and in those where there is the greatest number of saloons in proportion to the num-

93. *Michigan Manual* (1913), p. 779.
94. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1913), pp. 780-782.
95. *Anti-Saloon League Year Book* (1916), p. 225.
96. *Michigan Manual* (1917), p. 483.
97. *Public Acts of Michigan* (1917), pp. 291-292, 820-836.
98. Statistics are taken from *Abstract of the Thirteenth Census with Michigan Supplement.*

Digitized by Google

ber of inhabitants,[99] the people have tended to oppose prohibition. In the urban counties in southern Michigan, in


Map showing vote on Prohibition Amendment to the State Constitution, November 7th, 1916
Against the Amendment
50 to 59 per cent for the Amendment
60 per cent and above for the Amendment

which the greater number of the factories are located and a relatively large number of wage earners reside, the people gave either a majority against the prohibition amendment or only

99. *Michigan Campaign Manual for a Dry State May* 1, 1916, p. 12.

Digitized by Google

a small majority in favor of it. Furthermore there was a tendency, though not a general one, for the sections containing a large number of small farmers to give the amendment a relatively small vote. On the other hand, with a few exceptions, the more densely populated rural counties in which most of the people are native-born, and those counties containing a comparatively small number of saloons and a large per cent of the medium-sized and large farms, have given the temperance movement strong support.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

JAMES BURRILL ANGELL, LL.D.

1829–1916

Digitized by Google

JAMES BURRILL ANGELL AND THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

BY WILFRED B. SHAW, A. B.

(SECRETARY U. OF M. ALUMNI ASSOCIATION)
ANN ARBOR

THE administration of James Burrill Angell, President of the University of Michigan for thirty-eight years, covered a significant period in the history of American education. It was also a critical time in the life of the University. In the years between 1871 and 1909 Michigan made a practical and successful demonstration of a new experiment, the popularization of education, and the maintenance of a school system and a university by the State.

While the University of Michigan might have developed much as it has without the guidance of President Angell, it may be questioned whether it would have been as effective as a leader in the new movement. The principles which underlie the State university system were stated well by the founders who incorporated the fundamental idea of popular education in the first constitution of the State. Michigan's first great President, Chancellor Henry Philip Tappan, tried his best to make them practical. But he was ahead of his time, and

1. For students and graduates of the University of Michigan, the month of April will always be sacred to the memory of President Angell. This article by Mr. Shaw is selected by permission from numerous tributes appearing in the April, 1916, number of the *Michigan Alumnus*. Its place in this number of the Magazine appropriately commemorates Dr. Angell's connection with the State's historical work, as Honorary member of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society.—*Ed.*

Digitized by Google

it was not until President Angell came to Michigan from Vermont, in 1871, that there was progress towards a true University. When he came Michigan was still a college. It was the work of Dr. Angell to build, and to build well, upon foundations already laid; to harmonize, with practical idealism and diplomacy, the advanced ideals of the University with the slower progress of the Commonwealth. While it has come to be no reproach upon the fame of Dr. Tappan that he failed in just this particular, it is the great achievement of Dr. Angell that he succeeded. He made Michigan the model for all succeeding State universities.

Dr. Angell, fresh from his work in the East as Professor of Modern Languages at Brown University, war-time editor of the Providence *Journal* and President of the University of Vermont, came to Michigan in June 1871, eight years after the resignation of Chancellor Tappan. The six years from 1863 to 1869 had been filled with success by the Reverend Erastus O. Haven, a man of much more conservative temper than Dr. Tappan, who devoted himself to caring for the material affairs of the University rather than the problems of future development. Professor Henry S. Frieze, one of the most striking figures in the history of the University, followed as Acting President for two years. He found opportunity in his short administration to further Dr. Tappan's ideas in many ways. Two steps were taken at that time which have had a far-reaching effect in American education, the admission of women and the final establishment of organic relations with the high schools of the State. In fact, the first two women were graduated at the end of the same year that saw President Angell assume his new duties as Dr. Frieze's successor.

The faculty which greeted him in 1871 was a brilliant one,

Digitized by Google

though small in numbers, less than forty all told, compared with over ten times that number when he resigned his office. The Catalogue of 1871 shows 1,110 students enrolled, in contrast to 5,223 in 1909.

At the time of his death, April 1, 1916, Dr. Angell was eighty-seven years old. He was born in Scituate, R. I., January 7, 1829, of good New England stock, and lived the simple life of a country boy. He attended the village school, the academy of one Isaac Fiske, a Quaker pedagogue, of Scituate, —until he was ready for more advanced studies at the academies of Seekonk, Mass., and North Scituate.

This early training, in his later estimation, furnished him the best possible instruction, because it involved personal attention from special instructors, a good old fashioned method, which the rapid development of this country has made almost impossible, yet a practice for which he stood consistently as far as possible throughout his whole career as an educator. In speaking of his early schooling, he said that "no plan had been marked out for me; being fond of study and almost equally fond of all branches, I took nearly everything that was taught, merely because it was taught."

His health as a boy was delicate, giving small promise of his hale and hearty four score years, and he spent perforce two years, from fourteen to sixteen, on a farm. As to the value of this experience, far from uncommon in the lives of many men eminent in the history of this country, he said, "I prize very highly the education I received then. I learned how much back-ache a dollar earned in the field represents." He prepared for Brown University at a grammar school in Providence where he studied under Henry S. Frieze, destined to become his immediate predecessor in the Presidency of

Digitized by Google

Michigan. He was graduated from Brown, with highest honors, in 1849.

This early New England training was particularly fortunate for one who was to come into such close relationship with the pioneer settlers of Michigan,—New Englanders to a very large extent. Equally fortunate was his later training. His first residence abroad, where he acquired the familiarity with modern languages which fitted him for his first professorship, had been preceded by a year as assistant in the library at Brown University; then he became tutor, and later a student of civil engineering in the office of the city engineer of Boston. In fact, he spent this period to such advantage that later, upon his return from Europe, he was given the choice of a professorship either in civil engineering or modern languages, an evidence of the wide range of his interests. He finally chose modern languages as his subject, and entered upon his career as a teacher, where he developed the highest qualifications. He remained at Brown for seven years.

Many articles and reviews published in the Providence *Journal* justified his selection in 1860 as the editor of that paper, a position which he held throughout the Civil War with singular distinction.

In 1866, Dr. Angell was offered the Presidency of the University of Vermont, and he accepted it. He took charge of the University when its fortunes were at a low ebb, and the future was not bright. It was due to the administrative ability of the new President as well as to his ripe experience and culture that the day was saved and Vermont prospered, intellectually and financially, during the five years of his administration.

After the resignation of President Haven in 1869, the Regents of the University of Michigan invited Dr. Angell to the

Digitized by Google

DR. ANGELL

At the time he came to the University of Michigan

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

vacant chair, but he felt constrained to decline; his work at Vermont was not completed. Two years later the call was again extended and this time it was accepted. Speaking of his decision to come to Michigan, Dr. Angell said twenty-five years later: "While, with much embarrassment, I was debating the question in my own mind whether I should come here, I fell in with a friend who had very large business interests, and he made this very suggestive remark to me: 'Given the long lever, it is no harder to lift a big load than it is with a shorter one to lift a smaller load.' I decided to try the end of the longer lever."[2]

James Burrill Angell was inaugurated President of the University of Michigan in June, 1871. From that time his life was the life of the University except for interludes of diplomatic service in China, Turkey, and upon various commissions. His diplomatic career, though only incidental to his life work as an educator, showed that he possessed the necessary qualifications for what might well have been a very distinguished career in other fields. At the time of his appointment to China as Minister Plenipotentiary, diplomatic relations in the East were decidedly indirect and characteristically Oriental. It had just taken Germany two years to conclude a rather unimportant commercial treaty, and upon his arrival at Peking his colleagues in the diplomatic service laughed at him for supposing that his one year's leave of absence would suffice for his far more important mission. Yet the revision of the Burlingame treaty, restricting the importation of cheap coolie labor into this country, which he sought, was accomplished within two months. Another important commercial treaty relative to the importation of opium had

2. President Angell's Quarter Centennial; Addresses, p. 34.

Digitized by Google

likewise been completed in the same time. He was also successful in his mission to Turkey in 1898 and as a member of the Alaska Fisheries and other international commissions.

But his heart was in his work at Ann Arbor, and thither he always returned despite flattering temptations to enter diplomatic life. A great opportunity lay before him when he took up his new duties and he recognized it. It was his task to bring the State, exemplified at that time by a not always sympathetic Legislature, and by a Board of Regents of continually varying complexion, to a realization of the true function of a university supported by the State. He must arouse the enthusiasm for education and learning which he knew lay deep in the hearts of the people of Michigan. As Professor Charles Kendall Adams, later President of Cornell and Wisconsin said: "What was called for first of all was the creation and dissemination of an appreciative public opinion that would produce in some way or other, the means necessary for the adequate support of the University." So well did Dr. Angell accomplish this purpose that of late years he loved to dwell, in his speeches before the Alumni, upon what he chose to call the "passion for education" on the part of the people of the State, forgetting utterly the yeoman service he performed all his life toward bringing about that same regard for popular education.

It is true that the foundation and declaration of the educational ideals of the West cannot be ascribed to him. Nevertheless he must be regarded, more than any other one man, as the successful pilot who avoided the difficulties which the very novelty of the situation presented. The comparative freedom from precedent offered an unrivalled opportunity to try new theories in education, and was a continual temptation to try policies which must have proved too advanced.

Digitized by Google

A survey of the educational system in the West at the time he came to Michigan, may be of interest. As regards the number of students, quality of work, and the eminence of the men upon her Faculties, Michigan stood far in advance of other State institutions. This very pre-eminence, however, threw a greater responsibility upon the new President. Lacking precedents, he had to make them for himself, so that the place of the State university in the educational world today is in great degree the measure of success he had in dealing with the practical problems which confronted him throughout his extraordinarily long term of office. When he came to Michigan there was only one other State university of any size, Wisconsin, although several others had already been established. If the report of the United States Commissioner of Education for 1871 is to be relied upon, none of them except Michigan, and possibly Wisconsin, were in anything like a flourishing condition. While Michigan had, all told, 1,110 students, of whom 483 were in the Literary Department, Wisconsin had only 355, omitting a preparatory department of 131 students. Minnesota had but 167 students with 144 in the preparatory department, while Kansas enrolled 313. No figures were given for Illinois, which was then the Illinois Industrial University, and Nebraska, both of which had been established for several years.

Yet Michigan, although she was well in the lead in point of numbers as well as in the strength of her professional schools, was far from realizing her possibilities. It would, of course, be a rash assertion to say that she has realized them now. But it is safe to say that no State has maintained more truly the type of the well rounded university,—a large college of liberal arts, with traditions of culture and scholarship

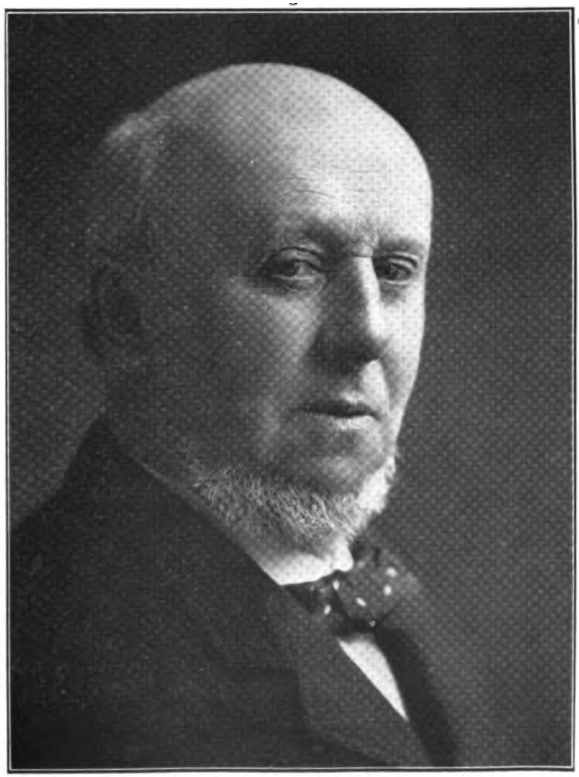
Digitized by Google

which began with its very foundation, surrounded by a ring of effective professional schools.

Soon after he came, the present system of revenue from the State was first made operative, in 1873. This was in the shape of an annual proportion of the State taxes, fixed at first at one-twentieth of a mill on every dollar of taxable property. This proportion continued for twenty years. Since then it has been increased several times, until it is now three-eighths of a mill on every dollar, and netted the University in 1909 $650,000 instead of the $15,000 of 1873. The total income of the University for the last year of Dr. Angell's administration was $1,290,000, as against $76,702.52 received during his first year. In fact, when President Angell came to Michigan it had just become in reality a State institution, as the first appropriation of money for its support, aside from the sale of certain public lands which went for a song, was made in 1867-69. Before that time, the State had never given any financial proof that the University was a State institution, beyond loaning the original $100,000 when it was first founded. The idea was there, but it had never been made vital.

It was perhaps in the more strictly academic side of the development of the University that Dr. Angell's peculiar genius as an administrative officer was most apparent. When he came, he was forty-two years of age, and in Professor Hinsdale's words, "brought to his new and responsible post extended scholarship, familiar acquaintance with society and the world, administrative experience, a persuasive eloquence, and a cultivated personality." This urbanity and extraordinary ability as a speaker won for him from the first a place in the hearts and in the imaginations of the people of the State. His birth and training gave him a sympathetic appreciation

Digitized by Google



DR. ANGELL

At the end of his years as President of the University

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

of their point of view, which apparently was the one thing which his predecessor, Dr. Tappan, lacked. President Angell felt that the people only needed to be shown and they would stand ready to help the University.

But there were other and even more vital administrative problems which faced him. In the first place, he had to make Michigan a true university as distinguished from a college. He had to correlate and concentrate the various departments, and make them complete by adding a school for effective graduate work. Certain revolutionary steps, such as the admission of women, the first tentative steps toward free election of studies, the introduction of a scientific course, had been instituted by his immediate predecessors; it became his duty to make them a success.

Almost contemporaneous with Dr. Angell's inauguration as President, was the introduction of the seminar system of teaching, in effect a further application of the German methods; not only should the teacher be an investigator and searcher after truth, but the student as well; and more important still, the student should be taught how to carry on original investigation himself by means of seminar classes where student and teacher worked together on original problems. According to Professor Hinsdale, "there is good reason to think that Michigan was the first American university to naturalize this product of German soil."

With all these innovations under way, Dr. Angell found many other opportunities for the introduction of new ideas in education—some of them as startling and as revolutionary as certain of the earlier experiments. These included a modification of that traditional course of classical studies which can be traced back directly to the Middle Ages. The estab-

Digitized by Google

lishment of the Latin course, which dropped the requirement of Greek, was the first step; this was further modified in 1877 by the establishment of an English course in which no classics

were required. The scientific course also underwent further modifications during this year (1877-78), which was characterized by many radical changes, though they do not strike one so nowadays. A still more revolutionary step was taken by

Digitized by Google

throwing open more than half the courses to free election, permitting some students to shorten their college course, and enabling others to enrich their course with other than the prescribed studies, heretofore compulsory and admitting of almost no variation.

All these changes resulted in an immediate increase in attendance, almost twenty per cent the first year they went into force. As a direct result of Dr. Angell's recommendation the first chair in the Science and the Art of Teaching in any American university was established in 1880, coming as a necessary corollary to the intimate relation maintained and encouraged by the University between itself and the high schools of the State. In 1891 this department was empowered to grant certificates permitting any student possessing one to teach in any high school in the State.

The Graduate School practically came into being during his administration, as there was really nothing worthy of the name of graduate work before, in spite of the heroic efforts of President Tappan. It was during Dr. Angell's administration also that the professional schools assumed the prominent place they now occupy. When he first became President, both the Law and Medical Schools consisted of two courses of lectures, of six months duration, with no severe examination required for admittance. Now they require three and four years of nine months each, as well as two years of work in the Literary College.

Many honors came to Dr. Angell in the course of his long life, as was inevitable. His scholarship was universally recognized. He received the degree of LL.D. from Brown University in 1868, Columbia University in 1887, Rutgers College in 1896, Princeton University in 1896, Yale University in

Digitized by Google

1901, John Hopkins University in 1902, University of Wisconsin in 1904, Harvard University in 1905 and the University of Michigan in 1912. He was a member of the American Philosophical Society of Philadelphia, the American Antiquarian Society of Worcester, the American Academy of Arts and Sciences of Boston, and the American Historical Association, of which he was president in 1893. Dr. Angell was a charter member of the American Academy at Rome. For many years he was also regent of the Smithsonian Institution at Washington. He was always a leader in the Congregational Church and presided at the International Congregational Council which met in Boston in September, 1899. This body was composed of delegates from all parts of the world, and represented the scholastical and ecclesiastical organization of the Church in the persons of its most distinguished members.

Neither position, public honors, nor improvement in the equipment and personnel of the University represents rightly, however, the real work of President Angell. His greatest influence lay in his dealings with the students, and through them, upon the educational ideals of the West. And it is precisely this influence, quietly acquired and characteristically wielded, which represents what is perhaps his greatest claim upon the consideration of the future. No one who had the privilege of hearing him speak failed to respond to the quiet persuasiveness of his presence and the charm of his personality. There are some persons in whom is inherent a certain magnetic mastery over numbers. He had this to an extraordinary degree. Merely by rising he could bring absolute stillness upon a cheering throng of students or alumni, and with a few words, quiet but remarkably distinct, he could

Digitized by Google

rouse to a remarkable pitch that sentiment known as college spirit. His whole figure was expressive of a benign goodness, illuminated most humanly by the worldly wisdom of an experienced diplomat.

All through his career, Dr. Angell gave evidence of certain characteristics which had definite effects upon his policy as President. Professor Charles H. Cooley has characterized the especial qualities which made for his success as "his faith and his adaptability." Dr. Angell always believed in the tendency of the right to prevail, and was willing to wait with a "masterly inactivity," avoiding too much injudicious assistance. He was always able to maintain a broad and comprehensive view, the attitude of the administrator, and was faithful in his belief in the Higher Power which guides the destiny of men—and universities. His diplomatic genius, the combination of teacher and man of the world, enabled him to keep in close and sympathetic touch, not only with the student life about him, but also with the difficult problems of an ever-growing Faculty. He always showed himself surprisingly shrewd, yet withal charitable, in the judgment of men and of their character, a qualification which enabled him to follow a *laissez-faire* policy until the proper time. Often his penetration and insight in analyses of recent current problems and questions, which might be supposed not to interest so particularly a man of his years, have surprised his young associates and have given evidence of the wonderful vitality, the spirit of youth, which lived within him.

Ann Arbor was long accustomed to his familiar figure on his invariable morning "constitutional," walking with an elastic, springy step and a ruddy freshness in his complexion which almost belied his grey hairs and his well-known age.

Digitized by Google

He passed few blocks without a word to some one, for a simple, kindly interest in those about him was one of his chief characteristics. It was this essential democracy which kept him for so many years in personal relations with his students, an interest which never flagged until the last, and which was shown by the close track which he always kept of the Alumni of the University. For the Alumni, he has always borne that simplest and most beloved of academic titles, "Prexy." No gentler tribute has even been paid than the words of his former pupil, Professor Charles M. Gayley, '78, now of the University of California, in the Commemoration Ode, read at the Quarter Centennial of Dr. Angell's Presidency:

> For he recks of praises nothing, counts them fair nor fit:
> He, who bears his honors lightly
> And whose age renews its zest—

THE PRESIDENT'S HOUSE ON THE CAMPUS OCCUPIED BY DR. ANGELL FOR 45 YEARS.

Digitized by Google

To James Burrill Angell must be given a pre-eminent place among those who have made advanced learning for the young people of the land a matter of course. More than any other one person he helped to give to this country one of her proudest distinctions, the highest percentage in the world of college men and women.

Digitized by Google

Early Catholic Missions in Emmet County

By Judge Thomas Linehan
Harbor Springs

WHEN the pen of the historian traces in merited colorings the lives and work of the Catholic missionaries in Emmet County during the past centuries, a picture of beautiful characters and unique personalities presents itself, radiating inspiration and crystallizing plain human speech into thought worthy of a setting of gold. Great priests, great missonaries, were at work in Michigan from the latter part of the 17th century to the middle decades of the 19th century, laying the cornerstone of civilization, repeating to the wild Indians the mysteries of Redemption and instructing them in industrial pursuits.

The list of names of the great missionaries would be incomplete were not the name of Fr. Samuel Charles Mazzuchelli, O. P., mentioned. He was the peer of all, of the best and most memorable, in deeds and virtues which brightened his pathway. Much information is gleaned from his *Memoirs,* consisting of three parts designated as Books 1, 2 and 3, a simple narrative of work as missionary in this part of Michigan and the middle Northwest Territory. These *Memoirs,* written in 1830-34, were published in Milan, Italy, in 1840 and translated into English by Sr. Mary Benedicta Kennedy, St. Clair Convent, at Sinsinawa, Wis., in 1914, and the translation was published in Chicago in 1915; in the translator's preface she says that even at the risk of grave injustice to the original, and to avoid the yet greater risk of falsely coloring, ever so

Digitized by Google

faintly, even one word representing the soul of this true type of modern apostles of the nineteenth century, this rendering of this book into English has been left, with all its peculiarities of construction, as closely parallel to the original as translation permits.

In the latter part of the 17th century a mission was established by the Jesuit Fathers at L'Arbre Croche, the most densely populated of all the missions. The exact date of establishing the mission I am unable to determine; however, we have it of record that during the year 1695 the Franciscan missionaries traversed this region and visited the L'Arbre Croche Mission,—this record is now at Mackinac.

There has been considerable speculation as to just where this mission was established. In his *Memoirs* Fr. Mazzuchelli indicates upon a map of Michigan, Middle Village as the site of Old L'Arbre Croche, and Harbor Springs as New L'Arbre Croche; and, referring to L'Arbre Croche, he says that this mission consisted of four or five churches, the largest of which is that of Fr. Baraga's; and again referring to the location says, that this is not now the home of Fr. Baraga, which is 25 miles distant, where may yet be seen on the surface of the soil the marks of the ploughshare where the trees are noticeably smaller than those surrounding the once cultivated space.

In December, 1831, Fr. Mazzuchelli made a visit to L'Arbre Croche, making the journey from Mackinac Island in a bark canoe accompanied by ten Indians. Crossing the Straits and following the winding curves of the lake shore they arrived at New L'Arbre Croche the evening of the second day. Immediately upon arrival his attention was drawn to several Indians who were in the act of throwing a barrel into the lake, while another party of Indians were breaking up an-

Digitized by Google

other barrel in the middle of the village street. On asking the reason of this proceeding he was informed that one of the traders had brought two barrels of brandy, which was an offense against the laws of the villagers; the Ottawa Chief had ordered one of the barrels to be thrown into the lake and the other to be smashed up, and as a sign of contempt to be spilled into the street. Religion alone had the power to teach these simple-minded children of nature the hard lesson of fleeing the occasion of sin, and he adds that their behavior on this occasion might well form an example to be followed by many educated Christians.

When Fr. Baraga was about to leave L'Arbre Croche in 1833 his place was temporarily filled for two years by Rev. Simon Saendrel, with three Lay Brothers to attend to the spiritual affairs of the Indians in the various stations established by Fr. Baraga. He again had charge of the Indians on Little Traverse Bay from 1836 to 1839.

The following named priests were successively established at this mission: Rev. Francis Pierz, 1839 to 1852; Rev. A. Van Paemel, 1852 to 1855; Rev. I. G. Steinhauser, 1855 to 1856; Rev. Lawrence Lautishar, 1856 to 1858; Rev. Louis Sifferath, 1858 to 1862; Rev. P. S. Zorn, 1862 to 1884.

On the 4th day of September, 1884, Rev. Servatius Altmicks and Rev. Pius Nierman of the Franciscan Fathers, and Brother Arnold Wilms, arrived to take up the work in and around Harbor Springs, where previous to their advent such zealous priests as the above labored amid great difficulties and personal sacrifices. For nine full years Father Servatius Altmicks, a strict religious, as well as a zealous missionary and distinguished theologian, employed all his talents and ripe experience to the building up of the parish in spiritual

Digitized by Google

and material lines. In the year 1892, assisted by his friends and acquaintances, he was enabled to replace the old Church, hitherto referred to as that of Fr. Baraga's, by the present modest but suitable structure.

After laboring for a year among the Indians the Fathers found ways and means of inaugurating a parish school, over which Bro. Novatus Dierkens, O. F. M., presided alone, until November, 1896, when the School Sisters of Notre Dame arrived and took charge of the new school erected that year. Brother Novatus remained in charge of the larger boys until 1896, when he was transferred to Kenosha, Wis., and soon after to St. Francis College, Quincy, Ill. In 1868 this school was placed on the list of the Catholic Institutions receiving Government aid. In 1900 this contract was annulled, and since that time the work is entirely dependent on the charity of the public.

On account of failing health, toward the close of 1892, Fr. Servatius Altmicks was relieved of the position in which he so zealously labored, and was succeeded by Rev. Norbet Wilhelm, O. F. M., who for five years had been in charge of the Petoskey Parish. While he continued to exert himself to perfect and to place upon a firm basis the work of his predecessors, he exhibited his practical turn of mind in putting down a sewer system, by which all the waters of a creek that meandered at that time through the school lot were diverted and thus much valuable ground obtained for future improvement and the start made for the sewer system of the village.

In August, 1894, Rev. Fr. Englehardt arrived in Harbor Springs to succeed Fr. Norbett. He remained for six years. While he was superior of the Harbor Springs Mission, there was established a residence for the Friars in the city of Petos-

Digitized by Google

key, from which place the Indians on Grand Traverse Bay and in Oceana County, whose care the Franciscan Fathers assumed in January, 1895, were attended by Rev. Bruno Torka, now Superior of the Franciscan Residence of the Order of Friars Minor of Petoskey.

Father Norbett was again returned to Harbor Springs Mission, and remained for two years; he was succeeded by Rev. Damases Erkins, who is at this time in charge of the affairs of the Mission. Under his guiding influence many improvements have been made. Most worthy of mention is the $30,000 three-story brick addition to the school buildings, with an enrollment of 265 pupils attending.

The early history of the Catholic Mission at the present Harbor Springs prior to 1831 is very obscure. There are few data. That Catholic Missionaries had been there is fully substantiated. Prior to 1831 Father DeJean labored zealously, and had a school; the total attendance on December 28, 1829, was 63, of whom 38 were boys and 25 were girls. How many years the school was opened before this is now a matter of conjecture. Rev. J. Vincent Badin, 1824 to 1827, visited at intervals.

That the school was situated at the present village of Harbor Springs is borne out by the fact that the missionary in affixing the date gives the name Villa-Neuve at L'Arbre Croche, which according to an old map in the "Life of Father Mazzuchelli" is given as situated on Little Traverse Bay on the present village site of Harbor Springs.

That baptisms and the other sacraments of the Catholic Church were administered earlier, the present records of the Church do not show. The records, which are carefully preserved, show the first acts of Father Baraga, who labored

Digitized by Google

here from 1831 to 1833; also those of Bishop Fenwick of Cincinnati. Earlier records were taken to Mackinac Island and, tradition says, were later taken to Marquette, where they are now in the Bishop's Library.

That Catholic missionaries had been much earlier here is borne out by another fact. The "Indians Ottawas" sent a petition to the Great Father at Washington, petitioning on August 12, 1823, that there should be sent "a master or minister of the Gospel belonging to the same society as the members of the Catholic Society of St. Ignatius, formerly established at Michilimackinac and L'Arbre Croche by Father Marquette and other missionaries of the order of the Jesuits. They resided long among us. They cultivated a field on our territory to teach us the principles of agriculture and Christianity . . . . . If you grant us similar ministers we will invite them to live on the same ground formerly occupied by Father Du Jaunay, on the banks of Lake Michigan, near our Village of L'Arbre Croche." The words just quoted are found in Shea's *History of the Catholic Missions Among the Indian Tribes of the United States.* Father Peter Du Jaunay was stationed at Mackinac till about 1765.

Digitized by Google

THE MICHIGAN AUDUBON SOCIETY

BY MRS. EDITH C. MUNGER, PRESIDENT
HART

THE people who think that the Audubon movement is the outgrowth of mere sentimentalism will be interested to learn that it really had its origin in the American Ornithological Union, a body of men organized to study birds from a purely scientific viewpoint. A committee from this body was appointed to investigate the economic value of our birds and these practical scientists soon discovered that the continued destruction of our bird life was going to mean a tremendous financial loss to our country. They therefore organized the first Audubon Society for bird protection and preservation, not so much for the sake of the birds as for the good of mankind. In this same way, out of our Michigan Ornithological Club evolved the Michigan Audubon Society.

The first meeting for organization was called in Detroit, February 27, 1904, and at the subsequent meetings held during the year the society became fully organized. The officers elected were: president, Hon. Thomas W. Palmer; secretary-treasurer, Jefferson Butler; vice-presidents, Hon. Peter White of Marquette, President James B. Angell of Ann Arbor, Hon. Louis M. Jones of Ypsilanti, and Hon. Chase S. Osborn of Sault Ste. Marie.

Since then the following persons have also served as vice-presidents: Hon. W. B. Mershon of Saginaw, Mrs. Geo. Gunderson of Ionia, Prof. Charles C. Adams of Ann Arbor, Wm. Aiken, Jr., of Detroit, Hon. Charles Freer of Detroit, Miss

Digitized by Google

Clara E. Dyar of Grosse Pointe, Hon. Whitney Watkins of Manchester, Prof. Elbert H. Downing of Marquette, and Mrs. R. A. Newman, Detroit.

The first executive committee consisted of the Hon. Thos. W. Palmer, Prof. Charles C. Adams, Hon. Peter White, Miss Clara E. Dyar, A. W. Blaine, Jr., Bryant Walker, and Jefferson Butler.

An advisory committee of ornithologists seeming necessary to carry on the work successfully, such a council was established, consisting of Prof. Barrows of the Michigan Agricultural College, Prof. Wood of Detroit, and Alex W. Blaine of Detroit, with Bryant Walker for legal advisor.

After the death of Thomas W. Palmer, Jefferson Butler succeeded to the presidency, and many prominent people have acted on its advisory and executive committees since then.

The annual meetings were nearly always held in conjunction with the State Humane Society for mutual support, as the work was similar. The Society got into communication with the Game Warden Department as soon as possible, hoping to secure the immediate enforcement of the laws for bird protection, but the work was all so new and public opinion needed so much educating that the results were not very satisfactory the first few years. Boys and men who had always shot song birds as well as game birds for food or for feathers or just for fun did not see why they could not keep on shooting them if they chose. When violators of the laws pertaining to bird protection were prosecuted it was almost impossible to secure a conviction no matter how flagrant the offense, because of a lack of sentiment for bird protection.

From the beginning the Audubon workers realized that theirs was a labor of education, and since grown-ups are not

Digitized by Google

easily influenced to change their habits of thought and living, the greatest hope of the organization lay in reaching the children through the schools. Most satisfactory results have been obtained in this way, since all children are naturally lovers of the outdoor world.

During the first three years of the organization about 20,000 educational leaflets from the National Audubon Society, the Biological Survey and other sources, were distributed throughout the State. Notices of the game laws pertaining to bird protection were posted where their violation had been most flagrant and persistent.

Many lectures were also given by the well-known ornithologists William Dutcher of New York, Rev. William Lord of Mass., Prof. Barrows of the Michigan Agricultural College, William Finley (editor of *The Condor*), Prof. Norman Wood of the University of Michigan Museum, and Mr. Jefferson Butler. The Biological Survey was of great service in supplying the society with thousands of their excellent bulletins dealing with the economic value of our birds.

At the time the Michigan Audubon Society was organized, all over our State the scarlet tanagers, indigo buntings, goldfinches, Baltimore orioles and many others of our most gorgeously beautiful birds were killed by thousands each year and sold for millinery purposes. This sort of work proved most conclusively that the women of our State also needed educating. Collectors of birds' eggs carried on a thriving business unmolested, especially along the lake shores, rivers and on the islands where the water birds nested in great numbers. In fact all over our country bird destruction was being carried on so extensively and ruthlessly that Dr. Hornaday of the New York Museum, who estimated that sixty per cent of our

Digitized by Google

birds were destroyed in the period from 1885 to 1900, said, that unless we called a halt we would soon be a birdless land. The time was indeed ripe for action when the Michigan Audubon Society organized its campaign for bird protection.

All honor to those early Audubon workers who found, as pioneers in all new movements always do, that they who blaze the way, and clear the path have much in the way of prejudice and indifference to overcome; but they were true pioneers, holding fast to all things gained and looking forward into the future for still greater results.

From the date of its organization in 1904 up to 1908 the work of the Audubon Society had been chiefly along the line of attempted cooperation with the Game Warden Department and educational work in the schools. During 1908 the society joined forces with the Michigan Sportsmen's Association for better protection of game birds and began to agitate against spring shooting. In October of that year Mrs. Munger introduced a resolution at the annual meeting of the Michigan State Federation of Women's Clubs at Traverse City asking the members to pledge themselves to wear no more bird feathers except ostrich plumes and feathers of domestic fowls, and to create an Audubon department in the Federation. The resolution was adopted, and though it took a year or more to get the department thoroughly organized and working, it is now one of the strong ones of the organization, and women's clubs all over the State are doing efficient work for bird protection.

In 1909 good educational work was done by Mr. Butler and Prof. Barrows, both of whom gave many lectures on bird life in various parts of the State. Game Warden Pierce gave the work an impetus by cooperating with the society in the en-

Digitized by Google

forcement of the game laws, and his department with the Audubonists joined in endorsing a bill against spring shooting and in asking for a hunter's license law. There was so much opposition to both bills that the one against spring shooting was modified so as to allow shooting for a shortened period and thus passed the House, but was stranded in the Senate. The hunter's license bill failed entirely of passage, but one protecting Bob White until 1914 and permanently protecting the Prairie Chicken was passed.

Much literature was distributed that winter and interest aroused among school children by offering fifty prizes for the best essays on birds. In April, 1910, Mr. Butler was elected to the presidency of the society to succeed Mr. Palmer, and faithfully and conscientiously performed the duties of the office until the day of his tragically sudden death in October, 1913.

Mr. Butler was especially active during 1911, giving twenty-seven lectures among schools, clubs, granges, churches and other organizations. Through the generosity of Mr. Henry Ford of Detroit he was able to furnish attractive bird bulletins to more than 300 schools and to give much time to bird study on the Ford Farm, which was being established as one of the largest and finest bird reserves in the world. More than 500 nesting boxes and many food and shelter devices were placed, and a large amount of planting for the birds was done. Mr. Butler also made careful records of the number and kinds of birds nesting on the Farm, and of the species that remained all winter.

Much publicity was given the work of the society that winter by Miss Clara Bates of Traverse City, Mrs. Belle M. Perry of Charlotte, Mrs. Grace Greenwood Browne of Harbor Beach,

Digitized by Google

Mr. John Watkins of Calumet, Miss Margaret Kelley of Muskegon, and Mrs. Edith Munger of Hart, all of whom wrote articles calling attention to the work of the organization and the need of protecting and feeding the birds, especially during the cold and stormy weather. The secretary Mrs. Anna Walter also wrote and spoke for bird protection.

The society held its annual meeting for 1912 in Traverse City in conjunction with the State Humane Society, and opened its first real headquarters in Mr. Butler's office in Detroit that fall.

Governor Osborn appointed Mr. Butler State Humane Marshal that year, that he might better assist in the enforcement of the laws for bird and game protection.

The Hon. W. B. Mershon pleased and interested the school children by advertising broadcast throughout the State in all the papers "Mershon Medals for School Kids." There were seven groups of medals offered, not only for the best essays on the habits and economic values of the birds, but also prizes for personal experiences in feeding, housing, protecting and photographing them.

In 1913 Mr. Butler was instrumental in framing two most important bills. The "Scott Humane Bill" providing for a certain amount of humane teaching in all grades of our schools each week, and the "Egret Bill," which prohibits the sale or purchase of egret plumage in our State. The very last piece of work which he was permitted to finish was the revision of the "Humane and Anti-Cruelty Laws of Michigan." This was a fitting climax to a life for so many years unselfishly devoted to the humane work of our State.

The officers at this time were Mr. Jefferson Butler, president; Mrs. Edith C. Munger, vice-president; Miss Clara Bates,

Digitized by Google

second vice-president; Mrs. Anna Walter, secretary; Mr. Paul M. Morgan, assistant secretary; Prof. W. N. Ferris, Hon. Chase S. Osborn, Hon. W. B. Mershon, Prof. W. B. Barrows, Hon. Whitney Watkins, Miss Margaret Kelley, Mrs. R. Adlington Newman, Mr. Wilbur Brotherton, Mrs. Belle M. Perry and Mrs. A. W. Peck, board of directors.

At Mr. Butler's death Mrs. Munger became acting president until the next annual meeting. Wishing to get into touch with the national work, Mrs. Munger attended the National Conservation Congress in Washington, D. C., in November, 1913, representing both Michigan Audubon Society and the State Federation of Women's Clubs, and also representing these same bodies at the Biennial in Chicago in June, 1914. During the year the president gave 36 lectures to audiences numbering about 3,700 persons and consisting of all sorts and conditions of people showing a wide diversity of interest. In order especially to interest the teachers, Mrs. Munger asked the Department of Public Instruction to change "Arbor Day" to "Arbor and Bird Day," and this was done, with the proviso that she should furnish the bird material for the bulletin. The Public Domain Commission, the State Public Library and the Game Warden Department were all visited, and promised support to the work of the society, which promise they have most faithfully kept.

The annual meeting for 1914 was held in Grand Rapids at the Ryerson Library in September, with an excellent program and a good attendance. In her report the president made the following recommendations:

1. Because of its great economic value, the permanent removal of Bob White from the game list.

2. Because of the wanton destruction of other bird life as

Digitized by Google

a result of its enforcement and the demoralizing effect it has on the boys of our State, the repeal of the English Sparrow bounty.

3. Because they are known to be so destructive to bird life, the licensing of all cats with owners, and the humane killing of all stray cats.

These recommendations were thoroughly discussed, and all adopted. The following officers were elected for the ensuing year after some changes in the constitution and by-laws were made: Mrs. Edith C. Munger, president; Mr. Charles K. Hoyt, vice-president; Miss Gertrude Reading, secretary-treasurer; Mr. W. B. Mershon, Mr. H. E. Sargent, and Mr. Charles M. Greenway, members of the executive committee, which also includes the president and vice-president as ex-officio members.

It was decided by the executive committee to modify our Michigan game laws in a way to make them conform to the "Migratory Bird Law," to make every effort to secure a cat license law, and to try to secure the cooperation of all the large State organizations by getting them to endorse the work of the society. They also planned to ask the newspapers for aid in publicity.

In January, 1916, the president met with an accident, the results of which were sufficiently serious to confine her to her couch the greater part of the next four months. Nothing daunted, however, she went to the annual Audubon meeting in Grand Rapids, on crutches, and also to the Wild Life Conservation Show at Saginaw in February; and the handicap did not prevent her waging a very active campaign by correspondence for an increased membership which resulted in about trebling it.

Digitized by Google

In response to an invitation from a generous Audubon member of the Audubon Society, Mrs. A. S. Putman, of Manistique, the president went to the Upper Peninsula in June and gave a series of about twenty lectures at the Normal School and in and around Manistique and Marquette. This work was of special interest as it was the first done by the society for the country above the Straits.

Feeling keenly the need of some periodical through which to disseminate its doctrines of bird protection, the organization was glad to have its president accept the offer tendered by the editor of the *Michigan Sportsman* to have her establish and edit regularly an Audubon Department in his magazine. Thus in a sense did the *Michigan Sportsman* become the official organ of the Michigan Audubon Society.

In October of that year our Society was for the first time represented at the annual meeting of the National Association of Audubon Societies, held in New York City.

By invitation of the Battle Creek Chamber of Commerce the Thirteenth Annual Meeting of the society was held in that city in February, 1917. Excellent reports of activities in all parts of the State were given and an especially good one from the local schools, which are undoubtedly doing the most efficient work for bird protection of any schools in the State. Much discussion followed the reading of all reports and particular attention was given to the question of the cat in relation to bird life. The concensus of opinion of all present was that the State should have a cat license law. Grand Rapids has already passed such an ordinance, the enforcement of which is ridding that city of thousands of useless felines. In the president's address she emphasized the necessity of raising funds with which to hire field workers and

Digitized by Google

equip them with slides, charts and other educational paraphernalia. In the evening "The Spirit of Audubon Film" was shown to a large and delighted audience.

Very constructive educational work was done during the year by the placing of Audubon charts in about two hundred schools and in furnishing plans and outlines of work with which to study bird life. Special attention was given to helping the rural teachers.

When America entered the war against Germany in April and the Michigan Division of the Woman's Committee of the Council of National Defense was formed, the Audubon president was made Chairman of its Wild Life Conservation Department, and much publicity is constantly being given bird protection work through this channel which is broad enough to reach out into every organized body of women. In this way people who have never thought of our birds as an economic asset are shown that since food conservation is the world's greatest problem today and birds are our natural food conservers their protection becomes a vital war measure.

Each year adds rapidly to the list of schools, clubs and other groups that are holding highly educational as well as beautiful exhibits of bird houses and feeding devices. In connection with these they are asking that practical cat guards shall form a prominent feature of such exhibits. This is necessary in order to educate the general public as to the dreadful depredations committed by cats against nesting birds and to show people simple ways and means of safeguarding the nests and bird houses from this most deadly enemy of all bird life.

The Michigan Legislature of 1917 took a backward step when it passed a law offering a bounty on all hawks and owls, for

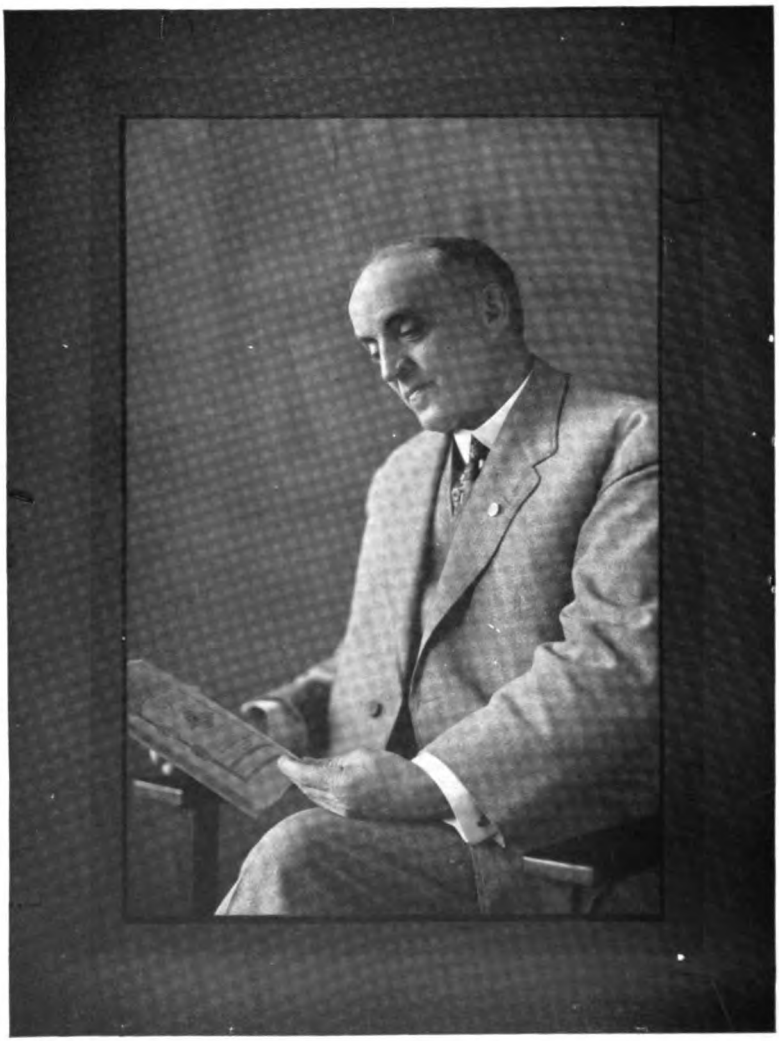
Digitized by Google

according to the reports of the Biological Survey (which are the results of the examination, by experts, of the contents of thousands of stomachs of all kinds of birds) all but three kinds of hawks and all but one kind of owl catch very few birds or chickens. Instead, each hawk or owl does destroy every year about a thousand rodents or small mammals which are very destructive to our field crops. Pennsylvania passed a similar law in 1885, but repealed it within the next two years because it was found to be so disastrous to the agricultural interests of the State. The three things that our Legislature should do for the conservation of the State's resources are: repeal this harmful law about hawks and owls, permanently remove Bob White from the game list, and pass a cat license law.

Bird lovers are watching Congress anxiously this spring to see whether the Enabling Act, which has passed the Senate, will also pass the House. This Act is of the utmost importance, since it is meant to give force and power to the Migratory Bird Treaty Law of 1913, which with the Act will be the greatest force for bird conservation the world has ever known, but which without it will lose a large part of its efficiency.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



SUPT. F. E. KING OF ESCANABA'S SCHOOLS, GENERAL DIRECTOR OF THE PAGEANT

Digitized by Google

The Pageant of Escanaba and Correlated Local History[1]

By F. E. King
Supt. of Schools, Escanaba

Pageantry is expression,—a visible manifestation of the community soul,—and not simply an exhibition. Such expression is that part of man which lives after him and binds him to the great mass of humanity. Modern pageantry aims to increase the world's store of happiness by interpreting the meaning of human life and bringing art and beauty into the minds of all the people. It serves as a measure of the forward movement of any community, and by comparison with vanished days, it keeps the conscience alive and compels attention to the higher ideals of today.

> Ye who would learn the glory of the past
> And form a forecast of the things to be,
> Give heed to this, a city's trumpet blast,
> And see her pictured life in pageantry.

The Pageant of Escanaba is a patriotic, idealized community epic history, conceived and prepared by the Escanaba Public Schools and presented dramatically and simply in the sunshine and on the greensward of Ludington Park and the blue waters of Bay de Nocquet.

Pageantry may be considered as one of the fine arts. It promotes efficiency in the same sense as the schoolhouse does, teaching something that everyone ought to know. Knowledge

1. An address delivered at the Michigan State Teachers' Association at Grand Rapids, Nov. 2, 1917.

Digitized by Google

is not spread by books alone. The art of communication assumes many forms. A pageant is a municipal invigorant. Through it a community takes account of itself, comprehends itself more fully, can better build ideas. The pageant is also the nursery of patriotism. Always it encourages a love of home and pride in local history and traditions. The pageant exalts the factors of business, and embalms the record of man's progress from darkness to light.

From the sociological standpoint, the salutary influence of the pageant gives a cohesiveness to community life. Humanity is touched at many points. It tends to fuse racial elements. Its influence is toward the center, against all forces tending to pull apart. It cements the sympathies by which communities have advanced from semi-barbaric state to modern civilization and its refined influence.

Likewise, a pageant is a moral agent. It exalts labor and industry, perseverance, self-sacrifice, education and similar virtues. Local pride is stirred; it makes the whole neighborhood, for a day at least, spruce up and put on its best behavior. It is a constructive, progressive factor which kindles a new fire on the community hearth. Because it is cosmopolitan, broad and tolerant, it leaves a glow of pleasure that something has been done worth while and that its helpful influence will last.

The American people are becoming more and more conscious of broadening and deepening movements in their national life. The building of Panama Canals, development of marvelous railway systems, invention of electrical devices, improvement of sanitary conditions and the building of vast fortunes cannot evolve and develop the finer and more subtle modes of human action. Every child longs to act and to be like the

Digitized by Google

great historic characters of whom he has read. The spiritual forces demand embodiment.

The pageant is the best form of dramatic action because it feeds this real and vital need of human nature. The pageant is an educating force, not only to the child-actor but to the fathers and mothers also, blending together the many warring and hostile elements into one mass, all moving impressively toward the desired consummation, a visible and tangible expression of a vital community-life.

The pageant is far superior to all indoor forms of dramatic activity because it leads us away from the artificial stage with painted scenery, distorted imagination, and the glare of the footlights. The reality of the Great Out-doors under God's blue sky, under real trees, where everybody can see such scenes as Father Marquette and his party coming slowly over the water under the French flag with the white sails leading the way. Coming from their sail-boats in canoes, singing as they come, with dignity he meets the wild Indian chiefs, who come down to the shore to greet him, then solemnly plants the Cross in the midst of the Indian village, while the beautiful strains of the Te Deum fill the air and drift over the water.

The best life of the historic past should reveal itself not only in stone and marble monuments, or in manuscript. Better still the pageant, a living reproduction of flesh and blood may show us scenes and historic events belonging to a world dead and gone. Acting in such scenes the children of today may well be made to feel and live the noblest personalities of an earlier generation with their rich experiences and untiring energies.

The supreme purpose of pageantry should always be to

Digitized by Google

teach loyalty not only to the General Government, but also to State and local authorities; to school and home and the higher and *nobler aspirations* inherent in each human soul. Never before in the world's history was there such a crying need for the cultivation of true patriotism. Every day's news shows this need, and the Public Schools must by heroic endeavor make loyal Americans who will give their lives if need be for the principles of Democracy, that government *of all* the people, *for all* the people, *by all* the people shall not perish, but shall extend to all nations through the influence of our own loved America.

Yet, I doubt not through the ages an increasing purpose runs,
And the thoughts of men are widened with the process of the suns.
—*Tennyson*

CORRELATED LOCAL HISTORY

Although pioneer days are comparatively near to our own home and generation, yet much that is valuable is rapidly disappearing in the onward sweep of the rushing flood of our resistless modern life. We owe it to ourselves and to the future to pause and look back occasionally to the inspiring deeds of heroic ancestors and to preserve what we may find as evidence that they served well their generation. That is what history is for.

If the history of Egypt and Babylonia and Rome and Greece are important and should be taught in the Public Schools, why is the history of that part of the work with which we are in daily contact of less importance?

We are too prone to believe that things local are unimportant. As Russell H. Conwell proved in his great lecture, there are "Acres of Diamonds" all about us. Much of genuine

Digitized by Google

historic interest will be uncovered by those who have a will to work in local fields.

The Pageant of Escanaba proved not the less interesting because it tabooed fiction. Much time and care was taken to verify every fact presented. Notice that the Prologue states that the wonderful harbor of Escanaba was formed by "Nature's magic." It is a fact that though the largest boats on the Great Lakes have never had the least difficulty in approaching Escanaba's docks, the United States Government has never spent a dollar in improvement of the harbor here.

That Escanaba is truly a Melting Pot for making Americans from many nationalities is shown by the fact that French, Swedish, Austrian, German, Russian, Japanese, Italian, Irish, Poles, Norwegian, Danish, Scotch, Dutch, Belgian, Hungarian and Finns are now living in Escanaba and many different languages are daily heard on our streets.

By adapting the general plan to local conditions, any community can give such a Pageant. But it must be understood that such a Pageant should take many weeks of preparation. Two years before its presentation, the Escanaba schools began to give especial attention to local history. Pupils of classes in English were given assignments in groups:

1. To make thorough research of records;
2. To gather and study local maps and pictures;
3. To interview early settlers still living;
4. To make trips to local industries;
5. To gather statistics of value, from the city library, from government and State records, and from other reliable sources;
6. To take kodak views of industries visited and of other scenes;

Digitized by Google

7. To prepare theses on special topics of local history based on facts gathered.

This work, because of the time taken, in no way interfered with regular school duties, but aided in language and composition work because of its special interest. The best thesis prepared on each topic was preserved, placed on exhibit at the Northern State Fair, and later aided very materially in the production of the Pageant.

Though all the teachers, as well as city officials and citizens in general helped in every possible way, especial credit is due Miss E. M. Griffith, head of the English Department, Miss Frances Ryan of the Music Department, and Miss Marie Snyder of the Physical Training Department for their efficient assistance.

The Pageant of Escanaba was not at any time a scheme to make money. It never had entertainment with glitter and tinsel show as the purpose of its existence. It was firmly believed that Pageantry, like history, should have eternal Truth for its foundation and be builded with earnestness and sincerity. That these facts helped and in no way hindered its success was abundantly evident at the time. The daily newspaper reporter who witnessed the scene said:

"The presentation was a climax worthy to crown months of patient and untiring labor on the part of children and promoters. From the Prologue, in ringing tetrameter, delivered by Mark Bailey in the character of the Herald, to the singing of "Michigan, My Michigan" and "The Star Spangled Banner" by the twenty-five hundred children forming a great human flag, the Pageant was more than a spectacle impressive by mere numbers and hugeness,—it was an epitome of the

Digitized by Google

birth and growth of Cloverland's metropolis, inspiring watchers and performers alike.

"No more beautiful scene could be imagined than that presented by the portion of Ludington Park which was devoted to the Pageant today. From Michigan Avenue, high above the park, a bank solidly lined with humanity sloped down to the level portion of the park where side walls of evergreen trees from the woods walled off a large grassy space with a gentle slope to the Bay, which formed the background for a huge allegory of costuming, presenting every factor that has contributed to Escanaba's growth, from the Indians who formerly ruled Sand Point, and the missionary pioneers who were the first comers from the East, through pioneer and lumbering days to the combination of nationalities which were amalgamated in Escanaba's 'melting pot,' to form the present-day city.

"Long before the time set for the beginning of the pageant, all roads in Escanaba led to Ludington Park. Automobiles honked their way through the crowds which poured on foot by every intersecting street to the bay shore, and when the Prologue started the big spectacle, every available foot of space about the great outdoor stage was packed with a mass of humanity, more than ten thousand spectators, all of whom watched and listened in rapt attention throughout the afternoon."

A knowledge of the plan and purpose of this Pageant came to the State Historical Commission because the State Historical Society's meeting was held in Escanaba the same year. At the suggestion of a member of the State Commission, the writer was asked to present this topic at the recent State Teachers' Association. This article is written for the *Michi-*

Digitized by Google

gan History Magazine at the request of its editor. If such publicity shall aid in securing for every school in Michigan more attention to local and State history, the author's purpose in its preparation will have been achieved.

If, as all modern authorities agree, geography of foreign countries and the world in general can best be taught by first giving children proper concepts through teaching local geography, why is it not pedagogically wise and necessary to teach local history, as the logical and essential preparation for any pupil to become interested in and always a student of State, National and world-wide history? Does any progressive modern educator believe that local history cannot be made more profitable than much of the ancient and medieval history taught now in all schools?

Is it not a grand truth that all children should be taught to know that their home, their city or town, their people, the people whom they daily meet, yes, even they themselves, have had or should have some part in the making of history. How can we better teach that much-needed lesson for the American youth of today, namely, proper respect for the aged, than by sending them to interview a pioneer who had some part in the making of the early history of their home city?

From the history of my own home I have learned many facts. This one, which has been of considerable help to me in my profession, I learned in watching my own children. As each came to a certain age, all either crept or rolled for days and weeks after it could have stood erect and walked, if it had only known it could.

Let some Master-of-Industry tell a group of youth how he has seen great factories grow from humble beginnings, and perhaps because these youth have seen and talked with the

Digitized by Google

men who have done such things they may more quickly come to believe in the boundless possibilities lying within the reach of their own God-given ability. Truly, this would be a consummation devotedly to be wished.

The Pageant of Escanaba can readily be adapted to almost any local condition in Michigan. It honors the pioneer, exalts labor, welcomes all nations, changes the spirit of "Wanderlust," Poverty, and Oppression into the spirit of Content, Prosperity, and Freedom, and enthrones the spirit of Education. Finally, in its last synthesis, all nationalities are led by Uncle Sam and the Goddess of Liberty into one human flag, united as *True Americans,* becoming stars and stripes, each individual a part of "Old Glory."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE PAGEANT OF ESCANABA

The Pageant of Escanaba is copyrighted. Write to Supt. F. E. King, Escanaba, Michigan, for permission to reproduce it. You can secure from him full instruction for making costumes, lists of music used throughout the Pageant, and valuable suggestions as to financial management.

Digitized by Google

ESCANABA **THE PAST**

And
Here
Stood
Forests of
Tall White Pine
Through Win-
ters Cold. Amid
the Primeval Silence the
Waters of Michiganing
Lapped These Shores. The
Chippewa, the Treacherous
Menominee of the Algonquin
Tribe Here Waged Incessant
Deadly Warfare; While Wolves and Bear
and Deer Made it Their Home. When
the Canadian Voyageur, Nicolet, in
1634, Visited These Regions, He Called the
Wild Men Dwelling Here "Tribe de Noquet"
for Their Totem Was the Bear or "Noke."
And These Indians or "Puans" Fished in the
Waters of Our Bay.

PINES **ARBUTUS**

Their Manitou
Was Pleased
with the Offer-
ing of Wild
Rice; and the
Lights of their
Camp-fires
Glowed Along
This Shore.

DEER **RED MEN**

"So he journeyed westward, westward,
Left the fleetest deer behind him;
Left the antelope and bison;
Crossed the RUSHING ESCANABA."

Hiawatha—Longfellow.

Digitized by Google

ESCANABA—THE PAST

1634-1830

But in time, the "Black Robes" came bearing their message of hope,
At St. Martin's Island, in 1673, Father Marquette paused, with Joliet, to establish a mission,
While in 1670, Father Allouez had passed through Death's Door to La Baye,
And had threaded the islands which you see to the eastward.
Long were the days. In the spring the Mayflowers bloomed unseen.
The wild geese moved across the autumn sky.
An icy path linked shore to shore. Then distant Montreal
Sent forth her *courcurs de bois* to trade for fur,
And her brave sons to win a world for France.
Westward from Michilimackinac, in 1679, came Chevalier La Salle
And cast the anchor on those islands at the entrance to Green Bay
Which we can see on summer days, against the evening sky.
And there his friend, heroic Hennepin, smoked the calumet
With the brave Pottawattamie of La Baye des Puans.
While for Charlevoix the air rang with the wild cries of the scalp-dance,
As he paused, in 1721, on his course through the waters of Green Bay.

Digitized by Google

In the great world outside the strife of kings went on.
England and France contended for the Western World.
But here the Puans drew forth the mighty sturgeon to his death.
The Bourbon Kings of France mounted the scaffold,
While Washington proclaimed the liberty of man.
But here the wild life of the woods flourished and died,
And the long days passed slowly, moon by moon.
On Sand Point the great chief, Otchipwe, gathered his braves
About him in war-dance or by council-fire,
Till, one by one, the Noquette tribe lay down to rest
In shallow graves, in Indian style, along this very shore.

Digitized by Google

THE INTERLUDE

"The law of life
For atom and for man
Is change.
The Spirit's strife
Is this—to symbolize its plan
By something new and strange.
Life moves from form to form."
The Manitou so spake
Of Gitche Gumee's barren shore.

"Awake! The time is here.
The Red man shall be lord no more
Of sunshine and of storm,
Of forest and of flood.
Awake in fear;
The time is here.
Behold the Pale-face
With his conquering race,
His Cross triumphant and his mystic lore,
Enters upon his long career
As Master of the Western World."
The Manitou so spake.
"Awake!"

Digitized by Google

ESCANABA'S PROGRESS
1830-1916

"Yet I doubt not through the ages an increasing purpose runs,
And the thoughts of man are widen'd with the process of the suns."
—*Tennyson.*

ESCANABA
Signifies in the Chippewa dialect
A FLAT ROCK

The bed of the Escanaba river is covered with these stones
flat and smooth.
Before 1800, there were no settlements along this shore,
Simply the birch-tree and black oak and maple,
Or, perhaps, a solitary Indian fisherman.

But in 1830, some white men drifted into Flat Rock,
And they built a saw-mill there.
So the forests of scrub-pine fell before the ax,
And our great lumbering industry was begun.
Sinclair and Ludington, in 1852, began cutting logs here;
"Sand Point" they called the place jutting out
Into the waters of Bay de Noquette
Which in the Indian tongue is "Weyohquatonk."

The first house, a log one, faced the Ludington hotel;
It was built in '52, and Mr. E. P. Royce in 1854
Found a hamlet of three houses. This first log house
Was torn down in 1863 to make way for the great docks.
How interesting, as a relic, it would be to us now!

Digitized by Google

The seven talented high school girls who wrote the Pageant Prologue and most of the spoken parts. Top row, left to right—Helen Reade, Louise Northrup, Isabel Winegar, Marguerite Corcoran. Lower row, left to right—Majorie King, Alda Robb, Hazel Shaw.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

But the little hamlet grew to a village of four hundred people;
And in 1866 it was incorporated.
In 1864, the Northwestern had built their line to Negaunee,
And in the same year ore-dock No. 1 arose.
That was the year, too, we were granted a postoffice.
The first ore shipped from the port of Escanaba
Was sent out in 1865—about 31,000 tons!

The first Christian service was held by Father Keenan in 1863;
And the next summer good Father Dale from a pulpit of sand
Preached in the open air down by the bay shore.
A Miss Dunbar opened the first school in 1866;
While the Government built our light-house the following spring.
In 1867 a fire company was organized,
And the *Tribune,* the first paper, appeared in 1869.

We reached the world outside by a slow-moving stage to Menominee,
Till, in 1872, the Northwestern put their line through to Green Bay,
So we "went below" or "outside" at our pleasure.
Even in 1871 there were only three steamers on the lake;
All the rest were old-time sailing vessels.

They tell us that where our modern High School
Now stands was then a famous hunting ground
For the vast flocks of wild pigeons
That fairly darkened the sky!
And that the dread forest fires built a red wall around;
While dense clouds of smoke shut out the sun from view;
And that in spring, the lumber jack in his gay mackinaws

Digitized by Google

Brought to our town the life, crude and wild,
Of the primitive Canadian lumber camp.

But why pause longer to trace the growth of our city?
IT WAS BOUND TO GROW,
To become the present metropolis of Cloverland.
It is now the county seat of Delta County.
It has a population of 15,000 souls—or noses!
Look at our fourteen churches
Piercing the sky with their steeples.
Look at our twelve flourishing manufacturing plants.
Look at our four live newspapers.
Look at our tasteful public buildings—
The Court House, the City Hall, the Carnegie Library,
The Post Office, our Banks, our Hotels, our Hospitals,
Our Opera Houses!
Of our Schools, eight in number, we are justly proud;
And of our beautiful Park along the shore on summer days;
And of our cozy homes, nestled among shady trees.

Then, too, our Railroads carry us east and west, north and south.
The Northwestern alone has six huge docks, electric-lighted,
With a capacity of 95,000 tons.
Thirty vessels can load there at one time.
Our coal docks are among the largest on the lake.
Our Electric Traction System is unsurpassed,
With a power plant capacity of 12,000 horse-power.
Our city has seventy miles of streets,
And fifty miles of concrete side-walks.
The Escanaba Manufacturing Plant is the largest of its kind in the world!

Digitized by Google

In 1915, the export of iron ore from this port
Was 5,655,061 tons, with a value of about $22,620,224!
This is the second largest iron port in the world,
And our bay can carry the largest boats that float!

But of the enterprise, the enthusiasm of our citizens;
Their desire to move on, ever onward towards the goal,
Who can estimate that subtle quality in its power
To establish "Our Town"
As the "Best Town"
In Northern Michigan. —E. M. Griffith.

Digitized by Google

PROLOGUE, CHANT AND OPENING PRESENTATION

PERSONS

Herald—Mark Bailey
Messengers—Edwin Bergman
Arthur Moran
Father Time—Wallace Cobb
Hidden Chorus—High School Pupils

(Bugle call announces Herald)

THE PROLOGUE

Of the rushing Escanaba
And the city of its borders,
Skirted by the yellow sand dunes,
And the pine trees softly murmuring;
We will tell in song and story
Scenes depicting both the ancient
And the future. How the Indians,
Puans, so they called them—lived here
Many moons unknown to mankind.
How they wandered in the forests
Hunting antelope and wild geese;
How they fished in Bay de Nocquette's
Deep blue waters. Thus these Red men
Spent their carefree, happy hours
On the rushing Escanaba.
Peaceful, thus, they lived and flourished,
Heeding not the world around them.
But the white men pushing westward,

Digitized by Google

HERALD AND ATTENDANTS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Hearing tales from many others
Who had ventured there before them,
Broke the stillness of the forest,
With the ringing of their axes,
And the crashing of the monarchs.
Fallen thus, these stately pine trees,
Never more to lift their branches
To the beauty of the heavens,
Soon became, by white man's prowess,
Dwelling places for the settlers
On the site of Escanaba.

Tales of Escanaba's future
Reached the ears of those far distant;
How the timber and resources
Gave the promise of great riches.
Railroads, then, displacing coaches,
People flocked in goodly numbers.
Docks they made out in the harbor
Which is formed by nature's magic.
Guiding weary sailors' progress
Stood a light-house on the sand-bar.
Mindful of their children's welfare
Schools they built, and likewise churches.
Thus they toiled, and grew, and flourished,
Flourished in their undertakings,
Till at last this humble village
On the shores of Bay de Nocquette
Grew into a lively city—
THE METROPOLIS OF NORTHLAND.

Digitized by Google

Years have passed, and all is altered,—
Lawns of green replace the sand dunes,
Fragrant flowers and shrubs abundant
Where the wild brush then was growing;
Once a burial place for Indians
Now the home of thrifty people.
Belgians, Germans, Scandinavians,
French and Irish, Scotch and Russians,
Austrian, English and Italians
Flocked here from their native countries;
Citizens of our Republic
Thus were joined in one great union,
Working for the common welfare.
Escanaba now is noted
As a melting pot of nations.
"Ever onward!" is our slogan.
As the years increase in number,
Let us strive to keep its spirit,
Busiest, best and largest city,
Cloverland's most sparkling jewel—
Escanaba! Escanaba!

Music by Band .....Minor

Herald just before Father Time appears:

"Out of the mists that round thee lie,
Come forth, O Spirit of years gone by."

Father Time enters with scythe in action.

Digitized by Google

Opening Chant (Hidden Chorus)

I came I know not whence—I go I know
Not whither. Eye of things created ne'er
Upon my coming looked, nor shall it see
My passing. First and last of all things I—
For I am Time.
Upon the whole of things that little man
Calls universe, I looked ere yet the Hand
Creative wrought. I saw when Order out
Of Chaos came and suns and stars were born—
For I am Time.
I've seen the birth of man; seen how through strife
And strain and struggle man has doffed the brute
And donned the human; how with toil and tears
Man rises still, and learns that he is SOUL—
For I am Time.

Herald's Opening Presentation:

(After Father Time's Chant)

Ye who would learn the glory of your past
And form a forecast of the things to be,
Give heed to this, a city's trumpet blast,
And see her pictured life in pageantry.

Trumpet then signals action in Indian village.

Digitized by Google

FIRST EPISODE—EARLIEST TIMES

PERSONS

Indian Bride—Beatrice Johnson
Medicine Man—Hercules Primeau
Chippewa Chief—George Perrin
Menominee Chief—Edward Hodgkins
Indian Brave—Mr. R. J. Dodge
Bride's Mother—Helen Reade
Indian Warriors—Eighth Grade and High School
Indians, all sizes—Franklin School
Indian Maiden Dance—Eighth Grade
Indian Chief—Mr. L. E. Hutto
Squaw with Pappoose—Marguerite Corcoran

(Band plays Indian music during scene)

SCENE—Forest and Chippewa Indian village, several wigwams, totem poles, skins, squaws at work, one or more carries pappoose on back; one hangs pappoose on tree, basket-making, starting fires by rubbing sticks. Indian boys shooting with bows and arrows; more Indians appear from hunting, bring hides and furs, boasting by word and action. Chief and daughter come from largest wigwam. They talk. Indian maidens dance. A prominent brave appears, coming from a distance, stands erect, bows gravely to chief and daughter, lays presents at her feet. Brave sings solo, "Onaway, My Beloved." She brings water and food. He asks chief's consent to their union. Chief silently smokes and looks to daughter. She goes to young brave. (Trio from Indian music). They slowly leave together, looking backward toward the chief as they bid farewell.

Herald:

"Thus it is our daughters leave us,
Those we love, and those who love us!

Digitized by Google

Just when they have learned to help us,
When we're old and lean upon them
Comes a youth with flaunting feathers
With his flute of reeds, a stranger
Wanders piping through the village,
Beckons to the fairest maiden,
And she follows where he leads her,
Leaving all things for the stranger!"
—(Hiawatha)

Canoes with other Chippewas appear, paddling swiftly. They land and rush to the chief, crying the alarm: "The Menominees; they come, they come!" Consternation follows and Medicine Man appears. Then the ceremony of foretelling by Medicine Man the result of the coming conflict. He indicates that the fates decide in favor of awaiting the attack and defending the village rather than of going out to meet the enemy. After putting on war paint, they give the War Dance.

Band Music ......"Indian Patrol" for the Dance
Band plays ....."Custer's Charge"

Menominee Indians appear and attack from both water and land.

Escanaba Chippewas defend successfully; charge into the water, upsetting canoes, throwing some Menominee Indians into the water, scalping some that do not escape. The victory is then celebrated with—

Scalp Dance—Indians all dance around in large circle with long poles upraised with dangling scalps suspended from them.

Burying the dead. Utensils buried with their own dead.

(Accompanied by funeral music by the Band)

Digitized by Google

SECOND EPISODE—COMING OF MISSIONARIES

PERSONS

Indian Squaws
Pappooses
Marquette—Harold Thompson
Chippewa Indians, Sailors, Fur Traders, Indian Maidens

**Missionaries, Marquette and Party, 1673;
Yacht appears coming around the point;
Indians hear distant singing of sailors.**

(Band plays "The Marseillaise"—French National Song)

Herald:

"See, there it comes, a bird, or a fish, with wings, but it swims. On its breast it bears men, white faces, black robes, and now they leave its embrace and in boats they come hither, drawn by the beauties of fair Escanaba."

(Marseillaise repeated softly until Cross is planted)

Gun fired from yacht as a salute.

Indians cry out in excitement, discharge arrows towards oncoming boats and flee towards forest shelter. Marquette and party extend arms and otherwise express friendliness. Marquette and party land, break arrows, giving gifts of gay cloth, beads, medals, etc. Party sets up Cross. Chief and other Indians bury hatchet. Break arrows, throw down bows.

As Cross is planted, Marquette comes forth and speaks:

Digitized by Google

Marquette: I come to discover and heal.
I bring the Cross,
To feed new tribes with its fire!
For the fire I bring burns not,
But heals the burning;
And the rod I bring is a shepherd's,
And the lillies he sends are white.
Here in the days to come,
Many shall find a home,
All nations come from afar,
To build the city Escanaba.

Missionaries' chant to Indians an impressive scene, astonishing and soothing them. Indians bring corn and dog flesh, etc. Whites accept other food, refuse dog flesh. Indians listen to message. Interpreters explain message of Christianity to them. Whites and Indians mingle freely. White fur-traders bargain with Indians. Tom-tom and clarinets. Young Indians dance while older ones talk, trade, show trinkets and eat together.

(Song of the Robin Dance.)

Herald enters and speaks:

"Lo, the Cross of Christ, the token
Comes and weapons now are broken.
White with gown and Red with feather
Learn in peace to live together.
Gradually fierce tribes are won
From war, and cities are begun.
Trade in furs strengthens alliance,
Together they bid all foes defiance,
Finding when war alarms did cease
Profitable for all are times of peace."

Digitized by Google

THIRD EPISODE—EARLY SETTLERS

PERSONS

School Teacher—Louise Northrup; Surveyors, Woodmen, Indian Maidens, White Maidens, School Children, Carpenters, Indians, Tracklayers.

(Indians still on scene. Enter white men from North with packs on backs, dressed in mackinaws; begin to survey for railroads and locate city)

TRIBUTE TO THE NOBILITY OF LABOR

Herald:

Behold Escanaba now is teeming with labor.
Labor—the comrade of fame and of glory.
Listen!—the axes ring loud round about us,
Swung by these men who are proud of their toiling.
Hewing a clearing and homes for their loved ones.
Labor shall ever be virtuous and honored;
Scorn it not idly, ye men of light thinking.
Who but the workman achieves all that's worthy?
Is it not labor that brings us good fortune?
Adding its blessings with each daily task.
Idleness brings not the sought-for contentment.
Through toil—and toil only—may all obtain peace.

(Follow crews who begin lumbering operations—cut trees, use saws and axes, place great kettle over fire before camp, typical lumbering operations)

As work goes on, enter white maidens in background, slowly.

Music—"Oh, Tell Me, Pretty Maiden".....from Florodora

(Men lay down implements to watch. Indians begin to leave, slowly moving away through forests or down to canoes,

Digitized by Google

Scenes from First Episode

ONE OF MANY TEPEES SHOWING INDIAN HOME LIFE

MEDICINE MAN IN
HOME-MADE COSTUME

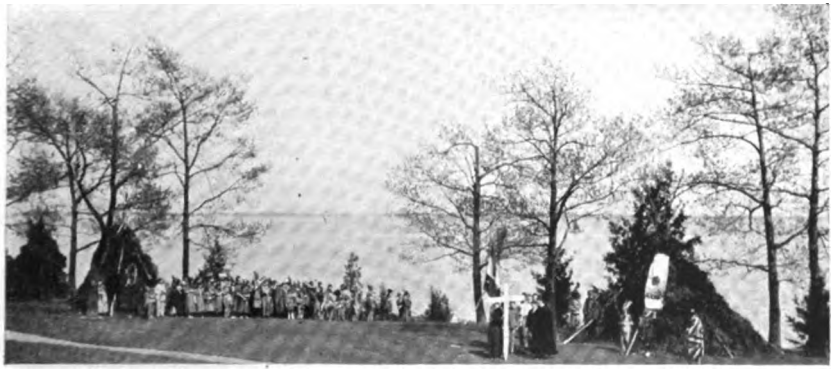
The Indian Maiden dance typifies Indian life, showing various actions common to the Indian, such as first, the flame movement, imitating the flames of the Indian campfire; listening for sounds on the trail; stalking the deer; paddling the canoe; advancing toward and retreating from the enemy with bow and arrow, and at last gaining confidence to attack and ending with a leap over the fire.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Second Episode

LANDING OF MARQUETTE AND PARTY

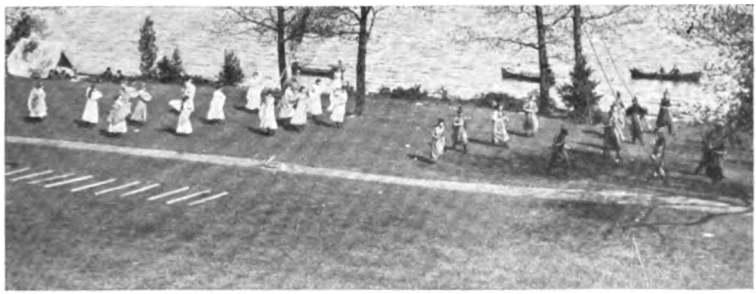


MARQUETTE PLANTS THE CROSS, WHILE INDIANS SOOTHED BY THE BEAUTIFUL STRAINS OF THE TE DEUM MINGLE WITH FUR TRADERS AND LISTEN

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THIRD EPISODE



A CONTRAST DANCE

between Indian Girls and White Maidens; while many forms of labor are in progress, tepees are removed and all traces of Indian life vanish.

ONLY A GLIMPSE OF LABOR SCENES

R. R. building and felling trees; just out of view a school house is being built, the stage being too large for the small scenes.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

FOURTH EPISODE

SPIRIT OF ESCANABA ENTHRONED WELCOMES ALL NATIONALITIES

Spirits of Truth, Freedom, Industry, Daring, Hospitality and Prosperity engage in a Figure Dance.

MANY NATIONALITIES SWARM UPON THE SCENE

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Fourth Episode

PICTURES WERE TAKEN OF SMALL GROUPS ONLY

FROM 75 TO 100 EACH OF FIFTEEN NATIONALITIES

ALL IN HOME-MADE COSTUMES

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

FOURTH EPISODE

GAVE FOLK DANCES AND SANG THEIR NATIONAL SONGS

CHILDREN OF FRENCH OR SWEDISH OR IRISH DESCENT ACTED AS GERMAN, ITALIAN OR SCOTCH, AND VICE-VERSA

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Fourth Episode

PART OF ONE OF FIFTEEN GROUPS

ALL GROUPS GAVE FOLK-SONG OR FOLK-DANCE

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Fifth Episode

ALL NATIONALITIES BECOME AMERICAN

HUMAN FLAG

46 x 75 feet. 2500 pupils of all grades. Band plays and all sing "Michigan, My Michigan" and "Star Spangled Banner."

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

but Indian maidens linger on one side. Scene of contrasted dances of Indian and white maids at sides in the background, with Indian maidens at last departing, one by one. White maidens scatter)

(Woodsmen leave as surveyors begin work on platting of town site. Erection of school house follows. No break in work, one merging into the other)

Children come trooping from woods at call of hand bell.

Band Plays ..... "School Days"

Teacher in front of school, tableau of children in sun bonnets, stiff starched skirts, etc., playing over grass in front of school, swings, teeters, ball games, etc. At call of teacher, children enter building.

Herald speaks:

THE PIONEERS

See the trail of the Pioneers
Blaze with desire and danger and hope.
Then there were forests to fell;
Fields to clear and to sow;
Floods to span, mines to shaft;
Wives to win (hard job, that,
For the rough pioneer, with little
To offer of comfort).
Cities to 'stablish and schools to
Maintain, and all this they did well,
And today we are proud
That they laid the foundation
And builded so well
The Fair City of Escanaba.

Band Plays ..... "Auld Lang Syne"

Digitized by Google

PRELIMINARY TO FOURTH EPISODE

Herald:

THE MELTING POT

From the lands across the waters,
To our shores so rich and bright,
Fleeing their despotic rulers
Foreigners come in many hundreds,
Seeking freedom from oppression.
Pioneers in this new country,
Sturdy men from many nations,
Settle down in homelike cabins
Rudely hewn from pines and maples.
Thinking of their children's future,
Schools they built to teach their off-spring
All the rudiments of learning.
And because all work together,
Respect the rights of one another,
Side by side recite in common,
All these things make better patriots.
Gifts were made by every nation
Of the foremost traits among them.
First there came the smiles of France,
Then there came the Northmen's daring,
Followed by the German's thrift;
Then came Russia with her emblem—
Truth of purpose—steadfast—firm;
Ireland's trait of ready wit,

Digitized by Google

Merged at last in this great country.
Equal all before the law,
Come from schools as melting pot—
American citizens—strong and noble;
Thus the school performs its mission.

Digitized by Google

FOURTH EPISODE—COMING OF NATIONALTIES

PERSONS

Spirit of Hospitality—Naomi Syverson
Spirit of Escanaba—Esther Baldwin
Spirit of Wanderlust-Content—Marie Gallagher
Spirit of Oppression (Freedom)—Bessie Chiplovitz
Spirit of Poverty-Prosperity—Eva Flemstrom
Russian Group—Franklin School
Swedish Group—Washington School
French Group—Barr School
Scotch Group—High School
English Group—Washington School
Hungarian Group—Webster School
Spirit of Industry—Leta Shaw
Spirit of Oppression-Freedom—
Spirit of Daring (Norwegian)—Agnes Grant
Spirit of Truth (Russian)—Kathleen Turner
Spirit of Diplomacy (Japanese)—Kathleen O'Brien
Dutch Group—Webster School
Japanese Group—Washington School
Norwegian Group—Jefferson School
Irish Group—High School
Italian Group—Barr School
Swiss Group—Jefferson School
German Group—Barr School

(Spirit of Escanaba sits enthroned, Hospitality near her)
Hospitality addresses the Spirit of Escanaba:

Hospitality: It has been whispered among the spirits that many people from foreign lands have sought our shores. This is indeed good news, for much have we to offer them. Welcome are they to our land and to this great State. Here in this city will they make their homes.

(Meantime groups of people enter—French, Swedish, Irish, Dutch and Scotch. Hospitality goes forth to meet them)

Digitized by Google

Hospitality: Greetings to you, fair strangers; make merry among yourselves that the spirits may know you rejoice in coming, and delight in what you have found here.

(Dances—Nationalities in succession, each retiring to background. Spirit of Wanderlust enters, haggard and tired; following her are Poverty and Oppression. (Wanderers song is sung)

Wanderlust to Escanaba: In foreign lands were these people discomforted. Oppression and Poverty bore hard upon them. My spirit possessed them and led them to wander. Long have they roamed from land to land. Growing weary of us, they bid us depart, and now seek shelter and homes in your fair city.

Hospitality: Welcome are they to our city. (Turns to Wanderlust.) But why do ye depart? Can ye not cast off these outer garments of weary search, of Poverty and Oppression, and become spirits of Content, of Prosperity, and of Freedom?

Wanderlust: Ah, this is hope indeed. Let us try.

(The three spirits drop cloaks and appear as beautiful spirits in robes of white and gold. Wanderlust speaks again)

Wanderlust: I am the Spirit of Content; my people, behold Prosperity and Freedom. Sing and rejoice.

(Italians, English, Swiss, Hungarians sing while the three spirits, Content, Prosperity and Freedom dance in background. All retire)

Spirit of Escanaba speaks:

Digitized by Google

Escanaba: (Norwegians, Russians, Germans and Japs are seen in distance approaching.) Much have these people brought me, much has this city been enriched by their coming. Yet much more do we need. See these people in the distance. May it not be that they bring what we wish? (Calls.) Escanaba needs the Spirit of Thrift, of Industry and Efficiency. If this spirit is among you, let her come forth.

(Spirit of the Germans enters, running; bows to Escanaba and is followed by German people)

Escanaba: Escanaba needs the Spirit of Diplomacy—if she is to be found among you, let her come forth.

(Enter Spirit of Japs, which does as German Spirit)

Escanaba: Escanaba needs the Spirit of Strength, of Daring, the Spirit of the Viking.

(Enter Spirit of Norwegians, which repeats same as German and Jap)

Escanaba: Escanaba needs the Spirit of Truth, that spirit that will make men die for a principle.

(Enter Spirit of Russia, followed by her people. The four spirits join hands and give a pretty spirit dance. They form a figure, with the Germans, Russians, Japs and Norwegians in the background)

Herald: (Speaks preparatory to next Episode:

So behold these many nations,
Joined here thus, for one great purpose,
Seeking shelter from oppression,
Come at last to our fair city.

Digitized by Google

And forgetful of their home-land,
Now we find them 'round about us,
Firmly linked in strong allegiance
To our country and our emblem,
Merged in this great powerful nation,
Loyal now, and ever shall be.

Digitized by Google

FIFTH EPISODE

(All Nationalities Become Americans)

PERSONS

Uncle Sam—Carroll Rushton
Spirit of Education—Majorie King
Goddess of Liberty—Isabel Winegar
Human Flag—2,500 Pupils from all Schools

Enter Uncle Sam and Goddess of Liberty.
Uncle Sam, holding aloft banner

marked "Ordinance of 1787," says:

"Religion, Morality and Knowledge being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, SCHOOLS and the means of education shall forever be encouraged."

Enter Spirit of Education. Uncle Sam and Goddess of Liberty welcome her and crown her with wreaths of flowers. She sits enthroned while representatives of nations and industries come and pay homage to her. Joining hands they circle around her.

Spirit of Education says:

God has made of one blood all nations of men, and we are his children, brothers and sisters ALL. We are citizens of these United States, and our flag stands for self-sacrifice for the good of all the people. To be true citizens of our great country, we must show our love for her by our works. Our

Digitized by Google

country ask us not only to die for her; she asks us to live for her, and so to live, and so to act that her government may be pure, her officers honest, and every part of her territory filled with true patriots.

Uncle Sam says:

Let us then speed the day when oppression shall cease,
And everyone live as a friend and a neighbor,
Education be crowned with the fair flowers of peace,
And hand clasping hand in the Kingdom of Labor.

Though it seems far away, let us toil as we pray;
Let us sing as we march toward the dawn of that day
When the banners of freedom shall all be unfurled,
And the sun shall arise on the peace of the world.

Band plays ..... March

All pupils form human flag.

Band plays and all sing "Michigan, My Michigan" and "Star Spangled Banner."

Digitized by Google

BAND AND VOCAL MUSIC PROGRAM

The Band Program of Music for the Pageant includes:

—FIRST EPISODE—

Indian Music; Indian Dance; Tomahawk Dance, Herman; Indian War Funeral March, Chopin
Dance, Bellstedt; Death of Custer, Johnson

—SECOND EPISODE—

Marseillaise .....French National Song

—THIRD EPISODE—

O Tell Me, Pretty Maiden, Florodora Colonial Gavotte
School Days Auld Lang Syne

—FOURTH EPISODE—

Ghost Dance, Salisbury; French Reel; Bleking Dance; Irish Lilt; Dutch Costume Dance; Morning Mood; Peer Gynt Suite, Grieg; Highland Fling

—FIFTH EPISODE—

March Star Spangled Banner Michigan, My Michigan

VOCAL MUSIC PROGRAM

Prologue—Chant—"I Am Time".....High School Chorus
First Episode—"Onaway, Awake" .....Mr. R. J. Dodge
Second Episode—"Sailors' Chorus" Chant—"TeDeum"
Fourth Episode—"Wanderers' Good Night Song"..High School Chorus
Hungarian National Song .....Webster School
English May Pole Song .....Washington School
Swiss Yodle Song .....Jefferson School
Santa Lucia ..... Barr School
Fifth Episode—Star Spangled Banner .....Entire School and Band
Michigan, My Michigan.....Entire School and Band

All the music numbers have been carefully selected so that they are in keeping with the spirit of the Pageant throughout and will prove a feature of the Pageant program.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

DANCES

The Highland Fling, as Scotch as the thistle itself, has been trod by Highland chiefs in victories dear to memory to the accompaniment of the strathspey or bagpipe.

The Irish Lilt expresses by its rhythmic music of the foot the happy, carefree disposition and true Hibernian wit of the Irish.

In the "Contrast Dance" the Indians are represented as reigning supreme over all they survey until white settlers approach, who in optimistic egoism sue for the friendship and good will of the Indians. The Indians, at first repulsing them, are finally won by the friendly advances of the whites, who take advantage of their privileges and eventually crowd the Indians out of their possessions.

The four spirits symbolizing Truth, Industry, Daring, and Diplomacy, express themselves in interpretive dance until they are surrounded by people of the four nationalities,—Russian, German, Norwegian and Japanese,—of which they are respectively characteristic.

The Swedish "Bleking" is gay and energetic, the movements forceful and vigorous. The pantomimic expression of the first part is playful resistance; of the second, joyful success.

The Norwegian dance, like the Swedish, is full of life. The dance expresses typical mountain life, showing the guide leading a couple up the mountain side.

The Costume dance is characteristic of the Dutch; slow, yet showing strength.

The Indian Maiden dance typifies Indian life, showing various actions common to the Indian, such as first, the flame movement, imitating the flames of the Indian campfire; listening for sounds on the trail; stalking the deer; paddling the canoe; advancing toward and retreating from the enemy with bow and arrow, and at last gaining confidence to attack and ending with a leap over the fire.

Digitized by Google

SONG OF THE ROBIN

An Interpretive Dance by CATHERINE M. CLARK (White Child) Assisted by RUTH ROCHE (Indian Child)

Introduction—

(a) Robin discovered.

(b) Child delighted by song.

1. (a) Child tries to follow flight from tree to tree.
   (b) Bird cannot be found; disappointment shown.
2. Listening to song and dancing for joy of it.
3. Robin hops about on ground; child plays with it and tries to catch it.
4. Child dances to please robin and appeals to it to sing again.

Interlude—

Indian Child appeals to robin to sing.

5. (a) Bird begins flight; White Child begins to dance again, hoping to make him stay.
   (b) Both children follow its flight.

Postlude—

(a) White Child tells Indian Child robin will not sing; is going.

(b) Indian Child entreats White Child to dance again.

(c) White Child says it is no use to dance.

(d) Both watch it fly away.

(e) Farewell to vanishing robin.

Digitized by Google

Reminiscences of the Mackinac Country

By Brayton Saltonstall[1]

Charlevoix

My earliest recollections are associated with Northern Michigan. My father, William Saltonstall, was one of the pioneers of Chicago, going there in 1835 by way of the Great Lakes in a sailing vessel. His first stop however was made at Mackinac Island. It was an involuntary stop, for having taken advantage of the opportunity to go ashore he became so engrossed in exploring its beauties, so captivated by its natural charms that he did not heed the passing hours and when finally he returned to the beach his ship had sailed and he was left marooned upon the Fairy Isle! Facilities for transportation were few in those days and he had time to form a closer acquaintance with his surroundings before an opportunity offered to leave its shores. He then formed an

1. Mr. Brayton Saltonstall of Charlevoix, Michigan, is a direct descendant of that excellent Puritan Knight, Sir Richard Saltonstall, who led a colony from England to Massachusetts Bay in 1630, and also of John Winthrop, its first governor. The pioneer spirit seems to have been inherited, for his own parents were pioneers to Chicago in 1835, where he was born in 1848, and having seen it grow from a little city of twenty thousand inhabitants to a great metropolis of two and a half millions his mind is full of reminiscences. Educated in the public schools of his native city he went abroad in 1871 and spent a season in Paris in the study of the French language in preparation for a position in London where a knowledge of it was necessary. After three years spent there he was glad to return to America for which his attachment had been increased by absence. Occupied with clerical duties till 1895

Digitized by Google

attachment which drew him back in after years, and although he was nominally a resident of Chicago, much of his time was spent at Mackinac.

He eventually secured a contract from the U. S. Government to supply the garrison there with provisions. In those days of water communication the Island was cut off from its base of supplies in winter, and my father was in the habit of embarking with a load of provisions late in the fall, usually upon the last trip of the steamboat before navigation closed. Arrived at the Island he would remain till after the close of navigation, and leaving his business with a clerk would put on his snowshoes, hitch his two dogs to a sled and with the mail-carriers for company, walk to Detroit and then home by rail to join his family in Chicago.

On one of these trips he met with shipwreck. He had embarked upon the steamer Westmoreland with a load of provisions, late in the fall, and when they reached Sleeping Bear point the lake was full of floating ice. Laboring in the floes the steamer sprung a leak. She filled so rapidly that

---

he then became a member of the Chicago Stock Exchange, being a familiar figure upon its floor for ten years. He was married in 1905 to Miss Annie M. Bell, the elder daughter of the Hon. George W. Bell, of Cheboygan, Michigan, and has now retired to his bungalow in Charlevoix to devote his declining years to his interests as a churchman, a citizen and a father. From early childhood his summer vacations were spent in Northern Michigan, and to its pure air and sparkling waters as well as to a rugged constitution received from his sturdy father, his own good health is largely due, and with that unimpaired by advancing years, "he hopes for an evening of heart's content in the winter of life, without lament that summer is gone or its hours misspent and the harvest past recall." The above reminiscences were given at the Petoskey meeting of the State Pioneer and Historical Society, February 24, 1916.—*Ed.*

Digitized by Google

all hands hurriedly took to the small boats. As the boat sank beneath the icy waters the whines and howls of a dog were heard, one which my father had chained in his stateroom and had not time to release. A passage to the shore seemed to open between the cakes of ice and the ship's party reached the shore in safety. My father was in the habit of carrying a metal matchbox and by means of the wax matches contained in it a fire was built which proved a great comfort to them all. The Westmoreland lies today at the bottom of the lake with her cargo intact and the dog chained in its watery sepulcher.

My father was a gentleman of the old school, very scrupulous in his dress. He sometimes wore a blue cloth cutaway coat with velvet collar and smooth brass buttons, a brocaded silk velvet waistcoat, ruffled shirt, and stick pins fastened together with a slender gold chain. When he reached home after that shipwreck his own children did not recognize him, his red flannel shirt instead of the dainty linen ruffles so changed his appearance.

My father's attachment to the Island was shared by the whole family who esteemed it a privilege to spend the summers there; exchanging the heat and mosquitoes in Chicago for the delightful climate of Mackinac, so free from those drawbacks, was a boon for which we have ever been grateful. In 1855, I think it was, we occupied the old Government Agency building standing on its spacious grounds well back from the beach just under the Fort hill east of the present Marquette Park which at that time was the Fort garden enclosed with a palisade of cedar posts embedded close together side by side. It was in this historic house that the opening scene of Constance Fenimore Woolson's novel "Anne" is laid,

Digitized by Google

and in a late edition there is a good picture of the old relic, which has long since disappeared and is now replaced by modern summer houses. I remember seeing in front of it a long line of wigwams strung along the beach, occupied by Indians who had come in their canoes to attend the annual payment by the United States Government. I remember seeing a little pappoose, bound in its cradle, hanging within reach upon a stick stuck up in the beach, as composed and complacent as if it were a picture hung upon a wall, while its dusky mother busied herself cooking the coming repast in a kettle hanging on a pole over a crackling bonfire of cedar wood emitting its peculiar spicy odor. In spite of the paternal precautions of Uncle Sam in paying them in merchandise rather than in cash, the poor Indians were systematically despoiled by the unscrupulous whites, often leaving the scene poorer than when they arrived.

In 1856 we occupied the Abbot home, a relic of the palmy days of the American Fur Company, a colonial mansion, the gable projecting over the porch being supported by large fluted pillars contrasting strangely with the primitive log structures in its vicinity, some covered with plaster, with roofs of cedar bark. I have a large photograph of this house taken that summer which I value very highly. It takes in Astor street with the old warehouse of the Fur Company, the Fort, and in the foreground stands an old-fashioned two-wheeled dray of which we see no more examples in the present day. Photography was in its infancy then. The artist, a Frenchman with a German name, Wernigk, had recently come to Chicago from Paris, bringing his camera with him. His wife, also an artist, painted portraits in pastel. She had done my eldest sister's portrait in Chicago, and because they

Digitized by Google

were not meeting with success my father invited them to spend a season with us in Mackinac. Monsieur Wernigk taught the children French and Madame painted the portraits of every member of the family. When they were leaving us to return to Chicago, Mons. Wernigk was very busy packing his trunk, expecting the steamer momentarily, and I, a little boy, was pestering him with questions; finally, his patience exhausted, he exclaimed petulantly, "Laisse moi tranquil" (Let me alone), which I proceeded to do at once. He completed his packing in time to catch the boat, the steamer Niagara, but how often have I wished since that I had prevented it, for the steamer was burned in Lake Michigan and nothing more was ever heard of our artist friends. They were undoubtedly among the lost. They had left a little daughter in Europe and it became my father's melancholy duty to inform her of their sad fate in a strange land.

That summer a company of volunteers was raised to drive the Mormons from Beaver Island, and when they returned they brought a drove of horses which they turned loose on Mackinac Island. My father selected a little pony from the lot for us children and it became a great pet with us. We used to make him "laugh" by feeding him pickles; he would turn back his lips, show his teeth and grin at us.

Having rented our home in Chicago for a year we spent the winter of 1855-56 on the Island, and although cut off from the world as we were, the time passed very pleasantly; coasting down the Fort hill, skating, sleighing and ice-boating on the Straits filled the idle hours. Dancing parties in the hotel dining-rooms, with two or three old time fiddlers, attracted the young and the old. I remember seeing my father take a man for a partner and tire him and the fiddlers to a "stand-

Digitized by Google

still" in a waltzing contest, whirling around the room alone to clinch the victory. No telling how long he could have continued.

My mother was of a more serious turn of mind. She started a Sunday School in the barber-shop of the Lasley house, and I helped by cutting firewood to keep it warm. About July 1, 1856 our house took fire. There was no fire protection. The soldiers from the Fort came down and formed a bucket brigade from the house to the Straits, about a hundred yards away, passing buckets of water to the burning building, but to little purpose. They retarded the flames but could not extinguish them. We were able to save most of the furniture, but the building burned to the foundation. We moved into another house and spent the summer there. My eldest sister, having been at School in Chicago, was on her way up the Lake on the steamer Lady Elgin to join us when she met a foreign gentleman who was with a company traveling to Lake Superior, but who instead of continuing with his traveling companions stopped at Mackinac to continue the acquaintance he had so recently formed. The opportunities afforded by picnics, strolls and horse-back rides through those sylvan retreats were not neglected. My sister returned to school and he to his affairs in England; but on the first day of June, 1858, they were married, in Chicago, and after a year spent in travel and study in Europe they settled down in London, where they both died in 1898, leaving a family of five children —a grandson now a volunteer in the English army is fighting with the Allies in Europe.

Digitized by Google

MEMORIES OF NORTHERN MICHIGAN

BY ARCHIBALD BUTTARS[1]
CHARLEVOIX

I FIRST saw Emmet County nearly sixty years ago. As a boy of seventeen I had left my home in Huron County in July, 1856, to find a new home. I took passage in a small vessel called the *Rover*. The vessel was commanded and owned by Captain Samuel Horton, who with his family had left Toledo, Ohio, in May of that year to sail for Grand Haven, Michigan. I soon found that the *Rover,* while commodious and comfortable, was a poor sailor and could not make any headway unless the wind was favorable. We were three weeks on the way from the Au Sable River before we reached Point Wahgoschanc, stopping on the way at Alpena, Presque Isle and Cheboygan. When we reached Point Wahgoschanc our provisions had nearly run out and we were detained there three days by strong head winds and supplemented our supply of food with wild raspberries that were plentiful there, and with crawfish that we got from the lake.

1. Mr. Archibald Buttars was born in Manchester, England, November 21, 1838, the eldest son of David Buttars of Kerrimeiur, Scotland, and Esther Walley of Manchester, England. His father emigrated to the United States in April, 1849, settling at Cincinnati, until September, 1852, when he moved to Huron County, Michigan, being a member of the firm of Hanks, Thompson & Buttars, who had built a sawmill on the Pinnebog River in Huron County in the year 1851. Here Mr. Buttars lived until he went to Emmet County in 1856. The substance of the above reminiscences was given at the midwinter meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society at Petoskey, February 24, 1916.—*Ed.*

Digitized by Google

On the morning of the third day the wind was fair and we were enabled to make Little Traverse Harbor late in the afternoon. Anchoring inside the bay, near the point, we went ashore to get provisions. Charles Wright and family lived on Harbor Point and he was engaged making fish barrels. Across the bay was the Indian village of L'Arbre Croche with a store kept by Richard Cooper, whose principal trade was with the Indians and fishermen. Across the main bay to the west was another Indian village on the present site of the city of Petoskey, and a Presbyterian mission school under the charge of Mr. Andrew Porter.

We were in Little Traverse Harbor about a week before we had a fair wind to proceed on our journey, which carried us opposite the mouth of Pine River where Charlevoix is now located, where we anchored for the night. Going ashore we found that the mouth of the river was very shallow, with a swift current, and the river choked with fallen timber from either bank, with a narrow channel cut through the center for the passage of boats. On the south bank of the river, near its mouth, was a rude gallows which we afterwards learned was erected by the Mormons, upon which they hung an effigy of Honorable John S. Dixon who owned the land there, and whom they had driven away the year before, but who at this time had returned.

On the north bank was a high bluff, surmounted by five pine trees that could be seen quite a distance from the lake and which no doubt gave it its name of "Pine River." The Government maps called it "Green River," and the lake from which it flowed, "Long Lake." The bluff on its side was bare of bushes, and about five feet from its top several birch-bark coffins protruded in which I found flint arrowheads and stone

Digitized by Google

hammers. About twenty-five years afterward a Mr. J. M. Clark, in excavating for a cellar on his lot on Mason Street, Charlevoix, found under a large pine stump, flint arrowheads, copper beads and a stone hammer, apparently belonging to some race of people long extinct.

The next morning, the wind being again ahead, Captain Horton took his vessel up to the first lake, now called Round Lake. I followed a path through the woods on the north side, that led to Pine Lake and found there the family of John S. Dixon, and on the south side of the river was another settler, Medad Thompson, and family. Mr. Thompson's wife and children were Mormons who had refused to go away when the Mormons were driven from Beaver Island early that summer. I liked the looks of this place and told Captain Horton I would not go any further with him, and hired out to Mr. Dixon to work on his farm.

The wind continuing ahead, Mr. Horton finally sailed up Pine Lake and settled on a Mormon clearing near the bay now called after him "Horton's Bay."

I worked for Mr. Dixon until late in October and then made a bargain with Mr. Thompson for my board and lodging until spring, working for him half of my time and for myself the other half. Part of my work for him consisted of grinding in a large iron coffee mill the corn and buckwheat for the daily use of the family.

The country was an unbroken forest from Bear River, Emmet County, on the north, to Elk Rapids in Antrim County on the south, and the families of Mr. Dixon and Mr. Thompson were the only white people living between the two places, except in the fishing season when fishermen temporarily stop-

Digitized by Google

ped at Pine River and Petobego on the east shore of Grand Traverse Bay during the fishing season.

There were no Indians at Pine River then; two bands from Northport came the next year and settled there. There were no roads or trails between Bear River and Elk Rapids, the only means of communication being by boat on Lake Michigan or along the shore of the lake. The Marquette trail at Petoskey is a myth, and of recent make.

Mr. Thompson had barely enough provisions for the winter and the unexpected return of his eldest son to stay with him necessitated my departure, so on the morning before Christmas day 1856 I started on foot for Elk Rapids fifty-five miles away. Young Mr. Thompson assured me that there were fishermen camped at Petobego, twenty miles this side of Elk Rapids, and that I was sure of a night's lodging and meals there.

I started out with two hard biscuits for my noonday lunch, and two matches. I found good traveling until I reached Fisherman's Island at the mouth of Grand Traverse Bay. There the ice banks on the shore had formed, compelling me to walk near the bank and the way was much obstructed by fallen timber, and added to this the wind began to blow hard into my face, accompanied by a furious snow-storm which nearly blinded me; consequently my progress was slow, and it was dark when I passed the present site of Norwood village and I was yet a long distance from my supposed stopping place. Fortunately the snow-storm soon ceased and the full moon lighted my way; thus I was enabled to see the bank and keep a lookout for the fisherman's house. I was very tired, the snow being over a foot deep, and I made slow progress. At times I looked for a sheltered place where I might rest, but

Digitized by Google

was afraid if I did so I might rest forever. My under-clothing was saturated with perspiration and I feared I could not go ahead much longer, but about midnight, as near as I could judge, I saw on the bank the form of a house; with visions of food and a bed I climbed the bluff only to find a deserted shanty with half of its roof gone, the door hanging by one hinge and the floor covered with snow. I kicked the snow from the floor under the little roof and found the bottom part of an old stove; I cleaned the snow from it, dug in the adjacent woods for fuel and with one of my two matches soon had a fire and ate one of my two hard biscuits. As I dared not sleep I sat up all night replenishing my fire and singing all the songs and hymns I could remember, until daylight came on the Christmas morning of 1856, and as someone has said, I thanked God and with renewed courage started on my way.

The second day's tramp was long and wearisome. I was very tired and sore from the previous day's tramp, and it was dark when I reached the store of Dexter and Noble at the outskirts of Elk Rapids.

I stayed at and about Elk Rapids working in the sawmill and lumber woods of Dexter & Noble for three years. From there I went to Traverse City and finally in the fall of 1863 was employed by the firm of Campbell & Goodrich, of Northport, as clerk and bookkeeper.

In the spring of 1869 I became the junior member of the firm of Fox, Rose & Buttars at Charlevoix. In 1871 the firm purchased the land upon which H. O. Rose's house stands, and where the lime quarries now are.

In June, 1872 Mr. Rose and myself, with a large scow, brought a load of groceries, boots, shoes and drygoods and

Digitized by Google

opened the first store within the bounds of the present city of Petoskey just west of the mouth of Bear River, in a log house belonging to Ignatius Petosega. We afterwards built a store on Mitchell Street.

In 1881 the firm of Fox & Rose, which had been in existence since 1851, was dissolved by the two partners in about twenty minutes; an amicable division of their property was made and the firm of Fox, Rose & Buttars dissolved at the same time. H. O. Rose and myself continued in business at Petoskey as Rose & Buttars, until the fall of 1883, when we dissolved, divided our goods, and I moved to Charlevoix.

In 1884, in company with A. R. Upright, we formed a private bank at Charlevoix under the name of the Farmer's & Merchant's Bank: that, in the following year, was incorporated into the Charlevoix Savings Bank. In 1899 Honorable John Nicholls, Harry Nicholls, Fremont L. Lewis and myself bought the assets of the Charlevoix Savings Bank and organized a private bank under the name of the Charlevoix County Bank, which is still doing business under the same name, the present co-partners being the Estate of John Nicholls, Archibald Buttars and Albert F. Bridge. I acted as cashier until the fall of 1913, a period of twenty-three years. Failing eyesight compelled my retirement from active duties. In 1915 I was elected president of this bank on the death of Honorable John Nicholls who had held the office since February, 1899.

I cast my first vote for Abraham Lincoln for the presidency in 1860, and have been an active Republican all my life. I was elected State Senator in 1880 to represent the thirtieth senatorial district of Michigan, and was re-elected to the same office for the twenty-ninth senatorial district and chosen as president pro tempore of the Senate at that session of the

Digitized by Google

Legislature. I was elected Lieutenant Governor in the election of 1884 for the years 1885-86 and twice during the absence of Governor Alger from the State was Acting Governor. I retired from active politics at the close of my term as Lieutenant Governor.

I have been a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church in Charlevoix since February, 1874, and was chosen as lay delegate to the M. E. General Conference at Los Angeles in 1904.

I was married twice; first to Celia E. Moses of Cleveland, Ohio, in 1864, who died in July, 1875; second to Emma C. Blinn of Shelburn, Vermont, October 3, 1895. I had only one child, a daughter by my first marriage, Essie J., now the wife of E. F. Parmalee, business manager of the San Diego Union at San Diego, California. I have three grand-children, Harold P., an Ensign in the United States Navy; Clair, the wife of Lieutenant Frank P. Kelly, also in the Navy on the West Coast, and Archibald Buttars Parmalee now at Buckley University. I have three great-grand-children.

I am now enjoying my old age at Charlevoix, Michigan. which has been my home for the past forty-seven years.

[The statement made by Mr. Buttars at Petoskey that the Marquette trail is a myth aroused considerable discussion subsequently, and at the request of the Society he has submitted the following data as his foundation for the statement.—*Ed.*]

I resided at what is now the city of Charlevoix, Michigan, part of the month of August, all of September, October, November and until the 24th day of December, 1856. At that time there were only two white families residing there; two others settling on Pine Lake later in the year. No Indian

Digitized by Google

bands resided at that time within the present boundaries of Charlevoix County. There was no trail leading from Charlevoix either to Bear Creek on the north or to Elk Rapids on the south. Mrs. Dixon, with whom I stayed, informed me that during the previous year, having to go to Bear Creek on urgent business, she was compelled to go by way of the beach of Lake Michigan, as there was no trail through the woods.

I spent a good deal of my time in the woods getting ready to set a line of traps for winter trapping and I never saw a trace of any trail, except over on the north side from the mouth of Pine River to Mr. Dixon's residence on Pine Lake, and one on the south side from the mouth of the river to Medad Thompson's. I was compelled, myself, when I went from Pine River to Elk Rapids in December of that year, to walk on the beach.

In the spring, summer and fall of 1857, with a Mr. Albert W. Bacon, I worked for the G. R. & I. Railroad Company examining their lands granted them by the United States Government to aid in building their present line of railroad. Our place of work extended from the east shore of Grand Traverse Bay to lands east of the present line of the G. R. & I. Railroad in township 29-30 north from range 5 to 9 west, and we never saw any trails or traces of trails running north and south.

There was a trail commencing on the south shore of the Round Lake of the Elk Rapids chain of lakes and running in a southeasterly direction, which was called the Saginaw Trail. This was well defined and much traveled by the bands of Indians at Skegemog and Kewadin, near Elk Rapids. I owned a small farm on Round Lake, where the trail commenced, and my place was known as the "Depot."

Digitized by Google

For corroborative evidence that Father Marquette never was at Petoskey on the said Marquette Trail, I would refer to his *Journal,* and to the map of Marquette's journeys and missions made by him and published by Burroughs Brothers & Company, Cleveland, Ohio, in *Jesuit Relations,* Vol. 59, opposite page 108.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Bay. UK

MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

VOL. II, No 3 JULY, 1918 WHOLE No. 5

HISTORIC MACKINAC is the title of a work in two volumes, by Hon. Edwin O. Wood, LL.D., which has recently come from the press of The Macmillan Co. It is the most complete work that has yet appeared on the Mackinac country as a whole.

Its style is popular and entertaining, yet the work has a degree of historical accuracy uncommon in publications of this kind. It is based upon the extensive collection of Mackinac material which Mr. Wood at great expense and infinite care had collected during many years, and which constitutes the most complete collection of historical material on Mackinac in existence.

Mr. Wood was for many years a member of the Mackinac Island State Park Commission, and during the many summers spent on the Island had a rare opportunity to become acquainted with the region and its place in history. The Indians, the priests at the missions, the soldiers and traders in the frontier garrisons, the gay *voyageurs* and the adventurous *coureurs de bois* of the northern wilderness, all became to him as old friends. The work is a monument of his love for Mackinac.

The first volume is composed of chapters of historical nature, of which some idea may be gained from a mere enumeration: French exploration in the Mackinac country; Father Marquette at Michilimackinac; LaSalle and the *Griffin;* The *cour-*

Digitized by Google

eurs de bois and the fur trade; Removal of fort and mission to Old Mackinaw; The parish register at Michilimackinac; The French and the English; The English and the Indians; Pontiac; Minavavana and Wawatam; Henry's account of the massacre: his escape and adventures; Old Mackinaw after the massacre; Major Robert Rogers; Removal of the fort to Mackinac Island; The English fur trade; The war of 1812; The American fur trade; Astor, Crooks and Stuart; Dr. William Beaumont and Alexis St. Martin; Mackinac and the Mormons of Beaver Island; Churches of Mackinac Island; The Lost Prince; Fort Mackinac, 1815-1918; Mackinac National Park; Mackinac Island State Park; Descriptive notes on names and places at Mackinac Island. The last chapter contains 100 pages of descriptive notes on names and places of the Island. At the close of the volume is an appendix of 70 pages and a chronology of 16 pages.

Volume II embodies happily the thought of bringing together under one cover the literary masterpieces on Mackinac from rare books long out of print, among them sketches by Harriet Martineau, Mrs. Ann Jameson, Margaret Fuller, Constance Fenimore Woolson, William Cullen Byrant and Bayard Taylor. For those who visit Mackinac in the summer and wish to get the romance of early Mackinac as seen through the eye of literary genius, this volume will prove the "open sesame."

Closing chapters of volume II give the derivation and translation of the Indian names in the Mackinac country and a list of the flowering plants and ferns of the Island. An extensive bibliography of Mackinac material is appended, and the whole work is provided with a serviceable index.

While these volumes make no claim to rank with the achievements of historians, they are a contribution of importance

Digitized by Google

from the viewpoint of the new interest they are destined to arouse in the history of the Mackinac country, the first region of the Great West to be discovered and colonized by France.

ALMOST SIMULTANEOUSLY with the publication of *Historic Mackinac* comes the announcement of Mr. Wood's death. Those who have been intimately associated with the development of Michigan's historical work will realize the misfortune the State has suffered. Mr. Wood's work in Michigan history was unobtrusive and for this reason the more effective, achieving results through cooperation, through aiding and encouraging others, and by sacrificing time and money in promoting the preservation and writing of the history of the State he loved. His love for the Mackinac country amounted to a passion, as his latest work *Historic Mackinac* evidences. It was one of the delightful things about Mr. Wood, his deep feeling for the history of Mackinac Island and its surroundings, which had for him something of religious sanctity; it was to the Island that Mr. Wood went with his family after the tragic death of his son, Dwight Hulbert Wood, who sacrificed his life for his brother Aug. 12, 1905, an act commemorated in the marble canopy erected over the natural spring of water known as Dwightwood Spring on the East Shore Boulevard of the Island.

Mr. Wood was one of the founders and first members of the Michigan Historical Commission, and later its president. Previously he had been for several years a trustee of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, severing his connection with both organizations only by virtue of his removal to New York

Digitized by Google

City. His benefactions to the State's historical work in both these capacities are too numerous for mention, and are of the quality and nature that a true lover of history performs and forgets, but which live on in the work achieved as an ever fresh inspiration. He was the founder of the Genesee County Historical Society in 1913, and was a member of various national historical organizations, including the American Historical Association (life), the American Irish Historical Society, the American Geographical Society and the American Museum of Natural History, besides many State historical societies of the Old Northwest. Recently the University of Notre Dame conferred upon him the degree of LL. D.

Mr. Wood was born at Goodrich, Genesee County, Oct. 29, 1861. His father was a pioneer of Michigan. From work on the farm and humble schooling, Edwin Wood rose gradually through native qualities of mind and heart to be a dominating figure in State and national public life. It may be said of Mr. Wood, as Mr. Wood said of the late Lawton T. Hemans, that had he been a member of the opposing political party, he might have obtained the highest public offices in the gift of the people. In 1893-97 he was a special agent of the United States treasury department. In 1904 he was elected chairman of the Democratic State Central Committee, and again in 1912 and 1916; he was a member of the Democratic National Committee for two terms, 1908-16, resigning after the national convention because of imperative business demands upon his time in New York, where he had recently become associated with the Chevrolet Motor Co. Since 1895, until his removal to New York City, Mr. Wood was president of the Loyal Guard, a fraternal society with headquarters at Flint, many years the home city of Mr. Wood; he edited the *Loyal Guard Magazine*, the official publication of the society. From 1913 to 1916 he

Digitized by Google

was a member of the Mackinac Island State Park Commission and of the Michigan Historical Commission. He was president of the National Fraternal Press Association, 1903-4, and of the National Fraternal Congress, 1904-5.

The universal respect for Mr. Wood is reflected in an editorial comment at the time of his death, in an organ not of his party, in which it is said: "Mr. Wood's outlook was wide, his interest in furthering what he considered the best welfare of his country deep and sincere, his methods practical, his fund of common sense large, and he was held in general esteem as a man . . . Mr. Wood was in truth a great lover of Michigan. He loved the land, he loved its history, and he was a persistent student of the latter, delighting to delve into the early data of this region. His services as a member of various historical societies and as a member of the Mackinac Island board of park commissioners afforded him opportunities for proving his devotion in many practical ways and reacted valuably on his manner of viewing purely political projects. Many people disagreed with Mr. Wood, but they all respected him."

IN THE SHARP LIGHT of the present world war many historical truths which have been half hidden by time and prejudice are coming into clearer view and receiving the emphasis which they should have. One of these concerns the American Revolution. Teutonic autocracy, the common foe of humanity has drawn aside the veil that has obscured to many the truth respecting the causes of that event. Teutonic George III, not the English people, stands forth clearly revealed as the arch enemy of democracy in America as well as in England, and the Daughters of the American Revolution, descendants of

Digitized by Google

the American colonists who fought to win freedom from his oppression, are today working as sisters with the men and women of Great Britain to help win the war, to crush forever Teutonic autocracy and militarism, and "to make the world a safe place to live in." Worthy of note in this connection is the following statement recently received from Mrs. William H. Wait, State Regent, D. A. R. for Michigan, as part of a report upon the recent meeting of the National Society, Daughters of the American Revolution at Washington:

The Daughters of the American Revolution, descendants of the heroes of 1776 have just closed, in Washington, D. C., a memorable annual meeting, the twenty-seventh Continental Congress, the keynote of which was loyalty to the Government of the United States and to our Allies. One of the most impressive moments in the Congress was that in which it was voted unanimously to send a letter of thanks and an American flag to the women in a seaside village in Scotland,—the women who in Great Britain sat up all night making an American flag to fly over the new-made graves of American men lost in the torpedoing of the Tuscania by our common enemy.

It was a moment which intensified realization on the part of every woman present that our forefathers in 1776 fought not England but the Teuton George III who at that time sat on the throne of England and sought to extend exactly the same spirit of autocratic government, the same unlawful ambition for world domination, the same unholy greed for his neighbor's property as did Frederick the Great, at that time ruler of Prussia, and as does Frederick's descendant, the present Kaiser of Germany. George III was descended on both sides from Teuton ancestry, being on his father's side the great-grandson of George I, Elector of Hanover who became King of England, and on his mother's side, the son of the

Digitized by Google

Teuton Augusta, a daughter of the Duke of Saxe-Gotha. He was filled with Teuton egotism. He brushed aside the wise council of Pitt and other English statesmen regarding the treatment of the American colonies and attempted to practice on them the same methods of Teutonic oppression, ruthless domination and unjust tyranny which today through another Teuton, Wilhelm II, is making this planet a world of blood.

Today, the world is fighting for freedom from the rule of the Teuton Wilhelm II, just as the men of the American Revolution in 1776 fought to free the American colonies from the rule of the Teuton George III.

It was not Anglo-Saxon England but their Teuton King and his supporters that precipitated the American Revolution; it was not Anglo-Saxon England but England's Teuton ruler, George III, who sent hired Hessian troops to fight free-born Englishmen on American soil.

The men and women of America now know the truth—none have known it better than the Daughters of the American Revolution,—and the year 1918 finds the women of democratic Great Britain and the women of democratic America standing side by side, giving bravely their husbands, sons, grandsons and sweethearts to free the world forever from Teuton autocracy. In spirit, courage and determination, they are one though separated by miles of seas. Together in purpose, they are working night and day to furnish comforts for our sick and wounded men, and necessities for our well men regardless of whether they fight the common foe under the Union Jack or the Star Spangled Banner.

At the Continental Congress, the representative of Great Britain who addressed the Daughters, Maj. Gen. J. D. Maclachlan, military attaché of the British Embassy, spoke most effectively of this united war work.

Digitized by Google

The report of the Publicity Director, War Relief Service Committee, Daughters of the American Revolution, showed that the Daughters throughout the United States, the Orient and Cuba have expended for war purposes during the past year, $9,416,022.90, Great Britain sharing in our money gift to our Allies, and the Daughters participating in the war loan of Great Britain.

MR. C. E. MARK, OF CHICAGO, has presented to the State several interesting and valuable letters written by former Governor J. W. Begole in connection with the great fire which swept "The Thumb" in 1881. Attached to these is a letter written at Mr. Mark's request, by Melville C. Whittaker, giving his experience and what he suffered during the fire. The letters are now on file at the office of the Michigan Historical Commission.

In the letter of presentation, Mr. Mark has given an interesting account of his memory of the fire and Governor Begole's connection with it, as follows:

In 1881, September, a fire swept the thumb of the mitten of your State and devastated and laid waste sixty square miles of territory. The fire was so great, so vast, and so terrible in destruction, that it attracted the attention of the entire civilized world, in response to which the nations of the globe vied with each other in their contributions. There are living today, no doubt, in that territory men and women who passed through the horrors of those three days. There are children born of those men and women who doubtless have listened to the tales told and the suffering experienced during that short time. I am presenting to you the documents that tell the story of a

Digitized by Google

man, who in the heat of political times received the condemnation and abuse of some of his best friends, but only for political purposes, that he would not have received had the facts been published at that time, and they would have been published had he not requested me not to divulge or reprint the present letters.

On a September afternoon in the year 1881, a meeting was called by the leading citizens of Flint, Michigan, for the purpose of raising funds, clothing, food, farm implements, and such other articles as could and would be donated for the immediate relief of those living in the burned section. At that meeting J. W. Begole was made Chairman and after having appointed the several committees to receive subscriptions and materials, I was sent for and requested to report to him at 6 P. M. that evening. I did as requested and was handed a letter by Mr. Begole, the original of which I am presenting to you, authorizing me as the agent for the distribution of supplies sent from what was afterwards termed the Central Committee. As soon as I received this commission, I started with my horse and carriage, driving during that evening and night thirty-six miles, arriving at the first stopping place in the morning, feeding my horse and obtaining two hours' sleep. I then proceeded the balance of the journey, a distance of twenty-two miles, arriving at Marlette at between three and four P. M. I presented my letter of authority to David Donaldson, John McGill, and Theodore Hough, and immediately began the work of organization for the distribution of such supplies as should be committed to my care. The following morning I started out through the country with my horse and carriage on a tour of inspection and found the destruction and horrors so great that upon my return I wired Mr. Begole and received from him in reply the enclosed telegram but I did not and would not call upon him for money. In wiring Mr. Begole I also wrote him

Digitized by Google

a letter explaining the conditions as I found them and received from him the enclosed letter. This letter has always been in my possession and carefully guarded, and I now turn it over to you that you may preserve it among the treasured keepsakes and relics of the past period. Knowing the man personally as I did, and being aware that at that time he had not the slightest thought that he himself would be made Governor of the State of Michigan, and knowing the offer contained in that letter to be genuine and made by him with no other thought in his mind but that of relief for those suffering for the lack of food, instilled in me a very high appreciation of the man and his character.

In September 1882, J. W. Begole was nominated for Governor on the Demo-Fusion-Greenback-Prohibition Ticket, and by the older citizens of the State of Michigan it will be remembered that there was plenty of "mud-slinging" and what might be termed a general "hot time." During this period I had not revealed the contents of any of the letters or telegram presented to you, and nothing was known whatever of the transactions that took place between Mr. Begole and myself for the relief of the fire sufferers until, when in the forepart of September while I was passing the headquarters of the Central Democratic Committee located at Flint, Michigan, I stopped long enough to listen to an argument taking place between the opposing factions, and incidentally passed the remark that "if they knew one-half of what I know they would be praising J. W. Begole instead of condemning him." Without a moment's hesitation Jerome Eddy stepped forward and wished to know what I knew about J. W. Begole. I told him in a very few words that I had a letter written to me by J. W. Begole which I received while in Marlette authorizing me to draw on him and let no one suffer while he had money. Mr.

Digitized by Google

Eddy simply remarked—"Have you such a letter," and I assured him that "I had." Two days later I was on my way to England to attend a convention that was to be held at Darlington. Upon my return on October 2nd, I was met at midnight at the train by the Republican Committee headed by H. R. Lovell with a request for "that letter." As soon as I could comprehend what they were seeking, I informed them that I had such a letter and that if Mr. Begole should request me to deliver it to them I would gladly do so. I agreed to confer with Mr. Begole in the morning and let them know without delay what his desires were. This was done early the next morning and he requested me not to use the letter, nor allow the committee to see it. Also that he would communicate with the Detroit papers and if they, in their judgment deemed it advisable, they could have it to reproduce; and should they refuse for any reason, I should then keep the letter and not divulge its contents. The matter was taken up with the editor of the Detroit *Free Press* and the conclusion reached was, that inasmuch as the election was to be held on November 4th, it would be too late to be of any value.

The people of that date well remember the tremendous sweep that took place and that J. W. Begole was made Governor of the great State of Michigan by over 5,000 majority. They also remember that in the previous election that took place the State was swept by over 60,000 Republican majority.

How well this modest and unassuming citizen of the State of Michigan performed his duties as Governor is best told by the public records—the historic annals of your State. As a private citizen, his life was one of simplicity, honor and integrity with but one thought uppermost in his mind at all times. That one thought was, "What can I do to help my neighbor." These observations are based on my personal knowledge of

Digitized by Google

the man both as an intimate friend in his home and with his family and on business relations of such a nature as brought me in daily contact with his life; and I can only say where there are men of equally true and noble character as that of J. W. Begole, we should not wait until they have passed from our view before it is known.

In presenting these little documents to you I trust they may receive the careful and conscientious consideration due them and that they may be so set forth that the rising generation may take a lesson that will instill in their hearts the same principles that was maintained by the Honorable J. W. Begole.

Very truly yours,

C. E. Mark.

SUPT. F. A. GAUSE and Principal George E. Butterfield, of the Bay City schools, with their teachers and pupils, have done a service for local history which might well be emulated in every county. They have compiled a book, *Bay County, Past and Present,* recently published, on the history of Bay City and Bay County. The volume contains 212 pages in 25 brief chapters, with ample references at the end of each; footnotes with cross-references; in the back a classified list of references to the *Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections;* an appendix of additional data arranged to correspond with the chapters, including Saginaw Indian legends, a chronology of early events, population and industrial statistics, and township organization; about a hundred maps, diagrams, and illustrations; and a carefully made index.

The material of the text is well selected and arranged. The interesting manner in which the work of compiling it was un-

Digitized by Google

dertaken and carried out is stated by Mr. Butterfield in his Introduction, in which he says:

A careful study of the home region furnishes an excellent foundation for the later study of the geography, history, and government of our nation and of other nations. It is interesting and understandable because the child is living in the midst of the conditions, events, and things studied. He sees old friends in a new light. Moreover, most of the elements in the advanced studies are to be found at home in the regional study.

The interaction between man and his physical surroundings has taken place in many ways right here in Bay County. The forests furnish the best example, for they attracted the people here, furnished them with their occupations, and in the meantime were cleared away by those people who established rich farms and built great factories in their places.

Bay City furnishes a good example of two types of cities, as it combines the elements both of the trading and distributing center and of the manufacturing center.

Government has developed step by step from the very simple government of an unsettled region into the complex government of a densely populated county.

When such a study of Bay County was undertaken two years ago at the request of Superintendent Gause, it was found to be very difficult to get suitable material on the many topics. In some schools there was very little material to be found, because the parents were mostly recent immigrants. In other schools there was a wealth of material to be obtained directly from the pioneers, but there was no way in which this material could be given to the other schools or could be preserved for future classes. The libraries contain much valuable material, but not in a form suitable for use by sixth grade pupils.

Digitized by Google

To overcome these difficulties, Mr. Gause suggested that the geography department, with the pupils of the sixth grade, make a detailed study of the county for one year. This would give the pupils an important piece of constructive work to do, and the results could then be published as a text book for use in future classes.

The method of procedure has been as follows: The sixth grade teachers of geography met at frequent intervals to discuss the work, the sources of material, and to form general outlines for the classes to follow. Beginning in January, 1917, and continuing through May pupil representatives from each sixth grade in the city met for an hour once a week with the chairman to present reports from their classes, discuss various parts of the work, and decide questions that had arisen. By the close of the school year in June, reports of the work of each class had been handed to the chairman. These reports were sifted, conflicting statements investigated, and sources of all kinds consulted. Many of the pioneer residents were interviewed. Then the work was put in final form for publication.

It has been our object to have an interesting book. This accounts for many of the stories and illustrations. At the same time we have attempted to make the work as reliable as possible and to record the sources of our information. Lack of time has made it impossible to go to the real sources in many cases.

We have aimed to place the emphasis on those phases of the work that are significant, but are not at hand for study now. The present industrial and governmental conditions need no text for their study—in fact, ought to have none. The daily paper with its advertisements, statements about business and the industries, and with its proceedings of the Common Coun-

Digitized by Google

cil, Board of Education, Board of Supervisors, and of other governmental bodies of the city and county furnish text enough for this part of the work. At the same time it is desired that the personal observation of the pupil be used wherever possible. This can be accomplished by means of individual, group, or class excursions and visits to interesting places, to industrial plants, and to the meetings of the Common Council, etc.

MR. LEW ALLEN CHASE, M. A., of the history department of the Houghton High School, made recently in the columns of the Houghton *Mining Gazette* an appeal for historical material which is not only typical of the live work being done by the Keweenaw Historical Society, but illustrative of what every society in the State should do respecting war material and other historical records of local character. Mr. Chase says:

Addressing the Keweenaw Historical Society at its recent annual meeting in Houghton, Mr. A. F. Rees urged that the society collect and preserve material relating to the war. He pointed out that some day this material would be of great interest and value. The officers of the Keweenaw Historical Society are not unmindful of the necessity of such work as Mr. Rees urges upon them. They are very glad to cooperate in every way that seems likely to bring results. Each one of them is, however, engrossed in his own affairs and he cannot devote much time to the unremunerative labor which the work of the society requires. The society in fact belongs to the community, and the community must support it, if it is to fulfill its mission. This support does not consist of money contributions so much as contributions of whatever may throw

Digitized by Google

light on the history of the copper country of Michigan. The people have this material stored away in attic and cellar, in trunks, chests, desks, cabinets and letter-files. If they wish it preserved where it can serve the general interests and needs of the community, they ought to turn it over to the secretary of the Keweenaw Historical Society, Mr. J. A. Doelle, or to one of the other officers of the Society, or leave it at the Houghton Public Library. Just a little thoughtfulness will bring results.

People may have the notion that only very old things are wanted. It is quite as important to preserve the things of today as the things of yesterday. Take the letters written home by our boys now in the country's service. These will always be of priceless interest. In many cases those to whom they are sent will not want to part with them; but where they are willing, they should turn them over to the society. The records of local clubs and organizations doing war work of various kinds will some day be of great interest and should not be lost. As soon as they have served the purpose of the organization to which they belong, they should be turned over to the society for permanent preservation. Programs, handbills, posters, used tickets, public and other notices and proclamations may all seem of trifling interest when they have served their immediate use. Fifty years from now they will be examined with no little interest. If you doubt it, consider the interest attached to such relics of our Civil war, all too few of which still exist. Some good people are probably keeping diaries or filling a scrap-album in their leisure moments. Some day these will be read with interest by persons other than those who are now busy with pen or paste. Some people have been busy with cameras taking snap-shots of persons and spectacles connected with our own part in the war. With

Digitized by Google

what eager interest will these be brought out and looked at in the years to come? They will appeal to many people, and should, if possible, be preserved by the Keweenaw Historical Society.

Of course, everything connected with the local copper industry should be preserved. Copper is our big contribution to the war for liberty. It is of enormous importance now as it was in the Civil War. Of such records which are available to the Keweenaw Historical Society, the most important are the reports of the mining companies. In the past such reports have been allowed to be destroyed when a very little thoughtfulness and trouble would have placed them in safety for the years to come, where they would be used and appreciated. Mining reports, old or new, are always especially appreciated by the society. This applies also to all reports and publications relating to copper mining in this district. Much money has been spent to make the collection which the society already has. There is not much left that even money can obtain. In the future the society must largely depend upon the care and thoughtfulness of the good people here and elsewhere who are interested in the past and present of the Keweenaw peninsula. When done with it, do not consign this material to the furnace. Either notify the secretary of the society that you have such and such material which may be had if wanted, or else send it or leave it at the office of the secretary in the high school building or at the public library, Houghton. At least 'phone Houghton, No. 449, about it.

The society would also suggest that old residents of the district prepare a sort of autobiography giving the main points in the life history of such persons. The society will be glad to receive such personal histories and to preserve them for future

Digitized by Google

reference. This is a good and certain way of not being forgotten. There are sure to be those who will some day read these records with great interest. We should not wait until our older people have passed away before preparing their biographies. It is then often too late to get a complete and reliable record. None knows so much about a person's life as the person himself, who should set his history down in writing before it is too late. The society, which is incorporated and so cannot die, except by lack of interest in the community, will keep all such life histories which it receives. It will even provide a list of questions to assist any who may wish them in preparing these personal records.

AMONG HISTORICAL ORGANIZATIONS none has been more active in war work than the Daughters of the American Revolution. Mrs. William Henry Wait of Ann Arbor, State Regent, has submitted the following report, dating from May 1, 1917 to Feb. 1, 1918:

Knitted garments (for soldiers and sailors) 10,000 garments or 2500 sets @ $12:00	$ 30,000.00
Comfort kit bags, 2262, @ $2.00	4,524.00
Housewives, 1175	880.25
Red Cross & National surgical dressings, Cash (gifts—not memberships)	4,479.67
Hospital garments and surgical supplies not included in cash gift, 140,993.	
Jelly for base hospital, 967 glasses @ 20c	193.40
Hot chocolate for men at Selfridge Field 3 mos. @ $40.00	120.00
State Troops (blankets, flags, Bibles, etc.)	759.50

Digitized by Google

Mending Bureau, Camp Custer	66.00
French orphans (northwest France), 55 @ $36.50	1,997.50
French orphans (southern France)	250.00
Restoration of two houses, French village of Tilloloy, $1,600.00 pledged, already raised	800.00
Garments for French children	296.00
Dependent families	71.50
Mess fund	165.00
Belgium relief	154.00
Total gifts	$44,454.82
First Liberty Loan	218,000.00
Second Liberty Loan	58,000.00
Total	276,000.00
War expenditures in 10 mos.	$320,454.82

The Daughters of the American Revolution in Kalamazoo support a D. A. R. hostess room in Kalamazoo for all soldiers from Camp Custer.

The Daughters in Michigan are pledged to keep supplied with knitted garments for the war, 5 U. S. ships (2 destroyers, 1 torpedo boat and 2 submarines).

The State organization is serving hot chocolate to the men on guard, the fliers when they come down, and all men at Selfridge Field over a week.

The State organization has also established and has in running order a mending bureau to keep in order the clothes of the men in Ban Hospital, Camp Custer, and are meeting

Digitized by Google

with great success, as officers and men appreciate the effort.

A State committee is organizing all the Chapters, so that complete rosters and records of all men in the service from Michigan are being assembled.

Many organizers, leaders and workers in Red Cross are Daughters of the American Revolution.

The State organization is a branch of the great national organization which has offered Red Cross rooms in its beautiful white marble building, Memorial Continental Hall, next door to Red Cross in Washington, if Red Cross needs to expand in room.

The National Society also offered to the United States Government, the use of a large plot of ground owned by the National Society (adjacent to Memorial Continental Hall) for the entire period of the war, rent free. The offer was accepted and the Government has built on it the offices of the National Council of Defense.

During the edict for heatless days, the rule was suspended for the building of the Daughters of the American Revolution as the Government considered the war-work done by the Daughters a branch of the Government service.

The National Society was incorporated under an act passed by the 54th Congress of the United States of America, Dec, 2, 1895, and signed by President Grover Cleveland Feb. 20, 1896. An annual report from the Society to Congress is mandatory.

Membership is open to any woman 18 years of age or more descended from a man or woman who with unfailing loyalty rendered material aid to the cause of American Independence, or from a recognized patriot, soldier or sailor or civil officer in one of the several Colonies or States or the United Colonies or States; provided she be acceptable to the Society.

Digitized by Google

The organization of the Daughters of the American Revolution of Michigan was incorporated in 1917, and has a membership of approximately 3500 women in 48 Chapters doing active war work in 48 cities and towns of Michigan.

THE DEATH OF DAN H. BALL of Marquette removes from our midst one of the oldest and most active members of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society. Only a few months ago he was instrumental in founding the Marquette County Historical Society, realizing the great need of immediate and practical work in gathering the fast vanishing historical records of the Upper Peninsula. At the midsummer meeting of the State Society, to be held at Marquette jointly with the Marquette Society, the program will be in part a memorial of the life and work of Mr. Ball, and the papers there read will be published later in the Magazine. Mr. A. E. Archambeau, of the Marquette Society, has furnished the following brief sketch of the life of Mr. Ball:

Dan H. Ball, senior member of the well known law firm of Ball & Ball, was one of the best known lawyers of the Northern Peninsula of Michigan, and maintained his offices at Marquette, Marquette County. Mr. Ball was born at Sempronius, New York, January 15, 1836, in the spring of which year his parents removed to Michigan, settling on a farm in Washtenaw County. There he resided until his 16th year, when in 1852 his father died and the family moved to Albion, Michigan. After a year at Albion College, Mr. Ball taught school during the winters, and followed farming during the summers, his family having in the meantime gone back to the farm. In 1856 he entered the liter-

Digitized by Google

ary department of the University of Michigan, at Ann Arbor, and subsequently engaged in teaching at Hamburg, Michigan, and for a year or two in the State of Illinois. In 1860 he entered the law department of the University of Michigan, but his plans were cut short by the death of a brother who was engaged in the grocery and provision business at Marquette, and he removed there and temporarily assumed the management of that business. He next engaged in newspaper work, being for two years part owner and editor of the *Lake Superior News,* and later of the *Lake Superior Journal.* He had been admitted to the bar before removing to Marquette and in 1864 began practice, opening an office at that place. Two years later he removed to Houghton County, where he entered into a partnership with James B. Ross, and continued there until 1870, when he again took up his residence in Marquette. He established a large and lucrative practice. Dan H. Ball was register of the United States Land Office at Marquette from 1862 to 1865, and served as prosecuting attorney of Marquette County during 1864-5.

HON. ADDISON A. KEISER, in acknowledging receipt of the Memorial to the late Hon. Lawton T. Hemans published by the Historical Commission, calls attention to a bit of verse which he found upon the desk at which Mr. Hemans served the State as a member of the Railroad Commission. The clipping bears evidence of much handling and of having been carried for some considerable time. In speaking of the verse and of Mr. Hemans, Mr. Keiser writes:

"While my acquaintance with Mr. Hemans was not of an intimate character, it was my privilege to meet him, both as

Digitized by Google

a member of the Commission and privately, a number of times, and to know him to that extent. I can readily understand how the sentiment put into verse by J. G. Holland would appeal to him. The lines are as follows:

'God give us men! A time like this demands
Strong minds, great hearts, true faith and ready hands;
Men whom the lust of office does not kill;
Men whom the spoils of office cannot buy;
Men who possess opinions and a will;
Men who have honor,—men who will not lie;
Men who can stand before a demagogue,
And damn his treacherous flatteries without winking!
Tall men, sun-crowned, who live above the fog
in public duty, and in private thinking:
For while the rabble with their thumb-worn creeds,
Their large professions, and their little deeds,—
Mingle in selfish strife, lo! Freedom weeps,
Wrong rules the land, and waiting Justice sleeps!'

"Mr. Hemans was a man who in character towered above the ordinary human standard. While not insensible to unjust criticism, he was fearless in the exercise of his judgment in every official act. As his successor upon the Michigan Railroad Commission, it has been my privilege to read very many opinions and reports prepared by him. They indicate a comprehensive grasp and understanding of the important facts and conditions under consideration and an evident desire to administer exact justice. The termination of Mr. Hemans' public activities was a distinct loss to the State."

EXCELLENT WORK IS BEING DONE by many chapters of the Daughters of the American Revolution in making records of the boys who have left for the front. Miss Sue I. Silliman, of the Abiel Fellows Chapter, D. A. R., Three Rivers, has sent

Digitized by Google

to the State Historical Commission specially valuable records of this nature. Mrs. W. M. Stebbins of Hastings, Barry County, chairman of the State Committee, Home Ties and War Records, D. A. R., is using a letter of appeal and instruction that seems specially useful, which is as follows:

STATE COMMITTEE

HOME TIES AND WAR RECORDS

MICHIGAN

My dear Mrs. ————————

Have you ever thought what it would mean to the boys from your particular locality to feel that their record in this war was being kept? Do you even know the boys who are fighting for you?

After six weeks of constant work along this line the Emily Virginia Mason Chapter, in Barry County, feels confident that there is a value to such work that cannot be overestimated. The plan followed by that Chapter is recommended by this Committee.

HISTORICAL VALUE. There is little question but that, in years to come, the record of the men who are fighting today will be as eargerly sought as is the record of the Revolutionary soldiers now. It is much easier to keep track of the men NOW than it will be to look them up after years have passed. If every locality or County would make a record at this time of all her men in service and then try to get into print, after the war, a book of Michigan soldiers the contribution to history would be invaluable.

PHYSICAL VALUE. While it may be impracticable to take up any effort to supply all the men with any specified

Digitized by Google

articles (such as the knitted garments and comfort bags in Barry County) yet the fact of writing to and receiving letters from all the men in service from a given locality will put the writer in touch with any special needs of the men, in many cases such attention can be given as to result in the gratitude of the men and their families. You are asked to especially study the letter used in Barry County, as contained in the enclosed outline because of the fact that nine out of ten men have answered it and have expressed the utmost thanks for it. You are also advised that you MUST enclose stamp, self-addressed envelope if you wish to accomplish any good work from this work. Such a plan makes it very easy for the boy to write to you.

MENTAL VALUE. The effect of a letter such as that called to your attention will surprise you. The men seem to be deeply touched by the fact that the D. A. R. society has thought about them and will pay them the courtesy of a letter now and then during the war. They are also pleased to know that some one is enough interested to keep their record.

MORAL VALUE. If "some one back home" seems to care and is interested in the welfare of a man, he will unquestionably put forth greater effort to prove his worth. He will be truer to the ideals with which he left home, if he knows that home people are watching him. He will be more desirous to return to his own town and state if he feels that people have come to know him and less apt to settle elsewhere after the war. This binding of a man to his own locality and bringing him back to it should prove of great value to the State of Michigan.

METHOD. Obtain the name and address of every man from your County who is in service.

HOW? The drafted men are easy and the enlisted men

Digitized by Google

hard, but the latter really need you most because they seem to have a feeling that no one has remembered them while all the banquets, etc., have been lavished upon the new army. This is only true, of course, because the new men have gone in large bunches while the enlisted men have gone in most cases alone.

The County clerk will give you a list of all men who have gone under the draft from your County. In the smaller Counties if the list is arranged very carefully leaving a space under each name (and all in alphabetical order) and is mailed to Divisional Headquarters at Camp Custer, where up to date all our Michigan men have first gone, I think there is no question but that the Company address of the man will be furnished you. In case you cannot get them in this way use local boys to help you. The boys are interested in the work and it helps them and you to use one or more of them in gaining information.

The enlisted mens' names can be had in these ways:

(1) Through your Y. M. C. A. director.

(2) Through your local newspapers. They already have many names on their mailing list and will help you by news items asking people to send you names of these boys.

(3) Local boys whom you know will help you in the large camps.

With names and addresses obtained you are ready to work.

Buy a record book with an index (you may have to use a separate index). Card index would be good if the cards were large enough to keep all data that will accumulate. Loose leaf ledger is undoubtedly the very best. Give every boy a whole page. After your letter is sent and date noted on the boy's page, and when his reply is received, you are to note on his page all the information that is desirable for history, and

Digitized by Google

afterward to note his changes of address as you may be informed of them.

The follow up work should be planned by each locality and done just as may best please the Chapter. It will be easy to find a way to raise the necessary money for postage and stationery which will be the largest item and will run into a hundred dollars easily if the work is thoroughly done.

This work is not easy, but it is tremendously worth while and will become so fascinating, if systematically done, that the time will seem most profitably spent.

Your State Committee will be very glad to answer any and all questions and to give any assistance possible.

Begin the work at once. We hope the war may very soon end and the record can not be made one half so easily after the men are out of the service.

THE ANNUAL MEETING OF THE MICHIGAN PIONEER AND HISTORICAL SOCIETY, held in the House of Representatives at Lansing, May 27, 28 and 29 jointly with the midwinter meeting which was postponed from Bay City on account of war activities at that time, was one of the most inspiring events that have taken place in the history of the Society during its existence. This spirit was born of the great war in which we are now engaged. The program was patriotic throughout. The keynote was struck in President Carton's address which is published in another place in this number. The music was patriotic and inspiring, being greatly assisted by the Fife and Drum Corps of veterans of the Civil War and members of the Women's Relief Corps. Patriotic music was dispensed by the orchestra and by the vigorous and thrilling chorus of the Boys'

Digitized by Google

Industrial School. Mr. Harold Jarvis of Detroit sang in his usual pleasing manner, making the closing evening one long to be remembered. The House was packed as but once before. A goodly number were on hand even at the first session which opened at 2 p. m. on the 27th, and there was not a lagging moment in the three days. As a result of the meeting a degree of inspiration and strength for the great cause for which America is fighting was carried away to the homes and communities of members, and renewed stimulus was received for all the activities of patriotic loyal Michigan that are helping Uncle Sam and his Allies to win "a place in the sun" for democracy.

The papers read and addresses given were as follows:

President Augustus C. Carton, *What Can a Historical Society Do Now?;* Rev. Seth Reed (Flint), *Reminiscences of Civil War Days;* Mrs. William H. Wait (Ann Arbor), *Work in Peace and in War, Michigan Daughters of the American Revolution;* Mrs. James H. Campbell (Grand Rapids), *Lafayette and the Lafayette Portrait;* Cornelia Richardson (Bay City), *Pioneer Schools of Bay City;* Mrs. Irene Pomeroy Shields (Bay City), *Historical Incidents in the History of Bay County;* Prof. R. Clyde Ford (Ypsilanti), *France in the Great War;* Mr. L. S. Foote (Saginaw), *Reminiscences of Early Saginaw;* Hon Wm. S. Linton (Saginaw), *The Saginaw Valley as Related to the Great War;* Miss Sue I. Silliman (Three Rivers), *Michigan's "Medal of Honor" Men;* Hon. Fred M. Warner (Farmington), *Michigan's Red Cross Work;* Rev. Norman B. Wood (Elsie), *Indian Wars of Michigan;* Hon. Edward Frensdorf (Hudson), *History of Jackson State Prison;* Hon. W. L. Jenks (Port Huron), *Judge Woodward and the Episode of the Forty-five Laws;* Hon. C. E. Bement (Lansing), *Industrial History of Lansing as Affected by the*

Digitized by Google

Great War; Mr. James Cooke Mills (Saginaw), *Romance of Lumbering on the Saginaw;* Mrs. Basil Clarke (Flint), *Experiences of the Great War;* Hon. Chase S. Osborn (Sault Ste. Marie), *America and the War.*

Delegates and speakers were present from twenty-four counties. Owing to the length of some papers and addresses the time was not sufficient for all delegates who had prepared reports to give them. Next year a special session will be held for these reports so that all may be heard.

The music breathed the spirit of the times, inspiring every listener. The pupils of Lansing schools both public and State, particularly the choruses of the Boys' Industrial School, St. Mary's, and the High School, showed the patriotism of the coming generation. History lived anew in the beautiful pageant and quaint chorus in costume, "Long, Long Ago." Several soloists and artists proved the musical abilities of Lansing people. Much pleasure was derived from the inspiring fiddle of Dr. Cowles in Money Musk and Fisher's Hornpipe. Taken as a whole the program surpassed the most ardent expectations.

THE TIME HAS ARRIVED for the annual reunions of families; and while these commonly are supposed to have little about them of permanent historical value they are often exceedingly interesting and have possibilities for history. Genealogical data is often of much value in solving knotty historical problems, for example, in which the blood relationships of persons and families must be determined. The family Bible on the parlor center table which used to be a source for births, marriages and deaths seems to have disappeared along with

Digitized by Google

the center table, and there seems to be a place for the "family historian." If there be no historian in the family, it might be well to appoint one. Duly appointed and qualified, the family historian might well take advantage of the general good feeling among the members of the family on these occassions, to gather up the general agreement as to what the family believes regarding itself, including biographical incidents and memories of important events in the life of the community. These records should be made a part of the permanent records of the local historical society, and accessible to the writer of biography and history.

There are some things we had not thought of in connection with family trees, which we find pleasantly set forth in an exchange; we here reproduce, for the service of family reunions, and similar expressions of genealogical good fellowship, some of them:

When a man climbs up in his family tree and looks down upon the passing throng he has outlived his usefulness.

Some of those family trees cast a lot of shade.

It is a fortunate thing for some imposing family trees that they have their roots well out of sight.

If you have no family tree, branch out for yourself.

I assure you madam, my ancestors came over with the first settlers. Yes, no doubt, they had no immigration laws then.

Boston policewomen are detailed to prevent young men whose ancestors did not come over in the Mayflower, from accosting young women whose ancestors did.

It is better to be proud of your children, than your ancestors.

He is descended from a great family—and is still descending.

Digitized by Google

The Scotchman's family tree has bare limbs because his ancestors wore kilts.

It used to take three generations to make a gentleman. Now it takes three automobiles.

You can never tell what kind of a life a man lived by the size of his tombstone.

Even a tombstone will say good things about a man when he's down.

Nearly every family tree has a graft somewhere.

Its grand to have a warrior in your family tree, unless it is your wife.

Some men are as proud of their ancestors as a self-made man is of himself.

A man may boast of his ancestors because he has nothing to look forward to.

When you hear a man boast about his ancestors, it's a safe bet that his descendants will have no occasion to boast of theirs.

Some people say man is descended from the monkey. Even a monkey should be considered innocent until proved guilty.

The "family tree" like the ordinary tree usually finds that the twig farthest from the main root does the most fluttering.

According to Hubbard the forbidden fruit of smugness, vanity, sloth, gluttony, envy, coveteousness, and lust for position, all grow on the "family tree."

SUPT. JOHN A. DOELLE, of the Houghton schools, secretary-treasurer of the Keweenaw Historical Society, reports that his society has disbursed during the year ending March 13, 1918, $359.29 for purchase of books, printing, postage, etc.,

Digitized by Google

and still has cash on hand, $60.53. A bibliography of the collection of this society was published in the July number of the Magazine for 1917, (pp. 129-155); the new books purchased are as follows:

Bailey, J. R., Mackinac, Formerly Michilimackinac. n. p., 1895.

Brown, S. R., Western Gazetteer; or, Emigrant's Directory. N. Y., 1817.

Carver, J., Travels through the Interior Part of North America. Lond., 1781.

Colton, C., Tour of the American Lakes. Lond., 1833.

Daily Mining Gazette, Houghton, Mich., Sept. 14, 1899-March 31, 1900. 3v.

Covert, W. C., Glory of the Pines: Story of the Ontonagon. Phila., 1914.

Ellet, Mrs., Summer Rambles in the West. N. Y., 1853.

Fleischmann, C. L., Portage Mine—a Report of the Examination, [etc.] N. Y., 1859.

Foster, J. W., Geology and Metallurgy of the Iron Ores of Lake Superior; being a Report Addressed to the Board of Directors of the Iron Cliffs Co. N. Y., 1865.

Gale, G., Upper Mississippi; or Historical Sketches of the Mound Builders, the Indian Tribes and the Progress of Civilization in the Northwest; from A. D. 1600 to the present time. Chic., 1867.

Greeley, Horace, Recollections of a Busy Life. N. Y., 1868.

History, Resources, and Prospects of the Saginaw Valley. The Railroad Excursion. The Flint & Pere Marquette Railroad. 1862.

Illinois State Historical Society Transactions. Springfield, Society, 1916.

Industrial Age. L'Anse, April 25, 1874-August 15, 1874. 1v.

Digitized by Google

Jackson, C. T., Full Exposure of the Conduct of Dr. Chas. T. Jackson, and Giving Justice to Foster & Whitney. n. p., 1849.

Johnson, E. F., Navigation of the Lakes and Navigable Communications Therefrom to the Seaboard, and to the Mississippi River, and Relation of the Former to the Lines of Railway Leading to the Pacific. Hartford, 1866.

Kellogg, L. P., Early Narratives of the Northwest, 1634-1699 (Original narratives). N. Y., 1917.

Kiepert, H., Atlas Antiquus. Berlin, Ger., n. d.

King, J. L., Trouting on the Brulé River; or, Summer-Wayfaring in the Northern Wilderness. N. Y., 1880.

Michigan Geological Survey, Atlas Accompanying Reports on Upper Peninsula, 1869-'73. N. Y., n. d.

Michigan Senate—Governor's message. Jan 8, 1839. Pub. by the State.

Parker, A. A., Trip to the West and Texas. Bost., 1836.

Picturesque Detroit and Environs. Northhampton, Mass., 1893.

Shaw, J., Pioneer Life in Kansas. Haskell Ptg. Co., 1886.

Sketches of the City of Detroit, State of Michigan, Past and Present. Detroit, 1855.

Steele, Mrs., A Summer Journey in the West. N. Y., 1841.

Swan, L. B., Journal of a Trip to Michigan in 1841. N. Y., 1904.

Sweetser, C. H., Tourists' and Invalids' Guide to the Northwest. N. Y., 1868.

Tanner, J., Memoires de John Tanner. 2v. Paris, 1835.

Thompson, T. S., Thompson's Coast Pilot. Detroit, Mich., 1869.

U. S. House of Representatives. Report from the Governor and Presiding Judge of the Territory of Michigan. March

Digitized by Google

18, 1806. (In Rep't of Committee of House of Representatives) Wash.

Schoolcraft and Allen. Expedition to the Northwest Indians in 1832. Phila., 1834.

U. S. Senate. Report on the Canal around Fall's of St. Mary's. Wash., D. C., 1849.

Speeches of Buchanan and Benton on Bill to Admit Michigan into the Union. n. p., 1837.

Winchell, A., [& others]. Atlas of the State of Michigan. Detroit, Mich., 1873.

Wright, J. N., Where Copper was King. Bost., 1905.

The following books have been donated to the Society during the past year:

BOOKS		DONOR
Agassiz, G.	Founding of the Calumet & Hecla Mine. n. p., 1916, ...	J. T. Reeder
Burton, M. A.	List of Manuscripts from The Burton Historical Collection. Detroit, Mich., 1917.....	Publishers
Cornell, S. S.	Cornell's Physical Geography. Appleton, 1883.	Jos. Bruneau
"	Cornell's Physical Geography. Appleton, 1886.	T. Taper
Fuller, G. N.	Economic and Social Beginnings of Michigan. Lansing, Published by State, 1916.....	Mich. Hist. Com.
Hodgins, J. G.	Lovell's General Geography. Montreal, 1875.	T. Taper

Digitized by Google

Kellogg, L. P.	Frontier Retreat on the Upper Ohio (Wis. Hist. Collections.) Madison, 1917.....	J. T. Reeder
Merk, F.	Economic History of Wisconsin during the Civil War Decade. Madison, Pub. by Wis. State Hist. Soc., 1916.....	J. T. Reeder
Michigan Legislature.	Village Charter —an Act. Pub. by the State, 1895.	Library
Michigan Pioneer and Historical Collections, one volume. Lansing, 1881.....		Samuel Brady
Oliphant, Mrs.,	The Brownloes. (From Eagle Harbor Library) N. Y., 1886.	Mrs. W. J. Uren
Proceedings of the 11th Annual Conference of Historical Societies. 1916....		Washington, D. C.
Wisconsin State Historical Society	Proceedings, 1916. Madison, Pub. by the Society, 1916.....	J. T. Reeder

Other Gifts are as follows:

DONOR

Harroun, Mrs. Mary Houghton, Sante Fe, New Mexico. Journal of the museum of New Mexico. Scrapbook containing articles on Dr. Douglass Houghton. Two original letters of Dr. Douglass Houghton to his father, 1838 and to his brother, 1829.

Morgan, Mrs. Harriet Douglass Houghton, Coldwater Mich. Paper prepared by her about her father, Dr. Douglass Houghton.

Digitized by Google

Brady, Samuel. Annual membership card for the Keweenaw Historical Society, in the National Historical Society. 1917.

Brady, Samuel. Subscription to the journal of American History for 1918.

Reeder, J. T. Programs and list of medal men—50th anniversary of Calumet & Hecla Mining Co.

Reeder, J. T. Fourteen mining reports.

Reeder, J. T. Picture of Douglass Houghton monument, Fredonia, N. Y.

Reeder, J. T. Picture of crowd at Keweenaw Historical picnic, Eagle River, 1917.

Hubbard, Dr. L. L. Five early mining reports.

Guck, Homer. Letters written during the Spanish-American War.

More, Mrs. James H. Daguerreotype of the wife of Dr. Redfield, a prominent physician buried at Eagle Harbor, 1868.

Langdon, Thos. Picture of the graduating class of the Houghton High School, 1887.

Loranger, S., Ontonagon, Mich. Geological map of Isle Royale, L. S., 1847.

Brougham, Nellie, Calumet, Mich. Fifteen Houghton High School commencement programs, etc. One superintendent's meeting program.

Chase, L. A. Old fashioned lamp lighters from Delaware mine.

Doelle, J. A. Curios from Delaware mine. Four pictures of old high school. Local war relief league papers, 1918. Papers relating to the Conglomerate mine.

Edwards, James. Two pictures: John Duncan and James Cooper.

Gray, W. T. Fifty cents—Confederate money.

Digitized by Google

Houghton High School. Family histories of high school students written by themselves, 1917.

Jacker, Francis. Scrapbook containing many articles written by himself on early times in the Copper Country.

Kaspers, Mrs Nellie. Picture of Mr. and Mrs. Michael Finnegan, 1866.

Lewis, H. T. Twenty-two pictures, mostly of the Copper Country.

Michigan State Geologist. Geological map of Michigan, 1916.

Osborn, David. Two-hundred and forty-seven early Mining Gazettes and Northwestern Mining Journals, 1868-1879.

Rashleigh, Mrs. Jos. Houghton High School announcement, 1889-'90.

Rompf, H. Report of treasurer of Portage Township, 1915 and 1916.

Rowe, W. Souvenir, Michigan National guard, Houghton, Mich., 1900.

Ruppe, Mrs. Peter, Calumet, Mich. Picture of Mrs. Frances Myer, Mrs. Long and Mrs. Ruppe.

Seaman, A. E. Notice of meeting of Houghton County Historical Society and Mining Institute, 1866.

Shields, R. H. Three fiftieth anniversary programs of the Houghton Methodist (1909) and Hancock Congregational churches (1912).

Strobel, Mrs. Chas. Copper Journal extra, Sept. 9, 1895 containing account of Osceola mine fire.

PAPERS

Ferrey, Mrs. M. B. Need of Historical Work in the Upper Peninsula of Michigan.

Henwood, Edwin. Portage Lake and Lake Superior Ship Canal.

Digitized by Google

Nicholls, Alfred. Sketches of the Early Cornish Miners.

Robinson, O. W. Recollections of Civil War Conditions in the Copper Country.

Digitized by Google

Report on the Archives in the Department of State, State Capitol, Lansing

THE ARCHIVES of the Department of State are filed in an upper and lower vault in the office of the Secretary of State, in an attic room over the Senate Chamber and in a small room on the fourth floor. Most of the papers are classified and are filed in such a manner that they are accessible to anyone wishing to use them.

(A)—Lower vault.
(B)—Upper vault.
(C)—Attic, room 1, over Senate Chamber.
(D)—Fourth floor, small room.
(fb)—File box.

Appointments

Applications, notaries public, April 1 to July 1, 1901, 1 bundle. (C)

Appointment of drain commissioners, 1913 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Qualification of notaries public, 1904 to 1916, 5 fb. (A)

Resignations, 1807 to 1849, 1907 to 1917, 2 fb: 1807 to 1849 (B); 1907 to 1917. (A)

Automobiles, motor cycles, etc.

Applications for motor registration, 1910, 1 bundle. (B)

Cash book, motor vehicles, including licenses, fees, etc., 1914 to 1915, 13 v. (A)

Chauffeurs, convictions of, 1913, 1 bundle. (B)

Convictions under motor vehicle laws, 1910 to 1911, 1916, 2 bundles and 1 filebox. (B)

Licenses

Affidavits for duplicate automobile license plates, 1912 and

Digitized by Google

1916, 1 bundle and 1 filebox. (B)

Fee book, 1903-1904, 1 book. (A)

Motor chauffeurs' licenses, 1910 to 1913, 5 v. (B)

Motor vehicle licenses, 1913, 1 v. (B)

Register of licenses, numbers of motor vehicles in Michigan, 1910 to 1913, 19 v. (B)

Owners of automobiles—names and addresses of owners with description of the machines, 1910 to 1915, 1083 bound books. (D)

Bids, contracts, specifications, etc.

Agreements, leases and contracts, 5 fb. (A)

Proposals

Construction of asylum buildings at Pontiac, 1875, 1 v. (B)

Construction of State Capitol building and buildings of State institutions, 1 fb. (B)

Bonds

Bond book of men licensed to sell steamer tickets, etc., 1916 to 1917, 1 v. (A)

Enrollment bonds, taken in pursuance of the enrolling act of 1818 for vessels in the coasting and fishing trade, 1819 to 1835, 1 v. (B)

Five million dollar loan, bonds of the State, etc., 1839 to 1844, 1 fb. (B)

List of bonds issued by the State of Michigan, 1835 to 1852. 1 bundle. (B)

Original bonds, 1837 to 1917; 5 fb: 1837 to 1900 (B); 1901 to 1917. (A)

Record of bonds of State officers, 1899 to 1917, 1 v. (A)

Census

Enumerators, 1894, 1 roll. (B)

Digitized by Google

Certificates

Board of Registration of Nurses, lists of certificates of registration, 1900 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

British subjects, 113 in number, who have certified their election in writing, Detroit, December 17, 1798, 1 fb. (B)

Nominations

Certificates of, 1910, 1 package. (A)

Vignettes and certificates, 1891 to 1909, 9 fileboxes and 5 packages. (B)

Notaries public, lists of, certified to the Senate, 1883 to 1889, 1 package. (B)

Constitutions and constitutional convention Journals

Constitutions of Michigan, 1835, 1850, 1867, 1873, and 1908: 1835, 1850 and 1908 (A); 1867 and 1873.[1] (B)

Journal of the Constitutional Convention, 1835 and 1850, 2 v. (B)

Corporations and Companies

Abstracts

Manufacturing corporations, 1863 to 1899, 2 v. (B)

Mining, 1851 to 1899, 1 v. (B)

Miscellaneous, 1852 to 1890, 2 v. (B)

Railroad, 1857 to 1900, 1 v. (B)

Articles of Association, incorporation, etc.

Cooperative associations, 1865 to 1917, 2 fb. (A)

Cooperative companies, 1913 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Foreign corporations, 46 fb. (A)

Partnership associations, 1902 to 1917, 9 v. (A)

Attorney General's opinions on corporations, 1826 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

---

1. The copies of constitutions, except that of 1908, are the engrossed originals. The constitution of 1908 is printed and mounted.

Digitized by Google

Certificates
Railroad companies
Election of directors, 1855 to 1871, 1 fb. (A)
Public utility, 1911 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)
Charters
Banks, 6 fb. (A)
Bridge, canal and plank-road corporations, 1 fb. (A)
Building and leasing corporations, 1 fb. (A)
Gas, light, and fuel companies, 1855 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)
Mining corporations, 21 fb. (A)
River and harbor improvement corporations, 1 fb. (A)
Salt and oil companies, 1 fb. (A)
Telephone corporations, 5 fb. (A)
Transportation Corporations, 2 fb. (A)
Index to corporations, 1899 to 1917, 2 v. (A)
Letters, 1900 to 1917, 2 fb. (A)
List of stockholders
American Agricultural Chemical Company, 1909 to 1914, 6 v. (A)
American Car and Foundry Company, 1909 to 1916, 9 v. (A)
Banks, 1855 to 1881, 1915 to 1916, 3 fb. (A)
Bordon Condensed Milk Company, 1914, 1 v. (A)
Bridge, ferry, insurance, river improvement, and plank-road corporations, 1912 to 1916, 1 fb. (A)
Calumet and Hecla Mining Company, 1911 to 1912, 2 v. (A)
Cambria Steel Company, 1913 to 1914, 2 v. (A)
Cluett, Peabody, and Company, 1913, 1 v. (A)
Crucible Steel Company of America, 1909 to 1914, 6 v. (A)
Detroit United Railway, 1911 to 1914, 4 v. (A)

Digitized by Google

Diamond Match Company, 1908 to 1914, 7 v. (A)
Du Pont Powder Company, 1911 to 1914, 4 v. (A)
Griffin Wheel Company, 1913 to 1914, 2 v. (A)
Lehigh Valley Coal Sales Company, December, 1912, 1 v. (A)
Mining corporations, 21 fb. (A)
National Biscuit Company, 1912 to 1914, 4 v. (A)
New York Central Railroad Company, 1914 to 1915, 2 bundles. (A)
Ohio Oil Company, 1912 to 1913, 2 v. (A)
Pullman Company, 1911 to 1914, 5 v: 1911 (B); 1911 to 1914.[2] (A)
Railroads, 1914 to 1916, 3 fb. (A)
Republic Iron and Steel Company, 1914, 1 book. (A)
Sporting clubs and summer resort corporations, 1917, 1 fb. (A)
Standard Oil Company, Indiana, Dec. 31, 1912, and 1913, 2 v. (A)
Street railway corporations, 1912 to 1916, 1 fb. (A)
Telephone corporations, 1914 to 1916, 3 fb. (A)
Union Tank Line, 1913, 1 v. (A)
Vacuum Oil Company, 1912 to 1914, 3 v. (A)
Water power and supply corporations, 1898 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)
Wells, Fargo and Company, 1913, 1 v. (A)
Westinghouse Electric and Manufacturing Company, 1909 to 1914, 6 v. (A)

Miscellaneous material

Booming and water corporations, 1 fb. (A)
Detroit, Grand Haven and Milwaukee Railway Company, 1876 to 1916, 1 fb. (A)

2. Lists for 1911 are filed in both vaults.

Digitized by Google

Location of mining companies, 1868, 1 bundle. (B)

Miscellaneous corporations, 1840 to 1917, 8 fb. (A)

North American Investment Company, 1903 to 1906, 1 fb. (A)

Railroad companies, receipts for copies of charters, amendments, etc., 1897 to 1905, 1 fb. (A)

Records

Building and Loan Association, 1889 to 1917, 5 fb. (A)

Corporations in Michigan, 1855 to 1917, 191 v: 182 v. (A); 9 v. (B)

Papers and fees received from corporations, 1904 to 1907, 1 v. (A)

Railroad companies, record of contracts and leases for equipment, 1893 to 1917, 6 v. (A)

Reports

Abstracts of, 1853 to 1909, 6 v: 4 v. (A); 2 v. (B)

Annual reports of corporations, arranged alphabetically by years, 31 fb. (A)

Banks, 1840 to 1914, 11 fb. (B)

Building associations, 1 fb. (B)

Building and loan associations, investigations and reports, 1 fb. (B)

Cooperative companies, 1903 to 1911, 1 fb. (B)

Corporation reports, 1904 to 1914, 153 v: 1904 to 1910 (B); 1911 to 1914. (A)

Electric light, gas, and land improvement companies, 1892 to 1902, 1 fb. (B)

Limited corporations, annual report, 1916, 2 fb. (A)

Lists of annual reports sent in duplicate to county clerks, 1913 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Mining companies, 1847 to 1909, 1915 to 1917, 29 volumes, 7 fileboxes, and 1 bundle: 6 fileboxes (A); rest in (B)

Digitized by Google

Miscellaneous corporations, 1899 to 1916, 32 fb: 1899 to 1911 (B); 1912 to 1916. (A)

Publishing corporations, 1 fb. (B)

Railroads, 1842 to 1875, 1883 to 1913, 6 fb: 1 fb. (A); 5 fb. (B)

Street railway corporations, 1882 to 1911, 5 fb. (B)

Telephone companies, 1900 to 1913, 8 fb. (B)

Transportation companies, 1 fb. (B)

Correspondence

Letter-copy-books, 1857 to 1904, 182 v. (C)

Letters received by the Secretary of State, 1806 to 1846, 1848 to 1897, 1906 to 1913, 233 v: 1806 to 1897 (C); 1906 to 1913. (B)

Military letters, rules and regulations, 1807 to 1917, 1 fb. (B)

Miscellaneous letters and papers, 1807 to 1847, 1 fb. (B)

Recorded letters, 1814 to 1820, 1 v. (B)

State institutions and State and U. S. officers, letters from, 1899 to 1902, 3 file cases. (B)

Criminal matters

Commutation of sentences, June 15, 1906 to 1917, 1 v. (A)

Extradition fees of other States, 1897, 1 fb. (A)

Pardons, 1847 to 1916, 5 fb: 1847 to 1901 (B); 1902 to 1916. (A)

Parole record, October 3, 1895 to 1917, 2 v. (A)

Paroles, 1895 to 1915, 4 fb: 1 fb. (A); 3 fb. (B)

Records

Pardons, August 18, 1891 to 1917, 1 v. (A)

Warrants, November 28, 1877 to 1917, 7 v. (A)

Elections

Canvass of votes, 1882 to 1894, 1 v. (B)

County canvassers' statements, 1898 to 1916, 38 v. (B)

Digitized by Google

Election expenses, affidavits and statements, 1890 to 1901, 1 fb. (B)

Official canvass

Amendments to the constitution, 1857 to 1893, 1 v. (B)

Circuit judges, 1857 to 1893, 1 v. (B)

Justices of the Supreme Court, 1857 to 1893, 1 v. (B)

Members of Congress, 1856 to 1893, 1 v. (B)

Presidential electors, 1856 to 1892, 1 v. (B)

Primary, fall and special elections, 1894 to 1917, 8 volumes and 6 bundles. (B)

Regents of the University, 1857 to 1893, 2 v. (B)

State officers, 1856 to 1892, 1 v. (B)

Petitions for recount of ballots, 1916 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Registered voters; record of registration returns made by city and township clerks, 1891 to 1893, 1 v. (B)

Returns

Election returns, 1819 to 1915, 66 fb. (B)

Official returns, 1870 to 1873, 3 v. (B)

Amendments to the constitution

Circuit judges

Justices of the Supreme Court

Members of Congress

Presidential electors

Regents of the University

State officers

Record of election returns and canvass, October 3, 1827 to 1898, 24 v. (B)

Financial records

Accounts and claims, 1806 to 1853, 2 fb. (B)

Cash books, 1886 to 1914, 47 v: 1886 to 1905 (B); 1906 to 1914. (A)

Fiscal year statements, 1908 to 1917, 3 fb. (A)

Digitized by Google

Journals, 1872 to 1886, 1901, 5 v. (B)
Ledgers, 1899 to 1906, 1909 to 1913. (A)
Office accounts, 1917, 1 fb. (A)
Pay rolls, 1894 to 1899, 1 fb. (B)
State finances, 1857 to 1870, 1 bundle. (B)
Time books, 1894 and 1914, 2 v: 1914 (A); 1894. (B)

Governor's office records

Executive Acts, August 7, 1805 to 1917, 90 fb: 1805 to 1904 (B); 1905 to 1917. (A)
Executive Journal, Territorial and State, 1814 to 1917, 13 v. (A)
Executive Journal, Appendix A, April 4, 1863 to June 18, 1891, 1 v. (A)
Index
Executive Journal, 1836 to 1917, 3 v. (A)
Territorial Executive Journal, to 1836, 1 v. (A)
Messages and proclamations, among the Executive Acts. (A) and (B)

Indexes, catalogues, etc.

Catalogue of Books in the Principal Vault [of the] Department of State. Compiled under Supervision of Washington Gardner, Secretary of State, March, 1896. Robert Smith & Co., State Printers and Binders, Lansing, [1896].
Deposit book, 1902 to 1910, 1 v. (B)
Index to file cases, 2 v. (A); 1 v. (B)
Shipping-room journal, 1886 to 1894, 1 v. (B)

Internal improvements and lands

Advertised lands, list of advertised lands restored to market, 1874 to 1894, 1 fb. (A)
Affidavits of claimants to public lands taken before commissioners, on Niles Reservation, 1840 to 1846, 1 fb. (A)
Canal apportionment, 1865 to 1868, 1 tin box. (B)

Digitized by Google

Claims
Against the State, 1837 to 1843, 1 fb. (B)
On University and State lands in the Grand River district, 1840, 1 fb. (A)
Clinton and Kalamazoo Canal, papers, 1837 to 1843, 1 fb. (B)
Contractors and agents, pay rolls, salary receipts, etc., 1837 to 1847, 1 fb. (A)
Deeds
Grand Rapids and Indiana Railroad Company, deeds to the State, 1876, 1 fb. (A)
Lighthouse sites. (A)
Miscellaneous deeds, 1868 to 1914, 1 v. (A)
Papers and deeds conveying property to the State, 1841 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)
Record of deeds and evidences of title of the State of Michigan to public lands, 1836 to 1917, 2 v. (A)
State deeds, 1837 to 1843, 1 fb. (B)
Land certificates, numbers 3 to 51,800, 100 fb. (A)
Locating county seats, State roads, etc., 1807 to 1849, 1 fb. (B)
Military road, papers, 1870 to 1873, 1 fb. (A)
Miscellaneous records, 1837 to 1868, 1 v. (A)
Patents
Index of patents, 1842 to 1896, 3 v; assignor, 1843 to 1896, 2 v; grantee, 1844 to 1896, 3 v. (A)
Records of patents, Bois Blanc, Clinton and Kalamazoo Canal, Congressional land grants, etc., 84 v. (A)
St. Mary's Fall Ship Canal patents, 1 v. (A)
Public lands, salt spring lands, primary school and University lands, etc., papers relating to, 1816 to 1859, 1 fb. (A)

Digitized by Google

Railroad lands, grants, etc.

Amboy, Lansing and Traverse Bay Railroad, 1861 to 1868, 1 fb. (A)

Chicago and Northwestern Railroad, 1868 to 1914, 1 fb. (A)

Detroit, Mackinac and Marquette Railroad, 1 fb. (A)

Jackson, Lansing and Saginaw Railroad, 1861 to 1868, 1 fb. (A)

Marquette, Houghton, and Ontonagon Railroad, 1873 to 1884, 1 fb. (A)

Menominee River Railroad, 1878 and 1881, 1 fb. (A)

Michigan Southern Railroad, 2 fb. (A)

Northern Railroad, 1837, 1 fb. (A)

Ontonagon and Brule River Railroad, 1896 to 1907, 1 fb. (A)

Ontonagon, Houghton and Brule River Railroad, 1 fb. (A)

Roads of Michigan, index to acts concerning them, 1805 to 1889,1 v. (A)[3]

St. Mary's Falls Ship Canal, papers, 1855 to 1874, 1 fb. (A)

School lands, list of school lands sold in November, 1842, 1 fb. (A)

State land office, sales of lands, April 1 to June 30, 1847, 1 fb. (A)

State lands

Township plats, Upper and Lower Peninsula, 7 v. (A)

Transcripts of land holdings of the State by order of act of February 11, 1848, 1 v. (A)

University and school lands, sold in 1841, 1 fb. (A)

3. Index is in back of volume marked "State Lands, I".

Digitized by Google

Legislative

Bills, original bills of the Senate and House, 1844 to 1915, 81 volumes, 8 bundles and 2 file-boxes: all in (B), except 8 bundles, 1909 to 1915, which are in (A)

Corporation laws of other states, letters regarding, 1901, 1 bundle. (B)

Engrossed laws

State, 1838 to 1915, 83 v. (B)

Territorial, 1806 to 1835, 19 v. (B)

House bills, record of, 1901, 2 v. (B)

Journals of the Territorial Council and State Legislature, July 1, 1805 to March 17, 1847, 37 volumes and 1 bundle. (B)

Legislative committees

Proceedings before the joint investigation committee appointed by the Legislature of 1881 to investigate the management of the State House of Correction, 1881, 1 package. (B)

Rejected testimony in the investigation of the Michigan Asylum for the Insane, by the committee of the Legislature of 1879, 1 package. (B)

Testimony taken before the committee in regard to the Grand Rapids and Indiana Railroad Company, 1873, 1 book. (B)

Testimony taken before the committee on election of the House of Representatives at Grayling, March 4, 5 and 6, 1891, regarding the election of Devere Hall, member-elect from Ogemaw district; also at Roscommon, March 18, 1891, 1 packet. (B)

Northwest Territory, laws of, 1796, 1 bundle. (B)

Revised statutes and recorded laws, 1835 to 1846, 10 v. (B)

Digitized by Google

Senate and House members, books charged, 1837 to 1838, 1 v. (B)

Session laws, 1836 to 1837, 2 v. (B)

Maps, atlases, etc.

Amboy, Lansing and Traverse Bay Railroad, 1857 and 1858, 2 ms. maps. (B)

Canal from Homer to Dexter, 1838, 1 ms. map and profile. (A)

Clinton and Kalamazoo Canal, 1837 and 1839, ms. maps: 1837 (B); 1839. (A)

Clinton Canal from Gun Lake to Lake Michigan, 1 ms. map. (B)

Clinton River and Clinton and Kalamazoo Canal, 1843, 2 maps. (A)

Geological Survey Atlas, 1873, printed maps. (A)

Lansing, map of city of. (A)

Lighthouses, maps of sites, 1 fb. (A)

National forests, 1908, printed map. (B)

Post Route map, Michigan and Wisconsin, 1901. (B)

United States Road from Detroit to Chicago, 4 printed maps in roll. (A)

Military affairs

Laws, Rules and Regulations for the Government of the Michigan State Troops. Detroit, Daily Post Book and Job Printing Department, 1875. (B)

Laws, Rules and Regulations Governing the Militia, National Guard, Naval Brigade. Compiled and Arranged by Direction of the State Military Board, 1902. Lansing, Wynkoop Hallenbeck Crawford Co., 1902. (B)

Manual of the Militia Laws of the State of Michigan. Also Rules and Regulations Prescribed by the State Military Board for Government of Michigan State Troops. Com-

Digitized by Google

piled and Arranged by Direction of State Military Board, 1891. Lansing, Thompson and Cook, Printers and Binders, [1891]. (B)

Rules and Regulations, Michigan State Troops, Adopted and Prescribed by the State Military Board. [Detroit, Daily Post Book and Job Printing Department, 1876]. (B)

Miscellaneous

Applications

Building sites for churches and schools under Act No. 231, April 3, 1848, 1 fb. (A)

Survey and notices of survey, 1906 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Architects, list of registered architects, December 11, 1916 to 1917, 1 v. (A)

Contractors and agents, 1 fb. (A)

Copyright of Supreme Court reports, 1 fb. (B)

Dentists, lists of, in Michigan, 1915 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Detroit Female Seminary, papers, 1830 to 1844, 1 fb. (A)

Indian affairs, 1816 to 1836, 1 fb. (B)

Investigations

Michigan Asylum for the Insane at Kalamazoo, 1891, 2 packets. (B)

Michigan Soldiers' Home, 1891, 1 packet. (B)

Itinerant vendors' licenses, 1902 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Labels and trademarks, records of, 1899 to 1917, 4 v. (A)

Lansing City taxes, 1859 to 1865, 1 tin box. (B)

Legislative districts, apportionment, etc., 1 fb. (B)

Local option, returns, reports, etc., 1889 to 1905, 1 fb. (B)

Michigan School for Deaf and Dumb at Flint, papers, 1850 to 1883, 1 fb. (B)

Miscellaneous private papers, 1916 to 1917, 2 fb. (A)

Petitions and recommendations, 1805 to 1842, 3 fb. (B)

Digitized by Google

Records, forms for documents of Department of State, 1816 to 1895, 1 v. (B)

Southern boundary and Toledo War, 1835 to 1837, 1 fb. (B)

Testimony in the investigation of Justice Daniel Sheehan of Detroit, 1883, 1 v. (B)

Townships and villages, organized by supervisors, 3 fb: 1 fb. (A); 2 fb. (B)

Oaths of office

Index, 1835 to 1850, 1 v. (A)

Oaths of office, 1805 to 1915, 15 fb: 1805 to 1902 (B); 1903 to 1915. (A)

Records of oaths, May 9, 1835 to March 14, 1850, 2 v. (A)

Officers, boards and commissioners

Attorney General's opinions, 1900 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Board of Internal Improvements, claims presented to, 1 fb. (A)

Board of State Auditors

Claims presented, 1838 to 1848, 1 fb. (A)

Resolutions, 1909 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Civil officers, record of, 1836 to 1899, 2 v. (A)

Commissioners of deeds in other states for the State of Michigan, including names, residence, date of appointment, etc., 1845 to 1899, 1 v. (A)

County officers, record of, 1884 to 1894, 1 v. (B)

Justices of the peace, 1840 to 1875, 5 fb. (B)

Miscellaneous material

Investigation in the matter of mis-conduct of Michael J. Doyle and Louis W. Munthe, 1891, 1 packet, (B)

Motion and briefs in the case of William McPherson, Jr., vs. Robert R. Blacker, Secretary of State, 1891 and 1892, 1 package. (B)

Testimony in the case of Arthur Barnard et al. vs. Angus

Digitized by Google

McIntyre, Sheriff of Saginaw County, 1885 to 1886, 1 bundle. (B)

Notaries public

Index, 1863 to 1917, 7 v. (A)

Record, 1863 to 1917, 5 volumes and card index. (A)

Public officers, list of, October 4, 1814 to December 15, 1832, 1 v. (B)

Sheriffs

Record of warrants, 1913 to 1917, 1 v. (A)

Returns, 1880 to 1916, 6 fb: 1880 to 1912 (B); 1913 to 1916. (A)

State Board of Equalization, proceedings, 1906, 1 v. (A)

State Medical Board

Members

Eclectic members, 1899 to 1906, 1 fb. (A)

Homeopathic doctors, 1899 and 1901, 1 fb. (A)

Physicians of the regular school, 1899 to 1903, 1 fb. (A)

State officers, elective and appointive, record of, 1898 to 1917, 1 v. (A)

Receipts and vouchers

Duplicate reports from county clerks, 1902 to 1912, 4 fb. (B)

Emigrant agent receipts, 1859, 1 fb. (B)

Postage receipts, 1912 to 1914, 1 fb. (A)

State Land office

Receipts for maps, 1895, 1 fb. (A)

Statements and vouchers of expenses, to November 30, 1846, 1 fb. (A)

State Treasurer, receipts from, 1863 to 1917, 4 fb: 1863 to 1905 (B); 1906 to 1907. (A)

Digitized by Google

Reports and inventories
- Board of Dentistry, reports, 1894 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)
- Board of Registration in Medicine, reports, 1900 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)
- Commissioners to locate the county seat
  - Barry County, report, June 2, 1833, 1 fb. (A)
  - Clinton County, report, November 8, 1833, 1 fb. (A)
- Game and Fish Warden, monthly reports, 1897 to 1917, 4 fb: 1897 to 1907 (B); 1908 to 1917. (A)
- Michigan Asylums for Insane
  - Inventory of the Northern Asylum, 1881 and 1886, 1 bundle. (B)
  - Reports, 1877 to 1917, 6 fb: 5 fb. (A); 1 fb. (B)
- Michigan School for the Blind, inventory, 1891, 1 bundle. (B)
- State institutions, inventories under section 10, Act 233, laws of 1881, 1882 to 1888, 1890, 1 bundle. (B)
- State Prison Inspector, reports, 1846 to 1853, 1 fb. (B)
- State Public School, biennial inventory, September 30, 1886, 1 bundle. (B)
- State Treasurer, inventory, 1894 and 1908, 1 fb. (B)
- Wayne County Asylum, quarterly reports, 1905 to 1917, 1 fb. (A)

Requisitions and orders
- Order book, 1875 to 1891, 1 v. (B)
- Record of requisitions, March 2, 1876 to 1917, 4 v. (A)
- Requisitions, 1909 to 1915, 7 bundles. (A)

Societies, associations and clubs
- Articles of association and incorporation
  - Churches, 7 fb. (A)
  - Index to records of articles of association, 1892 to 1915, 3 v. (A)

Digitized by Google

Charters

Cooperative and mutual benefit associations, 5 fb. (A)

Educational associations, 2 fb. (A)

Musical associations, 1 fb. (A)

Publishing associations, 1 fb. (A)

Reform clubs, 1 fb. (A)

Scientific and literary associations, 2 fb. (A)

Social clubs, 2 fb. (A)

Summer resorts and sporting clubs, 4 fb. (A)

Young Men's Christian Association, 1 fb. (A)

List of stockholders

Charitable associations, 1916, 1 fb. (A)

Cooperative associations, 1912 to 1916, 2 fb. (A)

Sporting clubs and summer resorts, 1912 to 1915, 1 fb. (A)

Miscellaneous

Bridge, ferry, insurance, physio-medical, plank-road, river improvement, sporting and summer resort associations, 1892 to 1911, 6 fb: 1 fb. (A); 5 fb. (B)

Reports

Building and loan associations, examiners' reports, 1910 to 1915, 2 fb. (A)

Charitable associations, 1886 to 1915, 10 fb: 1886 to 1911 (B); 1912 to 1915. (A)

Veterinary association, 1900 to 1917. (A)

Digitized by Google

PAPERS

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Fourth of July Song

By David Chalmers Nimmo
(Michigan Authors' Association, Detroit)

Trump it joyously out! 'Tis the Fourth of July,
The day of the year to be sacred and high;
To pause and to think and to see and to feel
The nation, its life, its hopes, its ideal.

Trump, trump it again, to the ends of the earth,
Giving selfishness death and democracy birth!
Bring citizens all to the top of the state,
To feel there the soul of the nation so great!

'Tis the Fourth of July! 'Tis the Fourth of July!
The cannon are sounding to earth, sea and sky;
The spirits and passions and powers of the free
Have risen like waves on a wind swept sea.

Today is the day when the nation was born.
Let Life and her sons with a gladness be torn!
Republican State! True Democracy great!
With liberty, life and all passions elate,
We rise and we march and thy alters we ring,
Allegiance and honor and praises we sing.

Uncle Sam, Uncle Sam is now riding in pride,
Or standing and viewing the nation so wide;
He is tall and erect, cheerful, chesty and strong,
And smiles as he hears the full national song.

Digitized by Google

See, yonder the Eagle is soaring in might,
In majesty robed and resplendent with light,
Both giving and taking the fervors of fire,
Surveying the future with earnest desire!

Old Glory, Old Glory the multitude leads;
The man within man is now found in rare deeds;
He fronteth the future with passion and power,
A hope to the state in this world fateful hour.

North, east, south and west the musicians now march,
With playing and singing shake pillar and arch;
The soul is new born, the true citizen found,
The Fourth of July to the state has him bound.

O, remember the gift and remember the price
The ages have paid for this free paradise!
How rivers of blood and vast millions of free
Have been bled for the state that is native to thee!

Today is the day when the nation was born.
Let Life and her sons with a gladness be torn!
Republican State! True Democracy great!
With liberty, life and all passions elate,
We rise and we march and thy altars we ring,
Allegiance and honor and praises we sing.

—From "Soldiers' Songs."

Digitized by Google

What Can a Historical Society Do Now?

By Augustus C. Carton
East Tawas

A LITTLE over one year ago today Michigan, with the other States of the Union, entered with our Allies into the great conflict, which is destined to decide whether the nations shall live under free government, or whether they shall be trodden under the heel of a brutal militaristic despotism. All thoughts have centered in this great struggle. Every energy has been bent towards winning this war. Now, we are met here today, as a body of historical workers, and there is likely to have arisen in the minds of many who are not familiar with the purposes and work of this organization, the question, What can a historical society do now? I believe that before these sessions are over, which are to be held here within the next few days this question will have been answered fully.

In the first place, every organization which has continued from the days of peace into the days of this present gigantic struggle for human liberty, can be made the rallying point for expressions of patriotism, for the deeds of sacrifice, that must be made if we are to win. This is especially true of an historical society, which is founded in the spirit of sacrifice for the common good,—sacrifice of time, of effort, of thought, and of money,—to perpetuate for future generations the things of the past which are worthy in the life of the commonwealth.

Yet it is not so much what we do here in this meeting that is significant. Indeed, the large number present here is in itself

---

President's address at the Annual Meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, Lansing, May 27, 1918.

Digitized by Google

of significance, indicating that we understand the inspirational, rather than informational, character of the meeting. It is what we shall do when we go to our homes, that will count; it is what we take from here in renewal of spirit and of devotion to the high calling of citizens of this Commonwealth in a great crisis of its life that will count most.

When we go back home to our friends and fellow citizens we can study anew with them the reasons for this great war, and see that these reasons are correctly and forceably stated through the columns of our local press. We can re-examine the principles upon which the American Government is founded, the real meaning of democracy and our duties as citizens of a democracy, and urge the need of united and vigorous action in the common cause of making democracy,—which is a government of peace,—safe from predatory autocracy,—which is, and always has been, a government of war for the selfish purpose of gaining for the few, by foul means, what could not be acquired by fair means. We can prepare ourselves more fully to give talks in public meetings, to schools, clubs, and other organizations, upon the great issues of the war, and upon the personal sacrifices in the conservation of food, in the buying of liberty bonds, in the aiding of the Red Cross and other humanitarian movements, and in keeping the proper authorities informed of disloyal words and actions upon the part of those who may seek to bring aid and comfort to the enemy. We can aid in securing interesting and valuable addresses from neighboring schools and colleges and from men and women who are qualified for this work in some special way. We can encourage our school and library to obtain suitable books on the war. We can do many other things, which will be best known to each of us, corresponding to the needs of our several communities.

Digitized by Google

As members of the State Historical Society, and members of our respective county historical societies, we have a special mission to perform, in relation to the collecting and preserving of local historical material bearing upon the war, especially such materials as will be lost if some special effort is not made to gather them together and place them in some convenient repository where they may be safe from dust, damp, mice, fire and other destructive agencies. Many of the county historical societies have been doing a very creditable work along this line. It would of course not be helpful here to mention any particular ones; they will speak for themselves at the proper place in the program. It is not the duty of a historical society to write history, however important this function may be. The chief function of a historical society, as I understand, is to collect the materials for the writers of history, and to aid those who are in special position to do such collecting.

Now, a curious thing about human nature is, to wish to do those things first which should be done last, and to leave undone those things which are at the foundations, and hence out of the view of the casual observer. A little experiment would convince most of us how true this is in relation to historical work, if we should try to write a fair and true account of our own county's or city's activity during the Civil War. We should probably find only the barest materials at hand. We should miss those programs of the meetings that were held, the pictures of the boys getting ready for the front, the circulars that made up such a mass of trouble for the postmaster in those days. We should ask, where are the bill-posters, or did they have any in those days? What kinds of material were used for propaganda? Where are those old scrap-books that grandmother used to have? And the letters from the boys? And the diaries they brought back from the war, or that your

Digitized by Google

mother or your grandmother kept in the long days that father, or grandfather, or uncle, or cousin, was fighting on Southern battle fields? I fancy we would find all the meat has perished, and that only the dry bones are left, in official records of one sort or another; but nine cases out of ten, these too have suffered from the accidents of time the fate of all things human that are not cared for. The newspapers? They too are gone, only too often. Thanks to the greater care of the modern newspaper office to keep its files properly, the future will not find the newspaper so frequently absent when the historian calls. But there is a host of historical material, of first importance, which never finds its way into the newspaper. Among other things will be your own personal observations upon the state of mind of your community, on the shifting of public opinion, and on the transpiring of local events.

We are today interested in the making of history. War is the business of the entire world. We should preserve the records of this activity as they are made from day to day, in various forms; and many of the things most vital, and nearest to the people, are in forms that are extremely perishable. They are perishable because held to be commonplace, and hence at the mercy of our indifference. In Civil War days the people failed to preserve the commonplace records of their life, and we must now trust to the memories of pioneers, who also soon will be gone, and with them all record of the more intimate phases of Civil War life in their communities. Will the future writers of Michigan's history be drawing on our memories for the everyday facts of our lives during the Great War? I have a fairly good memory, but I would hesitate to hang the historical

Digitized by Google

interests of posterity upon its accuracy forty years from today.

It is a tremendous thought, that we are in and of one of the most important crises of the world's history in all ages. It will be so recorded by the historians of the future. We live in an era such as has never had its equal for opportunity of service. There is no smallest part of the life of such a period whose record is not worthy of preservation. What a wonderful transformation has come over the American people in one short year. A year ago the boys were seeking exemptions; today even the boys who were called not fit are trying to get into military and naval service. A year ago many of us did not know what a bond was, not to speak of a Liberty Bond,—today we all know, and we want as many of them as Uncle Sam will let us buy. A year age we, some of us, were complaining about the little inconveniences that disturbed the even tenor of our ways; today we welcome wheatless days, meatless days, sweetless days, and next winter we will welcome our old friend "heatless days." Friends all, because they will help to put the Kaiser where there will be no heatless days, no heatless nights, but the real thing!

The incident is related of a little girl, in the city of Lansing, who heard the song in which come the words, "The Stars and Stripes shall wave over Germany, wave over Germany, wave over Germany." She said after hearing it sung, on one occasion. "Papa, I don't like that song." "Why not, my dear?" said the father, "Don't you want the Stars and Stripes to wave over Germany?" "No!" she replied, "Its too good for that. I won't have Old Glory wave over Germany." She had caught the spirit which is surging in the heart of America today. I am glad we have come together in this meeting, and we shall go from it with a firmer determination that we shall never

Digitized by Google

permit this nation to see the day when the black eagle of Germany shall be emblazoned upon the Stars and Stripes as a symbol of America's subservience to the most cruel and faithless government that the world has known.

Digitized by Google

France in the Great War

Prof. R. Clyde Ford

Ypsilanti

MR. PRESIDENT, Members of the Pioneer Society, and honored pioneers of Michigan. I see by the clock up yonder it is half past nine and I do not intend to keep you here longer than mignight. I heard a story the other day of an English soldier that was rather pat and I think it will illustrate the situation a good many of you will be in shortly. This English soldier wrote in from the battle field of the many events of the war and this is what he said: "They caught me by conscription and put me in the army; then they carried me off and put me in the barracks. They took my clothes away from me and put me in a uniform, and then they took my name away and called me Number 575. They made me go to church on Sunday morning, and the preacher got up and said, 'Let us sing, Number 575, Art thou weary, art thou languid,' and I said, 'Yes,' and they put me in the guard house for a week." If I should say, "Number 575, Art thou weary, art Thou languid," along about midnight, you will no doubt say, "Yes."

However, I am glad to come and tell the story of France because I am a great believer in what France has done and is now doing in the great war for civilization. We can't help but be interested in the story of France. The whole world will always remember it. The world's debt to France is beyond measure and computation.

An address delivered at the Annual Meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, Lansing, May 27, 1918. (Stenographically reported)

Digitized by Google

France has saved this world three times in human history. The first time, France saved everything worth while for mankind, all the progress in civilization up to the year 451,—I say the first time was a most notable event in the history of the world. In the year 451 when five hundred years had hardly gone by in human civilization and progress in western Europe France interposed and saved it all. In that year Attila the Hun came out of the western part of Asia. At the head of his horde of followers he came on, hurling his forces through Armenia, and Persia and Asia Minor, and he crossed over into the Balkan peninsula at the Bosphorus. He knocked with brazen fist at the gates of Constantinople but was bought off with Greek money to go on his way. He went into the heart of Europe and crossed the Rhine and turned west into the fair land of France, that land which had been the goal of invaders from long before the Roman conquest and then he came to rest before the City of Orleans which he beseiged. But he heard that his enemies were rallying behind him, that the Roman general, Aëtius, and Theodoric, King of the Goths, were raising an army to give him battle and he retired from Orleans and moved around to the north and east of France, to that open strip of country upon the banks of the Marne, a most prophetic and significant name, and there Attila was defeated. The chroniclers say that 250,000 of the foe lay dead on that battle field by the banks of the Marne. In the year 451 France saved Christianity and civilization and all the little progress that had been made in the world up to that time,—France saved it all.

Then again, hardly three hundred years later, in 732 of the Christian era, France saved Christianity and civilization and progress for the world a second time. This time the menace was not a pagan horde of Huns from Asia, but a pagan horde

Digitized by Google

of Mohammedans who came over the mountains from Spain, came to lift high the banner of the Crescent above the Cross, to place it in France to stay forever. They came in an innumerable host, like the sands of the sea, so the old story tells us. They came across the southern part of France, into the middle and western part of France. They came with their women and children, with their cattle, their flocks and farm implements. They intended to colonize France. They came to rest before the city of Tours and laid siege to it, and in the year 732 out from the walls of the city rode a man by the name of Charles, Mayor of the King's palace, and he hammered so hard that he has won the name of Charles the Hammer, and the Saracens were defeated and went flying back to Spain. Never again did the hosts of Mohammed ever really dare to threaten the destiny of Europe. In 732 France saved Christianity, humanity, progress and all the world had accumulated in the first eight centuries of history. In the year 1914 France saved the world a third time in the second battle of the Marne.

We ought to be interested in France, we people of Michigan, for our own picturesque and romantic history is connected with the history of France. I have no doubt that the flag of France has floated over this very spot, for some French people, pioneers, trappers, traders, missionaries, came through this very part of Michigan. At any rate, we know that the flag of France was flung to the breeze at the old fortress of Detroit when that settlement was the outpost of the French empire in America, but we ought to remember France not for the early days particularly, we ought to remember France for what she did for us in our time of stress and struggle, when we were working out our destiny as a nation in the war of our liberation. You know from your history and the stories of your grandfathers how Lafayette came to help us, Lafayette,

Digitized by Google

that fair young prince of France who sold his family acres and manor house and took the money and went to a seaport in defiance of the wishes of his king, bought a ship and loaded it with munitions and food and sailed across the ocean, landed in the Carolinas, and went and offered himself to the colonists. General Washington took that stripling, that prince of 19 years and made him a general in the Continental army. You know the story, the picturesque story, how this young prince of France fought beside Washington through the long struggle and when the foe at last was conquered, it was General Lafayette at the head of a division of men, aided by the troops of France and the fleet of France who helped strike the final blow that gave freedom to this country. We can't forget that. I knew a very old lady who could remember back to her school days in the year 1824 when Lafayette made his last visit to America, that visit when he was invited back by Congress to see again the land he had helped carve out of the forests. The old lady lived on the highway between Philadelphia and New York City, and she and the other children of that school district had heard that Lafayette on his last trip was to pass by the schoolhouse. The children all put on their white dresses and best clothes and gathered flowers which they were going to scatter as the great man came by. Finally there was a cloud of dust on the highway and the out-riders came by, for Lafayette traveled like a prince, and then the coach drawn by four white horses came rumbling along and stopped in front of the bevy of school children. The footman alighted and held the door of the coach open, and out stepped the little old gentleman, dressed in a long snuff colored coat, a gaudy waistcoat, velvet knickerbockers, white stockings, and shoes with silver buckles. Taking off his three-cornered hat with a white plume, he swept it down till the feather

Digitized by Google

trailed in the dust, then with his hand on his heart he bowed low to the little company and this, said the old lady, is what he said, "Children, it is almost fifty years ago that I came over the ocean to fight by the side of General Washington for the liberty of this country. Now you have become a great people. You have achieved your independence and you will not need me nor France any longer, but, may the time never come when you or your children after you will forget what France has done for you."

My friends, we are not going to forget it. We have not forgotten it, for when our valiant soldier, General Pershing, at the head of the American troops marched to the city of Paris as he came in front of the bronze statue of Lafayette, a statue erected there by the pennies of our American school children, he stopped and saluted like the fine soldier he is, and said, "Lafayette, we have come. We have come at last." My friends, I hope that was a true word. I am sure we *have* come, and I hope that we shall stay with our millions of money and men to the very end.

Is it not remarkable that as great a nation as we are, we have such a young and scanty history? We can almost reach back to that early time. Here sits before me an aged man who was one year old when Lafayette made that last visit to America, and I know an old lady who said to me not long ago, after a speech like this, "My grandfather was an aide on the staff of General Lafayette, and when Lafayette came back in the year of 1824 my grandfather was in the deputation who met him in the city of Boston. The story is that the old man from France recognized him after fifty years, and worked his way through the staff of senators and delegates, and rushed across a little bit of open ground and threw his arms around my grandfather's neck, and kissed him on both cheeks. We

Digitized by Google

can reach our hands back to the very beginnings of this country. When we think over how we have grown in such a short time, grown so great, it will not make us proud but rather humble, for with our greatness comes great responsibility, and I am glad, my friends, as a good American, to see from the homes and schools of Michigan our young men going to stand fast with the Allies across the ocean.

But we remember France, and the world will remember France, for more than what she has done in saving the world for civilization. We will remember France for the unique intellectual character of French genius and what it has done for the history of the human race. One hundred years after the Puritan Revolution in England it was the French Revolution which worked out in so much blood and misery the charter and principles of human liberty for all time. And the Code Napoleon, that great work is the greatest code of laws ever written, next after the Code of Justinian. Belgium and Holland, France, Switzerland, Italy, Spain, and Louisiana in our country are governed by the laws Napoleon made, and the same is true of Mexico and Central and South America. Then, when we think of the literary names of France, they are not French names, they are greater,—they are international, they are universal. We recall the names of Molière, Racine, Corneille, Descartes, Calvin and Voltaire, and coming down to later times, Balzac, Victor Hugo, and Dumas. When I mention these names I mention names not known because they are French, but because they belong to the great names of the whole world. Then in science we have only to think of Buffon, Cuvier and the man Agassiz, a Frenchman who came from Switzerland and settled in the new world. It was said of Agassiz as a boy in his native town, that he knew more about the fish of the re-

Digitized by Google

gion than any other boy in the neighborhood. When he came to America and grew to be a man, we could say of him that he knew more about fish than any other man that ever lived in the world. Coming down a little closer we must add the names of Pasteur, and Madame Curie, world renowned in the domain of science. When we think of architecture and art we have only to mention the Gothic cathedral. Someone has said that if French genius had devised nothing more than this its claim to immortality would have been secure. The Gothic cathedral is the most scientific style of architecture ever devised. Then the painters, from the time of the 14th century down across the Watteaus, the Corots, the Meissoniers, the Millets, and all the rest. What a galaxy of great names! How we marvel at their pictures as they hang on our walls.

So much greatness has made the world remember France, but it was in the year 1914 that France made the supreme sacrifice for the destiny and future of the human race. In the year 1914 came the beginning of this awful war, a war so terrible, so horrible that if all the calamities, pestilence and famine and bloodshed, from the beginning of time to the present could be rolled into a great cataclysm of horror, it would not more than equal what has been the history of Europe in the last four years. When that war came, like a thunderbolt out of a clear sky it came, and France along with all the rest of the world was unprepared. The only ones who were prepared were the ones who made it, who had produced through forty years of national aggrandizement and greed this monster machine which was to threaten the world. The Central Empires were ready but no one else. There were more machine guns in the arsenals of Germany in 1914 than in all the rest of the world put together. There were more great guns, and more ammunition piled up for them there than in all the

Digitized by Google

countries of the world put together. Everything was ready in the middle of Europe to kindle that great conflagration whose flames should reach from continent to continent. And France was unprepared. In the year 1913 Germany suddenly raised her requirements so that her standing army increased from 600,000 to 820,000 men in one year. France saw this meant trouble and she raised her own requirements by keeping her men another year with the colors and so increased her army from 490,000 to 600,000. But she knew it would not be long before it would come, the settlement of the great question as to who should rule Europe and the world.

In that year, 1914, the crisis came, as I have said, like a thunderbolt out of a clear sky. I remember how suddenly it came. A thousand or more people had sailed from New York City bound for Europe, coming from every corner of this country, French, Americans, Germans, Austrians gathered on that ship to sail for France. Nobody dreamed of war. We had heard rumors and talk of war but we thought it was a political contention, a tempest in a teapot, that it would all pass away in time, and then, when we were in mid-ocean, one morning the French officer who sat beside me at the table, leaned over and whispered to me, "Germany declared war on France last night at midnight, and on England this morning at three o'clock." Then we people who had come like spectators to a play, on a little pilgrimage away from home, a little excursion across the ocean, then we people knew the world was on fire. Two or three days later we arrived on the shore of France and landed in the very midst of that great conflict. Those French passengers, the French sailors and officers of that ship went away from the dock not to their homes to say good-bye, but they went straight away to the army. I shall never forget a scene I saw on the deck of that ship. There

Digitized by Google

was a young man of twenty-five from New Orleans, who had been in this country seven years. He had a little French wife and baby and was going back to France to visit his old father and mother again, and he was caught in this awful whirlpool of war. As the ship went into the dock he said farewell to his wife and baby. He was not going to his father and mother. He was going to report to his regiment for he was still on the army lists of France. I shall always remember how the little black eyed French woman looking him in the eye, said, "Go, of course you will go. I would be ashamed of you if you did not go to fight for France." And that was the spirit of every last Frenchman aboard that ship, and that, my friends, has been the spirit of all of France. Some of you will remember reading a story in the *Saturday Evening Post* of last fall about some Confederate army veterans in the South sitting in front of the soldiers' home and looking back over fifty years to the time when they had been soldiers, when they had been filled with enthusiasm for a cause and had drawn their sword to fight a valiant fight. And here they sat, now, and saw the boys go by who were starting out to fight in Europe and one of the men became so aroused that he rose to his feet and said, "O God, that I could feel again the thrill of life that lifts a man above the fear of death." My friends, every last man, woman and child in France has felt again the thrill of life that has lifted them above the fear of death. We used to think that the French had lost their soul, that the women were butterflies of fashion and the men were cavaliers, dapper cavaliers with their hearts on their sleeves, but we have changed our minds about France as we see the heroic way in which her sons and daughters have stood four-square to the awful blast.

When the war broke out Germany made one terrific lunge to get at the heart of France and settle the conflict in the first

Digitized by Google

ten days. Her strategy was good but she made a blunder. She had to come in by the back door of France, the land of Belgium, a neutral country, whose neutrality she, along with the other countries of the world, had sworn to observe. And she waited not a moment. She threw the awful machinery of her army into motion, an army of one million five-hundred thousand men, and set out to get at France by way of Belgium. Then there arose in his might a fair-haired king, whose name will last as long as that of Alexander and Julius Caesar in story and legend,—King Albert of Belgium rose in his greatness and said, "I would be ashamed to be king over a free people, I would be ashamed to be the leader of an army, if I did not resist such an injustice as this. As long as there is a gun left in Belgium, as long as a drop of red blood flows in the veins of Belgian men, we will fight to defend our Fatherland." No wonder Julius Caesar said in his commentaries of these people, "Of all the Gauls the Belgians are the bravest." The name of Albert of Belgium will last long in human history, and there is another name in Belgium that will last, a name that we claim, the name of Hoover, an American, who saved the bodies of the people of Belgium by giving them American food. And then there is another man that the world will always remember in connection with the war in Belgium and that is Cardinal Mercier who did his best to save the soul of Belgium. King Albert, Cardinal Mercier, and Hoover, those three names will last long in human history when the world attempts to write the story of the war.

But Belgium paid the penalty of her resistance. She held up the German march a week or ten days, put up an awful fight to the last ditch, but she paid the price. She paid the price in ruined cities, desecrated cathedrals, villages swept out of existence, in old men and women slaughtered, young women

Digitized by Google

dishonored. A short time ago I met a Belgian girl who made her escape from Germany and she whispered to me this: "With my own eyes I looked out of the window on the second story of the boarding school where I lived and saw four-hundred men, women and children shot down in cold blood." And our minister in Belgium tells stories which make every one of us see red when we think of the atrocities that have been perpetrated there. He saw where they brought together ninety old men and young women and little children and babies in their mother's arms and the German soldiers shot down these ninety people, and among them were twelve children under the age of six, six of whom were little babies whose mothers had to stand and hold them in their arms when they were shot. Here is the list of six children under the age of two who were slaughtered:

The child Flévet, three weeks old;
Nelly Pollet, eleven months old;
Maurice Bétemps, eleven months old;
Gilda Geneu, eighteen months old;
Gilda Marchot, two years old;
Clara Struvay, two years old.

My friends, we have two million babies in this country under two years old and they are two million good reasons why every last man, woman and child of us must fight this war through to the very end!

At last the Germans got to France, got in by trampling across Belgium, and they came with five great armies, divided like the fingers of a hand, clutching at the heart of France, the City of Paris. The German right wing was held by General Von Kluck at the head of five army corps numbering 300,000 men, and next to him was General Von Buelow's three army corps, and next to him was General Von Hausen with four or

Digitized by Google

five corps, and then further to the west was the Duke of Wurttemberg and farthest to the east the Crown Prince of Germany. These five armies extended almost to the English channel in the west and clear to the middle of France on the south, and now, enraged at the delay of ten days in Belgium, they were bent on reaching the city of Paris. General Von Kluck was to go as far to the west as he could and cut off the British; next to him Gen. Von Buelow was to come by way of Rheims, and Gen. Von Hausen by the way of Châlons; the Duke of Wurttemberg was to advance by the way of Sedan and the Crown Prince by way of Verdun. I have on the end of my watch chain a medal struck in the city of Verdun a year or two ago to commemorate the fact that the Crown Prince never got by. One side shows the motto of the city, "They shall not pass," and on the other side is the picture of the famous gates of Verdun. When I look at this, I live again my student days and I remember an event of my life in Paris. I went out one day to visit the grave of the poet Heine who fled from militarism and Prussian autocracy and died an exile in a foreign land.—To this day no monument has ever been erected to him on German soil. I went out from the city of Paris to visit his grave. As I stood in Montmartre looking down at the tomb covered with flowers, up to the other side of the grave came a tall, spare young man whose waist was pinched in like a soldier's, with the hard hatchet face of the Hohenzollerns. He came up and stood across from me and we exchanged experiences over the grave of the poet Heine. I wondered where I had seen him before. His face looked familiar but I could not place him. When I got back to town I saw by the evening paper that the Crown Prince of Germany was in Paris in disguise and I knew I had met him at the tomb of Heine. I knew him from the pictures I had seen of him in my student days in Germany. And I

Digitized by Google

like to remember that on this last visit to France he has pounded away at the gates of Verdun with the great left wing of the German army but he has not got by.

But the German armies came on, and on, and the French fell back before them, fell back farther and farther until the world stood aghast and wondered if France was to surrender Paris without a blow. Yet there was fighting, two-hundred thousand men from England hung like bull dogs on the flank of General Von Kluck and he couldn't shake them off. They fought as they did at Waterloo and other fields of immortal fame for the British soldiers. One night General Von Kluck stopped over at a French château. And in the morning he called his regimental band and had it play French music and French operatic airs and then summoned the lady of the Château before him and said, "Madam, you are wondering perhaps why my band is playing French music. I am doing it to honor the French people. You are a cultured nation and all you need to make you a great people is the lasting impression of German civilization. We shall be in Paris next week and the war will then be over. We shall return to our homes and France will once more enter upon a career of prosperity under the domination of the great mind of Germany." Then he asked, "Madam, where is your husband?" She replied, "Your Excellency, my husband is dead." "Where are your sons, Madam?" At this she looked him in the face and said, "Your Excellency, my sons are where they ought to be, fighting in the armies of France with their faces turned toward the enemy." Old General Von Kluck did not get to Paris the next week. The five armies swept on with the French falling back before them in that long, desperate retreat, as we thought, of one hundred miles. At last on the fifth day of September, 1914, General Joffre, that master strategist, who had worked

Digitized by Google

out the most consummate and daring bit of generalship the world has ever seen, issued this command to the army, "Tomorrow we shall retreat no longer, but advance, when you cannot advance, hold your ground; when you can no longer hold, die on the spot." The great battle of the Marne began on the sixth day of September, 1914. General Foch commanded the center of the French army and on the ninth, after the battle had raged three days,he sent this word to General Joffre, "My right wing has gone to pieces; my left wing is crumbling, nevertheless I shall break through the center." Four times he went forward and four times he was beaten back. On the fifth day of the fight they smashed their way through the German line and at last the battle of the Marne turned into a rout, an ignominious retreat for the German armies. When we read the story of General Foch and his brilliant charge, and the way the Frenchmen died for their country, we are reminded of the story of the heroic Greeks. There was nothing better in the battles of Marathon or of Thermopylae. Pericles once stood up in the city of Athens to deliver an oration, and of the men of Thermopylae he said, "When the moment came, they were minded to resist and suffer rather than flee and save their lives; they fled away from the word of dishonor but on the battle field their feet stood firm, and in a moment they passed away, not from the scene of their shame but from the scene of their glory." Those words spoken of the Spartans at Thermopylae could be said of the thousands under General Foch who stood fast and saved France and Christianity in the center of the battle of the Marne.

France has paid the same price that Belgium paid. They have paid it in ruined cities, in razed and destroyed villages, in desecrated convents and ruined cathedrals, in men and women slaughtered or carried off into slavery. They have paid

Digitized by Google

the price in wells poisoned, in schools, hospitals, and convents bombed by airships, in fields sown deep with sunken mines, in fruit trees cut down, in farm machinery destroyed. They have borne all this, and as Germany revelled in her wanton destruction and useless cruelty, and lost her soul, France regained hers. And there she stands, more noble and more glorified than ever, with a spirit as magnificent and heroic and valiant as ever crowned the soul of any nation. France has regained her soul in the shadow of death, coming through the valley of tribulation for four long years, and thousands, and hundreds of thousands, and millions of Frenchmen have borne the brunt of battle, and millions of French women and millions of French children have stood right back of the army, raising food and working to furnish the sinews of war. All honor be to a people like that.

I saw a man from Detroit, Captain Ince, not long ago and he said he went into a gun factory in the city of Paris and saw 8,000 French women working in a hellish heat that is hardly to be endured by strong men. There they were, with bare arms and bare breasts, sweating and toiling. Michael Angelo and Raphael liked to paint madonnas holding in their arms chubby cheeked children and bearing around their heads halos of heavenly glory, but if some modern Raphael or Michael Angelo wants a model for a picture of a modern madonna, let him go to this gun factory and paint there a madonna, not a madonna holding in her arms a rosy cheeked child, but one whose baby is starving at home, not a madonna in a halo of heavenly glory but in a halo that comes from the gleam of the redhot iron as it runs into moulds to make the guns of France. That is the kind of madonna that will stand forth in glory forever as we write the story of the valorous deeds of France.

I want to read a letter which I like to read and yet tremble

Digitized by Google

to read, because it has in it a whole world of pathos which is heartbreaking. It is the story of a French school teacher who left his work in the very first month of the war and went to the front to take command of a regiment, and on the eve of battle this is what he wrote:

"My dear:—I am writing this chance letter because you can never tell. If it reaches you, it will be because France will have needed me to the very last. You must not weep, because I swear, I shall die happy, if I must give up my life for her.

"My only worry is the hard situation in which you and the children will be left. How will you be able to provide for your own future and that of the children? How glad I am to know that some provision is to be made.

"I am not disturbed about the bringing up of the little girls. You will bring them up as I would have done myself. I hope they will be able to make themselves independent, something that I intended to do if I lived. The one great difficulty will be, that it will be hard, if not impossible for you to live in Paris. You will kiss the dear little ones for their father. You will tell them that he has gone on a long journey, still loving them and protecting them from afar. I should like to have Cotte at least remember me, and there will be a little baby, a tiny baby, whom I shall not have seen: If it is a boy, my wish is that he become a doctor; unless, however, France after this war needs men. You will tell him after he has reached the age of understanding that his father gave up his life for a great ideal, that of our country, reconstituted and strong.

"I think I have said what is most important. Farewell, my dear, my love, promise me that you won't harbor ill will toward France, if she wanted me and all of me. Farewell till we meet again, the great, the real meeting. Be strong.

"YOUR JEAN"

Digitized by Google

No wonder France stands heroic in a great line that reaches from the sea, from their battle line in Flanders to the mountains of the Alps. When the German hordes came into Belgium it was France that held them back; when the German hordes came in sight of Paris it was France that forced them to retreat; when the Italians gave way in northern Italy it was France that first crossed the Alps to bring them aid. And now the armies of Great Britain have come, to stand shoulder to shoulder with those of France, and the armies of America have come to pay back their debt to France, and there they stand, a great line of living steel which the German hordes can never break.

One word more. Victor Hugo expressed in a poem on France some thoughts which I will quote in translation:

"Glory to France on high!
Glory to those who for her die!
To the martyrs, the valiant, the strong beside,
To those inspired by their name,
Who wish a place in living fame,
And who will die as they have died."

And what shall we say of the spirit of America? Not long ago I saw a fugitive poem in the Chicago *Post* which shows what we shall do. It is a father's word to his son who leaves to fight in France. With it I shall close:

My son, at last the fateful day has come
For us to part. The hours have nearly run.
May God return you safe to land and home;
Yet, what God wills, so may His will be done.

Digitized by Google

Draw tight the belt about your slender frame;
Flash blue your eyes! Hold high your proud young head!
Today you march in Liberty's fair name,
To save the line enriched by France's dead!

I would not it were otherwise! And yet
'Tis hard to speed your marching forth, my son!
'Tis doubly hard to live without regret
For love unsaid, and kindnesses undone.

But would the chance were mine with you to stand
Upon those shores and see our flag unfurled!
To fight on France's brave, unconquered land
With Liberty's great sword for all the world!

Beyond the waves, my son, the siren calls,
The sky is black and Fastnet lies abreast.
A signal rocket flings its pale stars out and falls
Across the night to welcome England's guest.

When midst the scud you see the Cornish lights,
And through the mist you hear faint Devon chimes,
Thank God for memories of those other nights
And days on other ships in happier times.

Perhaps you'll stand within the pillared nave
And aisles where colored sundust falls, and see
Old Canterbury church where Becket gave
His life's best blood for England's liberty!

Digitized by Google

Some night you'll walk, perhaps, on Salisbury plain;
Above Stonehenge the Druids' stars still sleep,
And on the turf within the circled fane
Beneath the autumn moon still lie the sheep.

And if you march beside some Kentish hedge,
And blackberries hang thick clustered o'er the ways,
Pluck down a branch! Rest by the road's brown edge;
Eat! Nor forget our last vacation days!

And then the trench in battle-scarred Lorraine;
The town half burned, but held in spite of hell;
The bridge twice taken, lost, and won again;
The cratered glacis ripped with mine and shell.

The leafless trees, bare-branched in spite of June;
The sodden road, the desolated plain;
The mateless birds, the season out of tune;
Fair France, at bay, is calling through her pain.

O son! My son! God keep you safe and free—
Our flag and you! But if the hour must come
To choose at last 'twixt self and liberty—
We'll close our eyes! So let God's will be done!

Digitized by Google

OLD VETERANS' STORIES

BY THE LANSING LODGE, SONS OF VETERANS

IN the light of the present great world war, our younger people are coming to forget more and more the veterans of 57 years ago, who fought so nobly that our country might live, a beacon light to the world; that Democracy, a government of, by, and for the people, could be a firm and staple government. We are prone more and more to forget, as we view the bloody struggle between a modern feudalism and the governments of the people, that in their day they, too, passed through battles that were as viciously and stubbornly fought as are those of the giants of today.

As we spend our spare time reading "Over the Top," "Private Peat," "The First Hundred Thousand," and the many other ably written tales of the battles in France and Flanders, we seldom stop to remember that those old boys of former days could tell us tales that were just as blood-stirring, just as tense, or just as comical, as are the tales of today.

True, history has told their story, just as history will some day tell the story of today,—but it is told only as history! The histories will not tell you of the fun that was had when the unarmed Quartermaster shot the pig that private Jones found in the ditch! Or of the feelings of private Brown when he saw ghosts while he was standing guard one pitch black night! No, the histories will not tell you these things, just as the histories will not tell you of the feelings of "Shellproof Mack" when he found the German Red Cross station was but a machine gun headquarters, as he was advancing past it at Messines Ridge.

Digitized by Google

We have not realized, as we have sat at their feet and listened to the old fellows tell their tales, that in but a very few short years the last of them would be gone and their tales would be told no more; then with the quick passage of time we who heard them will go our way, also, and none will be left to whom the veterans of '61-'65 will be anything more than a few dry pages of history, cursed by the schoolboy for its dates.

True, a few collections of their stories have been made, but all too often they have lost materially in the vividness of the telling under the merciless blue pencil of "Ye Editor." In order that a few more may be preserved for posterity, the Lansing Camp of the Sons of Veterans is undertaking the collection of "Old Veterans' Stories," in honor of the brave Michigan boys who marched away to the Southland at their country's call, and is asking the cooperation of all who are interested. They ask only that the stories be entertaingly written, and demand only that the experiences narrated be the true experiences of a Veteran of the Civil War.

No qualification is made as to the subject of the story, for all kinds will be welcomed, whether tales of brave deeds on the field of battle, tales of heart interest and human sympathy, or of the humor of life in camp and field.

There are many people who have at hand excellent material for such stories, but do not feel themselves qualified to write them up. To such, the invitation is extended to send a sketch of the story in their own language, and the committee will have it written for them.

The rules laid down by the committee are few, and only such as apply to manuscripts in general:

1. The Story Must be the True Experience of a Veteran of the Civil War. The committee does not want it unless it is.

Digitized by Google

2. Give the name of the veteran, his company and regiment, and the State from which he enlisted.
3. Give your own name, unless you are the veteran involved.
4. Give the approximate time and place at which the events took place. It is often impossible to give the exact date and location, but give it as nearly as you can.
5. Write on but one side of the sheets. Use letter sheets 8½x11 inches in size if possible; if not, use any size convenient.
6. Have your manuscripts typewritten if possible, as this will often save errors, especially in proper names.

This information is asked for in order that the readers in the future may in a general way identify the particular story with the campaign in which it occured. Enter the names and dates after each story.

All stories entered become the property of Camp 4, Michigan Division of the Sons of Veterans, who will attend to the publication. All contributions are to be gratis, in the interest of posterity.

Any number of manuscripts of stories may be entered by each contributor, the only limitation set being that each story must be a true experience. Manuscripts should be mailed, fully prepaid, to B. B. Whittier, East Lansing, Mich., chairman of the committee. All manuscripts will be carefully edited by the committee, so do not let a hesitancy on account of poor spelling or grammatical construction deter any one with a good story.

Suitable examples from the stories submitted will probably be published in various periodicals from time to time. The

Digitized by Google

Michigan History Magazine has already spoken for a number of such stories.

Bernard B. Whittier
Fred C. Jasdofer } Committee.
Henry E. Gardner

Albert N. Bateman, Commander
Ellis Fry, Treasurer } de facto members.

THE BATTLE OF COW HOLLOW

Contributed by Addison S. Boyce

Today is our first Sabbath in the army and the chaplain has gone home—no preaching. Our Quartermaster has poor success in finding rations for us; thus far he has got nothing, and as a result we have to buy our own rations. Most of the boys (myself in particular) have already spent all of the money they brought with them, and in trying to help themselves to some fresh beef came near getting the whole line into trouble. Ask any member of the 20th regiment to give you the name of our first engagement and he will invariably answer, "Cow Hollow;" and if you wish a description of this engagement each will proceed to give you the minutest details, declaring that he was in the thickest of the fight, when in reality I don't think you could find to exceed six men that had anything to do with it. My version I will give as I remember to have seen it.

We were at the time encamped in a field on the right bank of a small creek. In front of us was a corn field, and beyond the corn field a thick oak brush; to our right and across the

Digitized by Google

lane was a house and barn, and in the barn a cow. Some of the boys surrounded the house and well, and when the old man brought the cow to the well to water, they made a charge, driving the man into the house and the cow across the lane into the corn field where the skirmish culminated. A number of the boys had been posted with their guns in the edge of the corn, and as the skirmishers drove the enemy across the lane, the battle commenced. Just as to the order of firing, whether by platoon or company, I cannot remember; one thing I do remember is that the cow got away and we got no beef for supper that night; but we did succeed in alarming the whole army in that quarter, and in less time than it takes me to tell it there were ten thousand men under arms, and two large forts, Ft. Lyon and Ft. Wood, had run out their guns and prepared for action. Word was telegraphed to Washington that Lee was advancing and that the 20th Michigan had been attacked and all cut to pieces, when in reality not a man was hurt, not even the cow.

Extract from the diary of Addison S. Boyce, Co. A, 20th Mich. Inft. —Sunday, Sept. 7th, 1862.

TWELVE KILLED

CONTRIBUTED BY BERNARD B. WHITTIER

"Some cannonadin' you got at Gettysburg, eh, Comrade? Yep, I guess maybe 'twas, 'bout as heavy as most any of us got anywhere. I've heard 'em tellin' 'bout it before, an' I'm willin' to believe most anything 'bout a good shelling, anyhow. I been through three or four myself, an' they sure did make a man feel nervous.

"They do some fool freak stunts durin' a bombardment

Digitized by Google

sometimes. I saw a feller once that'd stand up an' fight with the best of us, go crawl behind a sapling not over an inch thick when the shells begun comin'. They just simply riled him all up.

"He, he, he! Guess I'll have to tell you 'bout a little incident that happened during our first bombardment. We were guardin' a fort at White Sulphur Springs, with the rebel battery on a hill 'bout three quarters of a mile in front of us. It was the first rebel battery we had come within sight of, even. Our own battery was 'bout as far behind us as they were in front of us, an' each was watchin' the other just like two bull dogs with the indigestion.

"An old farmer had his log house right close to where we were lyin', an' when he saw things were a goin' to get warm, he hustled all his belongin's inter the cellar. He had jammed 'em in there in all sorts of ways. There were his two horses, two dogs, one cow, his boy, an' the cat, among the other belongins.

" 'Twan't long till them two batteries began pepperin' each other, an' once'n a while a stray shell would come crawlin' over'n our direction. We were a beginnin' to feel fidgety, though we knew they were mostly stray shells that came our way; but their strayin' don't detract none from their interestingness.

"Well, after a while we saw one hit the ol' farmer's log pile, and to amuse ourselves we immediately went over there, a big bunch of us. I don't know's I ever laughed more'n I did when I got there, either. The shell had gone clean into the cellar before it exploded; and in the midst of all that conglomeration of cows, dogs, horses, boys, and all, it just killed one horse, two dogs, an' the cat. You never saw a more scared boy, though.

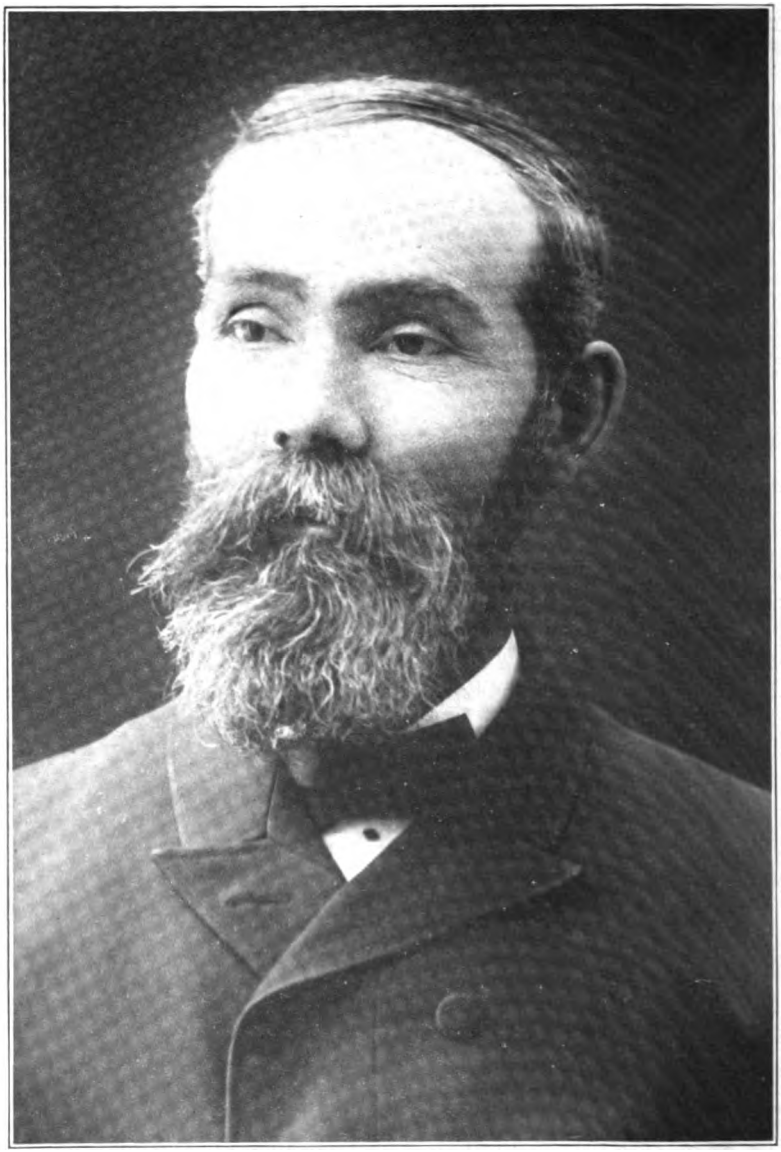
Digitized by Google

"But with the cat's nine lives, we figured that one shell had killed twelve, which was a pretty good bag, an' they were the only casualties we had the hull day, too."

Rewritten from the diary of Addison S. Boyce, Co. A, 20th Mich. Inft.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



JOHN T. DANIELLS

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF MEMORY DAY

BY J. T. DANIELLS,

ST. JOHNS

IT was on December 6, 1903, that the dread angel Death visited the home of the writer and took from earth to Heaven the spirit of a precious wife, leaving a once happy home lonely and desolate. An only child, our baby boy, died many years ago. In the spring following my wife's death, after placing the sacred earth in the rural cemetery four miles distant from our home in becoming condition, and removing thither the remains of our child from the grave by the home where flowers had bloomed upon it each summer time, I stood by the graves of my dead in loneliness and sorrow, and thought of the deep interest which my dear wife ever felt in the highest welfare of all who came within her influence. It was then and there that the desire came to me, almost irresistibly, to do all within my power, in memory of this precious woman, to better the condition of the graves of our dead.

Mr. John T. Daniells, founder of Memory Day, is a pioneer of Clinton County, Michigan. He was born on Christmas Day, 1840, in Troy, Oakland County. His education was received at Olivet College. In 1868 he settled on his farm in Clinton County, where he has since resided. His life has been closely associated with the agricultural interests of the State. In 1894 he was present in the Senate Chamber at Lansing to help organize the State Association of Farmers' Clubs, and has served the Association as president, as Board member, and as chairman of its legislative committee. He was one of the earliest agitators for rural free mail delivery in Michigan, starting the agitation which resulted in the first rural mail route in Clinton County in 1899. He has held numerous public offices, and was long president of the Clinton County Pioneer Society.—*Ed.*

Digitized by Google

With this purpose in view, I offered a resolution at the annual meeting of the State Association of Farmers' Clubs held at the State Capitol in December, 1904, which was adopted and endorsed by the State Grange in annual session also at the same time and place. The resolution asked that September 30 be designated "Memory Day," and be devoted to appropriately caring for our cemeteries on that autumn day, and making beautiful with flowers and loving care the graves of our dead. Taking up this matter with the Legislature at the following session an Act was passed in accord with the spirit of this resolution. My request soon afterward to the Governor of the State, Hon. Fred M. Warner, asking that he issue his proclamation inviting the people to observe "Memory Day," was complied with, and the proclamation was issued.

As the years pass, Memory Day is being more and more generally observed throughout Michigan, and the hope is cherished that the time is not far distant when Memory Day, in the autumn time, will be as generally and helpfully observed over this entire land as Decoration Day is now observed in the spring time. May that day soon come when there shall not be a neglected grave within the borders of this beautiful America!

The poem, "Memory Day," by Michigan's loved poet, Will Carleton, and the plaintive hymn, of the same title, by Messrs. Latta and Gabriell; will touch human hearts and cause more thoughtful care to be given to the graves of our loved ones. Copies of the poem and hymn will be sent to those requesting them, to use in simple exercises in aid of the observance of Memory Day.

Digitized by Google

Proclamation by Governor Ferris:

MEMORY DAY

A Proclamation by the Governor:

Once upon a time a Michigan school teacher traveled two-hundred forty-seven miles for the sole purpose of hearing Adelina Patti sing "Home Sweet Home." This dear old song brought to the consciousness of four or five thousand listeners the precious memories of childhood's days. In large measure human personality is the aggregate of one's memory. At the grave of father, mother, wife, husband, son, daughter, baby, neighbor, friend, the joys and sorrows of the past, through memory, are revived and retouched with the benediction of love. Our cemeteries are cities of the dead, made beautiful through the magic touch of loving hands. It is hoped that on "Memory Day" every cemetery in Michigan will command the special attention of our citizens. If, by chance, a neglected grave is found, put it in order and place upon it a handful of flowers. If there is a corner called the potter's field, clear away the weeds and rubbish. Here strew and plant flowers. The condition of this particular spot is the real test of community love and loyalty. In remembering the dead, we serve the living.

I, Woodbridge N. Ferris, governor of Michigan, invite her people to convene in the cemeteries at 2:00 o'clock, p. m., on September 30, designated by the Legislature as "Memory Day," and there scatter flowers and hold appropriate exercises in memory of the dead.

Digitized by Google

Memory Day

By Will Carleton

Under this mound is a maiden at rest—
Hands white as pearls to her bosom were pressed;
Tears pure as rays from the stars in the sky
Fell on her face when they bade her goodbye.
Not long on earth did the soul shed its cheer:
Only a half-score of days was it here.
Then she was called by her heaven-given name
Back to the beautiful home whence she came:
But the bright spirit in passing away,
Left its sweet impress on glorified clay.
So, of the hearts of her kindred possessed,
In this last cradle they kissed her to rest.
Here her fair image lies prone at our feet:
Must not its refuge stay dainty and sweet?
Let this reflection be with us alway—
Deeper than ever on Memory Day!

Under this mound lies the wreck of a joy—
Pride's brightest garlands were hung on his name:
Manhood and womanhood welcomed the boy,
Thanks went to heaven at the hour that he came.
Many the hopes that upon him were laid;
Brilliant ambitions were centered within:
Could he not lead in the cohorts of trade?
Might not his genius a world-homage win?
Would he not plead with the listening throng,
For their right action and word and belief?

Digitized by Google

Might he not triumph in story or song?
Should not the nation-tribes vote him their chief?
As by an acorn the oak is possessed,
What might have been in this tiny form lay:
See that due honors around him shall rest:
Give him his portion of Memory Day.

Under this mound is the bride of the year:
Much did she love, and as much did she fear.
Life early whispered that loss goes with gain—
Exquisite bliss carries exquisite pain.
Short were the lessons vouchsafed her to learn,
Ere to the summer-land she must return.
Perished this girl as a spring-blighted leaf:
Wifehood and motherhood both were so brief!—
Here is a maid who, though winsome and gay,
Never knew wedlock—Death wooed her away.
Here the sweet garb of a soul that was wrecked—
Lured into triumph—then crushed by neglect.
Oh, could the beauties of honor and worth
Sown every day in the gardens of earth,
Rise up in flowers half as lovely as they,
There were less need of our Memory Day!

Brave-hearted youth! how you sprang to the fight,
Ready and eager your prowess to prove!
Whether you stood for the wrong or the right,
You were encompassed with pride and with love.
How in such good as their fond eyes could see,
Father and mother would triumph and rest!
How in such actions as faulty might be,
Still they stood by you and hoped for the best!

Digitized by Google

So did your strength fill a need of each hour—
No one could think it could e'er be o'erthrown:
You had the courage, but death had the power,
And you are lying unfeared and alone.
You had a mission that could not be spoiled;
Although but briefly, proud youth has its way:
Whether for country you battled or toiled,
You have a claim upon Memory Day!

Always save thoughts for the mother and wife
That, through the burden and toil of a life,
Round those she loved, threw protection and care,
In the long hours—were they stormy or fair.
Bless the sweet form that in suppliance bent,
Up to high heaven prayers for mercy she sent;
Though she was working, the while that she prayed—
Ever she aided, while pleading for aid.

Trouble to her called for swift-speeding balm:
Over sad spirits her life cast a calm.
Many a soul to beatitudes led,
After it walked through the gates of the dead,
Told the true words as it came to her near,
"This is the angel that guided me here."
Is not a life that such fruits can display,
E'en of itself one long Memory Day?

Look at the tomb of a king lying here!
Though on his low roof no blazonry be:
Monarch of forests—brave peace-pioneer—
Vanguard of civilization was he:
Branches barbaric spread wide where he came—
Poisons were haunting the swamp-tainted air;

Digitized by Google

Beasts growled their fear at his fallow's red flame—
Reptile assassins were watching him there.
Loved ones around him fell low in the fray—
Under the wild flowers he hid them from sight;
Toil was his faithfullest comfort by day,
Dreams of the angels his solace by night.
Low is this tomb, for so lofty a heart!
Here as the centuries drift must it stay:
But should the living, ere hence they depart,
Drape it in splendor each Memory Day!

There lies a soldier whose heart laughed at fear:
Loud was their praise when they buried him here!
Garlands upon him descended in showers:
Now he gets yearly a handful of flowers.
Shall his last camp glitter only in view
Of the old comrades, grown feeble and few?—
Here is a pastor who toiled night and day:
Help him to preach from this pulpit of clay.
Let not his mound, once distinguished and high,
Shunned by God's worshipers, shrink from the sky!
Wars for your life this physician oft led:
Give him due thanks 'tis not you that are dead.
Here is a statesman, whose genius flamed high:
Let not the glow of his brilliancy die.
Ah, there is never the lack of a way
Justice to render—on Memory Day!

Thousands of tombs have long passed from our ken,
Those who once guarded them cannot come nigh:
They, too, have gone from the mansions of men:
Bleak and oft nameless those sepulchres lie.

Digitized by Google

How do we deem but from first unto last,
Those who are gone held their earth dwellings dear?
How can we say but the souls that are passed,
Still love the bodies that harbored them here?
Grave-yards?—God's albums!—and when He has said,
Thund'ring to us through our grief or our mirth,
"Dying ones, what have you done with my dead—
All in my image—entrusted to earth?"
"Those that thou gavest, we cherished with care"—
Thus to the king may we truthfully say:
"Love linked to justice, and work wed with prayer—
Hail the clear sunrise of Memory Day!"

Digitized by Google

Father Jones and the Jesuit Archives

By Hon. Fred Landon

London, Ont.

THE State of Michigan and the Canadian province of Ontario must ever share their interest in the Jesuit order since each owes to that religious body the beginnings of its religious history. The men who carried the banner of the Cross into the wilderness of Northern Michigan and planted their missions there and on the Detroit River were the co-workers of those who laid down their lives in the effort to convert to Christianity the Huron Indians located to the south of Georgian Bay. We marvel today at their tremendous enterprise and energy, their zeal and devotion to duty that seemingly enabled them to brave every difficulty and danger and make every sacrifice for their great cause. Their record in journals, letters and yearly reports Parkman wove together in his fascinating story of *The Jesuits in North America.* Rev. Father Campbell wrote the story anew a few years ago in his *Pioneer Priests in North America.* Perhaps less known to American students of history is the work that was carried on through a long period of years by the veteran archivist of St. Mary's College at Montreal, Rev. A. E. Jones, S. J., whose death occurred a few months ago.

Father Jones, having under his own care the documentary history of his order in New France, was afforded unequalled opportunities for research but his own independent contributions to knowledge of Jesuit activity in America in the seventeenth and early eighteenth Centuries were of great importance and gave him a high place among American historical investi-

Digitized by Google

gators. He was a friend of Parkman, and the American historian more than once refers to the treasures of St. Mary's College in Montreal which he used in writing his great work. To special advantages in the way of material at hand Father Jones added a deep love for his order and its history in America. It was his ambition to make a complete record of the Jesuit missions to the Hurons, to compile a list of all who served in the work from first to last, as well as to make positive identification of the sites of the more famous mission stations. These aims he was largely able to accomplish. In a letter I have before me, written in October, 1911, after his volume on the Huron mission had been issued, he says:

"It was the outcome of prolonged research which would have been tedious in the extreme were it not that my heart was in the work. Here the old saw finds its application, 'Ubi amatur non laboratur, aut si laboratur labor amatur,' in other words, it was a labor of love. This same incentive, but supernaturally vivified, can alone account for the heroism of the Huron missionaries toiling in the Master's vineyard."

In 1909 the Ontario Archives Department published as its fifth annual report the monograph prepared by Father Jones on the Huron missions. The first part of the volume dealt with the identification of the mission sites and was accompanied by a map of "The Huronia of the Relations" which upset some theories previously held. The second part of the volume aimed to be a record of each of the mission stations during the whole of its existence, chronicling the arrivals and departures of the missionaries and their helpers in each year. Father Jones had previously added much to the general knowledge of the Jesuits and their missions by his part in the editing of the Thwaites reprints of the Jesuit Relations. To that monumental work he had contributed the "Theoretical Map of

Digitized by Google

Huronia" and between this and the later map there were only slight differences, though one had been based on documentary evidence only, the other on like evidence supplemented by a topographical investigation and careful personal inspection of the probable sites.

I remember well the first time that I called upon him in Montreal. He met me at the door of St. Mary's College and as he stood there in his long black robe, his beard almost to his waist and with a huge key in his hand he might have been Saint Peter. Down stone steps we passed and through great iron doors into the vault-like room that contained the records of the Jesuit order in eastern America. Every wall was shelved to the ceiling and other stacks in the center of the room left little space in which to move about. Row after row of bound records and files of documents were testimony alike to the vast work of the order and the care with which its records had been preserved. The story of Jesuit activity during two centuries, from Montreal to beyond the Great Lakes, was here.

It would take long to list all the historical treasures that were laid out for examination. There were nearly a dozen of the original editions of the Relations, those tiny little missionary reports that were printed for the edification of the faithful and the stirring up of the indifferent. Were there ever missionary reports the equal of these since Paul wrote of his journeyings and work? No library in the world has yet brought together a complete set of these originals, though Laval University at Quebec has all but three.

The linguistic writings of Father Pièrre Potier, who died at the Sandwich mission on the Detroit River in 1781, are among the treasures of these Jesuit archives. There are five volumes, all in the neat handwriting of Father Potier.

Digitized by Google

The first two contain the Huron radicals or roots of the five conjugations, the third volume is a Huron grammar and compendium, the fourth a collection of sermons and homilies in the Huron tongue while the fifth volume is made up of the two previous volumes of Huron roots with many additions and a list of some 566 nouns in the order of the conjugations to which they belong. It may not be generally known that the Ontario Archives Department is planning to reproduce these volumes in photo-facsimile. The result should be important for the linguistic study of the North American Indians.

The original journal of Marquette is a possession of St. Mary's College that has special interest for Michigan. Parkman, in a footnote in his volume on LaSalle, refers to this important manuscript which has been twice at least reprinted. It is written in a large leather bound book and on the last page appears the declaration of Marquette that this is the true account of his journeyings. Marquette died in harness and Parkman gives some interesting details of the close of his life and of the burial of his bones by Indians at St. Ignace. Human bones, with fragments of birch bark, were found in 1877 on the supposed site of the St. Ignace mission. Marquette's important connection with Michigan was suitably recognized a few years ago by the erection of the Trentanove statue on Mackinac Island near a spot where he is supposed to have celebrated mass.

These and other interesting records of Jesuit missionary activity were brought forth and commented upon by the archivist. There was something of the parent's love for a child in his handling of these books and papers. He talked much of the manuscript writings of Father Potier and recalled Parkman's description of the conditions under which these writings had originated. In their miserable huts, by the light of the

Digitized by Google

fire, the Jesuits pieced together the fragments of the Indian language. "The standing topic of their evening talk was the Huron language," says Parkman. "Concerning this each had some new discovery to relate, some new suggestion to offer; and in the task of analyzing its construction and deducing its hidden laws these intelligent and highly cultivated minds found a congenial occupation."

It is a matter of wonder that such writings should have escaped not only the perils and dangers of that time but as well the vicissitudes of the days since. Their early preservation was probably due to their being sent back to Montreal for the use of the fathers there who were expecting later to enter the wilderness. Here they are today and one can almost fancy that they still have something of the smell of smoky fires about them.

Father Jones, whose death will be regretted by friends all over the United States and Canada, was a corresponding member of several of the leading historical societies of the United States. He was honored a few years ago with the degree of the University of Toronto and had long been a member of the Royal Society of Canada. He was a painstaking investigator whose work is greatest because of the way in which it opened up paths along which others will work in the days to come.

Digitized by Google

HARRY COLEMAN

BY HOWARD H. FITZGERALD

LOS ANGELES, CAL.

AMONG the long line of men whose lives have become part of the history of Michigan, there has been none of a more interesting character and few whose attainments have been of greater value to the State than those of Harry Coleman who died suddenly in Detroit on the morning of Sunday, February 10, 1918.

As a newspaper publisher for nearly a quarter of a century, he had rendered continuous service to the people of this State as a result of his high ideals of private citizenship and public service. And this was true because of his practical business-like mind and his ability to place his ideas and suggestions in such workable form as to produce definite results of a beneficial character.

While still a young lad, Mr. Coleman developed an unusual interest in political subjects and in sociology. He became a student of American history such as one rarely finds save in men of mature minds. From youth he was an omniverous reader and with a retentive memory he built the foundation which served him so well in later life.

As a boy in the St. Johns High School, young Coleman found it difficult to take part in debates, and as for ordinary "rhetoricals" they were well-nigh impossible for him. This extreme timidity and hesitation are interesting now in view of the ease and facility with which he spoke in public later in life. But the strong mind of the young man was hinted at in an in-

Digitized by Google

HARRY COLEMAN

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

cident that occurred in connection therewith. Young Coleman asked for permission to be excused from class declamation work explaining that he was perfectly willing to take extra work in its place. The superintendent of schools insisted that he should go on in the usual way, the same as other students. When young Coleman explained that it was impossible for him to face the class in declamation it was hoped he might be given relief, but the superintendent was obdurate and as a result the young man left high school in his senior year. He went to work for the American Express Company, first in the St. Johns office and later as a messenger running between Owosso and Muskegon.

But the craving for an education and the desire to make the most of himself soon caused him to seek admission at the University of Michigan. He made up his high school work and was admitted on examination.

It might fairly be said that he was "predisposed" toward newspaper work and the printing business. While still a little lad in short trousers, he set up a job printing "office" in one room of his parents' home and solicited work from his acquaintances, getting out cards, letter heads and like amateur work. During all of his business career, he carefully preserved in his desk a card used in that initial advent into the printing business which read: "H. Coleman, Printer. Commercial work of all kinds respectfully solicited." The seed thus early sown was to bear fruit in the choice of his life work. While serving as express messenger he acted as local correspondent for the Detroit *Free Press* and received many compliments from the state editor on the excellent style of his reporting.

At the University of Michigan he was chosen managing editor of the *U. of M. Daily,* as the *Michigan Daily* was known

Digitized by Google

at that time. Probably not in the history of the publication either before or since have the editorial columns of that sprightly little college paper carried so many "heavy" editorials. In place of the usual discussion of athletics, sports and events of personal interest on the campus, the *Daily* treated political topics both state and national with force and vigor. Even some of the vital questions confronting the Regents were tackled with grim determination. Those youthful ebullitions were not always right, but they gave promise of the coming man. They indicated the serious trend of his mind and the desire to be part of the real work-a-day world outside the circumscribed walls of college life. The *Daily* was popular in those days and frequently quoted in the press of the State.

Before entering the University, young Coleman had decided upon a newspaper career and devoted himself to such studies as he felt would be of the greatest value in fitting him for that niche in life. He applied himself with unusual diligence and employed his time to the best possible advantage. It must not be supposed that he was a prematurely old young man, because he took keen interest in sports and while still a young lad played second base on the St. Johns ball team composed of fully grown men.

When he finished his college work he secured a position on the Detroit *News,* where he did his first regular newspaper work, covering the Windsor beat. But the desire to own a newspaper of his own was very strong in his heart. He had opinions and he longed to express them in his own way, unhampered by editors-in-chief. At the age of twenty-three in 1895, he purchased the Oakland County *Post* at Pontiac, from Ferris S. Fitch, and entered upon his career as editor and publisher of one of the leading county-seat papers of that period.

Digitized by Google

The next year, the memorable free silver campaign held popular interest and into that the youthful editor entered with zest and the unhampered ardor of inexperience. He supported Bryan, and the *Post* contained many editorials on the money problem. His ideas on that question were to undergo a great change however with advancing years, for he afterward regarded the Bryan position as wholly untenable. At college he gave unusual attention to political economy and the subjects of politics and sociology possessed great charm for him.

But it was not written that he was to become merely the dreaming editor, with his columns full of ponderous editorials and his cash box full of notices of notes coming due. Even as a young man he evinced keen business sagacity and shrewd financial ability. He at once grasped the practical side of the publishing business and realized that if his newspaper were to have any influence in the community or if he were to become a real factor in the business life of the town he must make a success of his undertaking. From the outset the business conduct of his newspaper received its share of his attention and almost from the day of his ownership the *Post* began to enlarge its scope of influence by added circulation and augmented advertising patronage.

At that time the newspaper business in Michigan was undergoing a metamorphosis. The old time editor-owner who devoted himself largely to the editorial side of the business and abandoned the counting room to its fate, was giving way to younger men who were not merely writers or printers, but those who appreciated the necessity for the application of sound business methods. This newer class saw the need of modern salesmanship in the advertising department. They likewise understood the need of proper remuneration for their time and efforts. The business was beginning to command

Digitized by Google

greater respect in the business world and to get a new classification in financial circles.

Mr. Coleman was a leader in this respect at that time and his newspaper was organized on a thoroughly business-like basis with a modern system of accounting and adequate bookkeeping as a necessary accompaniment.

As Pontiac grew in size and importance Mr. Coleman became anxious to fill the Oakland County field in the most thorough manner possible and in 1900 he started the *Daily Press,* a rather precarious undertaking, for the town at that time had only about 8,000 population and is only twenty-five miles from Detroit. After the new paper had been fairly launched, Mr. Coleman discovered that he had entered upon the first real contest of his business career. The Pontiac *Gazette* had been previously run as a weekly. That property soon changed hands and entered the daily field. There was not enough business in the town for two newspapers and it soon became evident that one of them was doomed to failure. The *Gazette* had strong supporters and the battle for supremacy was watched with interest by other newspaper publishers in the State. It was here that the metal of the young publisher was put to the acid test. He developed unusual ingenuity and gave every indication that he was master of the situation. He knew the reportorial side of a small city daily and he had a wonderful nose for news. He had positive genius for getting the best out of his men. He understood the mechanical side and appreciated the great value of displaying news advantageously. Headlines were just coming into general use in the display of news matter and Mr. Coleman was a pioneer in this respect. But more important than all he followed a wise and fair policy born of good sense and sound judgment.

Digitized by Google

Like a good general he was quick to take advantage of every opening that was offered and it soon became evident that it was not the *Daily Press* that was going to suffer in the race to dominate the field. Training, aptitude and brains were telling, and it was not long before the *Gazette* was taken over by Mr. Coleman and consolidated with the *Press*, as the *Press Gazette* under which title the paper is still published.

Mr. Coleman always gave freely of his time to advance the interests of the city and county. He took a prominent part in all movements for civic betterment and was never tiring in his efforts to improve the moral and social standards of the town. He was deeply interested in the religious and educational factors of the city and was ready always with a helping hand to aid in advancing the interests of the churches and the schools.

Harry Coleman was an individualist. He belonged to no school of philosophy, nor was he circumscribed by party ties in his political thought. He was an "independent" with an ambition to be absolutely fair to all elements and factors. The great vital problems of life he thought out for himself, and his greatest desire in life was to so phrase his writings that he might make men think. He had confidence in the ultimate righteousness of the judgment of the people, if they could only be induced to think out things for themselves.

He was naturally a conservative. He was prudent and thrifty in his own affairs and he disliked to see men fritter away their earnings in useless ways. While conservative he was quick to embrace any new idea of merit, and remedial measures that were based on what he considered sound judgments found him a willing advocate. He feared that type of citizenship which was ready to hysterically embrace every new vote-catching "ism." He was suspicious of the man who

Digitized by Google

changed his mind as often as he read a newspaper. He was anxious to have men study politics, and to bring about individual reasoning. He always urged young men to interest themselves in political questions and to take a part in the conduct of affairs.

As he grew older, the trend of his mind was to make him less the vigorous advocate and more the thoughtful analyst. His mind was logical and his style convincing. He developed constantly in his work and the product of his pen took on tone and finish in much the same way that an artist or a sculptor gives evidence of greater finesse and more perfect technique. He viewed all public questions from every possible angle and he discussed all sides of a problem, showing unprejudiced consideration and the purpose to be fair. This did not prevent his being positive and insistent on occasion when he thought strongly on a given subject to which he had devoted great research. His mind was virile and he could express his ideas in commanding English and argumentative style. He rarely lacked for words and his wide vocabulary and picturesque style lent great force to his writings. He wielded a trenchant pen when aroused against any piece of injustice. His satirical shafts when directed against some political mountebank or some malicious piece of injustice were of a withering character that drove home his answers in most effective form.

He despised cant and pretense and could happily phrase an ironical sally at some social or political camouflage that effectively held up an unfortunate pretender to wholesome public reprobation.

As owner of the *Press Gazette* Mr. Coleman established a place for himself among the newspaper men of the State and was regarded as possessing a rare combination of factors that made up a successful publisher.

Digitized by Google

When because of ill health he disposed of his property at Pontiac he did so reluctantly, but with the feeling that he must abandon the strenuous pace which he had set for himself, and seek absolute rest and quiet. He spent a winter in California in an effort to build up his health, and later on he busied himself with travel and study and doing special writing. Last summer he was persuaded by Mr. E. D. Stair to assume full charge of the Detroit *Free Press* as managing director. He assumed that task alive to the possibilities and splendidly equipped by reason of his general knowledge gained incident to the successful publication of a newspaper in a smaller city where the publisher necessarily becomes closely in touch with all departments of the work.

In this position he found ample opportunity for the expression of his ideas of conservative editorial work. He believed in criticism as the most effective remedy in the conduct of public affairs. But he was rarely harsh or vindictive. He was prone to look upon those whom he believed to be wrong as merely misguided and he was not inclined to impugn motives save in unusual cases.

Harry Coleman was born on a farm in Greenbush Township, Clinton County, August 13, 1872. His father, Charles Coleman, was a native of Orange County, New York, and his mother, Minnie King, was born in Michigan and grew to womanhood in Clinton County. He was united in marriage with Ann Loomis Richards in Ann Arbor, August 24, 1897. Miss Richards was a daughter of Rev. J. E. and Hulda Richards. Her father was a well known Presbyterian clergyman in Michigan, filling many important charges before his death while still comparatively a young man.

Mrs. Coleman who resides in Pontiac with her three daughters was a wonderful inspiration to her husband. She is a

Digitized by Google

cultured woman of wide reading and deeply interested in the social problems which are pressing for solution. She is a graduate of the University of Michigan and is the happy possessor of a very rare mind. Together this unusual couple had been interested in all the finer things of life and were genuinely anxious to bring as many of them as possible into the lives of the great mass of humanity. To that end they had dedicated their lives. They lived unostentatiously, helpful kindly neighbors, ambitious for their city, eager for their State and keen for the success of democratic ideals in the nation and in the world.

Such in brief was the character of Harry Coleman, gentleman, scholar and patriot.

Digitized by Google

MICHIGAN AUTHORS' ASSOCIATION
A SYMPOSIUM [1]

I

WINFIELD LIONEL SCOTT

WINFIELD LIONEL SCOTT, president of the Michigan Authors' Association during the season of 1917-1918, from June to June, has long been a poet of recognized merit, as well as a writer of literary articles and tales of travel, and an artist in water colors.

In his capacity as president of the Authors' Association he served well and faithfully, making the unusual record of never being absent from a meeting of the organization during his term of office. The same may be said of his fidelity to the association when he held the office of recording secretary, which he did for five successive terms previous to his election as chairman. Promptness and faithfulness to duty are among his strong characteristics.

Mr. Scott was born in Northern New York. He is of Irish descent, and looks out upon the world with eyes of typical "Irish blue," in which there is a twinkle of humor, combined with a certain expression of kindly shrewdness. His great-great-grandfather, Sir John Scott, was Chief Justice of Ireland, created Earl of Clonmel, December 6, 1793. On his mother's side the family were Alsatians. His grandfather served in the army for France under the first Napoleon. Mr. Scott is next in line to the Earldom, but he is too thoroughly American to dwell upon this fact.

Reared on a farm, he learned early to see the great out-of-

Digitized by Google

doors with appreciative eyes. He received only a country district school education. He may be said to be, in his artistic and literary work, self-taught, and while his writings are known far and wide, his water colors are to be found in many homes of Detroit and several other cities. He has to his credit one altar piece in an ancient church in an Alsatian hamlet, his mother's birth place.

An unassuming gentleman of quiet and refined tastes, Mr. Scott devotes much of his leisure time to his literary pursuits. His poetry is, to a great extent, of the classic order, typifying the higher ideals of life and the more poetic side of Nature. To his eyes a flower garden is not merely a garden, but a thing alive with color and fragrance; to him a deed is not simply an action, but the symbol of the mind that conceived and realized it. Kindly and optimistic in temperament, he dreams of the Brotherhood of Man as a coming fact, notwithstanding the horrors and brutalities of the present world war. Thoroughly patriotic, Mr. Scott holds for peace, but, I fancy, is willing to "fight for it." if conditions demand. Moreover, it must be peace gained aright; no "camouflage."

His books of poetry include: "Songs of an Idle Hour," "An Elsation Idyl," "Interludes;" "Azure and Silver;" "'Neath Summer Skies;" "At Sunset;" and "Lazy Days in Venice." He has also been, for a number of years a contributor of Verse to

1. In the January number of the Magazine it was promised that a list of the members of the Michigan Authors' Association would be given, together with their most important works, and something about their present literary life and plans. This article has been prepared in fulfillment of this promise. Attention is called to an error in the January Magazine, p. 33; the prize committee having complete charge of the Michigan Authors' Association and *News* contest was composed of Mr. William F. Cornell (Chairman), Mrs. E. Cora DePuy, and Mr. Ward McCauley.—*Ed.*

Digitized by Google

the Boston *Transcript* and other periodicals. During the past four years he has written a series of travel letters, under the title: "From My Note Book," which were published in one of the Detroit newspapers.

During his travels abroad Mr. Scott has collected many rare and beautiful articles, which are grouped in his apartment, lending a most delightful atmosphere of the mystery of foreign lands. A gentleman writing for one of the Eastern papers under the title: "A Poet's Workshop," said of Mr. Scott's home:

"It is quite at the top of the house, overlooking a well kept garden. You climb a flight of stairs and rap at a door. A pleasant-faced gentleman opens the door and smilingly bids you enter. You are ushered into a small den; the walls covered with paintings and sketches.

"The floors and seats are covered with Persian rugs; there are Oriental stuffs, the gleam of metal; and books everywhere. One end of this den has a built-in cabinet which represents a greater portion of the world, and what is best of all, nearly everything here was collected by Mr. Scott himself, during his extensive travels. Many of the objects cannot be duplicated. Here are grouped the American and English flags, bound together with the flag of his beloved France. This particular American flag has been carried and waved in fifteen foreign lands. In the window is a thrifty ivy, brought from the ruins of Pompeii, and a pot of hysop from the walls of Jerusalem.

"Opening off this den is the workroom. A low table holds his artist material. In the window is his typewriting machine, with always a sheet of manuscript on which he is working. Here are books, pictures, a table littered with periodicals, and folded manuscripts. Here too, are Oriental rugs, and the glitter of metals. In his sleeping room is a bookcase filled

Digitized by Google

with autographed books of his many friends; a collection of old volumes in their original pig-skin bindings; the books of which Mr. Scott himself is the author, inlaid, hand-embossed, and bound in quaint bindings. Here also is a rare antique, which he considers his one treasure and priceless—a head of Christ, brought by Crusaders from Palestine early in the eleventh century."

Dr. James Henderson, of Detroit, a member of the Michigan Authors' Association, after reading Mr. Scott's articles, "From My Note Book," paid the author this "Passing Tribute," writing to the newspaper in which the series was published, as follows:

"To the Editor:—The articles 'From My Note Book,' appearing regularly in your paper, seem to me of more than passing interest; the work of the brain and pen of our gifted President of the Michigan Authors' Association, who has made the trip to the Holy Land and has seen with his own eyes, and was able to depict with the beauty of his pen work, the many scenes along the way traversed by our blessed Saviour while on earth, seems at least to me, to be worthy of more notice than they have received at your hands.

"Pardon me, but I think that even editors have lost the art of appreciation; or is it that the burdening cares incident to newspaper work robs them of the power of discrimination. However it may be, we feel that it is not right. We have in Mr. Scott a man of the finest mind, and to know him long as a friend, as has the writer, is to know more and more his growing worth. As a child he goes among the flowers; as a man in full estate, among facts; and he depicts things as they are, full, fair and with honest intent. His article 'Salva Regina,' as I understand, brought forth a beautiful encomium. and a gracious 'Thank you' from the Abbott of Gethsemane,

Digitized by Google

Kentucky. All Mr. Scott's other 'Notes' show a beauty of diction in well rounded sentences and language tempered to the theme, whether he walks in the busy thoroughfares touching elbows with Sheik or Muzzen, or in the flower-girt lanes of an English village.

"A man of no country, yet a man of all countries through which he has journeyed; truthful to all of them, he holds no grudge to any, but when he speaks of Alsace, the love of the Motherland brings the tear near to the flowing. This marks him truly the man. He has *lived* his scenes; therefore, I say his 'Notes' are of choicest interest. I think your readers will join me in paying tribute to his genius and his worth."

Here is a tribute from man to man. What further can one offer as a conclusion to this truthful sketch of a loyal man?

II

JOSEPHINE SULLIVAN-CONLON

Josephine Byrne Sullivan-Conlon, member of the Michigan Authors' Association and editor of the *Michigan Catholic,* has been a student her life long. Receiving her education in parochial and public schools, she graduated from high school at the age of eleven years and passed the examination for teacher at fourteen.

After leaving school she still maintained her love for study, finally taking up the work of journalism. She was a student of law for nearly two years, receiving much of her training under men who had been noted journalists in Ireland and England.

For twenty-five years she has been associated with the *Michigan Catholic,* and it is through her proficiency that this journal

Digitized by Google

ranks with the highest religious publications of today. For fifteen years she was associate editor of this publication, finally succeeding to the editorship on the demise of its late editor Mr. William H. Hughes.

While Mrs. Conlon leads a very busy life, yet she finds time for the writing of poetry and short stories. Her first volume, a collection of short stories, entitled, "Father John and Other Stories," has met with phenomenal success. Her book of verse "Smiles and Tears," fulfills the significance of its title. There are many smiles, but more of the poems touch the heart; hence the tears. The volume has received very flattering press notices from all over the land, and the book has found its way from coast to coast and throughout Canada and the Northwest.

Mrs. Conlon is a member of many literary and charitable organizations, and has held office in the Catholic Press Association of America, the League of Catholic Women, the Auxiliary of Providence Hospital, and kindred institutions. She is also a member of the Michigan Press Association.

She is a frequent contributor to the *Extension Magazine, Catholic Columbian, The Irish World, The Freeman,* of Dublin, Ireland, and the *Herald,* of Bombay, besides daily papers of Detroit. We append her latest bit of war verse.

BE BRAVE

Don't send blue letters to the boys,
They need cheery ones today;
They're fighting hard to keep up heart
Since the hour they marched away;
Don't tell them of your sorrow, dear,
Nor how you fret and pine;
These brave lads full of life and hope
Need courage for the line.

Digitized by Google

Just send a bit of sunshine
And keep your heart stout, too,
You have need to save your strength, dear,
There's work for you to do;
The boys need care and comfort
For the grey days they may see,
And they're hoping for the best in you,
'Till home from o'er the sea.

Just bottle up your heavy grief,
Then throw the cork away,
Just learn to smile and hide your ache,
For the lads now far away;
And send them jolly, loving lines
Of the bright days yet to come;
They'll praise your courage daily,
As they pray, "God bless my home."

III

PRUELLA JANET SHERMAN

Mrs. Pruella Janet Sherman, late recording secretary of the Michigan Authors' Association is one of the most widely known newspaper women in Michigan. She is the daughter of a Baptist clergyman, and was born and reared in New York State. At present she is a resident of Detroit. For several years she was connected with the *Sunday News-Tribune.*

Her pen covers a wide range, and is both trenchant and analytical. Among the things she has written is a series of articles on spiritualism which was continued for nearly two years. Then she wrote a series of "Cipher stories," based upon

Digitized by Google

the cypher discovered by Dr. Orville W. Owen, which attracted so much attention a few years since, in his Shakespearean writings, which caused many scholars and students to believe it was a clue to the concealed works of Sir Francis Bacon, and ascribed the writing of Shakespeare's plays to that gentleman.

Mrs. Sherman mastered the Bacon-Shakespeare cypher as discovered by Dr. Owen, then wrote a description of its workings which was published, and was copied by *The Baconian,* a magazine published in London, England.

Then followed original cypher stories by Mrs. Sherman, which consisted of a certain number of stories concealed in another group, the concealed ones to be deciphered according to the directions for working the cypher as shown in the descriptive article, and which were worked out successfully by many persons. Thereby she achieved a literary feat which no other person has ever undertaken.

Mrs. Sherman has to her credit scores of poems and short stories, also a series of psychic tales, based upon the telepathic theory of the late Dr. Thompson Jay Hudson, author of *The Law of Psychic Phenomena.*

Later, Mrs. Sherman became associated with Rev. Margaret C. La Grange, the able pastor of the First Church of New Thought in Detroit, in the editorship of the National New Thought Magazine, published by the New Thought Association of Detroit and Los Angeles, California; in fact took the entire supervision of this publication.

A few years since, she wrote a series of articles on the various religious cults, published in the Detroit *Journal,* extending through a period of many months, attracting considerable attention.

Her articles on Theosophy have been greatly appreciated

Digitized by Google

by Theosphists in Michigan, copies of which have been forwarded to American headquarters, Los Angeles, Cal., and Adayr, India. She is a member of the Krotona Institute, Hollywood, Cal.

Mrs. Sherman was president for two years of the Michigan Womans' Press Association, and is now on the Board of Directors; a charter member of the Detroit Woman's Press Club (now known as the Women Writer's Club), of which she was president for two years; and member of Chapter B., Michigan P. E. O. Sisterhood, an organization for culture and philanthropy. The chapters throughout the United States number 40,000 members.

She was vice-chairman of the Publicity Committee, Detroit branch, Woman's Committee, Council of National Defense, during the recent registration of women for war service, and one of the three women appointed as members at large of the State Committee in the publicity work at that time.

Mrs. Sherman's articles have appeared in many of the leading periodicals of our country. One especially creditable and extensive article, descriptive and historical, on "Detroit the Gateway to the Inland Sea. Illustrated," was published in *Good Housekeeping*.

Mrs. Sherman's poems have a distinctive touch and daintiness not often found in verse of today. We append the following, read at the recent Lansing meeting of the Michigan Press and Printers Association:

THE SERVICE FLAG

The stars upon my Service Flag!
I count them o'er and o'er;
An emblem each of sacrifice,
A rosary—of four.

Digitized by Google

Each one its tender memory brings
Of some sweet, holy hour,
That in the garden of my heart
Unfolded like a flower.

One was the lover of my youth;
His fondness knew no bounds;
Today his strong and healing hands
Are binding soldiers' wounds.

One answered to the first clear call
To take the wondrous chance
Of life, or death; my first born one—
He serves "somewhere in France."

One treads the deck of warship gray;
The dangers of the sea
Enshroud him like a somber pall,
'Mid War's black strategy.

One sails where sinister menace lurks
Among the "upper deeps;"
Ah, well I know the courage rare
His loyal spirit keeps.

And thus they left me. One by one
They drifted from my care;
And while I wait, my longing soul
Enwraps them all with prayer.

Thus have I given all I have,
My Country, unto thee;
God help me rise to greater heights
From this Gethsemane.

Digitized by Google

For I must waste no time in tears;
There's work for me to do.
O band of red! O field of white!
O stars of heaven's blue—

The stars upon my Service Flag!
I count them o'er and o'er;
Through darkest night they shine with hope,
The stars that number—four.

Following is a list of the members of the Michigan Authors' Association to May, 1918, furnished by the Secretary:

Rev. and Mrs. C. L. Arnold, 292 West Hancock Ave., Detroit.
Senor and Madame Antona, 60 Louise Ave., Highland Park, Detroit.
Dr. E. L. M. Bristol, Penrose Apts., 126 John R. St., Detroit.
W. E. Brown, Dexter.
Harold C. Auer, 27 East Willis Ave., Detroit.
Mrs. G. W. Barlow, 1391 Mack Ave., Detroit.
Forest Bowman, 169 Kenilworth Ave., Detroit.
Dr. C. B. Burr, Flint, Mich.
Mrs. Alexander G. Bishop, 124 John R. St., Detroit.
Mrs. Florence Calnon, 44 Marcy St., Detroit.
Mrs. Josephine B. S. Conlon, *Michigan Catholic* Office, Detroit.
William Wallace Cook, Marshall, Mich.
W. F. Cornell, 710 Jefferson Ave., Detroit.
Charles D. Cameron, *Journal* Office, Detroit.
Mrs. E. Cora DePuy, 311 Majestic Bld., Detroit.

Digitized by Google

Miss Clara E. Dyar, Grosse Pointe Farms, Detroit.
Rev. C. B. Emerson, 190 Blaine Ave., Detroit. (Now in France).
J. N. Emery, 203 Union Bld., Syracuse, N. Y.
Mrs. Emma A. Fox, 430 Cass Ave., Detroit.
Mrs. Marie Frink, Ann Arbor, Mich.
H. R. Fuller, Pasadena Apartments, Jefferson Ave., Detroit.
Peter Grant, 52 Vancouver Ave., Detroit.
Edgar A. Guest, 124 Leicester Court, Detroit.
Norman Hackett, 441 Fourth Ave., Detroit.
Dr. James Henderson, 121 Belmont Ave., Detroit.
Frederic S. Isham, 59 Rowena St., Detroit.
Mrs. Ardell Jones, 79 Brighton Ave., Highland Park, Detroit.
Rev. J. B. Jeffery, 227 Commonwealth Ave., Detroit.
O. O. Keenan, Monroe, Mich.
S. M. Keenan, Eloise, Mich.
Miss Helen Keep, 753 Jefferson Ave., Detroit.
Joseph Labadie, 74 Buchanan St., Detroit.
Frank M. Lodge, 715 Majestic Bld., Detroit.
Ward McCauley, 213 Pallister Ave., Detroit.
Mrs. Lucy O. Mosher, 13 West Riopelle St., River Rouge, Mich.
David C. Nimmo, 1285 24th St., Detroit.
Dr. Orville W. Owen, 95 West Philadelphia Ave., Detroit.
Hon. Chase S. Osborn, Sault Ste. Marie, Mich.
Col. M. J. Phillips, Owosso, Mich.
Louis J. Rosenburg, 812 Ford Bld., Detroit.
Mrs. Florence G. Rutheven, 45 East Euclid Ave., Detroit.
Mrs. Frank W. Rose, 176 Palmer Ave. East, Detroit.
Mrs. Mary C. Spencer, Lansing, Mich., (State Librarian).
Mrs. Pruella Janet Sherman, 200 West Euclid Ave., Detroit.
C. H. Stevenson, 1213 Dime Bank Bld., Detroit.

Digitized by Google

Adam M. Strohm, 138 Burlingame Ave., Detroit.
Miss Jennie O. Starkey, 88 Pitcher St., Detroit.
Winfield Lionel Scott, 144 Maybury Grand Ave., Detroit.
Mrs. A. K. Sharp, 97 Park Place, Detroit.
Mr. and Mrs. W. E. Thompson, 57 West Bethune Ave., Detroit.
Mrs. Florence Woodward, 243 Columbus Ave., Detroit.
Frank D. Taylor, 105 Watson St., Detroit.
Mrs. Wadsworth Warren, 21 Van Dyke Place, Detroit.
Mrs. John Ward, 697 Second Ave., Detroit.
George B. Wehner, 221 Josephine Ave., Detroit.

Digitized by Google

INDIAN PLACE NAMES IN THE UPPER PENINSULA, AND THEIR INTERPRETATION

BY REV. WILLIAM F. GAGNIEUR, S. J.

SAULT STE. MARIE

LET us follow a certain route—take a trip in fact, in imagination—from Mackinac Island through the old waterway of over two-hundred years ago, to Point Detour and Drummond Island, passing up the St. Mary's River and Lake Superior to the Wisconsin line, go through the country, till we strike the Menominee River, on Lake Michigan, come down to the west shore of that lake, and passing through St. Ignace reach once more the Island of Michilimackinac.[1]

Mackinac Island famous in the history of wars as in times of peace,-and which was, years ago, the great center from which radiated the work of civilizing and christianizing the Indians of Michigan, is known in the histories of France, England and

1. The following sketch of Indian names of places in the Upper Peninsula is more than a matter of mere antiquarian curiosity; it may help us to reach as nearly as possible a point of exactness in historical research. I have heard and I have read, more than once, meanings and interpretations of Indian names and places which, I suppose satisfied the uncritical, but which in reality were nothing short of an insult to historical truth, and a slur on the beautiful Indian language. Some of these names and places which I am to note are of geographical and historical importance, others of geographical interest only, others of some literary value, while an odd one may be worth recording merely for the amusement of the readers. Again some of the names we are to discuss are *Indian*, others appear on the map today as *French* or *English*, but are connected with *Indian names*, either in their *origin* or in their *history*.

Digitized by Google

America as: *Michilimackinac, Missilimackinac,* and better, *Michinimackinong.*[2]

This is important to note, as the name *Mackinac* has given rise, not only in common talk among tourists but even in certain and otherwise perhaps reliable guide-books and histories, to this idea, that the Island is so called from its imagined resemblance to a turtle, which the word *Mackinac* really means; *Michi* or *Missi* meaning "large"; of course they do not attempt to explain the *li* or *ni* in *Michilimackinac* or *Michinimacinac.*

This however is absolutely incorrect.[3] Some years ago an Indian living at Les Cheneaux Islands gave me the real meaning, the same meaning Mr. Blackbird (Mekatebinesse) an educated Indian and Interpreter, who years ago lived near Petoskey, Michigan, mentions in his interesting little book on the Ottawa Indians; and even as far back as Jesuit *Relations* of 1671 we find the same meaning indicated with no little clearness.

In chapter III, we read: "In the middle of the Island dwelt as *strangers,* the three Nations who are now at Green Bay. Certain ones among these called *'Sauteurs'* (from Sault Ste. Marie Rapids) dwelt towards the West. Hurons also, to escape the Iroquois, dwelt for some years on the Island and four villages of *Ottawas* held land there." Especially (and *this* is above all to be noted by us just now) those who *bear the name of the Island* (Michilimackinac) are called *Missilimackinacs* and these were so numerous "that some still

2. Ch=sh.

3. So also is D. W. Jones' translation "Place of the big wounded or lame person" incorrect. But what shall we say of Schoolcraft's meaning, "Place of dancing spirits" (literally: place of great dance tree)—to-wit: *Mishi,* great; *nim,* dancing; *ak,* wood, tree; *ong,* place! (*Personal Memoirs,* p. 443).

Digitized by Google

living assure us, that they counted thirty villages in a fort four miles in circumference, when"—remark well what follows —*"the Iroquois came, and destroyed them."*

Now Mr. Blackbird and my Indian friend of whom I spoke hold practically the same tradition. They say that Mackinac Island is a *memorial name* given by the Ottawas to this Island in memory of the massacre by the hateful Iroquois of their friends, the *Michilimackinagogs* as this tribe was then called. Truly this is a remarkable instance of the value of oral tradition.

W. W. Johnson in 1862 says it means, "Island of the great or giant fairies." This might be admitted, had we not the above mentioned tradition against admitting it, handed down through centuries to the present day; for strange but true the Indians call by this name, *Michilimackinagog,* fairies or genii, supposed to be Indians who rove through the woods and who are heard sometimes shooting but are never seen.[4] Some but wrongly, derive the name of the Island from this word. I might still further add that often the Indians speaking about that Island in their own language call it *Odenah,* i. e. village, or town, and not always *Michinimackinang.* Formerly also the Indians often called it simply *Minissing,* i. e. "The Island" —the most noted Island in these lakes. I might note here also that the word Michilimackinac in the *Relations* refers sometimes to the surrounding country as well as to the Island; hence the difficulty for historians to locate certain events we find recorded.

Leaving Mackinac Island, by the south-east side, and going north, we come to "Goose Island," known in history as "Isle aux Outardes," or Bustard Island, called by the neighboring

4. Cf. Baraga, *Dictionary,* Michillimackinago.

Digitized by Google

Indians *Nadawaning,* or "place where one looks for eggs," referring us indirectly to the "Outardes" or Bustards. One writer calls it *Nikikminiss,* or Otter Island, a mistake for *Nika-Miniss,* or Wild-Goose Island, by which name I believe it is also known, but to my mind altogether incorrectly.

Here it was that in fine weather the travelers left Point St. Vital and making straight for Mackinac Island rested or camped as the case might be. Here it was that the famous Alexander Henry, when pursued by Indians, spied the welcome canoe of Mr. Cadotte that took him to Sault Ste. Marie, and here also that probably the British leaders did their reconnoitering before they attacked Mackinac Island at what is called today "British Landing."

Very soon we come to Marquette Island, which as far as I can discover, has no specific Indian name, but only the generic one, *Minissing*—and finding ourselves in Hessel Bay, we wind our way up to Cedarville, or *Oshkibiag,* i. e. winding current, through the beautiful Les Cheneaux Islands.

Two miles from Hessel, opposite Les Cheneaux Club property, a French priest named Father Piret, called by the Indians *Piwabikondibe,* or "Iron Head," first settled in 1850, on a place known as "La ferme," or "Farm;" today the golf-links of Les Cheneaux Club.

Father Piret, a secular priest, was the first permanent white settler there. The site gave the zealous missionary (who spoke the Ojibway and Ottawa dialects) an opportunity to pursue his holy labors among the Indians. Father Piret also attended Mackinac Island and St. Ignace, from 1846 to 1874, and died at Cheboygan, Michigan. He is doubtless the "Père Michaud" of Constance Fenimore Woolson's popular novel *Anne.* She was a contemporary of Father Piret.

Here it was again that the great chief Shabwaway lived

Digitized by Google

and died. The chimney of his old cabin is to be seen yet, as preserved today, on Marquette Island, opposite "La Ferme." Shabwaway was a man of force and character, as his participation in the treaty of March 28, 1836, at Washington, clearly shows. He was chief in authority, not only at Les Cheneaux Islands, but also on all the main land between St. Mary's River on the east and Buadjitawik (the Pine River of today) on the west. Born in 1770, he died in 1872, being over 100 years old when he died. I am indebted for many of these last details to my friend Mr. Frank Grover of Evanston, Ill., in his interesting work, *Les Cheneaux Islands.*

Nineteen years ago I had the privilege and the happiness of baptizing with great solemnity, old chief Shabwaway's grand-daughter, then an aged squaw of some seventy-five winters. I buried her some six or seven years ago. All this took place in the land of her birth and on what was once part of her vast territorial domain. Her Indian name was Beshininikwe, referring probably to a sort of striped fowl, whose English equivalent I have not been able to discover. Her Christian name was Mary.

As to the meaning and origin of the name "Les Cheneaux" Americans as well as Europeans unanimously declare that it means "channels," there being so many islands in these waters. May I be allowed to raise a question? May I venture to advance the possibility of a derivation other than channels? At least it will be a historical curiosity, even if nothing more.

First of all (though this is not important), "Les Cheneaux" as it is spelled today is incorrect French. "Chenal" makes "Chenaux" in the plural, and not "Cheneaux."

Secondly, Captain Kelton in *Annals of Fort Mackinac* about the year 1880 writes: "He returned to Cheneaux in 1870;"

Digitized by Google

Cheneaux in inverted commas, leaving out "Les." This is significant.

Thirdly, in the treaty of 1836 referring to chief Shabwaway and the other lesser chiefs, we find, "The Chenos," and not "Les Cheneaux." This was—note well—when there was hardly a white man in these parts. Schoolcraft about the same epoch writes "Chenos."

Fourth, Strang, the Mormon king, in his book (1854) *Michilimackinac Ancient and Modern* writes it, *"Cheneux,"* with "Les" left out, and not "Cheneaux."

Fifth, half-breeds, when speaking English, call it *"Shay noo,"* and W. Johnson in 1862 writes it *"Chenou."* One half-breed told me it meant, "à l' abri du vent," i. e. sheltered from the wind.

Sixth, The old Indian name still in common use today, *Anaminang,* means, as nearly as I could find, "under the Island" i. e., in the lee of the wind; in my mind referring to the shelter a traveler would find coming in off the lake out of a storm.

Seventh, I once asked an Indian half-breed what "Cheneaux" meant; "Why," he said, *endaiang,* i. e. "chez nous," "at home." As a matter of fact travelers in stormy weather, Indians, and Canadians, went to St. Ignace and Mackinac Island, from Detour, by the route of Les Cheneaux waterway, going to St. Martin's Bay, thus called by Fr. Marquette, through Search Bay opposite St. Martin's Island (once, it appears, the home of the Ottawa Chief, Saganosh) and Hessel Bay portage, and finally around by Rabbit's Back.

A story was told me, maybe a myth, that years ago some French Canadian voyageurs coming into this smooth water out of the stormy lake, one of them exclaimed in French,

Digitized by Google

"Ah! nous sommes chez nous!"—now we are "chez nous," i. e. safe at home; and the name remained.

Before leaving Les Cheneaux we must note Cube's Point, as it reads on the Government map, which is a corruption of a name of an old Indian, Animikiwab; the name became Kiob for short, and finally Cube. Who would ever guess that transformation!

If we leave Les Cheneaux and look westward, we will find three noted spots, Pine River, Carp River and Rabbit's Back. Pine River and Carp River are noted by Alexander Henry who refers to the former as Boutchitouy, a mistake for Bwadjitawik. Carp River is merely Bwadjitawinsing, or Little Bwadjitawik.

Rabbit's Back, called in Indian *Wabos Nematabit* (Sitting rabbit) is a legendary spot. It is an immense high rock and was supposed to be inhabited by a spirit or manito to whom, even up to comparatively recent times, pagan Indians would offer tobacco when paddling or sailing by the manito's lodge. The French archives[5] have this to say, taken I think, from Father Charlevoix's *History*: "Near Mackinaw there is a rock which, from a distance, has the outline of a sitting rabbit, by them called Michapaux (i. e. Mishabos) which they affirm to have been a Great Spirit or Manitou that once presided over their ancestors, not allowing them to want for anything. Then they succeeded in every undertaking. But by some misfortune, the spirit has withdrawn into Michapaux. When they pass there, they always leave something to render him more favorable."

Father Allouez, S. J., in a letter of 1660 (*Relations*) refers to the same myth of Michabos in speaking of the Indians of

5. *Cass. Ms.*, Wis. Hist. Soc.

Digitized by Google

Michilmackinac in a somewhat different way. He writes: "They say this Island (Mackinac Island) is the birth place of Michabos or Great Hare, who created the earth, and that it was in these Islands that he invented nets for catching fish, after having considered attentively the spider spinning his web."

In fact, I would here note, the spider, in Indian, is called *Assabikeshi,* or "the to-be-pitied net-maker," net being *Assab.* Doubtless this may be one reason for keeping the myth from oblivion among the Indians today.

We now reach Detour, in Chippewa County, at the mouth of the St. Mary's River. "Chippewa County" reminds us of the name "Chippewa," a corruption of Otchipway or Odjibway. I am inclined to believe that originally the last "a" in Chippewa was intended to be pronounced like the a in "day" and thus "Chippeway" would not be so far from the right pronunciation. Since I wrote this I find the word written "Chipwais." The Indians call themselves Odjibwek and on the authority of W. W. Warren, a good authority on the subject of the Odjibways, the name Odjibway is hardly 300 years old, and would be derived from *odjib* puckered-up, and *abwe* (*abway*), roasted; from the custom of roasting their captives. There seems however to be nothing certain about the name. In all probability the Odjibways were considered a sub-tribe of the great Algonquin nation. The *Relations* have Outchibous and Outchiboueg.

To return to Detour, old maps of sixty or seventy years ago have it "Warrenville." Older than that and yet young also, as it still lives in the language of our present-day Indians, is the name *Giwideonaning,* i. e. "Point which we go round in a canoe."

Opposite, is the historic Drummond Island. I need not re-

Digitized by Google

late the history of the Fort, nor of the battles that were fought there; but for my purpose, if you look on the map you will find the Potagannissing River. Today, and for years past, maybe centuries ago, the Indians refer to the whole Island as "Potagannissing." Some derive the name from a corruption of the French word "Portage," as there indeed is to be found the famous historic portage from the Georgian Bay to the St. Mary's River; but I was informed, on what seems good authority, that the word is old or archaic Indian signifying "gaps;" and truly, the numerous islands in that vicinity form a remarkable series of gaps.

Lime Island, *Pagadoway-miniss,* sends us back to early years when Indians assembled from far and near to play their game of Pagadoway or ball from which game not unlikely originated the modern Canadian game of La Crosse. Centuries ago, as we learn from the *Relations* (1636) this game was connected with Indian superstition. It was supposed to be a cure for disease; it might even save a whole country, and even up to very recent times Indians assembled from different parts of the country to play Pagadoway on this Island, with the same intentions as formerly. On the mainland is Gogomane River, a corruption for "Kagomenang," or place of the Porcupine.

We come next to "Sailors' Encampment" on Neebeesh Island (Nibish Island). Old maps have "Anibish," a leaf, which is right, although the Indians have become careless and they also say "Nibish," which in Otchipway would mean "dirty water," and in Ottawa, simply, "water;" whereas it is probable that "Anibish" refers to the grand foliage that marks that Island. Father Verwyst, O. F. M., an Indian scholar and interesting writer, derives "Neebish" from "Nibish," water, in the Ottawa dialect as was said above, or "dirty

Digitized by Google

water" in the Odjibway dialect; but evidently he had not seen old maps nor visited the locality. Sailors' Encampment owes its name, I am told, to a tradition that one winter some years ago sailors on a boat were ice-bound and forced to spend the winter on that Island. Near Neebish and opposite Sugar Island is a small island called Missamakokamigong, referring to the beaver lodge.

Looking to the westward we can almost see the Monoskon River, which flows into Mud Lake. "Monoskon" is a substitute for "Minashkong" or Rush Bay; with the rushes found there the Indians make large and beautiful mats. In 1784 the name is written Minascon Bay. Captain Dan Robertson (84th Regiment) over a century ago speaks of a small Island, one league from Minascon Bay, one quarter of a mile in circumference, its eastern point, bare and rocky, famous as a guiding-point to the mariner going up the river, as directly opposite and one mile from it is the safe channel. Near there is the Charlotte River of today, called by the Indians "Mashkode-Saging," but on old maps and records "Mascoutin Saukie Entrance."

The next point of any interest is Sugar Island, near Sault Ste. Marie. Rightly, it should be Maple Sugar Island, or Sisibakwato-miniss, on account of the plentifulness of maple trees found there in former times.

There we find Shawano's Point, called after old chief Shawano, who died there a few years ago. The Indian name is Neshkoteiang (Nayshkotayiang), i. e. Meadow Point. The Bay beyond this point is Baie de Wassai, a name half French, half Indian, meaning in English "Turbot Bay," or otherwise called "Bullhead Bay," from the quantity of fish of that name supposed to be found there. It should be Baie de Wassee.

We now reach the old historic Sault Ste. Marie, passing by

Digitized by Google

the little rapids, Bawitigons, or more correctly Gibitanong. There on the mainland many years, perhaps even a century ago, there was an Indian Protestant Mission and, of course, a cemetery.

Up to a few years ago the name Sault Ste. Marie was written Saut de Sainte Marie. St. Mary's Falls or Rapids, in Indian *Bawitig,* or *Bawiting* or *Bagotig, Bagoting.* I have heard *Bawicting,* and this corresponds to *Bawictigoin* of the *Relations* (1640) or *Bagauitig* of 1658. The Indian name deserves mention as it is the original name of this most famous spot, and the home of the tribe called Saulteux. The great American poet H. W. Longfellow has immortalized it in his poem "The Song of Hiawatha." To this day the Odjibways and Ottawas in U. S. A., in the Dominion of Canada, and every where I presume, speak of it as Bawitig or Bagotig, better Bawiting or Bawicting. The old Relations refer to it in the phrase, Bawiting tush iriniwag, for ininiwag—or Indians (men) of Bawiting —i. e. the Rapids. Later on, these Indians go by the name of Sauteurs or Sauteux, i. e. Indians of the "Saut," this being their home country. Unfortunately, here as in several other passages Longfellow, through being misinformed, has had the misfortune to misplace the accent on Indian words. He calls it Bawaiting, instead of Bawiting. So also do the words Takwamenon and Kitchigami suffer.

The verses relating to Bawiting and Takwamenon are from Canto VII:

> And thus sailed my Hiawatha
> Down the rushing Taquamenaw,
> Sailed through all its bends and windings,
> Sailed through all its deeps and shallows,
> While his friend, the strong man, Kwasind,
> Swam the deeps, the shallows waded.

Digitized by Google

Up and down the river went they,
In and out among the islands,
Cleared its bed of root and sand-bar,
Dragged the dead trees from its channel,
Made its passage safe and certain,
Made a pathway for the people,
From its springs among the mountains,
To the water of Pauwating,[6]
To the bay of Taquamenaw.

Passing through the locks we cross the mouth of Waiskī River. Not a few strangers hearing it called Whiskey River imagine that it was so called from the quantity of whiskey that was drunk there. The correct name is Weshky River, called after the old chief Weshki, who figures in the Cass Treaty at Fond du Lac, Lake Superior. The correct name still remains in several of his descendants. We come now to Bay Mills, or otherwise Iroquis Mission, called in Indian *Kinoshekaning,* "place of the pike."

A few miles away is Iroquois Point called *Nadoway-Wiganing,* "place of Iroquois bones;" the fact being that years ago, about 1680, the Odjibways were attacked at this point by the Iroquois from Canada; a battle followed and the Iroquois were defeated. A tradition has it that only one Iroquois escaped the massacre, being chosen to carry the news of the defeat home to his people, and as a proof of his mission the Odjibways clipped his ears. Nicholas Perrot speaks at length of this fact in his famous *Memoires.*

6. About where the postoffice stands today, is a spot traditional among the Indians of the Sault, once called "Pikwatinang." They say (and they still believe it) that years ago a child was carried underground by some beast, and those near heard its cries; they dug down, but only to find the child dead.

Digitized by Google

Not long ago you could find on this famous spot kettles and other utensils, also bones and skulls. In 1797 traders camping there found bones, skulls, etc.

Etymologically speaking, Nadowaywiganing would mean "place of the adders' bones," *Nadoweg* or adders, or *Matchi-Nadoweg,* i. e. bad adders, being the name by which the Algonquin tribes called the Iroquois.

Further on, near Emerson, we find the Takwamenon River, mentioned above by Longfellow as Takwamenaw,—a word of Indian appearance merely, it would seem, and of comparatively late origin. The old Indian word was probably *Saging,* more a generic than a specific term, meaning "mouth of a river."

Shelldrake River, near which a mill-town stands today, seven miles on this side of White Fish Point, can boast of its English name for a century and more; but away far beyond that is its Indian name Anzeego-Sibi. Shelldrake is a translation of *Anzeeg,* a species of duck called the cross-bill. It sometimes goes by the name of the Betsy River, commonly supposed to be called from Betsy, an old squaw who lived there some thirty years ago; this is doubtless only a coincidence. W. W. Johnson writing in 1862 speaks of it as "Rivière des Betsies." Now the old Canadian *voyageurs* in their patois called the anzeeg, or shelldrake, "une bétsie." Hence the old squaw, Betsey Brown, long ago deceased, did not give her name to this well known river, except as a coincidence.

A word about the famous Pictured Rocks, alluded to in "Hiawatha," called by the French Le Portail, Le Grand Portail, La Chappelle, Le Grand Sable. Americans, most of them, lay more stress on the varied colors of the high sandstone rocks. The French *voyageurs* and some American travelers lay stress on the wonderful architecture of these rocks, ad-

Digitized by Google

miring the length and the height of the immense sand dunes. The Indians have legends of various kinds, and held that spot in awe. The most famous legend was perhaps the battle between the twin dwarfs and the Thunder. The Indians call the Pictured Rocks *Gaiashkabikong,* i. e. Sea Gull Rock; and the sand dunes *Negawadjing,* Sand Mountain. Doubtless the "altar" in La Chappelle was used by the Indians for ceremonial purposes.[7]

We pass on to the thriving town of Munising, a change from Minissing, or "island *in a lake,*" called after Grand Island opposite; it has nothing to do with any Delaware tribe as one writer says; the Indians who lived on the mainland were Odjibways.

Au Train, which looks like pure French, and would seem to refer to a railway train, the more so as it is on the D. S. S. and A. Railroad (but also on the lake) has a strange origin. I got the following from a very old resident, now passed away, and I believe it is not much known. In former years before railways were in the Upper Penninsula, travelers came in canoes from the Sault, and this was a famous and beautiful camping place. The Train or Au Train River carried out a lot of sand into the lake and in time a large shoal was formed. To go around this shoal or shallows meant loss of time, so to avoid this, they would get out of their canoes, and *drag* or (in French *trainerent*) their canoe across the shoal and thus make a short cut. The "Au" came in later. Old maps as well as modern maps, and travelers' notes, have Train River, which would be in French "Traine."

White Fish River was formerly called Laughing White Fish River; in Indian, Atikameg Bapit.

---

7. Cf. "Altar" in *Handbook of American Indians,* published by U. S. Bureau of Ethnology.

Digitized by Google

Marquette City, or rather Dead River, is called today as before, Namebini-sibi, i. e. Sucker River; Granite Point, called Nabikwan, "the ship," refers to the optical illusion known as mirage.

Presque Isle goes by two names, "Mishibibabikong" (Lion rock), and "Chicagowinzing," i. e. "onion place." I think the former name is by far the more nearly correct.

Further on is Keweenaw Bay, called in 1660 by Fr. Ménard, of saintly memory, Baie de Ste. Terèse, as may be seen also on very old maps. The Indians call the point Kakiwayonaning, i. e. "where we make a short-cut on foot across a point." In the 17th century it was written Keewaiwona, or Quioucounan. The Indian Village of Assinins, where there is an orphanage for Indian children, a school, a church and a convent, is called after the old chief of years ago. The word means "pebble."

L'Anse, a French word, meaning handle of a jug or pitcher, used also to mean "Bay," is the translation of *Wikwetong.* Further on is the point called Pikwaming, for Pikwakwaweaming or Pikwaweamishing, once called Old Village Point, probably called also Pikwakwaweaning, i. e. "Point of the tuft of trees." Beyond and toward the bay on the north side is Huron Mountain, called Azadi Wakaigan (poplar house), or again Sibiwigamick (river of the house), from the river of that name. I imagine there used to be some sort of a large building, probably a warehouse, in that locality.

Calumet is often supposed to be a word of Indian origin, meaning "a peace pipe." The word is not Indian, but comes to us through the French "calumet" ("t" silent) for chalumet; Latin, calamus—a reed. The word seems to go back no further than the 16th century. In their wild state the Indians had two official calumets; one, calumet of war—a mixture of white

Digitized by Google

and gray, and another, the calumet of peace, red—both made of pipestone—or "Opwaganassin"—with long stem decorated with feathers, ribbons, even with scalps; they smoked it before starting for the warpath, in discussing a treaty etc; it was a seal to important acts. Of this pipestone—the red—as a symbol of peace or welcome, Longfellow thus speaks in Hiawatha, Canto I:

On the Mountains of the Prairie,
On the great Red Pipe-stone Quarry,
Gitche Manito, the Mighty,
He the Master of Life, descending,
On the red crags of the quarry
Stood erect, and called the nations,
Called the tribes of men together.
* * * * * * *
"Bathe now in the stream before you,
Wash the war-paint from your faces,
Wash the blood-stains from your fingers,
Bury your war-clubs and your weapons,
Break the red stone from this quarry,
Mould and make it into Peace-Pipes,
Take the reeds that grow beside you,
Deck them with your brightest feathers,
Smoke the calumet together,
And as brothers live henceforward!"

The red pipestone was considered sacred by the old Indians, given to the Panis tribe by the Sun, some said, and before breaking off a piece, they would ask pardon or permission of the Manito. Lafiteau (1724)[8] regards as a fire-altar the pipe

8. In his work *Moeurs des Sauvages*, Vol. II, p. 327.

Digitized by Google

in the Calumet ceremony of the Illinois Indians described by Fr. Marquette; referring, I should say, to the ceremony of incensing with the smoke from the fire and tobacco in the pipe.

Why the red pipestone should be the calumet of peace and welcome may be better understood when we remember that those ancient pagans believed the red stone was in some way identified with the flesh of the Indians. The material is soft and easily fashioned. The stem of the pipe, or "okidj," is very long and ornamented. There was a dance connected with it in solemn ceremonies.[9] It goes among geologists today by the name of "Catlinite," after George Catlin, the famous American traveler and writer on Indian life and customs.

Near the city of Calumet is Opechee Point—or Robbin Point; name doubtless taken from "Hiawatha."

We pass down the D. S. S. & A. Ry. to Michigamme, which I am told on reliable authority was called by the Indians *Beshiigam,* or *Beshiigami*—meaning "streaked water."

Ishpeming,—which should be Ishpiming,—as well as Negaunee, are names given by the late Peter White of Marquette. What the good man meant was doubtless Ishpakamiga—or "height of land." Ishpeming means "up in the air," sometimes used poetically for "heavens," or "Heaven." Negaunee—or "he that is ahead," or in advance,—was given by him to that spot in memory of the first mine or first furnace in that region; he says himself it stands for "pioneer." Close by is a lake called Shishibegomod—or "floating duck."

From Negaunee we go to Escanaba. Here difficulties lie in our path. The point upon which the present city stands was called Mitigomishking, or Red Oak Point. Escanaba

9. Described in *Jesuit Relations,* Thwaites Ed., XI, 22.

Digitized by Google

refers to the river, not to the point. Longfellow says of it in Hiawatha, Canto IV:

Crossed the rushing Esconaba,
Crossed the mighty Mississippi,
Passed the Mountains of the Prairie,
Passed the land of Crows and Foxes,
Passed the dwellings of the Blackfeet,
Came unto the Rocky Mountains,
To the kingdom of the West-Wind,
Where upon the gusty summits
Sat the ancient Mudjekeewis,
Ruler of the winds of heaven.

Wm. W. Johnson writing in 1862 spells it Escanawba, and says of it: "A river that drains the country;" a place where a few Indians *survived,* namely, from small-pox. I have heard two old Indians—good authorities—call it Joshkonabikong, or smooth rock, corresponding fairly well with our Flat Rock of today, near Escanaba. By dropping the "ong,"—why or how, I could not say—we would get Joshkonabik, not far different from Escanaba. Still I must say that the general pronunciation I hear from the Indians is Ishkonabeng; one Indian went so far as to say that it was derived from a genius or manito who dwelt in that river. Truly, *eshkan* means "horn," and *abe* is for *nabe,* male or man. Father Verwyst, O. S. F., quotes[10] Mr. Gurnoe, an intelligent Chippewa scholar, as saying that the Indians in that vicinity call it Misconabe, or Red Man. In any case, Ishkonabeng or Ishkonabikong would be of Menominee deriviation and form, rather than of Odjibway.

10. *Wis. Hist. Coll.,* XII, 391.

Digitized by Google

Isaac Stephenson who lived in that neighborhood years ago gives 1863 as the date of the present name for the city and writes it Scoona-beh, which would go to corroborate the Indian name Ishkonabeng, in spite of what the two above-mentioned Indian authorities say. He says also that until 1863 Escanaba was known as Sand Point. Perry M. Smith, vice-president of the N. W. Railroad, evolved Escanaba. In 1862 Johnson wrote it Escanawba, and before him Longfellow Esconaba. The "evolving" by Perry H. Smith would amount to dropping of "w" and leaving the rest as Johnson wrote it. Johnson derives it from *Ishkwi* and *Naba* for Nabe; i. e. "the remainder of the men," viz. those who were not destroyed by small-pox; but this is far-fetched and not good Indian.

Near Escanaba is Ford River, in Indian, *Aiakodjiwang;* that is, "swift current,"—and not far away, or flowing into the Bay near Gladstone, is Rapid River, *Aiakodjiwansing*—Little Aiakodjiwang.

About twelve miles from Escanaba is Bark River, or better Birch Bark River—Wigwass-sibi—i. e. "account of the quantity of birch trees in that neighborhood."

Quinessec, a contraction of Pekwanessek, a place of smoke or fog, is of modern construction and of no historic interest.

Let us imagine ourselves now on the famous Ontonagon River that flows into Lake Superior. This name is interesting. It appears in the old Relations of 1660 as Nantounaganing. The river is famous more particularly for its copper mines and especially for one enormous mass of pure copper. Let us say here that the Indians today and for years past call it Nintonaganing. When and where and by whom it was changed into Ontonagon, will I suppose never be known. Nintonaganing means "the place of my dish," the legend (according to Bishop Baraga who wrote forty years ago) being that a squaw

Digitized by Google

washing her dish or bowl either dropped it into the river or the current carried it away, and she exclaims *Nia! Nind onagan! nind onagan!*—"Oh! my dish! my dish!" Otonagon would mean "her dish"—hence maybe Nintonagon. Yet one writer does not blush to say Ontonagon means "fishing place," and another, "place of the wooden bowl," viz. "onto" place, "nagon" —wooden bowl! Father Verwyst, O. F. M., says that Mr. Antoine Gandin (or Gordon—an unusually smart and educated Indian) traces the word Ontonagon to the Indian *Nandonagoning,* or "place where game is shot by guess," i. e. by not seeing it but judging of its location by some noise or movement of the brush. Father Verwyst says that in maps of the 17th century it is called Nantonagan (and we saw above, that the Relations call it Nantounaganing, and Father Verwyst perfers this derivation to Bishop Baraga's legend.[12] When then did Nantonaganing become Nintonaganing? One map gives the spelling Rivière de Tonnaganne.

Crossing over to Gogebic County we find Akogibik Lake. According to Father Verwyst's paper (*Wis. Hist. Colls., XII,* 391) Gogebik would be derived from *"gogi"* (he dives), *"bi"* or *"bik"* (water); or else from *agogibik* (as we see on the map) a body of water hanging on high, the lake in question being probably situated on an elevation. Again the termination *bik,* for *abik* (referring to metal rock, etc.) may have led one or the other writer into error. The proper reading is more likely Kokobig—referring, as I was told by two old Indians, to a boggy place. One of these Indians explained the word by using another, "Totogan," which means "a trembling

11. *Wis. Hist. Colls.*, XII, 395.
12. Bp. Baraga's story however is the one current among the old Indians of today. It would appear that shortly after this occurence, a white man called the river Ontonagon.

Digitized by Google

piece of ground"—i. e. in a marsh or swamp. I would not be a bit surprised if the following passage from the Relations, (1664, p. 6) referred partially to that in Gogebic County—as we know it is near Lake Vieux Desert, a well known route where the Indians were settled centuries ago, and some are still there. The good Father is on Lake Superior and he writes: "I hear every day about 4 tribes distant two or three-hundred leagues. The road is composed almost entirely of swamps through which we must pass, wading by times through the water, and in danger of sinking so deep, that one may not rise again."[13] The Father in question was the saintly Father Ménard who, in 1661, had already passed, old and feeble as he was, through Keweenaw County, seeking out the Hurons near the head waters of the Black River. Doubtless he passed through or near the beautiful Lake Vieux Desert, source of the Wisconsin River, (in Indian *Gete-Kitigan*) through which passes the State line between Wisconsin and Michigan. Whether he died, lost in the woods or was murdered, no man will ever know, though the latter is more probable. The spot is disputed. Some say, on the Paint River, not far from Crystal River; others think on a spot near the confluence of the Copper and the Wisconsin, near the present village of Merrill, and not very far from Watersmeet, Mich., called in Indian *Wewendjissck.*

From Lake Vieux Desert we retrace our steps to the Menominee River, or River of the Wild Rice, but called by the Menominees themselves Minikani-sibi, "river of wild rice seed." One author gives *Minikani*—pleasant town. Imagination sometimes plays its role in etymologies!

13. Quite laughable then are the following meanings of Gogebic, given by certain writers; little fish; rocky shore; dividing lake; nest of porcupines; porcupine lake.

Digitized by Google

The Menominee River brings us again into Lake Michigan. Lake Michigan! The old Relations call it Machiiganing, also Michiganons (Little Michigan), and Lac des Illinois. If the reader be patient and interested, he will find in *Mich. Hist. Colls.*, an article by W. L. Jenks, a veritable maze of spellings and meanings (covering nearly two centuries) of this famous name.

Let us observe here that neither the Relations nor our present-day Indians have any specific Indian name for Lake Huron. This is noteworthy. Even the French name, La Mer Douce, (Fresh-water Sea), can hardly be called specific; they seem even to intimate that there is none. May not the explanation of this rather strange fact be found in this, that the Indians considered the two lakes Huron and Michigan as one vast body of water, and not two independent lakes? Will not this explain why the Relations speak of Lake Michigan as Michiganons—or Little Michigan. In truth there are 23,000 square miles of water in Lake Huron to 22,000 square miles of water in Lake Michigan.

On the same principle what we call St. Mary's River is never spoken of as such, either by the Relations or by the Indians. On the contrary, the Indians speak of Sugar Island as *Miniss,* i. e. an island in a lake, and not *Minitik,* an island in a river; they never confound the two words.

As to the meaning of the word Michigan, it is simple, and yet there is a variety of derivations. One writer has it, "place for catching fish;" maybe he heard of *Migiskan,* a fish-hook! Another counfounded it with *Mitchikan,* a fence. In all simplicity, it is either a contraction of *Mitchi-Sagaigan* (large lake), or by license,—putting "n" for "m,"—Michigan, for Mishigam—i. e. Michigami, large body of water. The Cree dialect has Mishigam, or Mishigamaw.

Digitized by Google

I would here call your attention to the difference between Michigam, or Michigan (Lake Michigan), and Kitchigamee (Kitchigami), or in full Odjibway, Kitchigami, Lake Superior. Kitchi, great—comprehends every kind of greatness in quality, but seems to abstract from, or even exclude, mere quantity, or vastness, mere physical greatness; whereas, Mitchi—or Michi, or Missi—refers to *quantity,* not to *quality.* Michigan, large, vast body of water; Kitchigam, or Kitchigami, Lake Superior, superior to all other bodies of water, the source, fountain-head of the other lakes, the widest and deepest of them, the only home of the choicest fish, the Atikameg, or White Fish. To this lake the old pagans paid the honors done to a Manito. Did it not contain the copper veins, or even masses? Was it not over this lake that came the Gabian Notin, the great West Wind?[14] In speaking of the Good Spirit they would say Kitchi Manito, but *never* Michi Manito.

We turn again to the Bay de Noc. Old maps give us Baie de Noquet. The old Relations of 1658 *et seq.* have different spellings, amongst others "Nouquets." Of all the points we have to visit this is one of the most interesting. Taking as a starting point that "Bay de Noc" is a contraction for "Baie de Noquet," we have it that "Noukek" was a name by which a sub-tribe at least of the Menominiks, or Malouminees, was known to the first Frenchman who visited these waters. Noke, or Nowkay, alias Nanokay, is a very ancient, or as they say, archaic form, employed today by the Menominee Indians in the ritual of the "Midewiwin," or Great Medicine. In very old Odjibway it was also probably Noke, Nokay, but today very few, even of the old Indians, know the word. The modern

14. The first missionaries observe that the Indians considered Lake Superior as a sort of deity, offering it sacrifices due to its grandeur and beauty.

Digitized by Google

corresponding term in common parlance, in the Menominee tongue, is Owasse (pronounced Owassay), or possibly sometimes, Owothe (Owathay), and in Odjibway the corresponding modern term for Nokay is "Makwa."

A strange use of the word Naukokay, or Nokay, is that it was (through respect I suppose) pronounced Owokse (Owaksay) for Owasse (Owassay). Today Owasse is the only term used in the Menominee dialect except in the heathen ritual of the "Midewiwin," or Great Medicine.

Nanoke (Nanokey) or Noke (Nokay) was said to have battled with Wesskiniw, or the great chief of the Kinius, or great war eagles. Nanokay or Nokay refers also to one of the deities who was changed by Michabos or the Great Hare into an Indian. Finally Nanokay or Nokay, called today in Menominee Owasse, or in Odjibway Makwa, is none other than the Bear. So that Bay de Noquet, or Bay de Noc, is the bay of the Nokays, the sub-tribe whose name or whose totem was the Bear.[15]

From Bay de Noquet we go to what is today Gladstone,—in Indian *Kashkigama,* on account of the closed-up appearance of the bay at that spot; thence to Pikotanga, i. e. rounded sand-hill, near Martin Creek. Not far away is Pointe aux Barques, a French name meaning "Point of the little boats,"—in Indian *Ishpikakwang,* probably referring to a high wooded bluff. Opposite is Round Island, which is called simply Miniss, or island. But coming towards Ogontz is St. Vital Island, in

15. Warren, *Minn. Hist. Colls.*, Vol. V, has Noka for Noke (Nokay) which he translates bear-foot, but wrongly I think, as bear-foot is known to all as "Makosit," being a gens or sub-tribe of the Chippewas. Jones has "Noke." There was a chief by the name of Noka (Noke) of the western Chippewas in the latter half of the 18th century, a famous leader and hunter. Cf. *Handbook of American Indians*, II, 80.

Digitized by Google

Indian *Nodjimoineng,* or "island that saves us," namely, from starvation; a very very old name referring to a tradition that at this island was to be found plenty of game or fish, when they could find it nowhere else.

Opposite, I might say, to Pikotanga is Burnt Bluff and Point Detour, called *Taywaytin,* "sound of surging waters," i. e. as they roll on the rocky shore, producing a *drum-like* sound; *tawayigay* meaning "he beats a drum."

Following that shore to the west is a point called in Indian *Sagionaning,* referring to the movement of a canoe or boat around the point. We enter Ogontz Bay, or Bay of the Okans or little herring; thence to Indian Point of today, Anishinabe-Neashing, a Catholic mission, where a pretty church stands on the bluff. This was not the old Indian name. The old Indian name was Geteonagekokamikoshing, a tribe of ten syllables and twenty letters, meaning "the point of the old cedar bark huts,"—Stony Point on the map.

Opposite on the south side is what is called Jack Bluff, *Matabishkoteng,* or "plain (meadow) running down to the beach." Then comes *Akowaganing* or "place where they spear fish through the ice,"—today Garden Bay. Nahma, as it is written, is taken from the poem "Hiawatha." It is the name of a mill town owned by the Bay de Noc Co., but it refers originally to the river,—namely, Sturgeon River. It is written Nahma (Nahmay, i. e. a sturgeon) and by some inconceivable mistake, pronounced "Naymah."

Manistique is our next point of interest. Manistique Lake is well known in that region. It is a reminder of the forgotten Indian village that once existed there. As to the name, they derive it, and on very reliable basis, from *Onaman* (red ochre or vermillion) and *tigweia* (referring to a river), for the reason that along that river are to be found in plenty the

Digitized by Google

"Onaman" or vermillion roots. It is still called by the Indians *Onamanitikong,* i. e. Vermillion River.

I can not see how Father Verwyst, O. F. M., and his Indian helpers call it Crooked River. This name is thought to be the same as Manistee in the Lower Peninsula. Early maps and references have the same name for Manistee and Manistique.

Franklin's map of 1684 has Aramoni. I will notice here that often the records use R and N indiscriminately. Thus the Relations have Rogai, for Nokai, the tribe mentioned above. Hence Aramoni would be equal to Anamoni, and that clearly is Onaman—Onaman-tigweia as above. A map of 1688 has LaManistre, though I feel confident that it is a mistake in the print,—r for e. Bellen's map of 1744 has Rivière d' oula. As with the R and N so, and with more reason, R and L are interchanged. Hence Rivière d' oula is in all likelihood Rivière d' ouna or ona—onoman. Mitchell's map of 1755 has for Manistee in the Lower Peninsula "Manities;" and for the river in the Upper Peninsula "Oulemaniti," clearly Onamaniti (—gweia).

Schoolcraft calls it, in 1824, Manistie. Blois, in 1838, has Monetee for both rivers. In one of the early English maps of the Upper Peninsula we find a river corresponding to that of the present "Manistique" by the name of "Red Clay River."

Leaving out points of no interest we find a lake and river called by the French name of Millecoquin, or "a thousand rascals." The question arises, Who were those thousand rascals? We know that sixty or seventy years ago it was almost impossible to find a hundred people in this part of the country, either honest people or rascals. The answer is, that it is an Indian name in a new dress. The Indian word is *Manana-koking,* sometimes called *Minakoking,* or "place where the hardwood, especially the iron-wood, is plentiful." Further

Digitized by Google

down the shore at Naubinway we have a repetition of nearly the same, except that instead of Millecoquin, it is Millekoke,—the Indian name of the place called today Naubinaway, the latter name having been given by the mill company, probably after some local Indian called Naubinoway.

A small island, Potawatamie Island, near Seul Choix, is called by the Indians *Teemakinang* (Timakinang) whose meaning so far I have never been able to discover with certainty; it probably refers to the deep water around it, *temee* or *timi* meaning *"deep."* This Island, formerly (in the 17th century) was called Huron Island, famous for an Iroquois victory.[16]

Seul Choix or "only choice," a bay not far from Manistique, is French. The name is supposed to have originated in a story that sailors caught out in a storm went there for shelter, this being their "only choice" or "seul choix." Rather would I—the more so as those who live there or who have lived there, call it "Shishawah"—trace the word to the Indian name Shashoweg,[17] supposed to refer to the straight line of coast. Between Seul Choix and Coquin River is Patterson's Point, called in Indian "Maiaweg," or "principal point," because after you turn it you can see very far ahead. Captain Kelton has a note to the effect that this point situated sixty miles from Mackinac Island, was so called from the fact that in 1788 Patterson, one of the principal members of the N. W. Fur Company with his crew was drowned there.

Not very far from here is an island called Manitopaymen, being a corruption of *Maniotpimwa* or "spot where a Manito (in this case a great serpent) was shot with bow and arrow

16. See Perrot and LaPotherie.

17. Schoolcraft, (*P. M.*, p. 288) writes the word Choishwa, but spoils everything by translating it Smooth Rock.

Digitized by Google

by Nanabōjo, the Indian's beneficent genius, helper and protector. The serpents were sunning themselves on the sand bluffs and he shot with such force that the banks crumbled down into the lake which accounts for their bare appearance today. Epouffette, which name nobody seems to understand is, in Indian: Ashiganikaning, or "place of the bass fish."

We come to Pointe aux Chenes, a translation of Nemitigomishking— or "oak point." It is one of the few places where one can find the Bemagaht, which figures in Indian Mythology, and is mentioned in Longfellow's Hiawatha, or as it should be called and is still called, Bimakwat, or Manito bimakwat, i. e. twisted wood, or entwining vine. The other spot in the Upper Peninsula where, so far, I have seen this vine was near Pikotanga in Delta County. The bark is food and when cooked is sweet to the taste.

Longfellow has it thus in Hiawatha, Canto V

> By the river's brink he wandered,
> Through the Muskoday, the meadow,
> Saw the wild rice, Mahnomonee,
> Saw the blueberry, Meenahga,
> And the strawberry, Odahmin,
> And the gooseberry, Shahbomin,
> And the grape-vine, the Bemahgut,
> Trailing o'er the alder-branches,
> Filling all the air with fragrance!

From Pointe aux Chenes we go to Gros Cap, a distance of perhaps six or seven miles towards St. Ignace. This is a free translation of the Indian *Nedinang* (*Naydinang*), where one very old Indian told me was to be placed the legend of Lover's Leap. A few miles further, we reach Pointe à la Barbe, which owes its name to the saying, that here in former days

Digitized by Google

travelers by boat from points on Lake Michigan to St. Ignace or Mackinac Island would begin shaving, that they might appear presentable in these beginnings of civilized life in Michigan; its Indian name, Wanibimagong, is supposed to mean "the last point to be seen," namely, as you go to St. Ignace.

We now reach St. Ignace, famous in the history of war and in the history of peace. The Indian name today so often on the lips of the remnants of a once grand and mighty people is still as fresh as it was centuries ago. It brings to our minds, if we understand it, the geography and the history of the place. It is an epitome of much that was sad and of much that was pleasant. It was with this name still ringing in their ears that Marquette and Joliet left for the discovery of the true course of the great Mississippi. The name St. Ignace recalls the little chapel that was burnt and the destruction of so many grand hopes for the future. In a word, the name recalls the Adder,—the Iroquois, in all his malice,—for *Nadowek-weamishing* means either "Iroquois Bay and Point," or better even perhaps, "Point from which the Iroquois were driven," namely by the Odjibway; but not "Iroquois Woman's Point," as two writers say. Here it was that with all solemnity Father Marquette's bones were buried for the second time.

From St. Ignace we cross to Bois Blanc, or Wikobiminiss, i. e. "Basswood Island." We come around by Round Island—Nissawinagong, i. e. "Middle Island," and we land again at Michilimakinang.

This ends our trip through the Upper Peninsula. How more appropriately can I close this paper than with hope that it will escape the criticism which one famous writer has made of an author of a certain well-known work, to wit: "A propensity to make mistakes, and a remarkable genius for missing

Digitized by Google

the truth, along with a facility for confusing everything with which he came in contact."

I have sought to be as exact as possible. Perhaps later on, some one, better versed and better favored than I have been, may find room for corrections, but on the whole I have tried to reach the truth, not only because the truth, and that alone, is the only really worthy aim of any writer of facts, but because in what I have written do we find a record of our early history.

To quote George Bancroft's words: "The memorials of the Red Man's former existence are found in the names of the rivers and the mountains." I will add, yea, and in our counties and towns, in the bays and islands, in the points and bluffs of Upper Michigan. How beautifully has Mrs. Sigourney touched this subject in the little poem entitled "Indian Names":

Ye say that all have passed away,
That noble race and brave,
That their light canoes have vanished
From off the crested wave.
That 'mid the forests where they roamed
There rings no hunter's shout.
But their name is on your waters,
You may not wash it out.
Ye say their cone-like cabins
That clustered o'er the vale
Have fled like withered leaves
Before the autumn gale;
But their mem'ry liveth on your hills,
Their baptism on your shore,
Your everlasting rivers speak
Their dialect of yore.

Digitized by Google

History of the Schools of Portage Township in the Copper Country

By Florence E. Paton

Houghton

MINING interests attracted the first settlers to the south shores of Portage Lake in 1852, Ransom Shelden being the first to come, with C. C. Douglass, Capt. Richard Edwards, and Joseph Wallace following. By 1854 quite a settlement had grown on the present site of Houghton.

In 1856 Miss Jane Smith of Algonac, Michigan, taught the first public school in Houghton in a one-roomed log building belonging to the Portage Mining Company, 600 feet above the present Catholic Church. This school was probably encouraged by prominent mining men to induce workmen to bring their families to Houghton. It lasted for one year and consisted of about twenty pupils.[1]

In 1857 a school was opened in the building at the corner of Sheldon and Franklin streets, now known as the Trimm building and conducted by Mr. F. G. Sewell. About twenty pupils attended this school. The building has had additions built since then, but the wing extending toward the east, facing College Avenue, was the part used originally for the school.[2]

On April 11, 1857, School District No. 1 of Portage Township was organized, with 105 legal voters, and 134 children of school age. This organization was not a graded school dis-

Special acknowledgment is made of the help given by Mr. J. T. Finnigan.—F. E. P.

1. Interview with Mr. J. T. Finnegan, Oct. 19, 1917.
2. Interview with Mr. James P. Edwards, Oct. 8, 1917.

Digitized by Google

trict. At the time of the organization, the School District was not coincident with the township. The law limited the extent to which land was taxable in a school district to a definite number of miles from the school building.

Among the prominent citizens of the village at that time were Dr. Fuller, Richard Edwards, Ransom Shelden, and John Atwood, and although no records have been kept, it is certain that they were members of the first school board.

A record in the office of the County Clerk shows that on March 12, 1858, a deed of land was transferred from Messrs. Sheldon and Douglass to School District No. 1 of Portage Township. This land was the property at the southeast corner of Portage and South Streets. Undoubtedly this was the first property of the School District.

The construction of a school house must have commenced during the summer of 1858, for in January, 1859, the pupils moved from the Trimm building into the new school building erected at the corner of Portage and South Streets[3] This building was burned that year, but was immediately rebuilt, on the same site. The new building was frame, painted white, and although not now standing, is remembered by all of the older residents of Houghton. It was abandoned as a school in 1867 when the Rock School was built, but was used as a dwelling house for some time. In 1891 the Rashleigh Bros. tore it down, and used the lumber in building a house which still stands near the old site.[4]

Mr. James Pryor taught for three years, or from 1859 to 1862, in the new school. Upon leaving the public school, Mr. Pryor opened a private school for one winter in a log building

3. Interview with Mr. James P. Edwards, Oct. 8, 1917. Also information from Mrs. Jos. Rashleigh, from her brother, George Major.
4. Interview with Mr. Joseph Rashleigh, Nov. 17, 1917.

Digitized by Google

which stood near where Kroll's Drug Store now stands. This building was erected in 1854 by C. C. Douglass.[5]

In the *Portage Lake Mining Gazette* for September 24, 1861, appeared a letter of inquiry from a non-resident concerning the schools of the district. The editor's reply said the schools had not received the attention they should have. There was one small building in Houghton, and one in Hurontown. The teachers were not first class, and their salaries were poor. An instance was given of one man's having moved to Lower Michigan because of lack of good schools for his children. An appeal was made for more interest from the people—less complaining, and more money.

A Mr. Blake taught the public school for one year, from 1862 to 1863; he was succeeded by Boethius Sullivan for one year, from 1863 to 1864: then a Mr. Lyon came in the fall of 1864 and remained for one year.[6]

The annual report for September, 1864, states that the number of children in the district between the ages of five and twenty was 587; the number attending school, 516. The school was not graded and the teachers of the district, exclusive of Mr. Lyon, were: Julia Wheeler, Bridget Quinn, Jane Hunt, Kate Easton, Edward Lott, E. A. Thurston, and L. M. Loring.

The following notice appeared in the issue of the *Portage Lake Mining Gazette* for October 1, 1864: "The contract for the construction of a fine building for use as a graded school was let on Saturday afternoon last, and though it will not be ready for use for one year, we do not see how the 'growing evil' can be remedied in less time." The contract was for the Rock School, and was let to P. P. Cowles. The building was to

5. Interview with Mr. James P. Edwards, Oct. 8, 1917.
6. Interview with Mr. Michael Sullivan, Oct. 22, 1917.

Digitized by Google

cost between twenty and twenty-five thousand dollars, and was to contain "nine large rooms, besides smaller ones for various purposes."

In December, 1864, Miss Cummings opened a private school above the Huron Mine Office for small children, "where they would be free from the older boisterous ones." During the same winter Prof. S. E. Adams conducted a Select Private High School in Houghton where he taught the "common and higher English branches, French, Latin, and Drawing."

During this time, or on September 23, 1863, School District No. 1 of Portage Township was organized by school inspectors into "one graded and high school district."[7] This system was not put into practice, however, until 1865, when Mr. W. P. Sidnam, the first real professional teacher, came to take charge of all of the schools of the district. He created a graded school system.

By the fall of 1865 the schools were in such a crowded condition that it was found necessary to make special arrangements for the accomodation of pupils until the completion of the new school building. Mr. Sidnam of Albion College was engaged to be the Superintendent of Schools, and Miss Edgerton, a teacher in the Lansing Female Seminary, to have immediate charge of the High School. The school building near the Catholic Church was used for the primary grades; the building now occupied by Mrs. Bennett's (colored), on the north side of East Shelden Street, was used for the grammar grades; and the basement of the old Episcopal Church, which stood where the present church stands, was used for the High School.[8]

In the issue of the *Gazette* for August 3, 1866, there is a pic-

7. Interview with Mr. J. T. Finnegan, Nov. 8, 1917.
8. Interview with Mr. James P. Edwards, Oct. 8, 1917.

Digitized by Google

ture of the Rock School, called the Houghton Graded School. Beneath the picture is the following information: "We present our readers this week with a correct engraving of the Houghton Graded School Building. The fall term commences on the 3rd ult., but the new building will scarcely be completed before the first of October."

The school is divided into four grades, and each grade into three classes, with more advanced studies for the different classes. The following gentlemen compose the school board: Hon. J. G. McKernan, chairman; E. F. Douglass, director; Dr. Geo. Fuller, assessor; Ransom Shelden, William Harris, Francis Mayworm, trustees. The instructors are as follows: William P. Sidnam, Principal; Miss Carie Edgerton, preceptress; E. A. Thurston, Miss Kate M. Easton, Miss Sophia M. Mabbs, Miss Ettie Cummings, Miss Hattie Funston, Miss Ellen Selley, assistant teachers."

The building was not ready for occupancy until after the Christmas holidays, for in January, 1867, all grades moved from the various buildings into the new school.

The first class to complete the required work finished from the new building in June of 1867, but were not called graduates, were given no diplomas, and had no special exercises to mark the occasion.

According to Mr. James Edwards' memory, that class consisted of James Edwards, Della Funston, Mary Funston, Griffith Williams, Ben Williams, and Annie Williams.

In the issue of the *Gazette* for May 2, 1867, there is a notice to the effect that the State Legislature had made provision for a County Superintendent of Common Schools.

In the *Gazette* for March 25, 1869, there is an account of a school examination attended by parents and friends. Papers

Digitized by Google

read by two pupils, Emma Lyon and Jerry Finnegan, were conceded to be prominently meritorious.

In 1867 the original Portage Township was divided into four new townships: Adams to the west, Huron to the south, Webster to the east, and Portage along the lake. Because of this division a controversy in school matters arose. The *Gazette* for October 21, 1869, states that the Supreme Court had decided against School District No 1 of Portage Township requesting a mandamus be issued against Adams Township obliging it to assess and collect taxes to help pay for the expenses of School District No. 1 of Portage Township. The court decided that a new township could legally form a new school district, and that the old township could not collect taxes from the new. For two years Huron, Webster, and Adams townships had been using Portage Township schools, then Adams suddenly refused to give any support, and the law upheld it. This produced a state of confusion, which made it necessary for a change in the policy of the trustees of District No. 1 of Portage Township, and the consequent resignation of Mr. Sidnam. The *Gazette* for June 23, 1870, tells of the close of the school year, and of the resignation of Mr. Sidnam and three of the lady teachers. Attorneys Ross and Hubbell had previously stated that the division of the original township would in no wise injure the prospects or resources of the schools; but Adams proved that it had a right to administer its own school affairs, and hence the others had, too. With its revenue reduced and a considerable portion of the school building debt still unpaid, the Directors had but one course left to pursue—to reduce expenses. A hope was expressed that the townships would reunite. Three of the old teachers remained. Departments were consolidated, but the course of study remained much the same.

Digitized by Google

The September 8, 1870 issue of the *Gazette* states that there seemed to be a desire on the part of some of the adjoining districts to unite and form a fractional district.

The organization of a new township creates a fractional school district unless that township organizes its own school district. Adams did organize a new district, but Huron and Webster did not, hence they remained a part of the Portage School District No. 1, as fractional districts, until the reorganization of the district in 1901; and the Portage School District became a Union School District.

The September 22, 1870 issue of the *Gazette* states that the school term commenced September 19 with the following instructors: Preceptress, Miss Julia Bacon; Intermediate, Miss Frances St. John; Primary, Mrs. McIntire and Miss Anne Bolan.

School matters seemed to adjust themselves gradually because in 1871 Mr. Sidnam was recalled, but remained only one year. It is learned that Mr. Sidnam died about two years ago, or in 1915, and was buried in Kalamazoo.

In 1872 Mr. M. J. Whitney succeeded Mr. Sidnam and remained for nine years superintendent of schools; for a part of the time he had the position of County Commissioner of Schools also.[9]

From 1872 to 1874 Mr. William Bath taught at Hurontown under Mr. Whitney, with Miss Bridget Finnegan as assistant, in the first school building erected at Hurontown on the same site as the present building. There was another building of one room just north of the present fire hall where a Miss Dunn taught, and another one-roomed building near the present band stand—teacher, Miss Bessie Newcomb.[10]

9. Letter from Eugene Beahan to Mr. J. T. Finnegan.
10. Interview with Mr. William Bath, Oct. 30, 1917.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Bath tells of teachers' meetings held once a month on Saturday mornings in the Rock School. Teachers were asked to give demonstrations of methods of teaching different subjects.

In 1893 Mr. Bath became County School Commissioner and has had that position continuously since.

In 1875 the first East Houghton school building was erected on the site of the present building, and school opened in January, 1876. Allen Rees was the first teacher and taught for one year. This school was under the supervision of a new school district—District No. 2 of Portage Township. The Board consisted of Messrs. Pope, Hodgson and Chadbourne. The first building was burned, but rebuilt. Mr. Rees became assessor of the district upon his resignation as teacher, and remained such until the District disorganized in 1901.

The first graduating class of District No. 1 to receive diplomas was the class of 1875. In the *Gazette* for October 21, 1875, Mr. Whitney reports:

"Owing to limited help and want of room our High School Department exists only in name; it includes every pupil who has passed the intermediate department. We have no distinct grammar school, neither have we a proper intermediate. All this due to the fact that we must make room for all who seek admission; so beginning with the lower rooms, when they are filled, classes must be promoted, fit or unfit, to make room for others. Thus our High School has become what it is now, the difference between it and an intermediate being barely perceptible to a stranger.

"The studies of the English course required for graduation were completed June 25 by Nettie Dally, Agnes Mulvey, Lucy Major, Allen Rees, Robert Wilson, and John Rees. This is the first class that has completed any of the courses of study

Digitized by Google

as prescribed for graduation. We hope that in the future such events will happen yearly."

The janitor of the Rock School always lived in the building with his family, rooms for their accomodation being in the basement. The first janitor of the Rock School was a Mr. Matthews, the second a Mr. McAuliff. In 1877 Mr. E. E. Langdon became janitor, moving into the building with his family. He remained janitor for twenty years, when, owing to ill health, he had to give the place to his son, F. E. Langdon, commonly known as Tom Langdon, who acted as janitor for two years in the old building, or until it was torn down; the family moving out of the building for that reason. "Tom" Langdon is still janitor of the central building, and head janitor of the school system. He seems a part of the institution, having for so many years performed his duties faithfully.

There were three graduates in the class of 1880—Bertha Siller, Thomas H. Rees, and Michael Sullivan. The exercises consisted of a day program with essays by the pupils, and music.[11]

The *Gazette* for June 16, 1881, speakes of the close of school and tells that Mr. Whitney was not to return the following year. At that time the enrollment was 762 with an average attendance of 537. There were three buildings in the district —one at Hurontown with four teachers, one at Sturgeon River, twelve miles east, with one teacher, and the Houghton High School with nine teachers.

Mr. Whitney's successor was Mr. Slauson, who is now Superintendent of Schools at Ann Arbor. He remained for seven years, or until June, 1888.

Mr. F. W. Arbury followed and remained until 1895. By this time the school had grown until conditions were getting

11. Interview with Mr. Michael Sullivan, Oct. 22, 1917.

Digitized by Google

crowded. An announcement for the year 1889-1890 gives the following information concerning the work:

"The Public Schools of Houghton are organized upon a course of study extending over twelve years. Each year of the course is called a grade. The twelve years of the course are set off in three groups of four years each, which constitute respectively the Primary, the Grammar, and the High School Departments.

"For convenience of classification and examination each year is divided into half grades of twenty weeks each.

"The High School presents two courses of study, viz: Scientific and English. Each course extends over a period of four years. The courses are so arranged as to be preparatory to corresponding courses in the State University at Ann Arbor.

"The High School will be able to offer many advantages this year. The board is determined to build up a first class high school, and is sparing no labor and expense to accomplish this purpose."

There was a District Library in existence at that time, which was housed in the school building. It consisted of "1200 volumes of well selected Literature, and over 150 volumes of reference books, including two sets of Encyclopedias. In addition, the High School Library received all the leading periodicals, such as: The Century, Scribners', Magazine of American History, Harper's Weekly, Scientific American, America, etc."

The Board of Education in 1889 consisted of Thomas Behan, moderator; John P. Hunt, director; John Hummell, assessor; T. W. Edwards and W. A. Dunn.

When Mr. Arbury left, Mr. Mauck came, remaining for two years. He was followed by Mr. B. A. Dunbar in 1897. By

Digitized by Google

now, conditions were very crowded in the old building and an agitation was on foot for a new school. A government inspector was brought to look over the old rock building, as it had been built largely of surface rock and had a long crack in the north wall, and the front gable was unsound. The inspector condemned the building, so the town had to submit to a new school. The class of 1899 was the last to graduate from the Rock School, for as soon as school closed the old building was torn down and the construction of the present High School building begun. Dr. Jones, who was the leading member of the school board at that time, was severely criticised for insisting upon such a large building as was finally erected.

When school opened in the fall, the pupils were placed in different rooms and buildings throughout the town. The old Catholic Church housed four grades; the priest's home, one; the basement of the Episcopal Church, two; while the East Houghton and Hurontown schools held the others. The fire bell at the City Hall called the pupils together.

So rapidly was the new building erected that all moved into it in April, 1900. Mr. Dunbar was Superintendent until the close of the school year. The board consisted of Dr. H. W. Jones, moderator; John Slockett, director; John Hummell, assessor; Ernest Liebetrau; William Culliford.

There were four rooms not used in the new building, and none of the basement, except the furnace room, was occupied.

It is learned that Mr. Dunbar is now teacher of chemistry in the Agricultural College at Brookings, South Dakota.

Mr. Kirtland was Superintendent for one year following Mr. Dunbar. Mr. Griffin then came and remained for two years, or until 1903. During Mr. Griffin's superintendency, Act No. 269 of the Township Board disorganized School District No. 2, which comprised East Houghton, and organized

Digitized by Google

the present School District No. 1, which includes all of the schools in the present Portage Township.

Mr. Griffin was followed by E. H. Comstock, who remained until 1906. The Elo school at Otter Lake was built during Mr. Comstock's superintendency. Mr. Comstock is now at the head of the Department of Mathematics in the School of Mines at the University of Minnesota.

Mr. John A. Doelle, who had been Principal of the High School under Mr. Comstock, became Superintendent in 1906, and still occupies that position, having the distinction of having been at the head of the Houghton schools longer than any other one man. Under his management the system has grown and progressed until it is now not only on a par with the other schools of the county, but is prominent among the schools of the State.

When Mr. Doelle became Superintendent, there were five buildings in the district, Central, East, Huron, Pilgrim and Elo; now there are thirteen. They comprise the Central, or High School building, with twenty-nine teachers; the East, or Jay A. Hubbell building, with nine teachers; the West, or Douglass Houghton building, with nine teachers, in the village of Houghton; the Pilgrim building, with one teacher, the Stamp Mill school, with one teacher, both east of Houghton; south of Houghton—Hurontown building with six teachers; Dodgeville, two teachers; Isle Royal, three teachers; Superior, two teachers; Suo school, one teacher; Otter Lake Agricultural School, three teachers; Elo, one teacher; Askel, one teacher. The increase in the number of schools has been due in part to the increase in the population of the district from mineral and agricultural development; but it has also been due largely to Mr. Doelle's untiring efforts to place an education within the reach of all boys and girls. The Agricultural School at

Digitized by Google

Otter Lake, erected in 1913, is an example of this effort. It is located in a region settled largely by Finnish farmers, who were originally some distance from a school and were clearing land under difficulties; they had very poor roads into their districts, no opportunities of learning the more improved methods of farming, and no community spirit. The school, comprising six rooms, consisting of class rooms, laboratory, kitchen, and manual training department, not only serves as a school house, but is a community center around which the life of the district revolves. In connection with the school there is a farm of forty acres where crops are grown, pure-blooded stock raised, and tests of soil, etc. carried on. The township has built a good road to and beyond the school, over which the farmers can carry crops to market. This was the first school of its kind in the State of Michigan, and has received nation-wide recognition, the Government having issued a bulletin describing it. Others, patterned after it, are being built throughout the agricultural States.

Mr. Doelle, assisted by Mr. Geismar, agricultural expert, and Mr. Stone, attorney-at-law, were instrumental in having a bill introduced and passed during the last session of the Legislature providing for "the establishment of Rural Agricultural Schools by consolidating three or more rural schools in any Township or School District; for the organization of school districts in certain cases; for teaching Agriculture, Manual Training, and Home Economics therein, and providing State aid for the maintenance thereof."

This Act, No. 226 of the Public Acts, was approved May 10, 1917. A number of County Commissioners of Schools and members of the State Educational Department have recently told Mr. Doelle that many districts are about ready to consolidate.

Digitized by Google

SUPT. JOHN A. DOELLE

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Through Mr. Doelle's untiring efforts, Houghton has a public library which is unusual in a village of its size. Mr. Doelle himself carried on a correspondence with Mr. Carnegie which resulted in the donation to Houghton of the splendid building which houses its library. Mr. Doelle individually solicited from the business men of the town the money for the lot on which the library stands. The library was erected in 1909, and has now 13, 344 volumes, exclusive of 315 volumes of Public Documents, and subscribes to the leading magazines and newspapers of the day. Miss Harriet Allen is the librarian, and she employs two assistants. Aside from the juvenile and adult reading rooms on the main floor, there are three rooms in the basement; a lecture room, a study or reading room, and an additional stack room.

The library is under the direct management of the school board, but is maintained by township moneys, appropriated by act of the township board as for any other purpose. Because of the management much attention has been given, in selecting books, to the needs of school children and teachers. The juvenile books are numerous and of the best; the reference books leave very little to be desired; and the list of books on pedagogy and related subjects is unusual even in much larger libraries.

Mr. Doelle was instrumental in instigating the departmental system in the grammar grades, with a supervisor for each of the following subjects: arithmetic, grammar, geography, reading and history. Under this system it has been possible to select special teachers of experience and worth, so that a very high grade of scholarship is the result, as the high school teachers testify.

During Mr. Doelle's superintendency, Manual Training, Domestic Science, Physical Training, and Music have been in-

Digitized by Google

troduced into the system. The basement of the Central building is used for the departments of Manual Training, Domestic Science, and Physical Training, with a competent director for each, and an assistant in each of the departments of Manual Training and Domestic Science. Drawing was a part of the curriculum prior to Mr. Doelle's superintendency.

Each year at the Houghton County Fair, Houghton displays exhibits from the Agricultural, Manual Training, Domestic Science, Art, and Penmanship Departments. This year it received second prize in Penmanship, and when it is remembered that the school receiving first prize, also received the National First Prize, it is no discredit to have received the second place in the county. With the exception of one or two years Houghton has always taken first prize in Manual Training. Excellent workmanship is developed under the able direction of Mr. Schaefer.

In 1891 Miss Nye came to Houghton to take charge of the Kindergarten in the Central Building—the only Kindergarten in the system at that time. There was, however, a sub-primary at Hurontown. Miss Nye taught in the Central Kindergarten for ten years, gradually assuming responsibilities for much of the Kindergarten work in the other buildings, until 1911, when she was made supervisor of Kindergartens and Primary Grades—including from first through the fourth. She is a vital part of the school system and to her belongs a great part of credit for the close bond between parents and teachers. During Miss Nye's first year in Houghton, she organized a Mother's Meeting, and was rewarded by having an attendance of 28 at the first meeting. There are four or five women still attending the meetings who attended that first one. The meetings have grown until they are held eight times a year in each of the four main buildings: Central,

Digitized by Google

BOUGHTON HIGH SCHOOL

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

East, West, and Hurontown. There are parents' meetings held in all of the buildings once or twice a year, to which the fathers, as well as the mothers, are invited. These are of untold value to the communities as is evidenced by the interest shown, and by the large number in attendance. Through the visiting of homes by the primary teachers the condition of many families of the community is known and much help is possible which otherwise would never be given; this is not the purpose of the visiting but grows out of it.

Miss Nye has staged, or presented, pageants at different times, which have been not only of community interest, but of county interest. Her eagerness to get everyone interested and working together has resulted in unusual enthusiasm. A real interest in humanity had been the keynote of her success.

In 1912 the teachers of Houghton proposed the following merit system for the promotion of teachers, which was adopted by the Board of Education, July 22, 1913: "In ascertaining the merit of teachers three bases are used, namely: Class-room Efficiency, daily use of English in the class-room, growth in Professional Knowledge as measured by promotional examination. Class-room Efficiency is to count 70 per cent.; Class-room English, 10 per cent.; while Growth in Professional Knowledge counts 20 per cent."

The conditions of the central building are now very much overcrowded and a new building is badly needed. This crowded condition is especially felt in the High School. Two years ago it was found necessary to incorporate the laboratory system, in which the pupils do their studying as well as reciting under the direct supervision of the teacher. This was necessary in order to make use of the assembly room for class room purposes. The students report only to their individual

Digitized by Google

classes, and when not in class are supposed to be at home. Now, every available portion of the building is in use, from basement to attic, even the hall on the third floor being used for a class room, and the Principal finding it necessary to use the hall on the second floor for his office.

In spite of these conditions, a high standard of scholarship is maintained. The Commercial Department has two instructors with a third assistant in the shorthand department, and gives a four-year course fitting pupils for positions immediately upon leaving High School. The School Bank, in connection with the Commercial Department, is said to have a larger percentage of depositors than any other school bank in the State.

Three years of German are taught, four of Latin, four of English, four of Mathematics, four of History, including Civics and Economics, and three of Science, in the regular Academic work. The enrollment of the High School in the last eleven years has grown from 75 to 340.

The High School is not only on the approved list of all the Colleges and Universities, but is a member of the North-Central Association of Schools.

Houghton may well be proud of its schools, but like all education of today, there is much room for growth, in order to fill the needs of the community and to fit the youth for life. And Houghton is open to conviction, and waiting for new steps in education that prove themselves an advancement over the old.

Digitized by Google

County Organization in Michigan

By William H. Hathaway, A. M.
Milwaukee

UNDER the rule of France the section of country now included in the State of Michigan lacked any definite political organization. Population was sparse, and consequently no extensive government was demanded, only the settlements at Detroit and Michilimackinac being worthy of notice.

After the cession of New France to Great Britain, Michigan was included in the Province of Quebec, but during the Revolutionary War, Virginia asserted her claim and in the section northwest of the Ohio River there was created the County of Illinois—the first instance of county organization in that country.[1] It is not certain how formal that organization was, as the Revolution interrupted civil affairs and little opportunity existed for civil administration for many years.

With the organization of the Northwest Territory by the United States Government begins the real story. The men appointed to administer the affairs of this wilderness were Gov. St. Clair of Pennsylvania, Judge Symmes from New Jersey, and Gen. Putnam from Massachusetts. Coming as these men did from the New England and Middle sections they introduced the township and county type of local government.[2] The law providing for the political organization of the Territory was somewhat indefinite as to where the

1. Henning, *Virginia Stat. at Large*, IX, 552; *St. Clair Papers*, II, 169.
2. Hinsdale, *Old Northwest*, 300.

Digitized by Google

power to create counties should lie.[3] As a result a spirited, and at times acrimonious debate sprang up between Governor St. Clair and the Legislative Council as to which should organize the new counties.[4]

The first county laid out to include any part of Michigan was Knox, set off by the proclamation of Winthrop Sargent, secretary to Gov. St. Clair, in 1790.[5] This included the western part of Michigan as well as a portion of Indiana. As the more populous part of the peninsula was in the military control of the British, Gov. St. Clair left the political control with them.[6] In 1796 Sargent, much to the displeasure of St. Clair, took advantage of his superior's absence in the East to organize Wayne County. The county included, besides a large part of northwestern Ohio, the southeastern corner of Michigan with the City of Detroit, by this time under the control of the Territorial Government.[7] Much of this organization was to no purpose as the county authority could not extend beyond the small thickly settled section.

By this time Ohio was clamoring to be set off from the rest of the Northwest Territory and the Detroiters felt that the new State could not be created without including them within its limits.[8] Unfortunately the Frenchmen were on the wrong side of the political fence, and to their discomfiture and in opposition to the wish of the Ohioans, Ohio became a State by action of the Republican administration without including Federalist Detroit.[9] Thus rebuffed, the part of

3. *Laws of Northwest Terr.*, I, 249.
4. *St. Clair Papers*, II, 515-23.
5. *St. Clair Papers*, II, 166. *See* Appendix.
6. Hinsdale, *Old Northwest*, 281.
7. *St. Clair Papers*, II, 409.
8. Hinsdale, *Old Northwest*, 320.
9. Larzelere, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 30, 12.

Digitized by Google

Wayne included within the Michigan country was compelled to be content with annexation to Indiana Territory, with William Henry Harrison as Governor. In 1803, by proclamation of Gov. Harrison, Wayne was given boundaries to include the whole of the Lower Peninsula, part of the Upper Peninsula and part of what are now Wisconsin, Indiana, and Ohio.[10] Wayne did not, however, long remain a part of Indiana for, in 1805, Indiana was set off as a separate Territory and Michigan was also given separate Territorial organization which included all the remaining portion of the Northwest Territory —Wisconsin, part of Minnesota, and part of Illinois.[11] Hull, Governor of the new Michigan Territory, made an arrangement of his own for the management of his charge, forming it into districts irrespective of the earlier county organization.[12] Thus, for a time, Wayne ceased to exist. Hull was soon removed and when Lewis Cass became Governor in 1815, he reestablished the county of Wayne to include all of the Territory to which Indian title had been extinguished.[13] Other counties soon followed—Monroe and Michilimackinac in 1817, Macomb and Brown in 1818, and Oakland in 1820.[14] The settled parts of the Territory thus assumed definite political form, the district around Detroit, which then enjoyed a healthy settlement, made three organized counties and the settlements at the Straits of Mackinac with those around Green Bay became the county of Michilimackinac.

The decade from 1820 to 1830 displayed a considerable briskness in county organization. By 1822 the whole eastern side of the State had been set off into counties although many

10. Proc. of Harrison, Ind. Hist. *Soc. Publications*, III, 114. *See* map.
11. Dunn, *Hist. of Indiana*, 325.
12. Jenks, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 38, 445.
13. *See* Appendix.
14. *See* Appendix.

Digitized by Google

of them lacked political organization and were attached to the more thickly settled organized counties of the southeastern corner. In the west the settlements along the St. Joseph River had demanded and received separate political status in the creation of the counties of Cass and St. Joseph, with Berrien set off as a county but attached to Cass. The settlements along the Kalamazoo River had been erected into Kalamazoo County. North of this and north of the Indian treaty lines the Territory remained as it had been from 1817, a part of Michilimackinac. East of the Indian treaty line of Saginaw the country was attached to Oakland.[15]

As the decade of 1830 to 1840 progressed the county organization developed, spreading from these two centers,—the southeastern and the St. Joseph-Kalamazoo,—as bases. By 1834 these two groups were connected by the organization of Jackson County, leaving however what later became Hillsdale, unorganized and lonely between its more fortunate sisters and

15. *Terr. Laws*, I, 335. In this description the formation of the counties is based upon their actual organization, although the maps were prepared to show all the territory "attached" to each county. The date on which a county was "set off" and that on which it was "organized" do not always coincide, sometimes years intervening after the boundaries were determined before the county was given political status, and in the meantime the unorganized county was attached to some organized county or broken up into several parts and attached to different organized counties, usually with the intention that the county should some day be organized with its original boundaries (*Laws of* 1867, p. 293). There was much confusion in these attachments because many unorganized counties were at different times attached to several counties during the period of probation, some attachments being changed with each new legislature, and the changes were sometimes difficult to follow. Many times the law providing for the change was hidden away in a law upon a different subject, and there was some uncertainty in the use of terms, as shown in the use of "for judicial purposes," "for municipal purposes," or "for purposes of taxation," etc.

Digitized by Google

attached to Lenawee for municipal purposes.[16] As the decade progressed the organized counties crept steadily up the perimeter of the State along the shores of the Lakes as far as the latitude of the southern end of Lake Huron, the counties of the interior following closely. By the end of the period the southern part of the State, to and including Saginaw County, had been fully organized, those of the Grand and Saginaw River valleys completing the list. In the year of 1840 the Legislature in a very generous mood set off the whole of the remaining part of the Lower Peninsula into separate counties, leaving the most of them unorganized and attached to the counties at the south or to Michilimackinac at the north.[17] It is thought by some that this was the result of the recommendation of Douglass Houghton, the State Geologist, made in order to facilitate his work in making the topographical maps of the State.[18] The names given to the counties set off at this time were fantastic and we find that most of them were later changed to the names which they now possess. In some cases the later names are not improvements over the former.[19]

With a few exceptions the present county organization of the Lower Peninsula follows the lines laid down by the Legislature of 1840. The county lines were made to follow the lines of the United States survey, as was the case, in fact, with all of the counties in their final organization, so that the modern county map presents a regular appearance. In only a few unimportant instances have the county boundaries been made to follow the physiographic features of the country.

By the end of this decade (1840) the southern line of the

16. *Laws of Mich.*, 1834, 171. *See* map.
17. *Laws of Mich.*, 1840, p. 196.
18. Jenks, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 38, 460.
19. *Laws of Mich.*, 1843, for change of names.

Digitized by Google

southern tier of counties had been made to assume its present appearance. Hillsdale, Lenawee, and Monroe were compelled to accept a contraction of their possessions by the decision of Congress in the case against Ohio at the time of the so-called "Toledo War." Up to this time this disputed group of townships had been included as part of the Michigan counties, and there seems to be sufficient evidence to show that they were looked upon by the authorities of both Ohio and Michigan as being under the civil jurisdiction of the Michigan counties involved.[20]

In the decade 1840 to 1850 few changes were seen in the Lower Peninsula. Michilimackinac retreated to the Upper Peninsula but still retained supervision over the northern counties of the older Peninsula. Only four organizations took place in the southern Peninsula—Montcalm, Midland, and Tuscola, (1850), and Sanilac (1849).[21] In the northern Peninsula a healthy activity was seen. Three additional counties made their appearance in that section, with boundaries at variance with those of the present day. The whole Peninsula was set off into counties, but they were not all given political organization.

The next period, 1850 to 1860, displayed renewed vigor, and by the close of the decade the older Peninsula was nearly encircled by definite political organization except in a few places where an unorganized county stood like a lonely sentinel on the shore and not contiguous with his fellows. One county, as if for precaution, was thrown out to the windward upon the islands of Lake Michigan, (Manitou). The interior

20. Message of Gov. Lucas, 1835, in *Appeal of Ohio Con. to U. S.*, p. 146; *Appeal by Conv. of Mich. to U. S.*, p. 106, 124; *Terr. Laws of Mich.*, II, 477; III, 933.

21. *See* Appendix.

Digitized by Google

of the State was still unorganized although it was all attached to some county. In the newer Peninsula to the north some new counties were formed from old ones, and gradually the map assumed its present political form. Although the Peninsula was covered with organized counties as early as 1870, there have been many changes; and instead of there being nine counties as in that year, there are now (1918) fifteen.

Not until 1890 had the Lower Peninsula map been covered with definite separate county organization. Since that time few changes have been made and the counties stand today with their lines substantially as set in 1840.

The great factor determining the organization of the counties was of course the incoming settlement. The route of travel and the location of the population were controlled by two other factors,—the natural resources and the transportation facilities. The extinction of Indian titles had some influence, but it was small, because the settler did not wait for this slow process when there were desirable lands beckoning him onward. Settlement was very slow in the early years. Detroit was held by the French and later, after the Revolution, by the English, a condition which prevented free access by the American immigrant to the surrounding country. This section, it was prophesied, was destined to be a great fur-producing and trading wilderness.[22] To bear out this theory there occurred an incident which had a very important bearing upon the future of the section. When the survey of the Northwest Territory

22. Little progress was made under the French, because it was obstructed by the fact that this region was long under the monopoly of companies chartered by the crown. Lanman, *Hist. of Mich.*, 62; Cooley, *Michigan*, 193. Another hindrance was Michigan's bad reputation through fear of the Indians, owing to the massacre of the River Raisin. Fuller, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 38, 561.

Digitized by Google

was attempted the Government engineers, in attempting to run their north and south line from the Ohio-Indiana line, encountered swampy land as they entered what is now Michigan, and in their report to the Government gave the information that the country was uninhabitable and good only for hunting and trapping.[23] It was held by some that this report was given out in behalf of some men interested in sales of land in the southern part of the Territory. The Astor corporation (the American Fur Company), all foreign fur-trading companies being excluded, was pushing its activities through the Peninsula from Mackinac, a significant fact when thought of in connection with the circulation of this report of the engineers.[24] Be that as it may, settlers were slow to enter the Territory.[25] As a consequence land surveys progressed slowly and further discouraged settlement.[26] The first land office in Michigan which sold public lands was opened at Detroit in 1818; another being established at Monroe in 1823; one at Kalamazoo in 1831; another at Flint in 1836; and one at Ionia in 1836.[27]

The first influence to be considered in the settlement of Michigan was the comparative ease of transportation afforded. In this respect the State found herself excellently situated. The proximity of the Great Lakes made every part easily accessible. The beginning of steamboat transportation on the Lakes in 1818 came in time to aid greatly in opening Michi-

23. Report of the Surveyor-Gen. of Ohio, 1815, cited by Kedzie, *Mich. and its Resources*, 24. Morse gave this rumor currency in a book for schools and colleges. Cooley, *Michigan*, 192.
24. *Ibid*, 192.
25. Miller, *Some Geographical Influences*, 239; *Census of Mich.*, 1904, I, xvii.
26. Campbell, *Outlines of the Pol. Hist. of Mich.*, 221; Lanman, *Hist. of Mich.*, 219.
27. Blois, *Gazetteer of Mich.*, 1838, p. 74.

Digitized by Google

gan. The Raisin, the Huron, the Clinton, and the Saginaw River valleys on the eastern side of the State show their influence by virtue of the early settlements which are found to have bordered them, and a glance at the map will show that the county organization followed closely the lines of these valleys. On the western side of the State the same influence was found. Very early settlements began to be formed on the St. Joseph River, which was navigable for the steamboats of the time as far as South Bend and for flatboats for a much longer distance.[28] The accompanying maps give unmistakable evidence of the influence of this stream in the forming of counties. The influence of the Kalamazoo and the Grand is shown in the same manner,—by the grouping of early counties along their fertile valleys. The people of the State were not slow to recognize the value of these streams and entered enthusiastically into their development.[29]

Another favorite form of transportation was the turnpikes. One deserving of special mention was the Chicago Road, planned and provided for by the United States Government to run from Detroit to Chicago.[30] Provided for in 1824 it was well begun by 1830, in time to help in some measure the incoming throng of pioneers of that period. At Detroit it met the weary pioneer and carried him across the Territory through the southern tier of counties. Blois' *Gazetteer* claims that the travel over this road was "equal to, if not more than, that on any other of the same length in the United States."[31] Many

28. Turner, *Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley*, 15; Lanman, *Hist. of Mich.*, 366.
29. *Terr. Laws*, III, 1061; other references to the laws show the large number of acts passed for the improvement of various streams of the State.
30. Chase, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 38, 594; Fuller, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 38, 547; *U. S. Statutes at Large*, IV, 135.
31. Blois, *Gazetteer of Mich.*, 1838, p. 96.

Digitized by Google

other Territorial highways were planned to aid in the opening up of Michigan. The Grand River Road was projected from Detroit to what is now Grand Rapids, and the Saginaw Road was partially built from Detroit through Pontiac and Flint to the Saginaw River.[32] The Territorial Road parallel to the Chicago Road from Detroit through Ann Arbor, Jackson, and Marshall, carried a heavy traffic to the interior of Michigan. The tendency seemed to be to develop the east and west roads at the expense of the others, and it is claimed that these roads carried many people through Michigan to the lands lying beyond.[33] These east and west roads, it was thought, would help develop Michigan by getting for it a share of the western traffic.

Soon the railroads began to supplant the turnpikes and rivers, but they came too late to be factors in the development of counties. Settlement and political organization preceded them in the Lower Peninsula.[34] In the Upper Peninsula the railroads were essential to the opening of the mines upon which the economic growth of the section depended. A strap-iron railway was built over the portage at the Sault in 1850, and in 1854 the Marquette Railway was built from the mines to the Lake.[35] In 1873 State aid was given to these roads, the State realizing that the opening of the mines depended upon an easy and cheap means of getting the heavy

32. Blois, *Gazetteer of Mich.*, 1838, p. 96; *U. S. Statutes at Large*, IV, 560.
33. Jacob Ferris, *The Great West*, 180.
34. A careful comparison of the railroad maps of the years from 1848 to 1860, as given in "The Railroads of the Old Northwest before the Civil War," F. L. Paxon, with the accompanying maps, shows that in every case county organization had preceded the railroad in the Lower Peninsula.
35. R. D. Williams, *The Hon. Peter White*, 85; E. D. Fite, *Social and Industrial Conditions During the Civil War*, 24.

Digitized by Google

ore to the coast for lake shipment.[36] After much effort Congress was persuaded to make an appropriation for a canal around the Falls, although it seemed to many that they were doing a useless thing. This was in 1852, and when the canal was finished in 1855 the stimulating effect upon the growth of the Upper Peninsula was striking.[37]

Of natural resouces Michigan possessed an abundance, but in the early day it was the fertile land of the river valleys that attracted the settler. The famous oak openings of southern Michigan were especially attractive and were quickly settled. From about 1840 other attractions were evident. The lumbering of the pine country which forms an east and west belt through the center of the State was made possible by the easy water transportation furnished by stream and lake, and as this industry developed, a fringe of organized counties extended around the rim of the Lower Peninsula. The first lumbering operations of any importance were in the Saginaw Valley where a sawmill was in operation as early as 1837.[38] Iron ore was discovered in the Upper Peninsula in 1841 by the State Geologist, Douglass Houghton, and soon population warranted the erection of more counties.[39] Added impetus to the growth of this Peninsula was given by the beginning, in 1844, of copper mining at Copper Harbor.[40]

The islands lying to the northwest of the Lower Peninsula in Lake Michigan have an interesting and romantic history.

---

36. *The State of Michigan*, 91.
37. *Hist. of Upper Pen.*, 133; Fite, *Social and Ind. Con.*, 24; Williams, *Peter White*, 65. It is said that Henry Clay, speaking against a grant of land to aid in the construction of the canal, said it was "a work beyond the remotest settlement in the United States if not in the moon." *Hist. of Upper Peninsula*, 214.
38. *Mich. State Census*, 1904, I, xxii.
39. Williams, *Peter White*, 5.
40. Williams, *Peter White*, 10.

Digitized by Google

A Mormon colony was established there in 1846 by James J. Strang, a friend of Joseph Smith. In 1855 through the influence of Strang who was at that time a member of the Legislature, the islands were organized into the separate county of Manitou. The county had a varied history until in 1895 it lost its separate organization and the islands were given to Charlevoix and Leelanau counties.[41]

There remains to be mentioned the influence of the Indian lands upon the trend of settlement. The growth of counties was accompanied by the retreat of the Indian frontier, except that in some cases the anxious legislators in their desire to possess themselves of the lands did not wait for the tardy retirement of the Indians and organized counties to overlap their lands. The settler was continually clamoring for the removal of the troublesome red man.[42]

From the foregoing it is seen that Michigan was a comparatively backward State in the developement of her lands, but that settlement had started in time to benefit by the great influx of population to the Northwest which came in the thirties. During this period Michigan was almost overwhelmed with poplation, according to the records of the time.[43] County organization kept pace with the settlement. Few changes have

41. Cooley, *Michigan*, 297; *Leg. Acts*, 1855, p. 197; *Acts*, 1895, p. 132.

42. Schoolcraft Papers, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 37, 225. Most of the territory covered by Michillimackinac County as first organized had not been ceded to the Government. This extensive country was given up by the Indians in the five main treaties: Detroit 1807; Saginaw 1819; Chicago 1821; Carey Mission 1828; Washington 1836. Compare maps of organization with map of Indian treaties. *U. S. Statutes at Large*, VII; "Indian Treaties," Felch, in *M. H. C.*, Vol. 26, 284.

43. Fuller, *M. H. C.*, Vol. 38, 556, 577; Hubbard, *Memorials of a Half Century*, 94; Lanman, *History of Mich.*, 245; Ferris, *Great West*, 150.

Digitized by Google

taken place in recent years, and the county boundaries stand today much as they did after the sweeping arrangements of 1840.

APPENDIX

Here will be found summarized the laws creating and affecting county boundaries, arranged alphabetically.

AISHCUM—See Lake.

ALCONA—In 1840 set off as a county by the name of Negwegon, lying in towns 25, 26, 27, 28 N. and east of line between ranges 4 and 5 E. *Laws* 1840: 198. Name changed to Alcona in 1843. *M. H. C.*, I: 302. Attached to Cheboygan, 1853. *Laws* 1853:19. Attached to Alpena, 1857. *Laws* 1857:162. Attached to Iosco, 1858. *Laws* 1858:16. Organized as county, 1869. *Laws* 1869, II: 336.

ALGER—1885, detached from Schoolcraft and organized: Twps. 48, 49, 50 N. R. 13 W. and twps. 48, 49 N. R. 14, 15, 16 W. and twps. 46, 47, 48 N. R. 17, 18 W. and twps. 44, 45, 46, 47, 48 N. R. 19, 20, 21, 22 W. *Acts* 1885:17.

ALLEGAN—1831 set off: north of base line and south of line between twps. 4 and 5 N; west of line between ranges 10 and 11 W; and east of the shore of Lake Michigan. *Laws* 1831, quoted in *M. H. C.* I: 96. 1835, organized. *Laws* 1835:58; *Terr. Laws*, IV:136.

ALPENA—1840, set off as Anomickee: lying in twps. 29, 30, 31, 32 N. and east of line between ranges 4 and 5 E. *Laws* 1840, 199. Name changed to Alpena, 1843. *M. H. C.*, I:98. 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19. 1857, organized. *Laws* 1857:162.

ANOMICKEE—See Alpena.

ANTRIM—1840, set off as Megisee: lying in twps. 29, 30, 31, 32 N. and west of line between ranges 4 and 5 W. and east of Grand Traverse Bay. *Laws* 1840:198. 1843, name changed to Antrim. *M. H. C.*, I:263. 1853, attached to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853:43. 1863, organized. *Laws* 1863:119. 1865, sec. 1, 2, 11, 12 and that portion of sec. 13, located on the east side of Round Lake in twp. 28 N. R. 9 W. detached from Grand Traverse Co. and attached to Antrim. *Laws* 1865:528. 1881, small portion of land west of Torch Lake

Digitized by Google

and Torch River and north of Round Lake detached from Kalgaska Co. and annexed to Antrim. *Local Acts* 1881:102.

ARENAC—1831, set off: east of line between ranges 2 and 3 E; north of line between twps. 16 and 17 N; south of line between twps. 20 and 21 N; and west of the shores of Saginaw Bay and Lake Huron. *Laws* 1831:15. 1840, attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1840:200. 1858, attached to Midland, *Laws* 1858:16. 1858, blotted out by the organization of Bay Co. See Map. 1883, reorganized: twps. 19 and 20 N. R. 3 E; twps. 18, 19, 20 N. R. 4 E; twps. 18, 19, 20 N. R. 5 E; twps. 18, 19, 20 N. R. 6. E; twps. 18, 19, 20 N. R. 7 E; and twp. 20 N. R. 8 E. and all the islands attached to twps. of Whitney and AuGres. *Acts* 1883:25.

BARAGA—1875, set off: twps. 50, 51, 52, 53 N. R. 30 W; twps. 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, N. R. 31 W. twps. 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52 N. R. 32 W: twp. 47, 48, 49, 50, 51 and that part of twp. 52 N. lying east of Sturgeon River, R. 33 W; that part of twp. 47 N. lying east of south branch of Sturgeon R., twps. 48, 49, 50 and that part of twp. 51, and 52 N. lying east of Sturgeon R. of R. 34 W; that part of twps. 47, 48, 49, and 50 N. lying east of Sturgeon R. or the south branch thereof, of R. 35 W. organized from Houghton. *Laws* 1875:13. 1885, boundary line between Houghton and Baraga was defined as at present. *Acts* 1885:11.

BARRY—1829, set off: lying north of base line, and south of line between twps. 4 and 5 N., west of line between ranges 6 and 7 W., and east of line between ranges 11 and 12 W. *Terr. Laws,* II:735. 1829, attached to St. Joseph. *Terr. Laws,* II:787. 1830, attached to Kalamazoo. *Laws* 1830:32. 1839, organized. *Laws* 1839:17.

BAY—1857, set off: all that part of the north ½ of twp. 13 N. R. 5 E., lying east of the Saginaw R., the north ½ of twp. 13 N. R. 6 E; also twp. 14 N. R. 3 and 4 and fractional 5 and 6 E; also twp. 15 N. R. 3 and fract. 5 and 6 E; also twp. 16 N. R. 3 and fract. 4 and 5 E; also twp. 17 N. R. 3 and fract. 4 and 5 E; twp. 18 N. R. 3 and 4 and fract. 5, 6, 7 E; twp. 19 N. R. 3, 4, 5, and fract. 6, and 7 E; and twp. 20 N. R. 3, 4, 5, 6, and fract. 7 E. Act to be submitted to the people of Saginaw, Midland, and Arenac counties on the first Monday in April, 1857. *Laws* 1857:438. Vote resulted in a legal fight which ended in a decision in favor of Bay county, People vs. Burns. County was organized in 1858. *M. H. C.,* I:108. 1871, slight readjustment of the boundary between Bay and Saginaw counties. *Laws* 1871:194. 1879, Charity

Digitized by Google

Islands attached to Bay from Huron. *Laws* 1879:287. 1881, readjustment of the boundary between Bay and Saginaw. *Laws* 1881:343. 1883, townships detached from Bay to form Arenac. See Arenac.

BENZIE—1863, set off: all that part of the county of Leelanaw which lies south of the south line of twp. 28 N. Attached to Grand Traverse county. *Laws* 1863:58. 1869, organized. *Laws* 1869, III: 1083.

BERRIEN—1829, set off: beginning on the boundary line between this territory and the State of Indiana where the line between ranges 16 and 17 W. intersects said boundary; thence west along boundary line to Lake Michigan; thence along shore of said Lake to intersection of line between twps. 2 and 3 S; thence east on a line between said twps. to intersection of line between ranges 16 and 17 W; thence south on line between said ranges to boundary between this Territory and Indiana. *Terr. Laws,* II:737. 1829, attached to Cass. *Terr. Laws,* II:786. 1831, organized. *Laws* 1831:48.

BRANCH—1829, set off: lying west of line between ranges 4 and 5 W. and east of line between ranges 8 and 9 W. and south of line between twps. 4 and 5 S. and north of the boundary line between this Territroy and the State of Indiana. *Terr. Laws,* II:736. Attached to St. Joseph, p. 745. 1833, organized. *M. H. C.,* I:127.

BROWN—1818, set off by proclamation of Cass to lie south and west of Michilimackinac and extending south to Illinois. *Terr. Laws,* I: 327. 1834, boundaries altered. *Laws* Extra and Second Session 1834.

CALHOUN—1829, set off: lying south of base line and north of line between twps. 4 and 5 S. and west of line between ranges 3 and 4 W. and east of line between ranges 8 and 9 W. *Terr. Laws,* II: 736. Attached to St. Joseph. p. 745. 1830, attached to Kalamazoo. *Laws* 1830:32. 1833, organized. *M. C. H.,* I: 128.

CASS—1829, set off: lying west of the line between ranges 12 and 13 W. and east of line between ranges 16 and 17 W. and south of line between twps. 4 and 5 S. and north of boundary line between this Territory and the State of Indiana. *Terr. Laws,* II: 737. Organized same year. p. 744. 1831, that part of Cass lying east of St. Joseph R. attached to St. Joseph. *Laws* 1831:39.

CHARLEVOIX—1840, set off as Keskkauko: lying in twps. 33, 34, 35, 36 N. and west of line between ranges 3 and 4 W.

Digitized by Google

Laws 1840:199. 1843, name changed to Charlevoix. *M. H. C.*, I:213. 1853, attached to Emmet. *Laws* 1853: 15. 1869, organized with slightly different boundaries. *Laws* 1869, III:1091. 1895, certain townships set off from Charlevoix and attached to Emmet. *Local Acts* 1895:484.

CHEBOYGAN—1840, set off: lying north of line between twps. 36 and 37 N. and east of line between ranges 4 and 5 W. *Laws* 1840:199. 1853, organized with Wyandot into one county. *Laws* 1853:19. See Wyandot.

CHEONOQUET—See Montmorency.

CHIPPEWA—1826, set off extending to the Mississippi R. *Terr. Laws*, II:295. 1843, much reduced in size: beginning at a point on the line between ranges 12 and 13 W. where such line is intersected by the north boundary of twp. 45 N.; thence north to Lake Superior; thence east and south along margin of said lake and the west bank of St. Mary's R. to Lake Huron; thence west to the point in said lake south of the line between ranges 2 and 3 E; thence north and west along the boundary line of Michilimackinac Co. to the place of beginning; together with the islands in St. Mary's R., including Drummond's and Sugar Islands. *Laws* 1843: 201. This county was organized by the first act, 1826, to take effect in 1827.

CLARE—1840, set off as Kaykakee: lying in twps. 17, 18, 19, 20 N. R. 3, 4, 5, 6, W. *Laws* 1840:197. Attached to Saginaw, p. 200. 1843, name changed to Clare. *M. H. C.*, I:213. 1858, attached to Midland. *Laws* 1858: 16. 1869, part of western townships attached to Mecosta. *Laws* 1869, II:621. 1871, organized. *Laws* 1871, III: 59.

CLINTON—1831, set off: lying west of the principal meridian and east of the line between ranges 4 and 5 W; south of the line between twps. 8 and 9 N; north of the line between twps. 4 and 5 N; containing 16 townships. *Laws* 1831:13. 1837, attached to Shiawassee. *Laws* 1837:106. 1839, organized. *Laws* 1839:15. 1845, twps. 9 N. R. 2, 3, 4 W. added from Gratiot. *Laws* 1845:53. 1847, twps. 9 and 10 N. R. 1 W. and twp. 10 N. R. 3 W. added from Gratiot. *Laws* 1847:56.

CRAWFORD—1840, set off: lying in twps. 25, 26, 27, 28 N. R. 1, 2, 3, 4, W. *Laws* 1840: 198. It was set off by the name of Shawono. 1843, name changed to Crawford. *M. H. C.*, I:94. 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19. 1858, attached to Iosco. *Laws* 1858:16. 1863, attached to Antrim. *Laws* 1863:119. 1879, organized. *Laws* 1879:8.

Digitized by Google

DELTA—1843, set off to include what is now Menominee and the southern parts of Dickinson and Delta counties. *Laws* 1843: 202. 1861, organized: twps. 37, 38, 39, 40, 41 N. R. 24 W; twps. 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43 N. R. 23 W; twps. 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43 N. R. 22 W; twps. 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43 N. R. 21 W; twps. 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43 N. R. 20 W; twps. 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43 N. R. 19 W., including all of Summer I; twps. 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43 N. R. 18 W. *Laws* 1861:174. 1863, election of 1861 legalized. *Laws* 1863:14. 1861, twps. 39, 40, 41 N. R. 17 W. and twps. 40, 41 N. R. 16 W. and twps. 40, 41 N. R. 15, 14, 13 W. attached to Delta. *Laws* 1861:409. 1871, Big Summer Island, St. Martin's Island, Gull Island, and Poverty Island attached to Delta. *Laws* 1871, III:219.

DICKINSON—1891, set off and organized: twps. 41 N. R. 27 W. and twps. 39, 40, 41 N. R. 28 W. and twps. 39, 40, 41 N. R. 29 W. and twps. 39, 40, 41 N. R. 30 W. and twps. 39, 40, N. R. 31 W; . . . twps. 42, 43 N. R. 28, 29, 30 W; . . . twps. 41, 42, 43, 44 N. R. 27 W; and types. 44 N. R. 28, 29, 30 W. . . . *Public Acts* 1891:98.

EATON—1829, set off: lying north of base line and south of the line between twps. 4 and 5 N., and east of the line between ranges 6 and 7 W., and west of the line between ranges 2 and 3 W. *Terr Laws,* II:735. Attached to St. Joseph. *Terr. Laws,* II:745. 1830, attached to Kalamazoo. *Laws* 1830:32. 1837, organized. *Laws* 1837-8:9.

EMMET—1840, set off as Tonedagana: lying north of the line between twps. 36 and 37 N. and west of the line between ranges 4 and 5 W. *Laws* 1840:199. 1843, name changed to Emmet. *M. H. C.,* I:322. 1853, organized, together with twps. 37, 38, and 39 N. R. 4 W. from Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:15. 1895, see Charlevoix.

GENESEE—1835, set off: twps. 5, 6, 7, and 8 N. R. 5 and 6 E., being the eastern tier of townships in the county of Shiawassee; also twps. 6, 7, 8, and 9 N. R. 7 E., being the western tier of townships in the county of Lapeer; also twps. 9 N. R. 5 and 6 E., being the southeast corner of Saginaw. Attached to Oakland. *Terr. Laws,* III:1416. 1836, organized. *Acts* 1835-6:66. 1843, attached twps. 6, 7, 8, 9, N. R. 8 E., from Lapeer. *Laws* 1843: 189.

GLADWIN—1831, set off: lying west of the line between ranges 2 and 3 E; east of the line between ranges 2 and 3 W; south of the line between twps. 20 and 21 N. and north of the line between twps. 16 and 17 N. *Laws* 1831:14. 1840, attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1840:200. 1853, attached to

Digitized by Google

Saginaw. *Laws* 1853: 44. 1855, attached to Midland. *Laws* 1855:231. 1875, organized. *Pub. Acts* 1875:107.

GRATIOT—1831, set off: lying west of the meridian, east of the line between ranges 4 and 5 west, south of the line between twps. 12 and 13, and north of the line between twps. 8 and 9 N. *Laws* 1831: 14. 1836, attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1835-6:67. 1855, organized with the townships which had been attached to Clinton. *Laws* 1855:12. Census of 1860 includes these townships in Gratiot.

GOGEBIC—1887, organized from Ontonagon. *Local Acts* 1887:23.

GRAND TRAVERSE—1840, set off as Omeena: lying in twps. 25, 26, 27 N. R. 9, 10, 11, 12 W. and twps. 28 N. R. 9 and 10 W. and including all of the peninsula at the head of Grand Traverse Bay. *Laws* 1840:198. Remained part of Michilimackinac. 1851, all of Omeena except twps. 28, of ranges 9 and 10 W. organized into the county of Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1851:172. 1853, remainder of Omeena annexed to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853:43.

HILLSDALE—1829, set off: lying west of meridian and east of line between ranges 4 and 5 W., and south of line between ranges 4 and 5 south and north of boundary line between State of Ohio and Territory of Michigan. *Terr. Laws*, II: 736. Attached to Lenawee. p. 745. 1835, organized. *Acts* 1834-5:83.

HOUGHTON—1843, set off. *Hist. Upper Pen.*, p. 250. 1845, described as lying between the north boundary of twps. 49 N., the line between ranges 37 and 38 W. and Lake Superior, together with the islands in lake west of the county of Schoolcraft. *Laws* 1845:58. 1846, organized. *Laws* 1846: 286. 1848, reorganized. *Laws* 1848:345. 1853, twps. lying west of the line between ranges 35 and 36 W. annexed to Ontonagon. *Laws* 1853:3. 1861, twps, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, and fractional twps. 54, and 55 N. R. 36 W. and twps 47, 48, and 49 N. R. 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, and 37 W. attached. *Laws* 1861:173. 1885, boundary between Houghton and Baraga defined. *Acts* 1885:11.

HURON—1840, set off: lying north of line between twps. 14 and 15 N., east of range 8, and of the center of Saginaw Bay, and south of the line between twps. 20 and 21 N., extended to the national boundary line in Lake Huron. Attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1840:200. 1844, attached to St. Clair. *Laws* 1844:112. 1850, attached to Sanilac. *Laws*

Digitized by Google

1850:215. 1853, certain townships given temporarily to Tuscola. *Laws* 1853:113. 1859, organized. *Laws* 1859:4. 1879, Charity Islands given to Bay Co. *Laws* 1879:287.

INGHAM—1829, set off: lying north of base line and south of the line between twps. 4 and 5 N., and east of the line between ranges 2 and 3 W., and west of the line between ranges 2 and 3 E. *Terr. Laws,* II:735. Attached to Washtenaw. p. 787. 1838, organized. *Laws* 1838:221.

IONIA—1831, set off: lying west of the line between ranges 4 and 5 W; east of line between ranges 8 and 9 W; south line between twps. 8 and 9 N; and north of line between twps. 4 and 5 N. *Laws* 1831:13. 1835, attached to Kent. *Laws* 1835:65. 1837, organized. *Laws* 1837:97. 1843, twps. 9 and 10 N. R. 6 W. attached to Ionia. *Laws* 1843:200.

IOSCO—1840, set off as Kanotin: lying in twps. 21, 22, 23, 24 N. and east of line between ranges 4 and 5 E. *Laws* 1840: 197. 1843, name changed to Iosco. *M. H. C.,* I:94. 1853, attached to Cheboygan and later in the same session to Saginaw. *Laws* 1853:19 and 45. 1857, organized. *Laws* 1857:358. 1867, unorganized county of Ogemaw incorporated with Iosco. *Laws* 1867, II:222. 1875, Ogemaw detached. *Laws* 1875:654-5.

IRON—1885, set off and organized: twps. 42 N. R. 28, 29, 30 W. and twps. 43 N. R. 28, 29, 30 W. and twps. 42, 43, 44 N. R. 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37 W. and twps. 45, 46, N. R. 35, 36, 37 W. detached from Marquette, and fractional twps. 41 N. R. 31, 32, 33 W. detached from Menominee. *Pub. Acts* 1885: 32. 1891, certain townships annexed from Marquette *Pub. Acts* 1891 : 106.

ISABELLA—1831, set off: lying west of line between ranges 2 and 3 W; east of line between ranges 6 and 7 W; south of the line between twps. 16 and 17 N; and north of the line between twps. 12 and 13 N. *Laws* 1831: 15. 1840, attached to Sagniaw. *Laws* 1840:200; *Laws* 1853:44. 1855, attached to Midland. *Laws* 1855:231. 1859, organized. *Laws* 1859: 318.

ISLE ROYAL—1875, organized from Keweenaw Co. *Laws* 1875: 18. 1897, made part of Keweenaw Co. *Public Acts* 1897: 75. From 1847 to 1861 these islands had been a part of Houghton Co.when they became a part of Keweenaw. *Laws* 1847:75; *Laws* 1861: 156.

JACKSON—1829, set off: lying south of base line and north of line between twps. 4 and 5 S. and west of line between

Digitized by Google

ranges 2 and 3 E. and east of line between ranges 3 and 4 W. *Terr. Laws,* II:735. Attached to Washtenaw, p. 787. 1832, organized. *Acts of Legislative Council,* 1832:27.

KALAMAZOO—1829, set off: lying south of base line and north of line between twps. 4 and 5 S. and west of line between ranges 8 and 9 W. and east of line between ranges 12 and 13 W. Atttached to St. Joseph. *Terr. Laws,* II:736, 745. 1830, organized. *Laws* 1830:32.

KALKASKA—1840, set off as Wabassee: lying in twps. 25, 26, 27, 28 N. R. 5, 6, 7, 8 W. *Laws* 1840:198. 1843, name changed to Kalkaska. *M. H. C.,* I:324. 1853, attached to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853:43. 1863, attached to Antrim. *Laws* 1863:119. 1871, organized. *Laws* 1871, III:8-9. 1881, all that part of twp. 28 N. R. 8 W. lying west of Torch Lake and Torch River and north of Round Lake annexed to Antrim Co. *Local Acts* 1881:102.

KANOTIN—See Iosco.

KAUTAWABET—See Wexford.

KAYKAKEE—See Clare.

KENT—1831, set off: lying west of the line between ranges 8 and 9 W., east of the line between ranges 12 and 13 W., south of the line between twps. 8 and 9 N., and north of the line between twps. 4 and 5 N. *Laws* 1831:13. This had been a part of Kalamazoo. *Laws* 1830:27. 1836, organized. *Laws* 1835-6:65. 1840, that portion of the state lying in twps. 9 and 10 N. R. 9, 10, 11, 12 W. attached to Kent permanently. *Laws* 1840:196.

KESKAUKO—See Charlevoix.

KEWEENAW—1861, set off and organized: lying north of twp. 55 N. R. 31 W. and north of twp. 56 N. in ranges 32 and 33 W., including Manitou Islands of Lake Superior and Isle Royal. *Laws* 1861:156. A mistake was made in this act and was corrected to read as above in 1862. *Laws* 1862:3. See Isle Royal, 1875 and 1897.

KNOX—1790, set off: beginning at the Standing Stone Forks of the Great Miami River (Shelby O.), and down said river to the confluence with the Ohio River, thence with the Ohio R. to the small stream or rivulet above Ft. Massac (10 mi. below the mouth of the Tenn. R.), thence with the eastern boundary line of St. Clair Co. to the mouth of the Little Michilimackinac (near Pekin, Ill.), thence up the Illinois R. to the Forks or confluence of the Theokiki and Chicago (Kankakee with Chicago, Grundy Co., Ill.); thence by a line

Digitized by Google

to be drawn due north to the boundary line of the Territory of the U. S. and so far easterly upon said boundary line as that a due south line may be drawn to the place of beginning. St. Clair's Proclamation, *St. Clair Papers,* II:166.—The parenthetical insertions were found in the *Executive Journals of the Indiana Territory,* Ind. Historical Society *Collection,* III:98. Knox included nearly all of what is now Michigan.

LAKE—1840, set off as Aishcum: lying in twps. 17, 18, 19, 20 N. R. 11, 12, 13, 14 W. *Laws* 1840: 196. Attached to Ottawa. *Laws* 1840:200. 1843, name changed to Lake. *M. H. C.,* I:94. 1851, attached to Oceana. *Laws* 1851: 150. 1855, attached to Mason. *Laws* 1855:424. 1857, attached to Newaygo. *Laws* 1857: 463. 1867, twps. 17, 18, 19, 20 N. R. 11 W. attached to Mecosta. *Laws* 1867, II:925. 1869, twps. 17, 18, 19, 20 N. R. 11, 12 W. attached to Osceola Co. *Laws* 1869, II:605. 1871, organized as originally set off. *Laws* 1871, III:71.

LAPEER—1822, set off: lying within limits, beginning at the northwest corner of St. Clair Co., and running thence west to the line between ranges 6 and 7 E., thence south to the line between twps. 5 and 6 N., thence east to the line between ranges 12 and 13 E., thence north to the place of beginning. *Laws of Terr.* I: 333. Attached to Oakland by same. 1833, organized. *Laws* Extra Sess. 1834-5:54. 1836, twps. lying north of Lapeer attached. *Laws* 1835-6: 67. 1845, small territory given to Tuscola. *Laws* 1845:49. 1855, other territory given to Tuscola. *Laws* 1855:313.

LEELANAU—1840, set off: lying west of the county of Omeena and of Grand Traverse Bay, including the Manitou Is. west of said bay. *Laws* 1840:198. Left a part of Michilimackinac. 1853, attached to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853: 43. 1863, all that part of Leelanau lying north of south line of twp. 28 N. organized. See Benzie for remaining twps. *Laws* 1863:56.

LENAWEE—1822, set off: lying within limits, beginning on principal meridian where line between twps. 4 and 5 S. intersects same; thence south to boundary line between Territory of Michigan and State of Ohio; thence with same east to line between ranges 5 and 6 E; thence north to line between twps. 4 and 5 S; thence west to place of beginning. Attached to Monroe. *Terr. Laws,* I:335. 1826, organized. All territory to which Indian title was extinguished by the treaty of Chicago attached. *Revised Laws* 1827:591. 1829, ter-

Digitized by Google

ritory gained by treaty of Cary Mission in 1828 attached. *Terr. Laws,* II:709.

LIVINGSTON—1833, set off: lying within limits, twps. 1 and 2 N. R. 3, 4, 5, 6 E; and twp. 3 and 4 N. R. 3, 4, 5, 6 E. For the present to remain parts of Washtenaw and Shiawassee. *Terr. Laws,* III:993. 1836, organized. *Acts* 1835-6:65.

LUCE—1887, set off from Mackinac and Chippewa: lying in twps. 45 N. R. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12 W. and twps. 46, 47, 48, 49 N. R. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12 W. and fract. twps. 50 N. R. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12 W. Organized by this act. *Local Acts* 1887:84.

MACKINAC—1818, laid out as Michilimackinac: lying within limits, beginning at White Rock, on shore of Lake Huron, thence with the line of Macomb Co. to boundary between the U. S. and Canada; thence with said boundary line to the western boundary of said Territory of Michigan; thence southerly with said western boundary so far that a line drawn due west from the dividing ground between the rivers which flow into Lake Superior and those which flow south will strike the same; thence due east to said dividing ground and with same to a point due north from Sturgeon Bay; thence south to said bay; thence by the nearest line to the western boundary of said Territory as the same was established by the act of Congress, passed Jan. 11, 1805; . . . thence with same to a point due west from southwestern corner of county of Macomb; thence east to southwestern corner of Macomb; thence with the western boundary of said county to the place of beginning. Proclamation of Gov. Cass. *Terr. Laws,* I:325. Before this the territory included had been a township of Wayne. *Terr. Laws,* II:792. 1840, the law of this year creating a large number of counties attached only those north of twps. 20 N. to Michilimackinac. *Laws* 1840:200. 1843, confined to the Upper Peninsula. *Laws* 1843:201. 1887, lost the northern tier of townships by the creation of Luce Co. See Luce.

MACOMB—1818, set off and organized. *Terr. Laws,* II:796. 1822, boundaries re-stated by Gov. Cass: beginning on the boundary line between the U. S. and the province of Upper Canada, where the northern boundary of Wayne intersects the same; thence with said northern boundary west to the line between 11th and 12th ranges E; thence north to the line between twps. 5 and 6 N; thence east to the line between 3rd and 4th sec. of twp. 5 N. R. 13 E; thence south to southern boundary of said township; thence east to line between 14th and 15th ranges E; thence south to Lake St.

Digitized by Google

Clair; thence in direct line to place of beginning. Organized by this act. *Terr. Laws*, I: 332. 1832, townships at the northeast corner added. *Terr. Laws,* III:926.

MANISTEE—1840, set off. *Laws* 1840:197. 1846, separated from Mackinac and attached to Ottawa. *Laws* 1846:31. 1851, attached to Oceana. *Laws* 1851:150. 1853, attached to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853:43. 1855, organized comprising twps. 21, 22, 23, and 24 N. R. 13, 14, 15, 16 W. and fractional twps. 21 and 22 N. R. 17 W. *Laws* 1855:423.

MARQUETTE—1843, set off: embraced between line between ranges 23 and 24 W., the north boundary of twp. 41 N., the line between ranges 37 and 38 W., (and Lake Superior). Attached to Chippewa. *Laws* 1843:202. 1845, north line of county brought south to north line of twps. 49 N. *Laws* 1845:58. 1846, attached to Houghton. *Laws* 1846:286. 1851, organized. *Laws* 1851:142. Election held under this act was legalized by the next legislature. *Laws* 1853:4. 1861, twps. on the northeast side between Marquette and the lake on the north attached to the county. *Laws* 1861 : 556. 1873, twp. 41 N. R. 32 W. added. *Laws* 1873, III:85. 1875, row of twps. on the east side attached. *Local Acts* 1875:233. 1891, twp. 45, 46 N. R. 31, 32, 33, 34 W. given to Iron. *Laws* 1891 (Public Acts) : 106.

MANITOU—1855, set off: the several islands known as the Beaver group, the North and South Fox Islands, the North and South Manitou Islands, from Emmet. Organized. *Laws* 1855:197. 1895, above act repealed and the islands given to Leelanaw and Charlevoix counties. *Local Acts* 1895:132.

MASON—1840, set off as Notipekago: lying in twps. 17, 18, 19, and 20 N., and west of line between ranges 14 and 15 W. *Laws* 1840:196. Attached to Ottawa. p. 200. 1843, name changed to Mason. *M. H. C.,* I:303. 1851, attached to Oceana. *Laws* 1851: 150. *Laws* 1850:169. 1855, organized. *Laws* 1855:424.

MECOSTA—1840, set off: lying in twps. 13, 14, 15, and 16 N. R. 7, 8, 9, and 10 W., together with twps. 11, and 12 N. R. 9, 10 W. *Laws* 1840: 196. Attached to Kent. p. 20. 1857, attached to Newaygo. *Laws* 1857: 463. Township of Pierson given to Montcalm. *Laws* 1857: 468. 1859, organized. *Laws* 1859:257. Township of Pierson given permanently to Montcalm. p. 261.

MEEGISEE—See Antrim.

Digitized by Google

MENOMINEE—1863, organized. *Laws* 1863:297. Set off as Bleeker by act of 1861: lying in twps. 31 N. R. 27 W; 32 N. R. 26, 27, 28 W; 33 N. R. 26, 27, 28 W; 34 N. R. 25, 26, 27, 28, 29 W; 35 N. R. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29 W; 36 N. R. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28 W; 37 N. R. 25, 26, 27, 28 W; 38 N. R. 25, 26, 27, 28, 29 W; 39 N. R. 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30 W; 40 N. R. 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31 W; 41 N. R. 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31 W. *Laws* 1861:448. 1873, twp. 41 N. R. 31 W. attached. *Laws* 1873, III:85. 1875, fractional twp. 41 N. R. 33 W. annexed. *Local Acts* 1875:21. 1877, boundaries re-defined. *Acts* 1877: 59.

MIDLAND—1831, set off: lying within limits, beginning where the line between twps. 12 and 13 N. intersects the line between ranges 2 and 3 E; thence north to the line between twps. 16 and 17 N; thence east to the shore of Saginaw Bay; thence south along the shore of said bay to the line between twps. 14 and 15 N; thence west to the line between ranges 2 and 3 E; thence south to the line between twps. 12 and 13 N; thence to the place of beginning. *Laws* 1831:14. The glaring error in this law was not corrected until 1873. 1836, attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1835-6:67; *Laws* 1840:20. 1850, law passed for organization. *Laws* 1850:182. Nothing was done toward organization until 1855 when a law was passed providing for the first election. *Laws* 1855:48. 1873, correction of error of 1831. *Acts* 1873, III:85.

MIKENAUK—See Roscommon.

MISSAUKEE—1840, set off: lying in twps. 21, 22, 23, 24 N. R. 5, 6, 7, 8 W. *Laws* 1840:197. 1853, attached to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853: 43. 1869, attached to Wexford. *Laws* 1869, III: 1085. 1871, organized. *Acts* 1871, III:44.

MONROE—1817, set off by proclamation of Cass. *Terr. Laws,* II: 792. 1822, boundary more clearly defined by Cass; beginning at the boundary line between U. S. and the Province of Upper Canada, where the southern boundary of the county of Wayne intersects the same, thence with said southern boundary west to the mouth of the river Huron of Lake Erie; thence with said boundary, keeping to the middle of the river, to the line between the twps. 4 and 5 S; thence west to the line between ranges 5 and 6 E; thence south to the line between the Territory of Michigan and the State of Ohio; thence with said line to the boundary between the U. S. and the Province of Upper Canada; thence with the boundary line to the place of beginning. *Terr. Laws,* I:331.

Digitized by Google

All country to which Indian title was extinguished by the treaty of Chicago attached. *Terr. Laws* I: 335.

MONTCALM—1831, set off: lying west of line between ranges 4 and 5 W; east of line between ranges 8 and 9 W; south of line between twps. 12 and 13 N; north of the line between twps. 8 and 9 N. *Laws* 1831:14. 1840, attached to Ionia. *Laws* 1840: 200; *Laws* 1845: 51. 1850, organized. *Laws* 1850:114. 1859, township Pierson, containing four Congressional townships, annexed from Mecosta. *Laws* 1859: 261.

MONTMORENCY—1840, set off as Cheonoquet: lying in twps. 29, 30, 31, 32 N. R. 1, 2, 3, 4 E. *Laws* 1840:199. 1843, name changed to Montmorency. *M. H. C.,* I: 94. 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19. 1857, attached to Alpena. *Laws* 1857:162; *Laws* 1858:16. 1881, organized. *Pub. Acts* 1881:160.

MUSKEGON—1859, set off and organized: lying in twps. 9, 10, 11, 12 N. R. 15, 16, 17 and fract. twps. lying west thereof to Lake Michigan, and twp. 10 N. R. 13 W., and twps. 9 and 10 N. R. 14 W. *Acts* 1859: 94.

NEGWEGON—See Alcona.

NEWAYGO—1840, set off lying in twps. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16 N. R. 11, 12, 13, 14 W. *Laws* 1840:196. Attached to Kent. *Laws* 1840:200. 1851, attached to Oceana. *Laws* 1851 : 150. 1851, organized. *Laws* 1851: 305.

NOTIPEKAGO—See Mason.

OAKLAND—1819, set off by proclamation of Gov. Cass. *Terr. Laws,* II:798. 1821, attached all country released by Indian treaty of Saginaw, 1819. *Terr. Laws,* II: 802. 1820, organized. *Acts of Legislative Commission,* 1825:127. 1822, boundaries re-stated by Cass: lying within line beginning on the base line between ranges 11 and 12 E. and running thence west to the line between ranges 6 and 7 E; thence north to the line between twps. 5 and 6 N; thence east to line between ranges 11 and 12 E; thence south to the place of beginning. *Terr. Laws,* I: 332.

OCEANA—1831, set off in territory which is now a part of Kent, Montcalm, Newaygo, and Muskegon counties, entirely different from the present location. *Laws* 1831 : 14. 1840, set off: lying in twps. 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16 N. and west of line between ranges 14 and 15 W., to the boundary of the State in Lake Michigan. *Laws* 1840: 196. Attached to

Digitized by Google

Ottawa, p. 200. 1855, organized. *Laws* 1855:424. See *Laws* 1851:150.

OGEMAW—1840, set off: lying in twps. 21, 22, 23, 24 N. R. 1, 2, 3, 4 W. *Laws* 1840:197. This is evidently an error as it should read "range east" instead of "west." 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19. 1858, attached to Iosco. *Laws* 1858:16; *Laws* 1861:121. 1867, incorporated with Iosco. *Laws* 1867: 222. 1873, the location of the county is here correctly stated and attached to Iosco. *Laws* 1873, III: 85. 1875, organized separately. *Acts* 1875:159.

OKKUDDO—See Otsego.

ONTONAGON—1843, set off: lying within line between ranges 37 and 38 W., the north boundry of twp. 41 N., the Montreal River and Lake Superior, together with Isle Royal of Lake Superior. *Laws* 1843:202. Attached to Chippewa. p. 203. 1845, boundaries re-stated omitting Isle Royal. *Laws* 1845: 58. 1846, attached to Houghton. *Laws* 1846:286. 1848, act of organization passed. *Laws* 1848:345. 1853, election of 1852 legalized. *Laws* 1853:3: *Hist. of Upper Pen.,* 513. Western two tiers of twps. of Houghton Co. attached to Ontonagon. *Laws* 1853: 3.

OSCEOLA—1840, set off as Unwattin: lying in twps. 17, 18, 19, 20 N. R. 7, 8, 9, 10 W. *Laws* 1840:197. Attached to Ottawa. p. 200. 1843, name changed to Osceola. *M. H. C.,* I: 324. 1855, attached to Mason. *Laws* 1855: 424. 1857, attached to Newago. *Laws* 1857:463. 1859, attached to Mecosta. *Laws* 1859: 257. 1869, organized. *Laws* 1869, II:487.

OSCODA—1840, set off: lying in twps. 25, 26, 27, 28 N. R. 1, 2, 3, 4 E. *Laws* 1840: 198. 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19. 1857, attached to Alpena. *Laws* 1857:162. 1858, attached to Iosco. *Laws* 1858: 16. 1869, attached to Alcona "from Alpena." *Laws* 1869, II: 336. 1881, detached from Alcona and organized. *Acts* 1881:16.

OTSEGO—1840, set off as Okkudo: lying in twps. 29, 30, 31, 32 N. R. 1, 2, 3, 4 W. *Laws* 1840:199. 1843, name changed to Otsego. *M. H. C.,* I: 94. 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19. 1858, attached to Alpena. *Laws* 1858:16. 1863, attached to Antrim. *Laws* 1863:119. 1875, organized, but leaving twp. 32 N. R. 4 W. in Antrim. *Laws* 1875:28.

OTTAWA—1831, set off: lying west of the line between ranges 12 and 13 W. and east of the shore of Lake Michigan; south

Digitized by Google

of the line between twps. 10 and 11 N; north of the line between twps. 4 and 5 N. *Laws* 1831:13. 1835, attached to Kent. *Acts* 1835-6:65. 1845, twp. 11 N. R. 14 W. attached. *Laws* 1845: 31. 1837, organized. *Laws* 1837-8: 9.

PRESQUE ISLE—1840, set off: lying north of the line between twps. 32 and 33 N. and east of the line between ranges 1 and 2 E. *Laws* 1840:199. 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19. 1857, portion lying east of R. 4 E. attached to Alpena. *Laws* 1857:162. 1858, attached to Alpena. *Laws* 1858:16. 1871, organized. *Laws* 1871, III:129. 1873, twp. 37 N. R. 2 E. attached to Presque Isle. *Laws* 1873, III: 85. 1875, act of organization. *Acts* 1875: 118.

ROSCOMMON—1840, set off as Mikenauk: lying in twps. 21, 22, 23, 24 N. R. 1, 2, 3, 4 W. *Laws* 1840:197. 1843, name changed to Roscommon. *M. H. C.*, I:94. 1853, attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853: 19. 1858, attached to Midland. *Laws* 1858:16; *Laws* 1873, III:85. 1875, organized. *Laws* 1875:34.

SAGINAW—1822, set off by proclamation of Gov. Cass. Attached to Oakland. *Terr. Laws,* I: 334. 1831, boundaries stated: beginning at a point where the line between ranges 6 and 7 E. intersects the line between twps. 8 and 9 N; thence west to the meridian; thence north on meridian line to line between twps. 12 and 13 N; thence east to line between ranges 2 and 3 E; thence north to line between twps. 14 and 15 N; thence east to line between ranges 6 and 7 E; thence south to the place of beginning. *Laws* 1831:14. 1835, organized. *Acts* Extra Sess. 1834-5:78. 1881, line between Saginaw and Bay redrawn. *Local Acts* 1881: 343.

SANILAC—1822, set off by proclamation of Gov. Cass. Attached to Oakland. *Terr. Laws,* I:333. 1827, attached to St. Clair. *Rev. Laws* 1827:593. 1836, attached to Lapeer. *Acts* 1835-6:67. 1840, attached to St. Clair. *Laws* 1840: 112. 1849, organized, with part of St. Clair annexed. *Laws* 1848: 344.

SCHOOLCRAFT—1843, set off. *Laws* 1843:202. Attached to Chippewa. p. 203. 1846, attached to Houghton. *Laws* 1846:286. 1848, boundaries stated: beginning at a point in Lake Superior north of the line between ranges 12 and 13 W., thence west along the margin of said lake to the line between ranges 23 and 24 W., thence south along said line to the north boundary of twp. 41, thence east to the line between ranges 12 and 13 W., together with Grand

Digitized by Google

Island in Lake Superior. *Laws* 1848: 346. 1851, attached to Marquette. *Laws* 1851:142. 1862, townships in the southeast on Lake Michigan added. *Laws* 1862: 53. 1871, organized. *Laws* 1871, III: 99. 1875, row of townships on the west attached to Marquette. *Local Acts* 1875: 233.

SHIAWASSEE—1822, set off: beginning on the principal meridian where line between twps. 8 and 9 N. intersects same, and running thence south to line between twps. 2 and 3 N; thence east to line between ranges 6 and 7 E; thence north to line between twps. 8 and 9 N; thence west to place of beginning. *Terr. Laws,* I: 334. Attached to Oakland. 1836, attached to Genesee. *Acts* 1835-6:66. 1837, organized. *Laws* 1837:106.

ST. CLAIR—1820, set off. *Terr. Laws,* II: 800. 1821, organized. *Terr. Laws,* 1820: 446. 1822, boundaries restated: beginning on the boundary line between the U. S. and Upper Canada where the boundaries of the counties of Wayne and Macomb intersect same; thence with said boundary line between U. S. and Upper Canada to a point in Lake Huron east from the eastern termination of line between sec. 13 and 24, 14 and 23, 15 and 22, 16 and 21, 17 and 20, 18 and 19, in twp. 10 N; thence from said point west to shore of Lake Huron; thence with said line between said sections to line between ranges 12 and 13 E; thence with said line south to northern boundary of county of Macomb; thence with said northern boundary east to line between sec. 3 and 4 in twp. 5 N. R. 13 E; thence south to line between twp. 4 and 5 in last mentioned range; thence east to line between range 14 and 15 E; thence south to Lake St. Clair; thence in direct line to place of beginning. *Terr. Laws* I: 332.

ST. JOSEPH—1829, set off: country lying west of line between ranges 8 and 9 W, and east of line between ranges 12 and 13 W. and south of line between twp. 4 and 5 S., and north of boundary line between this Territory and the State of Indiana. *Terr. Laws* II: 736. Organized same year. p. 744.

TONEDAGANA—See Emmet.

TUSCOLA—1840, set off: lying in north ½ of twp. 10 N. and in twps. 11, 12, 13, 14 N. R. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11 E. and in fractional twp. 15 N. R. 7 and 8 E. Attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1840: 200. 1845, certain sections in northern part of Lapeer attached to Tuscola. *Laws* 1845:49. 1850, organized. *Laws*

Digitized by Google

1850: 45. 1855, boundary between Tuscola and Lapeer defined. *Laws* 1855: 313.

UNWATTIN—See Osceola.

VAN BUREN—1829, set off: beginning where line between ranges 12 and 13 W. intersects the base line; thence west on base line to the shore of Lake Michigan; thence southerly along the shore of said lake to intersection of line between twps. 2 and 3 S; thence east between said twps. to intersection of line between ranges 16 and 17 W; thence south on line between said ranges to intersection of line between twps 4 and 5 S; thence east on line between said twps. to intersection of line between ranges 12 and 13 W; thence north on line between said ranges to base line. *Terr. Laws* II:736. Attached to Cass. p. 745. 1834, attached to Cass. *Laws* 1834: 169. 1837, organized. *Laws* 1837: 97.

WABASSEE—See Kalkaska.

WASHTENAW—1822, set off and attached to Wayne. *Terr. Laws,* I:334. 1826, organized separately. *Rev. Laws* 1827: 591. 1829, boundaries defined: beginning on the base line, where the line between ranges 7 and 8 E. crosses the base line; thence west along base line to intersection of line between ranges 6 and 7 E; thence north between ranges 6 and 7 E. to intersection of line between twps. 2 and 3 N; thence west between said twps. 2 and 3 N. to the intersection of line between ranges 2 and 3 E; thence south on line between said ranges 2 and 3 E. to intersection of line between twps. 4 and 5 S; thence east on line between said twps. to intersection of line between ranges 7 and 8 E; thence on line between said ranges to base line. *Terr. Laws,* II:735.

WAYNE—1796, set off, including the northwestern part of Ohio and the southeastern part of Michigan. *Rev. Statutes of Ohio,* 1890, II: 2036. 1803, set off by proclamation of Gov. Harrison, of Indiana, to include most of what is now Michigan and the eastern shore of Illinois and Wisconsin. *Executive Journals of Indiana,* Ind. Hist. Society *Col.,* III:114. 1822, re-stated by Gov. Cass: beginning in Lage St. Clair, on boundary line between U. S. and Prov. of Upper Canada, at a point due east from intersection of base line with Lake St. Clair, and running thence west to line between ranges 7 and 8 E; thence with said line south to line between twps. 4 and 5 S; thence with said line . . . to middle of the river Huron of Lake Erie; thence with said river . . . to its

Digitized by Google

mouth; thence east to boundary line between U. S. and Upper Canada; thence with said boundary line to the place of beginning. *Terr. Laws,* I:331.

WEXFORD—1840, set off as Kautawabet: lying in twps. 21, 22, 23, 24 N. R. 9, 10, 11, 12 W. *Laws* 1840:197. 1843, name changed to Wexford. *M. H. C.,* I: 212. 1853, attached to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853: 43. 1855, attached to Manistee *Laws* 1855:423. 1869, organized. *Laws* 1869, III:1085. 1873, township Cleon detached from Manistee and attached to Wexford. *Laws* 1873, III: 80. *Local Acts* 1875: 726. 1881, township Cleon re-attached to Manistee. *Local Acts* 1881:120.

WYANDOT—1840, set off: lying in towns 33, 34, 35, 36 N. R. 1 E. and 1, 2, 3 W. *Laws* 1840:199. 1853, organized as part of Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853:19.

Digitized by Google

BIBLIOGRAPHY

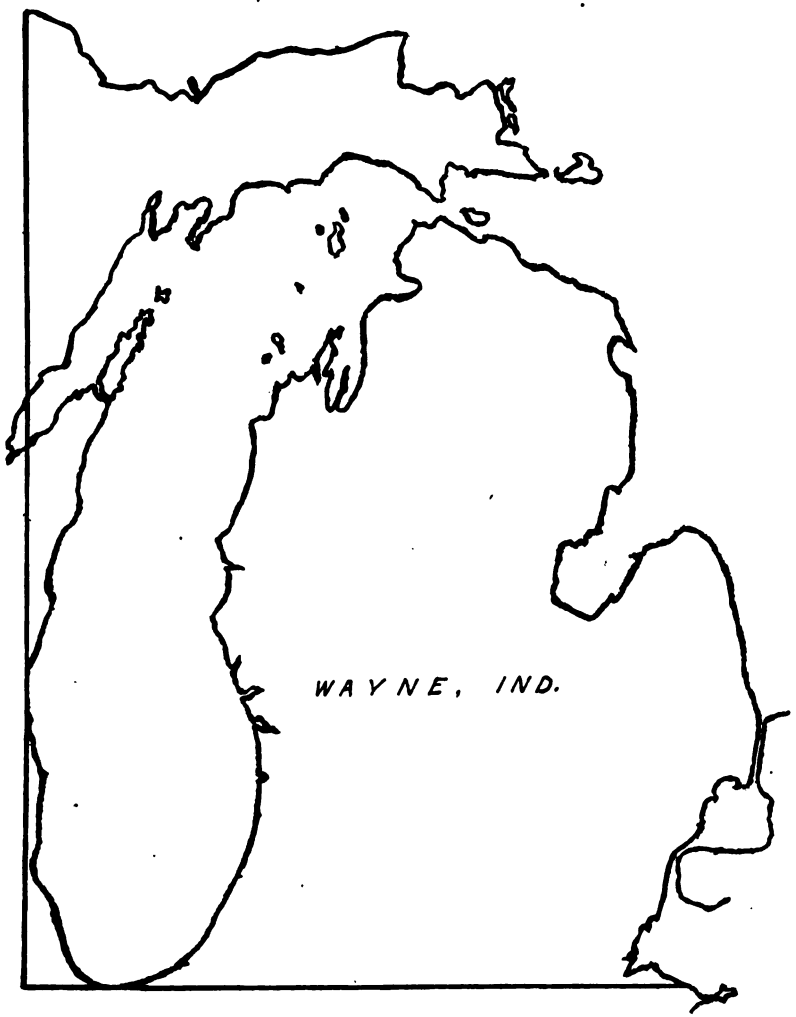
Appeal of the Convention of Ohio to the People of the United States. Published by the State, 1835.
Appeal of the Michigan Convention to the People of the United States. Published by the State, 1835.
Census of Michigan, 1904.
Executive Journal of Indiana Territory, Indiana Historical Society, *Publications,* Vol. III.
Laws of the Territory Northwest of the Ohio.
Laws of Michigan, 1805 to 1917.
St. Clair Papers.
Schoolcraft Papers, *Mich. Pioneer and Historical Collections,* Vols. 36 and 37. The Volumes of this Collection are referred to as *M. H. C.*
Statutes at Large, (Virginia, Henning ed.).
Statutes of Ohio (Revised), 1890.
United States Census.
U. S. Geological Survey, *Reports.*
U. S. Statutes at Large.

Blois, J. T. *Gazetteer of Michigan,* 1838.
Campbell, J. V. *Outlines of the Political History of Michigan,* 1876.
Chase, L. A. "Transportation Between the East and West," in *Michigan Historical Collections,* Vol. 38.
Cooley, T. M. *History of Michigan,* 1886.
Dunn, J. R., Jr. *History of Indiana.*
Felch, Alpheus. "The Indians of Michigan and the Cession of their Lands to the United States," in *Michigan Historical Collections,* Vol. 26.
Ferris, Jacob. *The States and Territories of the Great West.*
Fite, E. D. *Social and Industrial Conditions in the North During the Civil War.*
Fuller, G. N. "Introduction to the Settlement of Michigan," in *Michigan Historical Collections,* Vol. 38.
Hinsdale, B. A. *Old Northwest.*
History of the Upper Penninsula. Chicago, 1883.
Hubbard, Bela. *Memorials of Half a Century.*
Jenks, W. L. "History and Meaning of County Names," in *Michigan Historical Collections,* Vol. 38.

Digitized by Google

Lanman, J. H. *History of Michigan,* 1839.
Larzelere, C. S. "Boundaries of Michigan," in *Michigan Historical Collections,* Vol. 30.
Michigan and Its Resources. Pub. by the State, 1893.
Miller, G. J. "Some Geographical influences in the Settlement of Michigan," in *Bulletin* Amer. Geol. Soc., Vol. 45, No. 5, 1913.
Paxon, F. L. "Railroads of the Old Northwest Before the Civil War," in *Wisconsin Academy of Sciences,* Oct., 1912.
State of Michigan, Its History, Resources, Industries. Pub. by the State.
Turner, F. G. *Gazeteer of the St. Joseph Valley.*
Williams, R. D. *The Hon. Peter White,* 1907.

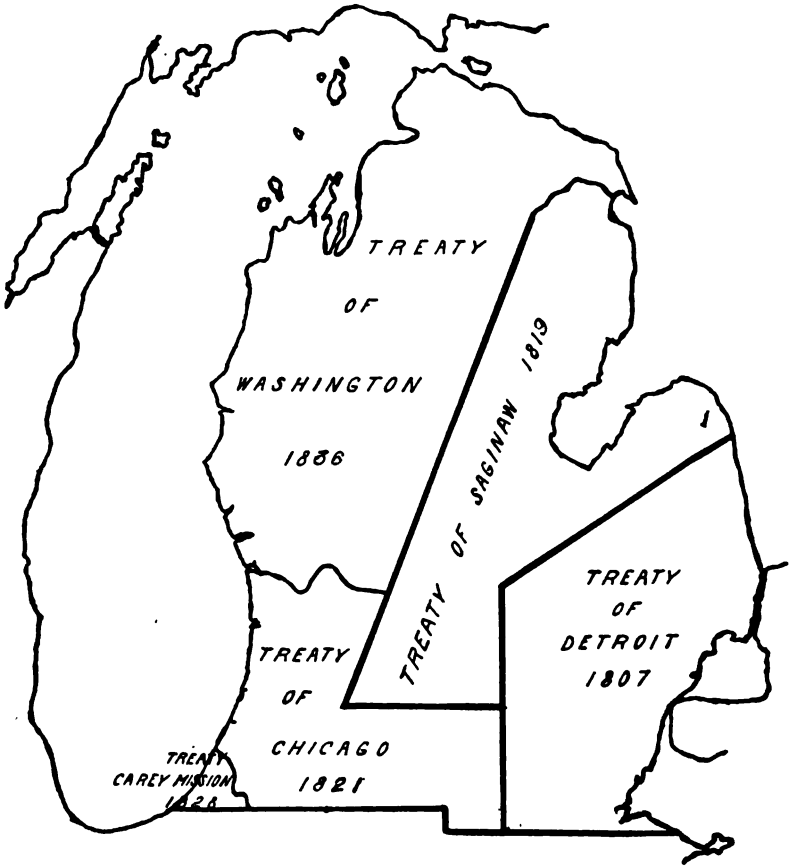
Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1803

Wayne, as set off by Gov. Harrison, of Indiana. Indiana Hist. Soc. Collection, III, p. 114.

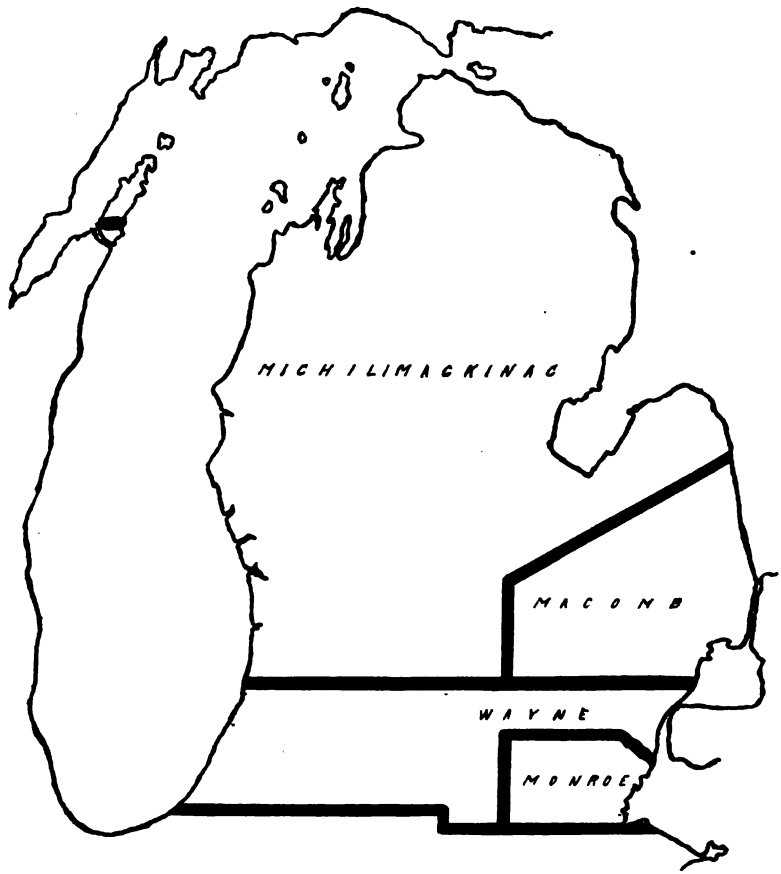
Digitized by Google



INDIAN LAND CESSIONS
FELCH, M.H.C. 26:274.

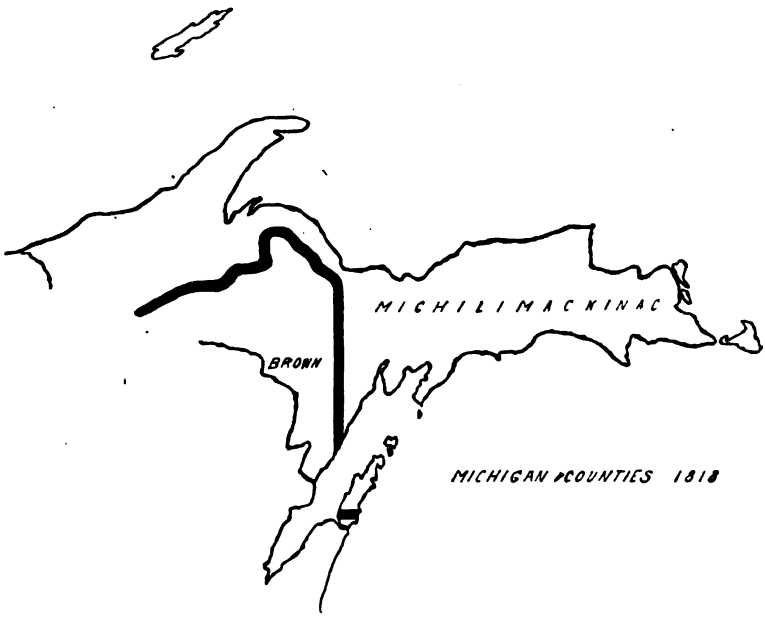
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

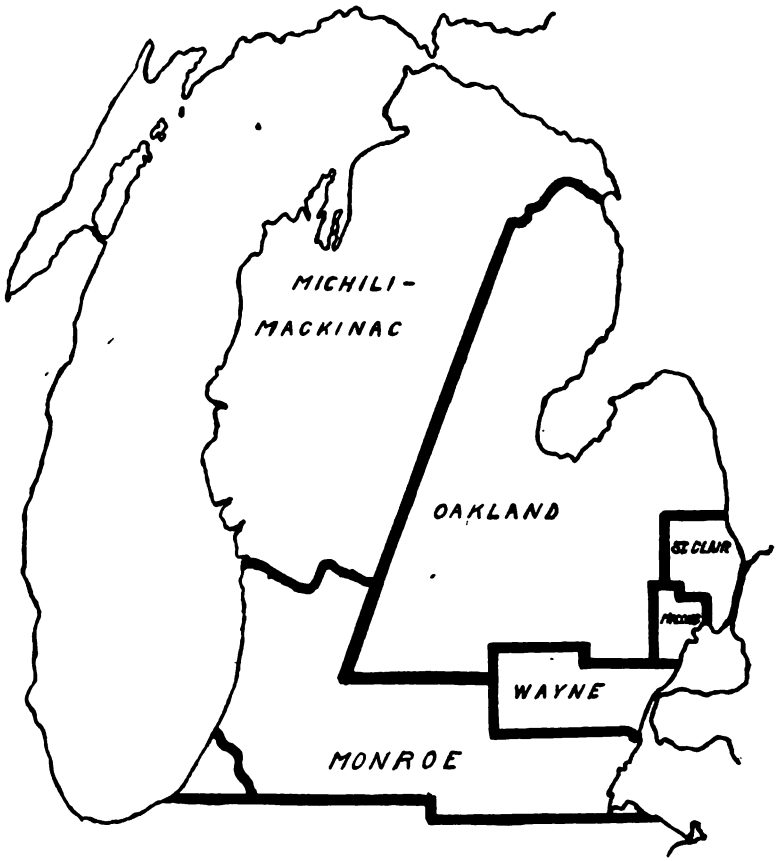


MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1818

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google



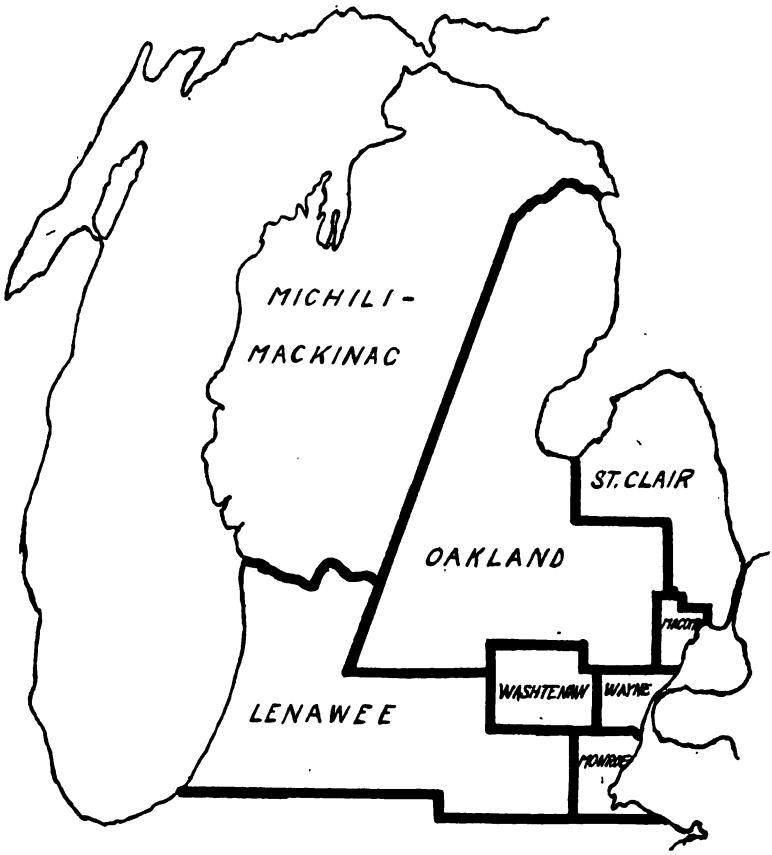
MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1822

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1822

To Monroe, in 1822, was attached all the lands ceded by the Indian treaty of Chicago (1821). *Terr. Laws,* I, 335.

Oakland was set off by the proclamation of Gov. Cass, in 1819, with the addition of the lands acquired under the Indian treaty of Saginaw of that year. *Terr. Laws,* II, 802.

Digitized by Google



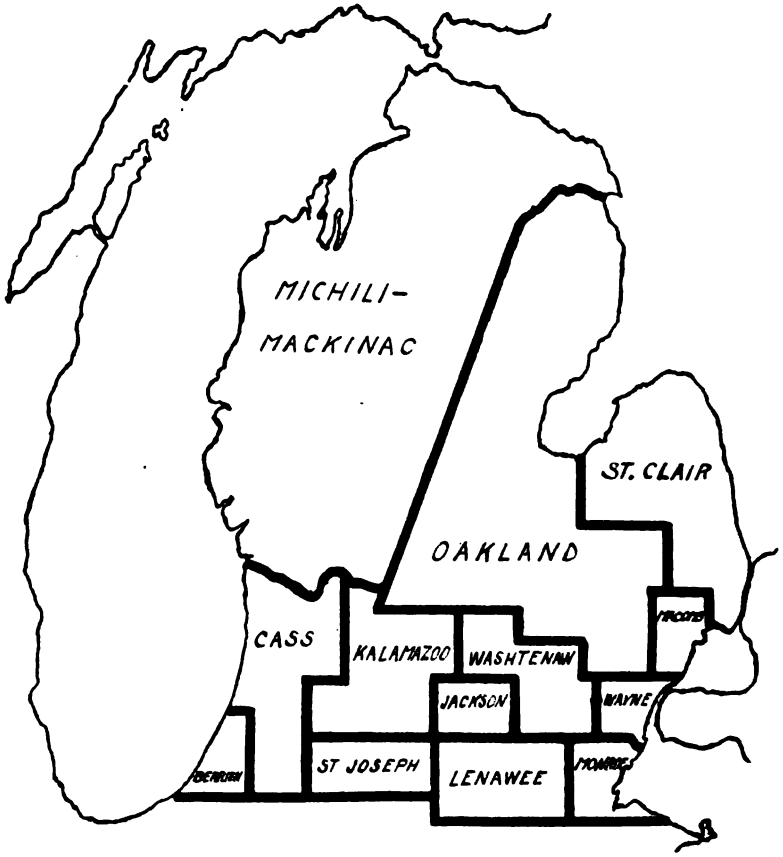
MICHIGN COUNTIES 1828

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1828

So few changes in the county boundaries were made between 1822 and 1828 that maps for the intervening period are not necessary.

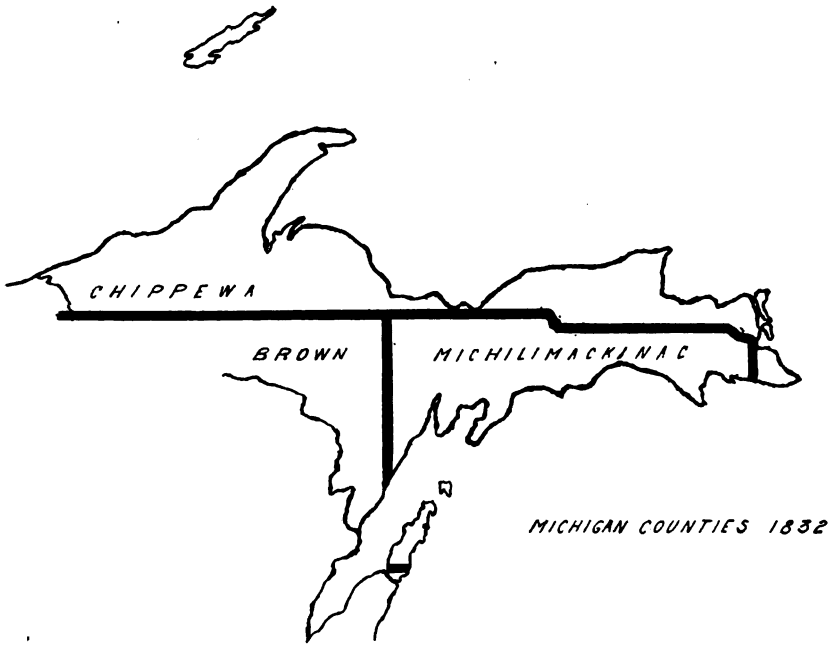
Sanilac was attached to Saint Clair in 1827. (*Laws* of 1834, p. 138). Lenawee was detached from Monroe in 1826 and the lands acquired by the treaty of Chicago attached. *Revised Laws* 1827, p. 591.

Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1832

Digitized by Google



NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1832

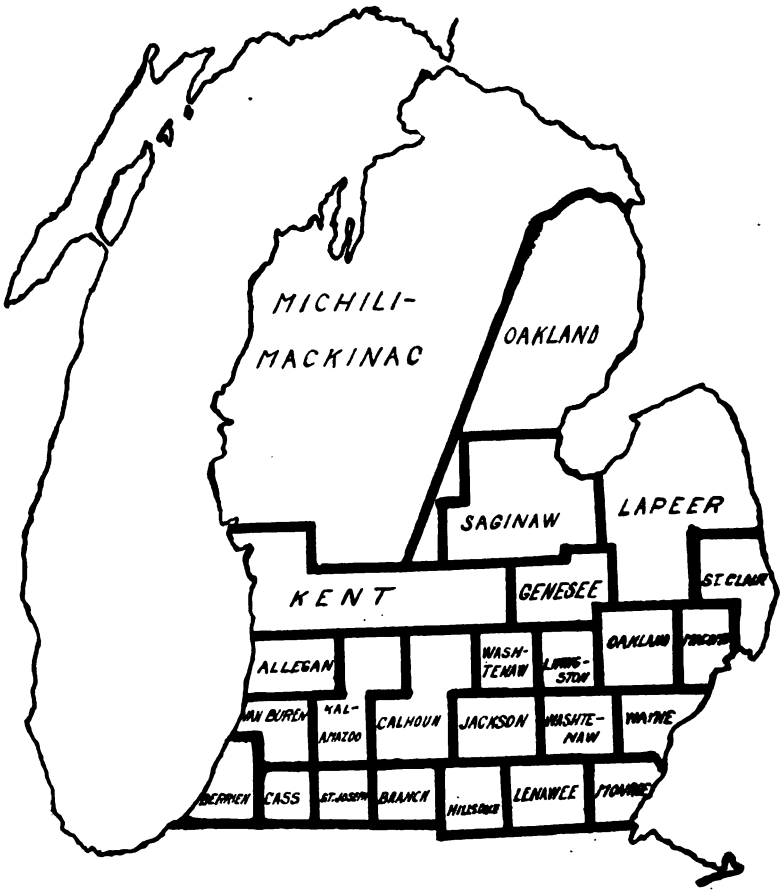
The extent of Cass County in 1832 is uncertain. In the Laws of 1829 are found these words, "VanBuren and the country lying north are attached to Cass county." (*Terr. Laws* II, 745). This taken with the later boundary of Allegan and Barry would lead to the conclusion indicated on the map.

The same difficulty is experienced in the case of Kalamazoo County. (*Laws* of 1830, p. 32, "Calhoun, Barry, Eaton and all the country lying north of township 4 north of base line and west of the principal meridian and east of the line between ranges 12 and 13 *and Lake Michigan* are attached to Kalamazoo.")

Ingham was attached to Washtenaw. *Laws* 1829, II, 787.

Branch was attached to St. Joseph. *Laws* 1829, II, 745.

Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1836

Digitized by Google

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1836

Mitchell's Map of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, and Michigan (Philadelphia, 1836) makes the southwestern boundary of Michilimackinac a northwestward line, for which no authority seems to exist.

No further disposal of the part of Oakland County which remained north and west of Saginaw could be found, so it is to be assumed that they remain attached to Oakland.

Sanilac attached to Lapeer. *Laws* 1835-6,67.

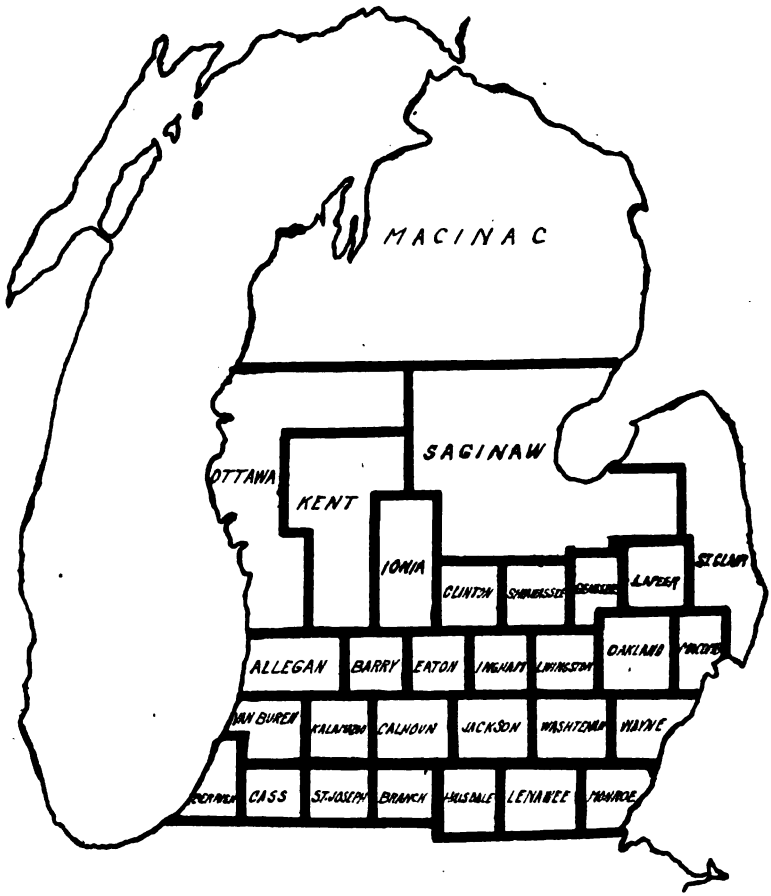
Shiawassee attached to Genesee. *Laws* 1835-6, 66.

Eaton attached to Calhoun. *Laws* Extra Sess., 1834-5, 96.

Ottawa, Ionia, Clinton attached to Kent. *Laws* 1835-6, 65.

Gratiot and Midland attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1835-6, 67.

Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1840

Digitized by Google

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1840

Sanilac attached to St. Clair. *Laws* 1840, 112, 200.

Gratiot, Tuscola, Midland, Isabella, Kaykakee (Clare), Gladwin, Arenac attached to Saginaw "for judicial purposes." *Laws* 1840, 200.

Huron was attached to Saginaw for judical purposes but to St. Clair for purposes of taxation. *Laws* 1840, 112, 200.

Mason, Lake, Oceana, Osceola attached to Ottawa. *Laws* 1840, 200.

Newaygo, Mecosta attached to Kent. *Laws* 1840, 200.

Montcalm attached to Ionia. *Laws* 1840, 200.

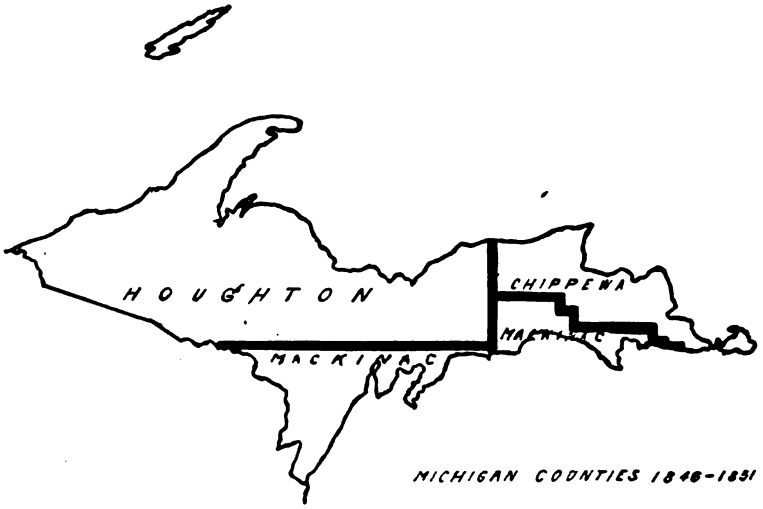
NOTES ON MICHIGAN COUNTIES IN 1844

The map of 1844 would be the same as that of 1840 except for the change in the Lapeer-Genesee boundary made by giving to Genesee the western tier of townships of Lapeer. *Laws* 1843, 189.

NOTES ON MICHIGAN COUNTIES IN 1848

The only changes in the map of 1840 necessary in 1848 are as follows: Manistee set off from Mackinac, 1846, and attached to Ottawa. (*Laws* 1846, 31). Slight change in the Lapeer-Tuscola boundary. (*Laws* 1845, 49). Three townships in the southern tier of Gratiot added to Clinton. (*Laws* 1845, 53; *Laws* 1847,56). These are shown on the map of 1852.

Digitized by Google



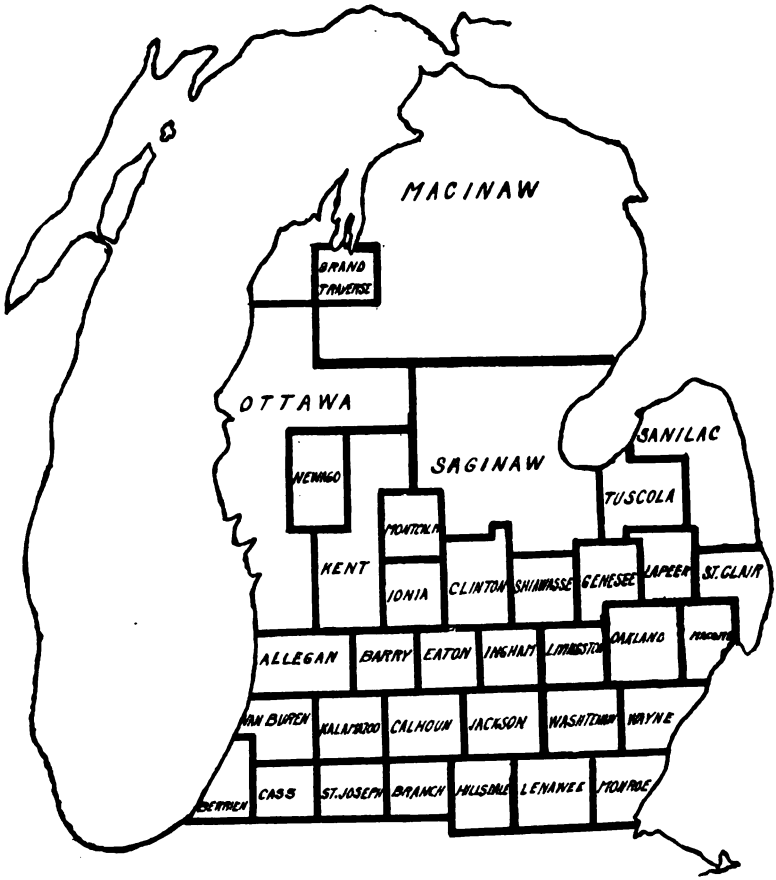
NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF UPPER PENINSULA, 1846

In 1843 Marquette was set off and attached to Chippewa. (*Laws* 1843, 202). In 1846 Marquette was attached to Houghton. *Laws* 1846, 286.

Ontonagon was set off with Isle Royal and attached to Chippewa in 1843. (*Laws* 1843, 202-3). In 1846 Ontonagon was attached to Houghton. *Laws* 1846, 286.

Delta was set off in 1843 and attached to Mackinac. *Laws* 1843, 202.

Digitized by Google



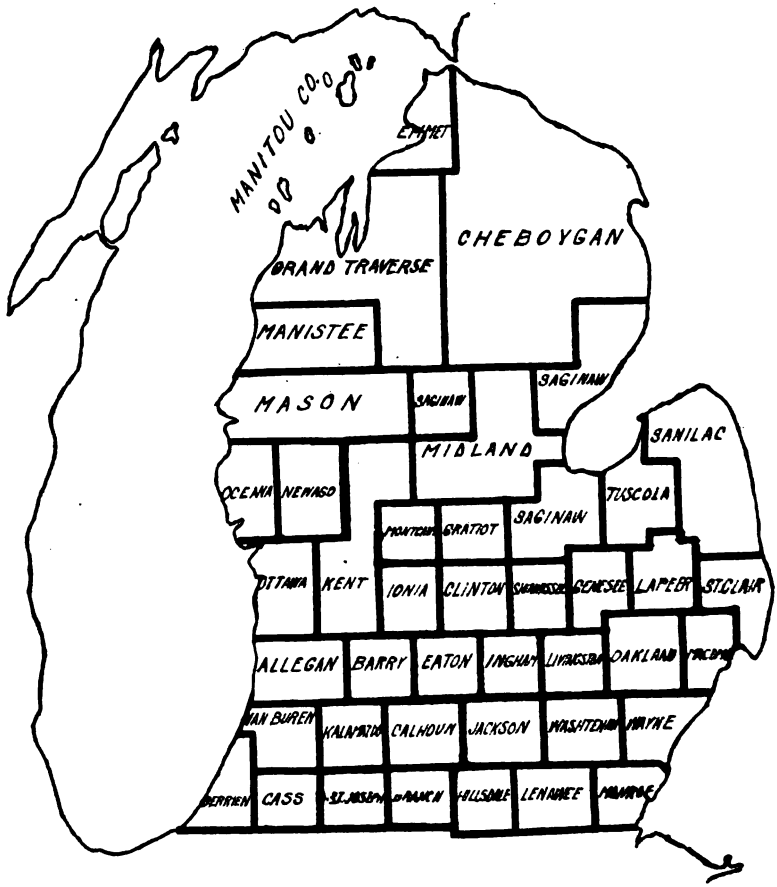
MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1852

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1852

Sanilac organized in 1849 to include a tier and one-half of townships from the northern part of St. Clair. *Laws* 1848, 344.

Leelanau remained a part of Mackinac.

Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1856

Digitized by Google

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1856

Apparently Clare, Arenac remained attached to Saginaw although detached from it.

Iosco attached to Saginaw. *Laws* 1853. 45.

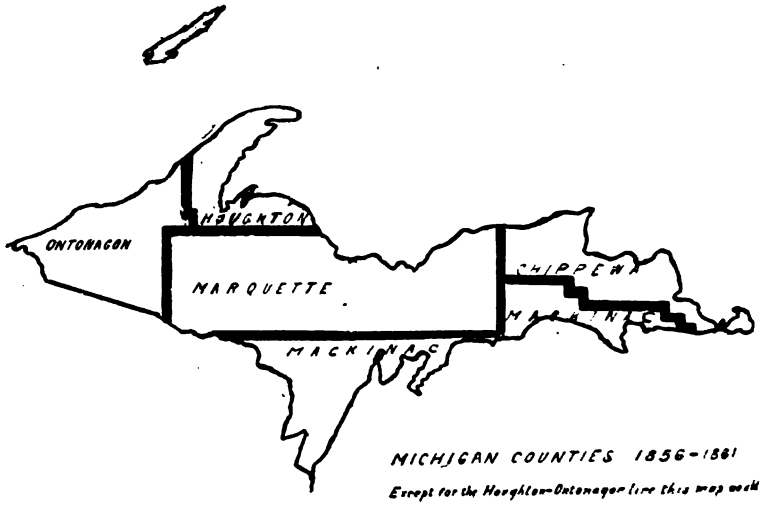
Wexford attached to Manistee. *Laws* 1855, 423.

Antrim, Leelanau, Kalkaska, Missaukee attached to Grand Traverse. *Laws* 1853, 43.

Otsego, Crawford, Roscommon, Presque Isle, Montmorency, Oscoda, Ogemaw, Alcona, Alpena attached to Cheboygan. *Laws* 1853, 19.

Gladwin and Isabella attached to Midland. *Laws* 1855, 231.

Digitized by Google

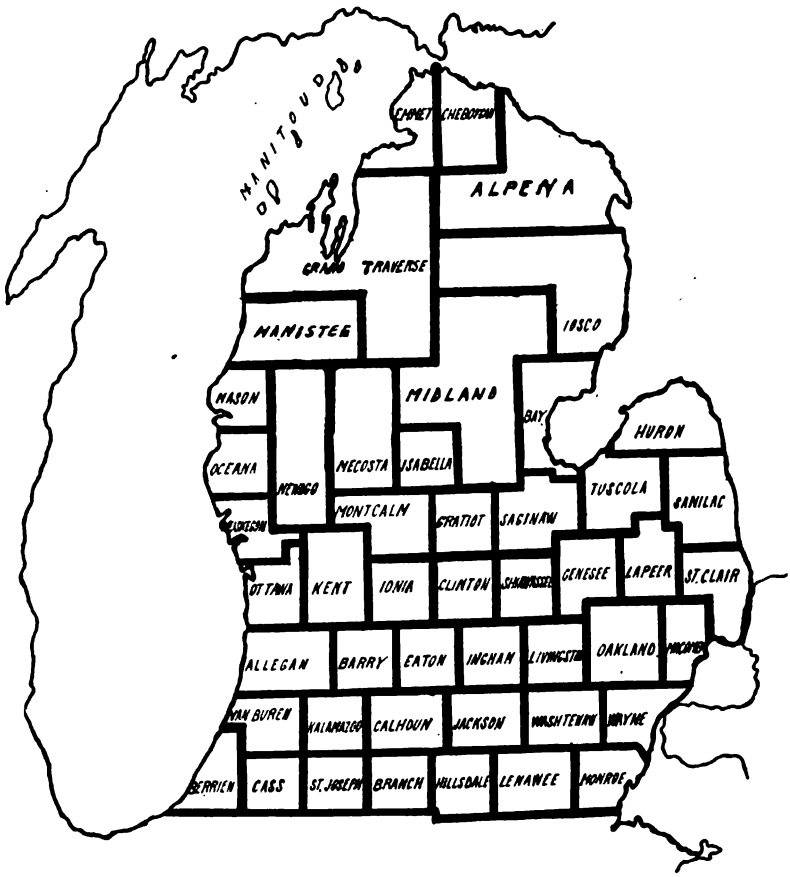


MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1836-1861

Except for the Houghton-Ontonagon line this map would be correct for 1851

Schoolcraft attached to Marquette. Laws 1851, 282

Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1860

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1860

Presque Isle, Otsego, Montmorency attached to Alpena. *Laws* 1857, 162; *Laws* 1858, 16.

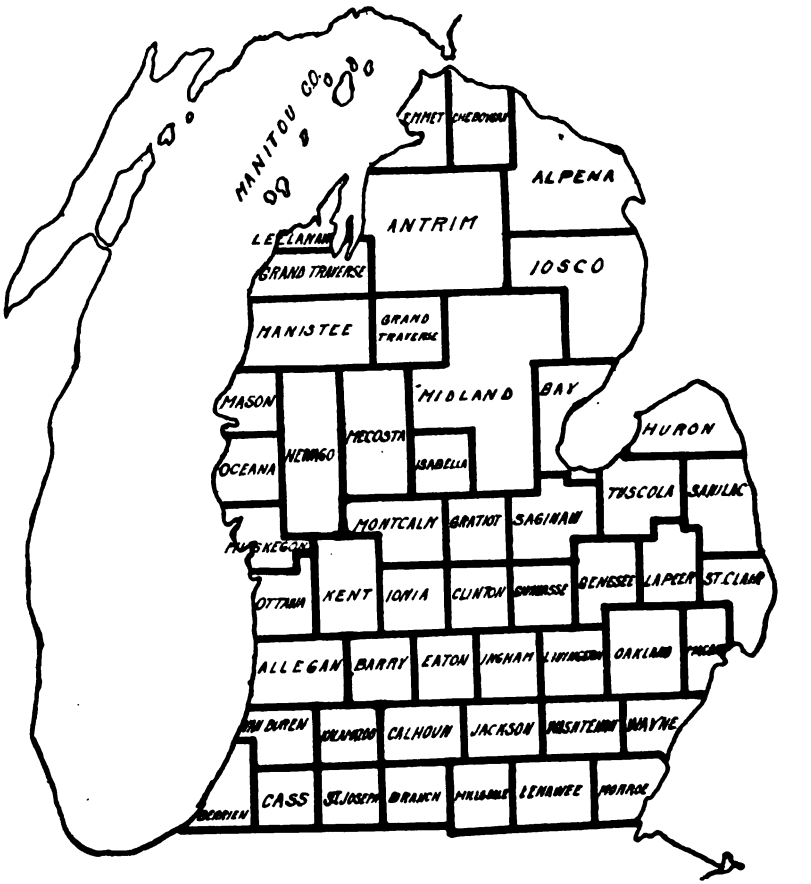
Oscoda, Crawford, Alcona attached to Iosco. *Laws* 1858, 16.

Clare, Ogemaw, Roscommon attached to Midland. *Laws* 1858, 16; *Laws* 1859, 879.

Osceola attached to Mecosta. *Laws* 1859, 257.

Lake attached to Newaygo. *Laws* 1857, 463.

Digitized by Google



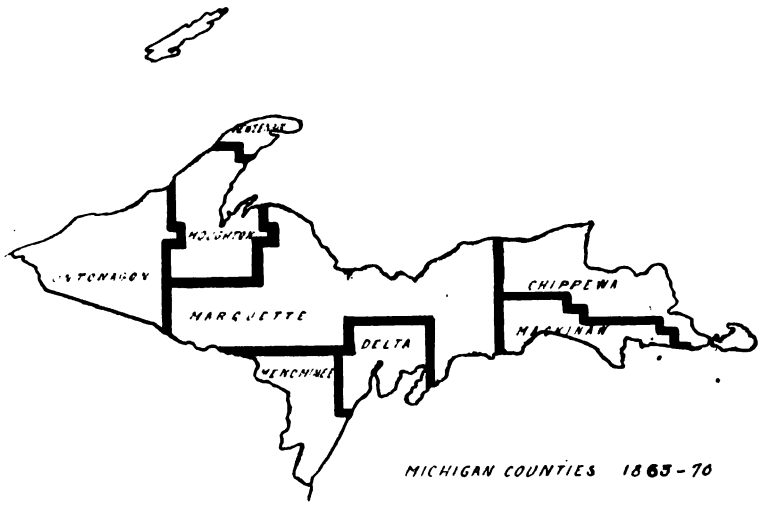
MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1864

NOTES TO ACCOMPANY MAP OF 1864

Crawford, Kalkaska, Otsego were attached to Antrim. *Laws* 1863, 119.

Apparently Missaukee remained a part of Grand Traverse.

Digitized by Google



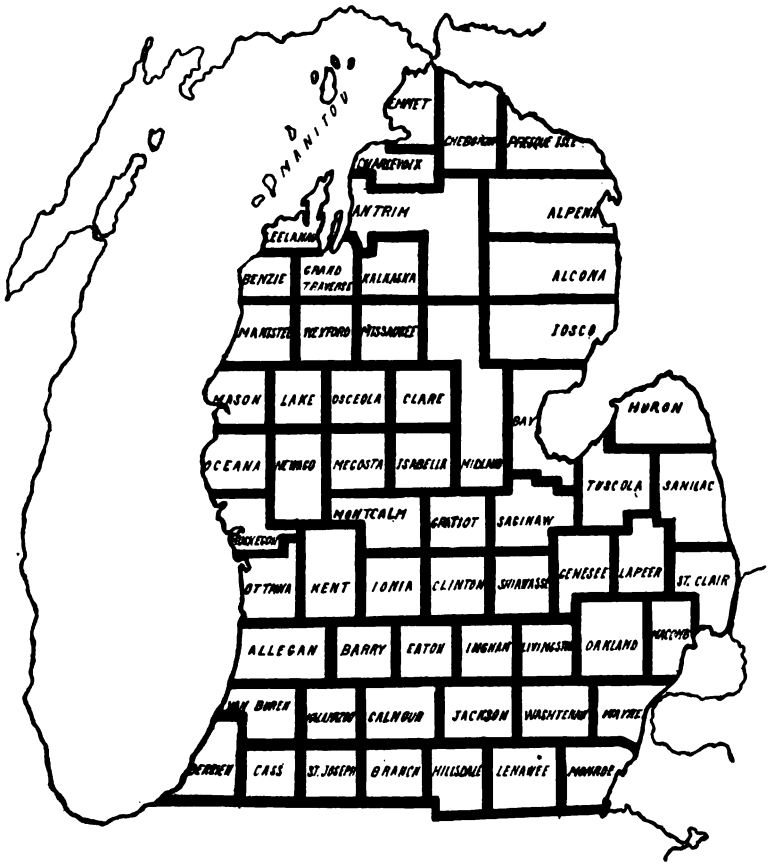
MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1863-70

Digitized by Google

MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1868

Ogemaw attached to Iosco. Laws 1867, 282.

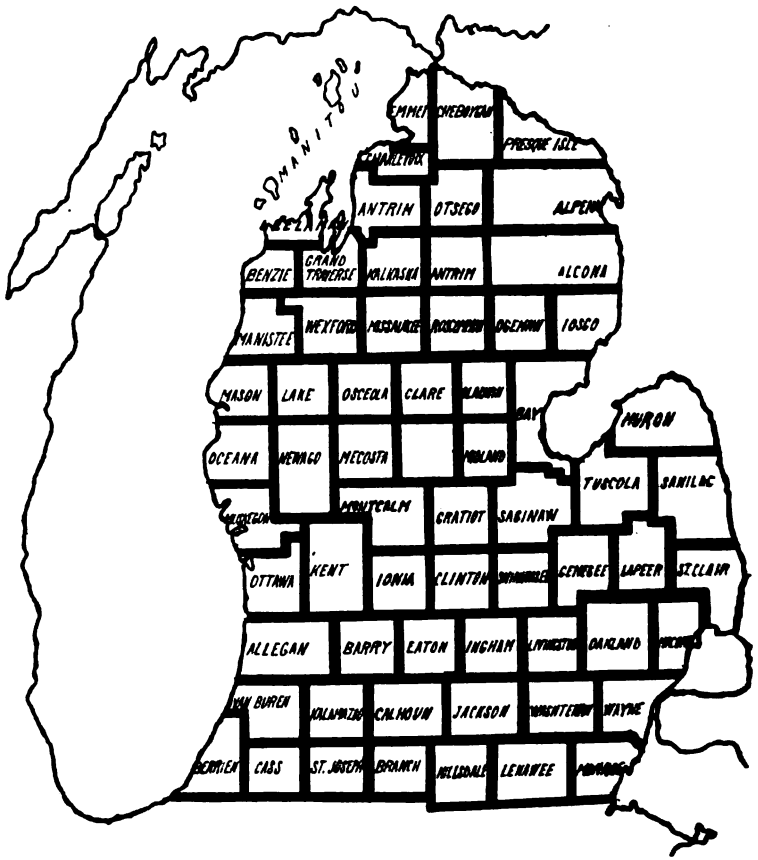
Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1872

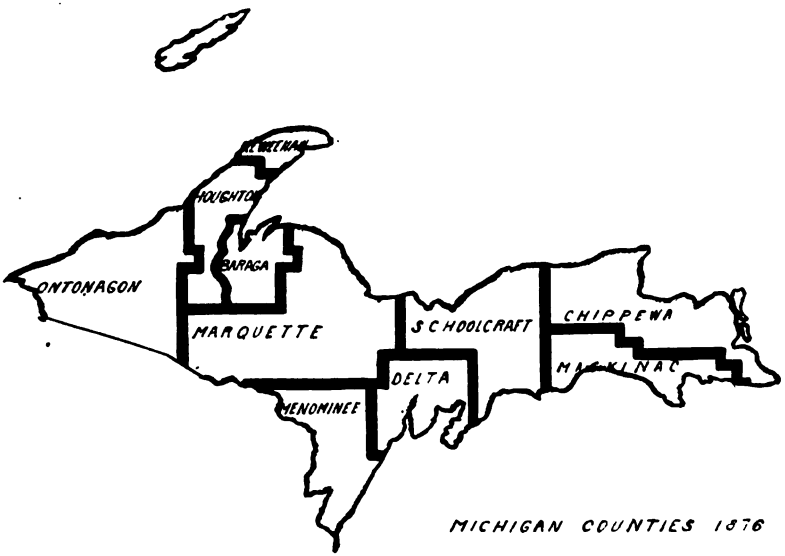
Oscoda attached to Alcona "from" Alpena". Laws 1869,II, 336.
I was unable to find when Oscoda was ever a part of Alpena.

Digitized by Google



MICHIGAN COUNTIES 1876

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Reg. C.K.

MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

VOL. II, NO. 4 OCTOBER, 1918 WHOLE NO. 6

TIME was when universities looked upon the idea of a doctoral dissertation in State history with disfavor; and even yet in some universities and colleges the question is raised whether for serious study State history is worth while. There is evidence of change in this attitude, seen in the titles of doctoral dissertations, in series of histories such as those planned and published by the Carnegie Institution, in the increasing volume of serious work done by scholars outside of academic life and in the growing attention given to State history in textbooks approved for preparatory schools.

The change seems to be involved in recent tendencies in the whole study and writing of American history, one of which has produced the modern seminar, which with its new method and intensive work has shifted attention from the broad general movements to epochs, phases, or topics of history of relatively narrow scope; the cultivation of these narrower fields, including State history, has effected a sort of division of labor among scholars conducing to greater thoroughness of research, minuteness of investigation and perhaps greater care in the presentation of results. Another tendency is the emphasis upon social, economic and civic influences, for which State history furnishes a unique laboratory; particularly in universities and colleges supported by the State there is a quick sense of the more immediate obligation of the institution to the State which gives it life and of the relation of the

Digitized by Google

student to the duties and obligations of citizenship therein. Convenience has doubtless been a factor, since a fairly complete collection of source materials for State history can be assembled in the State university, and other needed materials are to be found within easy reach at the Capitol or elsewhere in the State. The assistance of State historical commissions and societies in gathering materials for students and in publishing their theses has been of practical value.

State history while local in a sense is national in meaning, every important phase of it having its place in some larger national development. In Michigan, the University authorities have noted the interest which the intellectual class, men and women of influence in the constituency of the University, have for this and other reasons taken in the University's attention to State history and the prestige this work has added to the University.

In view of the friendly attitude of our own University towards the study of Michigan history it may be of use to students to have at hand a list of subjects suitable for the master's or doctor's dissertation, and the following are suggested from a list of several hundred on file at the office of the Historical Commission:

The French régime in Michigan
Michigan under the British
Michigan Territorial politics
The rise and fall of the Whig party in Michigan
Periods of political change in Michigan since the Civil War
The political history of Detroit
The State constitutions of Michigan, 1835-1909
The Governors of Michigan, 1835-1918
The Michigan Supreme Court

Digitized by Google

Legislative history of local government in Michigan
Legislation in Michigan since the Civil War
Michigan's contributions to National legislation
An historical study in typical industries of Michigan
Agricultural history of the southern peninsula of Michigan
Pine lumbering in Michigan and Maine; A study in methods and markets
Economic history of the Saginaw Valley
Growth and development of manufactures in Michigan since the Civil War
The Michigan iron and copper industries
Legislative protection of the natural resources of Michigan
Development of commerce and shipbuilding on the Great Lakes
Legislative protection of industries in Michigan and Canada
Legislative history of the protection of labor in Michigan and Wisconsin
The History of Trade-unionism and labor disputes in Michigan, Wisconsin and Illinois
Wages and prices in Michigan, 1880-1914
Development of Michigan railroad transportation
Development of electric interurban traffic in Michigan
The telephone and telegraph in Michigan
History of the postoffice and post communication in Michigan
State finance in Michigan, 1865-1914
Michigan's banking laws, 1837-1887
Michigan in National financial crises
Taxation of public utilities in Michigan
The Indians of the Great Lakes region in relation to the settlement and growth of Michigan
A comparative study of the growth of population in the

Digitized by Google

States of the Old Northwest since the Civil War
Foreign immigration to Michigan since 1865
Michigan and Negro slavery
The Free Negro in Michigan
Michigan in the wars of the Nation, 1812-1918
Economic conditions in Michigan during the Civil War
History of the public health in Michigan
Hisory of public education in Michigan
History of denominational education in Michigan
History of industrial and technical education in Michigan
The newspaper press in Michigan since the Civil War
Social service of Catholicism in Michigan
Indian missions and missionaries in Michigan, 1765-1839

IN response to requests from teachers for a list of questions in local history adapted to the pupil's experience, the following are among the many hundreds that might prove useful:

1. What Indian tribe originally inhabited your county? What is the meaning of the name of the tribe?
2. Where were the Indian villages, and why there?
3. What important Indian trails cross your county?
4. What other reminders of Indian occupation can still be seen in your county?
5. Did you ever open an Indian mound? Why should not relics be taken from these mounds except by experts?
6. How did the white settlers get along with the Indians in your county? Why and how did the Indians disappear?
7. What stories, myths or legends do you remember that are associated with these Indians?

Digitized by Google

8. What places associated with the Indians in your county are worthy of being permanently marked?
9. What Indian reservations, if any, have been made at different times in your county? What reservation is in or near your county now?
10. What were the largest villages or cities near your county when it was first settled?
11. What special advantages had your county to attract settlers?
12. What rivers of your county have been of most use to settlers, and how?
13. What are the chief things to note about the climate, surface, soil and products of your county?
14. How does your county compare in these respects with neighboring counties?
15. What kinds of trees are found in your county?
16. What Indian treaties have affected the land contained in your county?
17. When were the lands of your county first surveyed?
18. At what land offices have the lands of your county been entered?
19. Do you know of any notable cases in which land titles in your county have been disputed?
20. Has your county witnessed any notable improvements of harbors, rivers, roads, canals, and railroads? Where, when, and to what extent?
21. Where and what are the chief manufactories of your county?
22. When and where were founded the first banks in your county? Who were the first bankers?
23. When was your county organized? Earlier or later than neighboring counties?

Digitized by Google

24. What were the names and boundaries of the first townships in your county?
25. Name the present townships of your county.
26. What is the origin and meaning of the names of your county, townships, cities and villages?
27. When and where was the first settlement made in your county? Why there? By whom?
28. Who were the first officers of your county?
29. Has your county had any "paper cities"? Where? When? Who promoted them?
30. What is the population of your county now? Greater or less than that of neighboring counties?
31. In what part of your county is the population greatest? Why?
32. Can you give the number of bushels of each important cereal raised in your county last year?
33. Are people from any particular State of the Union more numerous in your county than from other States?
34. What nationality are the foreign-born of your county? Has this always been so?
35. Have there been any social or religious colonies in the settlement of your county?
36. Is any part of your county specially backward in growth? Why?
37. Who are the noted men and women in the history of your county?
38. Describe the social gatherings and amusements of pioneer days in your county
39. Compare the old and new household economies
40. What was the first spot to attract settlers in your

Digitized by Google

township? Why? Who were the settlers? Where from?

41. What was the date of the first store in your township? First postoffice? First frame house?
42. Where and when was the first village platted in your township? What name, and why?
43. Where were the first schools established, and who were the first teachers?
44. What were the first churches, and who were the ministers?
45. Who were the first doctors in your township? First lawyers?
46. Where was the first mill in your city or village?
47. Do you know any way in which the settlement of your township was influenced by a stream, Indian trail, lake, spring of water, marsh, high hill, dense forest, specially open land, or other physical characteristic?
48. What reminders of the Indian occupation of your township can still be seen?
49. What sites of historic interest in your village or city are worthy of being permanently marked?
50. Have you a museum of Indian and pioneer relics in your city or county?
51. What clubs and patriotic organizations has your city, and how have they shown an interest in local history and good citizenship?
52. Does your school teach the history of your county and State? If not, why?
53. Does your public library have a set of the *Michigan Historical Collections?* Have you read in these volumes?
54. What important events in your county's history are

Digitized by Google

approaching a quarter or semi-centennial?

55. Do you know what your attic, basement, storeroom and office contain in the shape of old letters, diaries, account-books, scrap-books, family records, photographs, etc.?
56. Have you planned to start a County Historical Society?
57. Make a list of pioneers of your county now over seventy years old who have lived in the county twenty-five years
58. Has your county paper a "Historical Column"?
59. Is there any person or organization in your county that is making a list of the soldiers of your county in the Great War and gathering data about them?
60. Is there any organization in your county that is making a systematic effort to collect historical records of the war, such as recruiting posters, resolutions and reports of public meetings, announcements and orders made by railroads, mills, factories, and mines, educational records and reports, price lists, propaganda material, photographs, soldiers' letters, sermons and addresses, newspaper clippings, etc.?

THE prize essay contest of the Michigan Historical Commission on "Why the United States is at War" has been decided in favor of the following contestants:

Group I, "Teachers in the Public High and Elementary schools," prize divided between Mr. E. W. Tiegs, Principal of the Forest Park School, Crystal Falls, and Miss Anna Bernice Perry, Lovell Street School, Kalamazoo.

Group II, "Students in Normal College and Normal Schools," Miss Etta Kinch, Ypsilanti.

Digitized by Google

Group III, "Students in the University of Michigan, the Michigan Agricultural College, the Michigan College of Mines, and the University of Detroit," prize divided between Mr. Edwin J. Draper, Ann Arbor, and Miss Dorotha McBride, East Lansing.

Group IV, "Students in all other Michigan Colleges and Schools not included in Groups I, II and III," Mr. Mahlon H. Buell, Hillsdale College, Hillsdale.

The committee on prizes consists of President Harry B. Hutchins, University of Michigan; President Frank S. Kedzie, Michigan Agricultural College; President Fred W. McNair, Michigan College of Mines; President Charles McKenny, Michigan State Normal College; Hon. Fred L. Keeler, Superintendent of Public Instruction; Rt. Rev. Monsignor F. A. O'Brien, Dean of Nazareth Academy, and Prof. C. H. Van Tyne, President Michigan Historical Commission, chairman.

A prize essay of $50 was offered in each group. Two of the winning essays are published in this number of the *Michigan History Magazine* and the others will be published in later numbers. Several of the essays in each group which did not win prizes were of high merit. We are assured that the contest has done much to stimulate the interest of teachers and students in the historical causes of the war.

The contest for 1918-19 has been announced as follows:

TIME

October 1, 1918, to April 30, 1919.

SUBJECT

"The Essential Conditions of Permanent World Peace."

MANAGEMENT

The Michigan Historical Commission has set aside the sum of $200 to be expended in four prizes of $50 each, to four groups

Digitized by Google

of competitors in educational institutions of Michigan, for the best essays on "The Essential Conditions for Permanent World Peace."

ELIGIBILITY

Group I. Teachers in Public High and Elementary Schools, and other schools of equal grade.

Group II. Students in Normal College and Normal Schools.

Group III. Students in the University of Michigan, the Michigan Agricultural College, the Michigan College of Mines, and the University of Detroit.

Group IV. Students in all other Michigan Schools and Colleges not included in Groups I-III.

Winners of prizes in the contest of 1917-18 are not eligible for the present contest.

COMMITTEE ON PRIZES

President Harry B. Hutchins, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor.

President Frank S. Kedzie, Michigan Agricultural College, East Lansing.

President Fred W. McNair, Michigan College of Mines, Houghton.

President Charles McKenny, State Normal College, Ypsilanti.

Hon. Fred L. Keeler, Superintendent of Public Instruction, Lansing.

Rt. Rev. Mgr. F. A. O'Brien, Nazareth Academy, Kalamazoo.

Hon. C. M. Burton, Detroit, President Michigan Historical Commission, Chairman.

CONDITIONS OF THE CONTEST

The method of treatment must be primarily historical. The

Digitized by Google

essays should bring to bear upon the subject all of the essential facts of recent or remote history relative thereto.

The text must be amply fortified with references for all important statements and be accompanied with a bibliography of the works consulted.

As competitors may not have equally easy access to large libraries, stress will be laid, in awarding the prizes, upon the degree of thoroughness and intelligence with which the available sources are used.

The essay must be the competitor's own work, accurate as to facts, dates and citations, and well written.

It is suggested to teachers that the essays written by students be given credit in the English and history work where possible.

In order to enter this contest, application must reach the Secretary of the Michigan Historical Commission, Lansing, Michigan, on or before February 1, 1919. The Secretary will assign to each applicant a number, which will be sealed at the office of the Commission until after the contest. Essays should be signed only with number.

All essays must be typed. They should not contain more than 4,000 words.

Essays must reach the Secretary of the Michigan Historical Commission, Lansing, Michigan, on or before April 30, 1919. Announcement of the winners will be made as soon thereafter as possible.

IN the school prize essay contest given by the Michigan Historical Commission in 1917-18, award could be made of only one prize, to Earl Brown of the Muskegon High School, whose

Digitized by Google

essay on "Our Soldiers, Past and Present," will be published in the January number of the Magazine.

The subject of the contest for the ensuing year is, "What Our School (or County) Has Done to Help Win the War." The conditions of the contest are the same as those given in the January number of the *Michigan History Magazine* for 1918, pp. 17-19.

AT the annual meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society in May, 1918, the following report was made by the Committee on the Burial Place and Memorial of Judge William A. Fletcher:

"Your committee, appointed at the annual meeting of 1916, and continued at last year's meeting, to investigate the last resting place of the body of William A. Fletcher, the first Chief Justice of the State of Michigan, and a suitable marking or memorial for it, is now able to report satisfactory and successful progress.

"The committee wishes first to express its deep sorrow at the death, last year, of its chairman, Judge Rollin H. Person, by whom, in connection with his paper on Judge Fletcher, delivered before this Society two years ago, this investigation was started. The Society will otherwise take account of the loss of Judge Person, but we feel especially regretful that he could not have lived to realize the success of the investigation along the lines he had pointed out.

"It will be remembered that the depositions secured from Mr. Titus Hutzel, of Ann Arbor, stated that when he was Superintendent of the Water Works there, some eighteen years ago, in digging to lay pipes through Felch Park, an abandoned cemetery, he came upon an iron coffin, which was identified

Digitized by Google

by the memory of Mr. Hutzel's mother as that of Judge Fletcher, buried there in 1853. There were no relatives interested, and no demand for its removal, as had been done with other bodies in this cemetery, and Mr. Hutzel re-interred the casket, leaving it as unmarked as before.

"Your committee had several conferences with the committee of the Michigan Bar Association, Mr. Martin J. Cavanaugh, of Ann Arbor, chairman, appointed for a joint investigation of this matter with us, and finally authorized Mr. Hutzel to secure the foreman who worked for him when the casket was found, to dig, with other help, in search of the grave. The casket was again found, only five or six feet from where ground was broken, and on the 21st of this month, in presence of Titus Hutzel, Julius Gruber and M. E. Easterly, digging, R. A. Dolph, undertaker, Junius E. Beal and Byron A. Finney, of this committee, and other witnesses, the casket was exhumed and carefully and successfully carried to the vault in Forest Hill Cemetery, whither so many of the other occupants of the abandoned cemetery had long ago been removed.

"Through a glass covering, protected by a movable iron lid, the face could be seen, and several articles of dress, exactly as described in the deposition secured by Judge Person, and there is no doubt in the minds of the committee that we have now the actual remains of Judge Fletcher. Since the casket was placed in the vault, the Cemetery Board has had a meeting, and offers us a prominent and attractive place for its permanent burial, a small triangle near the vault, without charge except the usual cost of interment. No other grave would be on this plot, and it is expected that some proper monument would be erected. This we feel can be guaranteed, and secured, perhaps from the State, the Historical Commis-

Digitized by Google

sion, or by private subscription. We may refer to the action of this Society last year, by resolution asking the State and several organizations to join with us in this memorial. The committee has been to some twenty-five dollars expense for which it may expect reimbursement somehow. Mr. Hutzel and Mr. Dolph kindly donated their services. The committee would like to be continued another year.

(Signed) "JUNIUS E. BEAL.
"BYRON A. FINNEY."

The report was accepted, and Mr. Junius E. Beal and Mr. B. A. Finney of Ann Arbor, and Mr. W. L. Jenks of Port Huron, were appointed as a committee to co-operate with the State Bar Association, the University of Michigan, the City of Ann Arbor, the Daughters of the American Revolution, and other organizations interested, in choosing and purchasing a suitable monument or marking for the grave of Judge Fletcher.

A vote of thanks was tendered to Mr. Titus Hutzel and Mr. R. A. Dolph of Ann Arbor for their public service in recovering Judge Fletcher's remains.

At this meeting the following persons were made honorary members of the Society: Mr. C. M. Burton, Detroit; Mr. W. L. Jenks, Port Huron; Mr. Gerrit Van Schelven, Holland; Rt. Rev. Monsignor F. A. O'Brien, Kalamazoo; Prof. C. H. Van Tyne, Ann Arbor; Mr. James Hazen Hyde, Paris, France; Mrs. William H. Wait, Ann Arbor; Mrs. Florence Babbitt, Ypsilanti; Mrs. Basil Clarke, Flint; Mrs. M. B. Ferrey, Lansing.

Digitized by Google

The following Trustees continue in office for the year 1918-1919: Clarence M. Burton, Detroit; William L. Jenks, Port Huron; William L. Clements, Bay City; Clarence E. Bement, Lansing; Gerrit Van Schelven, Holland; Rt. Rev. Monsignor F. A. O'Brien, Kalamazoo; Augustus C. Carton, East Tawas; Woodbridge N. Ferris, Big Rapids; Junius E. Beal, Ann Arbor; Alvah L. Sawyer, Menominee. Mr. Carton and Mr. Van Schelven were continued as President and Vice-President respectively.

For a report of the papers read at this meeting see the July number of the Magazine.

THE third Upper Peninsula meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society held at Marquette, August 21-23, jointly with the Marquette County Historical Society, was distinguished by an earnest patriotic spirit and devotion to the history of the Peninsula, and by a large and steady attendance throughout the sessions.

The success of the meeting owed much to the faithful service of the local secretary, Miss Alma Olson, who is the librarian of the Peter White Public Library and an executive of unusual ability. Under her guidance the work of the new society in Marquette County should make rapid progress. Much of the fine spirit of the meeting was due also to Miss Olive Pendill, who with the late Hon. Dan H. Ball and others founded the organization. Thanks are due to all those who took part in the program and provided entertainment, as well as to the people of Marquette who attended the session.

Digitized by Google

The papers read at the meeting were as follows: Hon. James Russell (Marquette), *Hon. Peter White;* Hon. George W. Bates (Detroit), *Hon. Dan H. Ball;* Mr. Thomas B. Wyman (Munising), *Munising in History;* Mrs. Ella Cox Whitmore (Munising), *Pioneer Days in Munising;* Mrs. W. G. King (Marquette), *Historical and Patriotic Work of the Marquette Chapter, D. A. R.;* Hon. Chase S. Osborn (Sault Ste. Marie), *America After the War;* Rev. Wm. F. Gagnieur, S. J. (Sault Ste. Marie), *A Critical Review of Longfellow's Hiawatha;* Judge John W. Stone (Lansing), *Some Remarks Upon the History of the Northwest, the Upper Peninsula, and Marquette County;* D. H. Merritt (Marquette), *History of Marquette Ore Docks;* Rev. Charles J. Johnson (Marquette), *The Stars and Stripes in the Ojibway Country;* Mr. E. C. Anthony (Negaunee), *Early Political History of Marquette County;* Mr. J. E. Jopling (Marquette), *The Iron Industry;* Mr. B. W. Wright (Marquette), *Mr. Harlow;* Principal E. W. Tiegs (Crystal Falls), *Why the United States Is at War.* Addresses were given by Mrs. M. B. Ferrey (Lansing), *Local History and Patriotism;* Prof. C. H. Van Tyne (Ann Arbor), *Our Obligations to Our Allies;* George W. Rowell, Jr. (Marquette), *Cloverland;* Very Rev. F. X. Barth (Escanaba), *Americanism vs. Germanism.* Pioneer reminiscences were given by Dr. T. A. Felch (Ishpeming), Mr. Peter Dolf and Mr. Robert Blemhuber of Marquette, Mr. Alfred W. Lord of Hancock, and others.

Fr. M. Jodocy delivered the invocation at the opening session. Mayor F. H. Begole, Mr. J. M. Longyear, and Dr. T. A. Felch of Ishpeming, the latter respectively president and vice-president of the Marquette society, presided at the several sessions. President A. C. Carton of the State society not being able to be present, his response to the Mayor's and Mr. Long-

Digitized by Google

year's words of welcome was read by the secretary; the response was later published in the *Mining Journal* and deserves careful attention for its emphasis upon the duties of an historical society in war time and particularly the duties of a society working in the Upper Peninsula.

Music was furnished by Mr. Alex Finlay, Mrs. George P. Leonard, Mrs. Arthur Young, Mrs. Louis Vierling, Miss Esther Swanson, Miss Grace Zerbel, Miss Norma Ross, and Miss Flora Retallic. Fr. Gagnieur gave an interesting piano demonstration of Indian music. Patriotic numbers abounded, among them "The Marseillaise," sung in French by Mrs. Arthur Young. The community singing was enjoyed by all, especially the old time songs. Mrs. W. G. King's words were used with "Michigan, My Michigan."

Thursday morning a very enjoyable automobile ride was taken by guests to points of historic and scenic interest in Marquette and the surrounding country. A delightful luncheon provided by the Marquette society was enjoyed at the "Inn," presided over by the genial mayor of Marquette. None who attended the meeting will forget the many marks of kindly attention shown by Mr. Begole for the comfort of all present.

On the closing day of the meeting Mr. A. L. Sawyer, trustee of the State Society and its special representative in the Upper Peninsula, extended an invitation in behalf of the newly founded historical society of Menominee County to hold the next Upper Peninsula meeting at Menominee. The invitation was heartily pressed by Mr. Michael J. Doyle, mayor of Menominee, in behalf of the city and the society. Mr. Doyle was a delegate from the Menominee County Society. Other invitations will be welcomed by the State Society and will be acted upon by the Board of Trustees at the annual meeting in Lansing next May.

Digitized by Google

Special thanks are due to the *Mining Journal* and the *Chronicle* for the splendid manner in which they reported the proceedings of the meeting, including many of the papers. Thanks are due for assistance rendered by the members of the G. A. R., who were guests of honor at the sessions held Thursday and Friday evenings. Thanks are due also to the members of the D. A. R. and to the clubs and committees which aided so loyally the efforts of Miss Olson and Miss Pendill.

THE midwinter meeting of the Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society will be held at Hastings, Barry County, Jan. 22-23, 1919.

AT a meeting of the Michigan Authors' Association in Detroit, June 15, the following officers were elected for the coming year:

President—Hon. Louis James Rosenberg
First Vice-President—Mrs. Josephine B. Sullivan-Conlon
Second Vice-President—Ward McCauley
Third Vice-President—William F. Cornell
Recording Secretary—David Chalmers Nimmo
Corresponding Secretary—Dr. E. L. M. Bristol
Treasurer—Peter Grant
Counsel—Charles H. Stevenson
Librarian—Mrs. G. W. Barlow
Press Representative and Secretary Board of Directors—Mrs. Pruella Janet Sherman
Auditors—Dr. Charles L. Arnold and Mrs. Wadsworth Warren

Following is the Board of Directors:

Digitized by Google

Hon. Chase S. Osborn, Sault Ste. Marie
Mrs. Marie Frink, Ann Arbor.
William Wallace Cook, Marshall
Col. M. J. Phillips, Owosso
Stanislas Keenan, Eloise
Norman Hackett, Detroit
Winfield Lionel Scott, Detroit
Mrs. Emma A. Fox, Detroit
Adam Strohm, Detroit
Miss Jennie O. Starkey, Detroit
Dr. James Henderson, Detroit
Frank B. Taylor, Detroit

The newly elected president, Mr. Rosenberg, author of several well-known volumes and a lecturer of note, was for a number of years connected with the American consular service in Spain and later in South America.

Digitized by Google

Reports From the Counties

THE State is indebted to Mr. Robert Wright, president of the Alger. County Historical Society and editor of the *Cloverland Farmer* at Munising, for several valuable papers and museum articles recently received. The Alger County Society was ably represented at the recent Marquette historical meeting by Mr. Thomas B. Wyman and Mrs. Ella Cox Whitmore in papers on the history of Munising.

A meeting of the Three Oaks Historical Society in Berrien County was held May 14, 1918, with interesting papers and music. Officers elected for the ensuing year were as follows:

President—E. K. Warren

Vice-President—Fred Edinger

Secretary—Mrs. M. A. Wilson

Treasurer—Emery Sherwood

Mr. George Fox, curator of the Chamberlain Memorial Museum at Three Oaks, is preparing a descriptive catalogue of the same for the Magazine. Mr. E. K. Warren is a benefactor of the museum.

The Woman's Club at Niles has done creditable work in marking the traditional resting place of Fr. Allouez, S. J.

The Clinton County Pioneer Society held a meeting June 15 at St. Johns, the principal speaker being Dr. J. L. Snyder, former president of the Michigan Agricultural College. On August 17 the society held a pioneer picnic on the school

Digitized by Google

grounds at DeWitt, with Judge Searles the principal speaker. Some time ago the society marked with a boulder the site of the first house in DeWitt, and this year has ordered a boulder and tablet with appropriate inscription to be placed at the grave of its builder, Captain David Scott, who settled there October 4, 1833. At the June meeting the following officers were elected:

President—T. H. Townsend, St. Johns
Vice-President—Jerome Dills, DeWitt
Secretary—Mrs. C. L. Pearce, DeWitt
Treasurer—John T. Daniells, St. Johns
Necrologist—Mrs. Abbie E. Dills

The Delta County Pioneer and Historical Society was represented at the Marquette historical meeting by its president, Very Rev. Francis X. Barth, of Escanaba, who gave an eloquent and patriotic address on "Americanism vs. Germanism."

The Eaton County Pioneer Society held its forty-eighth annual meeting Aug. 20, 1918, at Charlotte. A picnic dinner was enjoyed, after which Rev. Alfred T. Way of the M. E. Church made a patriotic address. The old officers were continued for the coming year.

The fiftieth annual picnic of the Genesee County Pioneer Association was attended by over 7,000 people, the occasion being a war program, with slogans of "No German-made Peace" and "Win the War." Appropriate remarks by Hon.

Digitized by Google

Mark W. Stevens, president of the association, were followed with addresses by Rev. Seth Reed, Rev. Pengelly, and Rev. Field, reporting various phases of war work. Attorney George W. Cook, president of the Flint Board of Education, spoke upon "The Public Schools and Democracy." Mr. J. Dallas Dort closed the program with an appeal for war service and sacrifice by every individual.

This program is typical of what should and can be done by county pioneer and historical organizations to help win the war. The meetings should center about patriotic work, and can do so without sacrificing work on the history of the communities, a work which must go on parallel with war work, like every other civic activity. The gathering of records, especially the war records, the collecting of relics for the museum, the celebrating of historic events, the marking of historic sites, and the study of State history, need not interfere with war work and should form a part of the activity of every county historical organization during the war.

The Old Settlers' Association of the Grand Traverse region met for its thirty-seventh annual reunion at Charlevoix, June 26, 1918. Owing to the illness of the president of the association, Hon. Archibald Buttars, Mayor S. M. Rose of Charlevoix presided at the meeting. Six of the seven counties in the association—Antrim, Benzie, Charlevoix, Grand Traverse, Leelanau and Emmet—were represented by delegates, Kalkaska alone not responding to roll call.

Many copies of a short history of this section of the State compiled by Messrs. Wait and Anderson were eagerly grasped by the pioneers, and several hundreds of pictures of the early

Digitized by Google

settlers brought to mind the memory and services of those who were, but are not now, among us.

Following is the paper prepared by Mrs. S. C. Despres of Traverse City, historian of the association:

To the Officers and Members of the Old Settlers' Association:

With the close of another year of our Society's existence, we find many things to be added to our History's pages.

Our society differs from the average organization in this respect, that while we seem to be growing less each year, and many of our older members are called home, we are constantly adding to our lists the names of others who have lived in our midst the required number of years to be called "Old Settlers."

The past winter, which was so very long and cold, thinned out our ranks greatly, and we find the names of many of our oldest and best friends among the missing.

Mrs. Lydia Birmley, wife of Jacob Birmley, one of the pioneers of Garfield Township, died early in the year.

Dr. Dewitt A. Burnett, aged 86, a pioneer dentist of this region, passed away at his home on Pine Street after a long illness. He had a farm home on the Peninsula, where he had made his home in recent years, moving into town in the winter.

One of the older residents, who died in May, was Hugh Boyd of Williamsburg. Mr. Boyd was one of the sturdy pioneers of this vicinity who helped to make the country what it is today.

Elmer E. Brown, a former Traverse City boy, died at his home in South Bend, Washington, May 18. He was the son of the late S. M. Brown, who was Justice of the Peace here for many years.

Mrs. Margaret Bowman, whose girlhood home was in and near Elk Rapids, and who had lived in Traverse City for the

Digitized by Google

last few years, died in March as the result of injuries received from a fall on an icy walk.

On April 11 the Hon. George G. Covell passed away in Asheville, N. C., where he had gone in search of health. Mr. Covell was one of the most widely known men in this part of the State, having held many offices of prominence and trust. He had served his State as Senator, having represented this district, and was later appointed District Attorney. This position he held for twelve years, having his office in Grand Rapids. Mr. Covell was also one of the leading attorneys of this city, and was associated with George H. Cross in the practice of his profession.

Mrs. Katherine R. Coates, aged 62 years, wife of Herbert Coates, died June 10, at her home on Tenth Street. Mrs. Coates was one of the real home makers, and her life was devoted to her children and grandchildren.

Word was received early this month of the death of Lorraine W. Culver, of Saginaw, aged 20 years. He was the grandson of S. E. Wait, and was well known in Traverse City.

Thomas Dyer, aged 63, died January 13. He has been a resident of Traverse City and vicinity for 55 years, his parents having owned a farm in Long Lake Township in the early 70's.

Mrs. Robert Dobson, aged 84, passed away December 14, at the home of her daughter, Mrs. E. E. Hibbard, on West Twelfth Street. Mrs. Dobson was born in Ontario, moving to Traverse City with her family in 1882. She had resided in Acme and Traverse City ever since that time.

M. Dill, for many years in the restaurant business here, passed away after an illness of several months, at his home on State Street. He was 68 years of age.

Mr. Charles Estes, who was president of our association in 1909, died at his home in Bates last January, following a

Digitized by Google

short illness. Mr. Estes moved to this county in 1863 from Lenawee County, and made a home in what was then apparently only forests and snow. He was an active church and Sunday school worker, and was always at the front in any movement for the betterment of the community.

Dr. Z. H. Evans, one of the pioneer physicians of Traverse City, passed away March 2, after an illness of several months duration. Dr. Evans was born in Lockport, N. Y., and came to Traverse City about 35 years ago. At one time he practiced in Elk Rapids, returning to Traverse City again, where he was engaged in the practice of medicine until his failing health compelled him to give up his work.

Mrs. Emmeline D. Fairbanks died at the home of her son, A. G., of Mabel, September 24. Mrs. Fairbanks, with her husband and family, came from New York in the early sixties and helped to carve a home out of the wilderness.

Mrs. Josephine L. Fuller, wife of Loren G. Fuller, died November 24, following a short illness. Mrs. Fuller was a native of Switzerland, coming to this country when but four years old. Her family settled in Leelanau County, where she lived until the time of her marriage, since which time Traverse City has been her home.

One of the young-old men of Traverse City who passed away since our last meeting, was Frank Furtsch, father of Jacob Furtsch. He came here with his family from New York many years ago. Mr. Furtsch was 79 years of age.

Mrs. Nettie E. Foote, whose home had been here for many years, died at the early age of 57, on August 8. Mrs. Foote was active in church and social circles. Mrs. Foote was the widow of the late W. O. Foote.

In the passing of James M. Gillette, Traverse City lost one of her ablest business men. Mr. Gillette came to Traverse

Digitized by Google

City about 45 years ago, and almost continuously since that time had been engaged in the lumbering business. He was an inspector and scaler, and was one among the comparatively few of the older generation of lumbermen still engaged in this industry. His death occurred suddenly while he was returning home from a business trip. He was prominent in fraternal circles also.

On New Year's day Traverse City lost one of her most widely known residents, Mrs. Anna Germaine, who had lived here for over 60 years. Mrs. Germaine had reached the age of 80 years; but her vigorous health, cheerful disposition, and activity in social and fraternal circles kept her so young that she never was an "old lady." Her husband, Cuyler Germaine, died 30 years ago.

Samuel Gagnon of Northport, died at the advanced age of 86. Mr. Gagnon took an active part in the early development of the country.

One of Old Mission's pioneers, Michael Ghering, passed away December 5, 1917. He was a prominent farmer and fruit grower.

Louis Greilick, son of the late Edward Greilick, died at his home in Greilickville, April 6, of this year, aged 45 years. Mr. Greilick was interested in some of Traverse City's largest enterprises, being president of the Traverse City Gas Co., and vice-president of the Boardman River Electric Light & Power Co. His friends and business associates paid tribute to his absolute honesty and unshakable integrity.

Mrs. Mary Houghton, who had lived in Grand Traverse County for 51 years, passed away December 31, aged 66 years.

Mrs. Jennie E. Johnson, who had been a resident of this region for many years, died in April at the home of her sister in Poplarville, Mississippi. Mrs. Johnson was a member of the

Digitized by Google

First Congregational Church, and one of its greatest workers, and was prominent socially.

Another old resident, who died November 19, 1917, was George Jameson, aged 69 years. Mr. Jameson had been janitor of the Boardman School for nearly 20 years.

Sydney A. Keyes, Northport banker, died suddenly November 18, 1917. He had been an active business man of Leelanau County for many years, and was known by his business associates to be a man of strict integrity.

The death of Mrs. Myrtle Miller King, which occurred in Detroit, belongs to our history, as she was the daughter of the late George Miller, and grand-daughter of the late Lewis Miller, one of the first white families to settle in this region. Mrs. King was a talented musician.

Vencil Kratochvil, who passed away at his home in Garfield Township, was a member of one of the first Bohemian families to come to Traverse City. When a young man he was employed in his father's meat market, which was located where the Palace store now is. He was one of the prominent farmers of this county.

Mrs. Lydia Sabin-Kelly died October 7, at her home in Dalton, N. Y., at the age of 80. Mr. and Mrs. Sabin came to Traverse City in the 60's, and Mr. Sabin will be remembered by many for his playing at the dances of that time, while Mrs. Sabin was the leading dressmaker of our small city. The Pere Marquette station just south of town was named for them.

John Kennedy of Williamsburg, aged 67, died early this year. Mr. Kennedy came here from Erie, Pa., settling first near Grawn, and moving to Williamsburg about 22 years ago. He was a man prominent in political affiairs, having been Treasurer for some time.

Digitized by Google

Dennis W. Kelley, who had been the farmer at the State Hospital ever since its opening, died of pneumonia, February 8.

Mrs. Abagail Leach, one of the pioneer women of Traverse City, passed away at the home of her daughter, Mrs. L. W. Hubbell, in Springfield, Mo. Mrs. Leach, together with her husband, came to Traverse City in 1865, and was interested in everything that tended to build up and improve the little town where they had come to make their home. Many a home in those days was made glad by a word of wholesome advice or counsel from Mrs. Leach. She was a woman of strong personality, and was never afraid to state her convictions. Mr. Leach died nine years ago.

Mrs. Mercy Monroe, widow of Mark Monroe, died July 30 after a long illness. Mrs. Monroe was one of the early settlers of this region, her father, Jos. Winchcomb, being one of the original settlers of Monroe Centre.

Thos. D. McManus, a member of one of the oldest families in Traverse City, died suddenly August 13, aged 69 years. Mr. McManus and his brother Alphonso were pioneer photographers of Traverse City. For several years he had given his attention to business, and was proprietor of the "Famous" store.

Miss Millie Marshall, of Old Mission, died late in September, after an illness of several months. Miss Marshall was a very popular young woman, and was prominent in social affairs.

Joseph Maxbauer, whom all the older residents will remember as one of the earliest butchers in Traverse City, died suddenly November 18. Mr. Maxbauer came here at an early date, and was interested in the growth and development of our town.

In January of this year, Arthur R. McManus passed away

Digitized by Google

after a brief illness. Mr. McManus was 64 years of age, and was the second member of his family to go within a few months. Mr. McManus was the pioneer pop-corn man, and will be greatly missed from his old location.

Miss Lucy D. Lewis, of Edgewood Resort, on the Peninsula, died in January while spending the winter with her niece in Jackson. Miss Lewis was engaged in the summer resort business here for many years.

Charles R. Paige, one of Traverse City's pioneers, passed away early in June. He came here 44 years ago, and was in business here for many years.

When Traverse City received word of the death of A. Tracy Lay in March, flags were at half mast, and all the region was in mourning. The older residents who had known Mr. Lay in the early days felt the loss a personal one. Mr. Lay's part in the history and development of Traverse City and the surrounding country, is too well known to you all for me to attempt to tell it to you.

While in recent years Mr. Lay had not visited Traverse City as often as in former years, on account of advancing age, he kept in touch with us through his Chicago office, where he was to be found daily when his health permitted.

Mrs. Sarah J. Smith, who came to Acme 47 years ago with her husband, died in November, and her husband, George Smith, followed her on March 11.

These sturdy pioneers helped to develop this region, and lived to enjoy the fruits of their early labors and hardships.

Mr. L. O. Sackett, one of the early settlers of Silver Lake community, died at the home of his son at that place June 7.

Peter Swan, who came here more than 50 years ago, died May 26 at his home on West Front Street. Mr. Swan was

Digitized by Google

the owner of a fine farm in Leelanau County. Mr. and Mrs. Swan celebrated their golden wedding anniversary January 28 of this year.

Willard W. Smith, of Charlevoix, died late in December, his burial taking place on New Year's day. Mr. Smith was editor of the Charlevoix *Sentinel,* and was one of the best known men in the region. He had lived in Charlevoix for many years, and was one of the progressive men of his home town and a strong factor in building up the community.

Mrs. S. O. Sawyer, wife of Dr. S. O. Sawyer, passed away suddenly March 18. Mrs. Sawyer had lived here for a number of years, and was interested in all the progressive movements of the day.

Mrs. Frances E. Van Dyke, formerly a resident of Traverse City, died at the home of her daughter, Mrs. Benjamin Howard, in Okanogan, Washington. Mrs. Van Dyke lived in Traverse City for a number of years and was a charter member of the Eastern Star.

John Wood, who resided near Kingsley, passed away a few months ago. Mr. Woods was a leading member in the Grand Traverse Grange, and was also interested in other public enterprises.

Mrs. Josephine Mary Wilhelm, one of the real pioneers of Traverse City, passed away July 31, aged 65 years.

Mrs. Wilhelm was the widow of E. P. Wilhelm, for many years a member of the Hannah & Lay Mercantile Co. Mrs. Wilhelm was born in Bohemia in 1852 and came to this region in 1865. She was a typical home maker, and her fine family are a testimonial to her guidance.

In November, we were all shocked and saddened to learn of the death of Dr. Julius M. Wilhelm, scarcely four months

Digitized by Google

after the death of his mother, Mrs. Josephine M. Wilhelm. Dr. Wilhelm was one of Traverse City's ablest physicians, and had brought health and comfort to many homes in this vicinity. His quiet manner, courteous and business-like, made friends for him everywhere.

George Barlow, 65 years old, one of the most highly respected pioneers of Grand Traverse County, died June 20, at the home of his sister, Mrs. John Kelly. Mr. Barlow came here when a boy with his parents, who were among the earliest families to settle in this region.

Louis Bohrer, a resident of East Bay Township for more than 35 years, died at his home there June 22. Mr. Bohrer was a native of Switzerland, and has been in this country since 1846.

We regret that it is not possible to give a brief sketch of all those who have passed away during the past year, but we will have to be content with simply recording the names:

Mrs. Martha Acker, John Bush, Mrs. Etta Crain, Mrs. Sarah Hewett, Charles Howard, Miles Hill, Mrs. Chas. L. Johnson, Webster Heck, Miss Maude Iles, Mrs. Mary Knoll, Philip Kellogg, Mrs. W. P. Kenney, Geo. Linkletter, Roy J. Hilliker, Rebecca A. Pierce, Charles F. LaBot, Jos. Loyselle, Fred Schroeder, Mrs. Anna Moravec, Thos. J. Wheeler, Chas. F. Zang, Mrs. Eliza Schlemmer, M. Zeran, John Urban, Mrs. Marie Fifarek, Geo. Sipes, Alma Scofield, Eliza Edwards, Harriet T. McGuinness, Sarah Lazarus, Charles Lind, Mrs. Wm. P. Lang, Mrs. Laura Manns, Mrs. Chas. Briel, Washington F. Coxe, A. Novak, Mrs. A. Novak, Mrs. F. M. Hamlin, Mrs. Helen D. Porter, Mrs. Adeline Padden, Daniel Pettis, Anson W. Randall, Mary J. Rousseau, Elizabeth Stafford, Lin Samuels, Sam Smedley, Mrs. Margaret Hock Seiger, J. C. Tillaugh, Sophia Vinton.

Digitized by Google

We have in our vicinity two women who lived to a much greater age than the average man or woman reaches. One of the most interesting characters in Traverse City is Miss Sophia Wright, a typical New England lady of education and culture, of the 19th century. Miss Wright was born in Colchester, Conn., in August, 1823, was educated at Ingham University, N. Y., then taught successfully in high schools and colleges, both North and South, until 1863, when she came North to live. She accompanied her sister and brother-in-law, the late Hon. A. B. Dunlap, to Leelanau County, where she took up a homestead. For the past 20 years Miss Wright has lived in Traverse City, and has been occupied with the work of religion, temperance, and reform that has engaged the women of our land. And now at the age of almost ninety-five years, with every sense but vision keen, she continues her interest in the world at large and in all of the activities that are engaging the loyal American women of today.

Gradually drifting to that land from which no traveler returns, Mrs. Joseph Collins is one of the oldest pioneers of the northern region, being 93 years old. Eva Margaret Herold was born in Wisenein, Germany, February 4, 1825, and lived there until March 18, 1845, when she came to America, landing in Quebec, Canada, going from there to Oswego, New York, where she was married to Joseph Collins, December 22, 1845. In 1865 she came to Michigan, taking up a farm at Glen Arbor, Leelanau County. Mr. Collins followed the fishing trade, while Mrs. Collins worked and took care of the farm. In 1879 they bought and moved onto a farm on the Peninsula, where 23 years she has lived with her daughter, Mrs. D. H. McMullen. Mr. Collins died in 1889. Mrs. Collins had six children, four daughters and two sons, two of whom are living, Mrs. D. H. McMullen and Simeon Collins of Washington. "Grandma

Digitized by Google

Collins," as she is affectionately called, is a true type of the pioneer woman and has always lived a life very close to nature. She had a very keen mind and was very active before taking to her bed. She enjoys visiting with people and likes to hear the topics of the day discussed, and although spending the last days in suffering she enjoys most to hear the voices of her old friends. She has six grandchildren and two great-grandchildren.

Our association now has a permanent home in Traverse City. The building which the old Board of Trade had built for a bureau of information, located on Front Street at the foot of Cass Street, was donated to the Old Settlers and moved to its new location on Union Street at the north end of Union Street bridge, on the ground opposite Hannah Park.

Early this spring our Treasurer, W. S. Anderson; began to feel that our building was not large enough to meet the needs of a home, and it is through his efforts that a fine additoin has been made to the original building. There is a large rest room and two toilet rooms. The fixtures were installed in the latter rooms by the generosity of the City Commission. The grounds have been filled in and a nice lawn started. Mr. Anderson has set out shrubs and flower beds, and roomy porches have been added on both sides of the building.

We now have ample room to display the fine collection of pictures which have been given to us. These pictures include portraits of early settlers, views of the town in early days, old landmarks, etc.

We hope you may all have an opportunity to visit our "Old Settlers' Home" and see what a pleasant place it is.

Through the courtesy of Mr. W. S. Case of Benzonia, we are able to add to our History the following names of Benzie

Digitized by Google

County's residents who have been called home since our last meeting:

	Age	Date of Death	Residence
Mary A. Arner	75	August 28	Joyfield
Samuel Bailey	79	January 24	Benzonia
John Baver	57	February 10	Homestead
Mrs. L. A. Beeman	67	January 10	Benzonia
M. D. Crane	85		Frankfort
Henry M. Coates	73	December 5	Benzonia
Mrs. Anna Gokey	67	July 1	Homestead
Mrs. Rebecca Gardner	96	May 31	Benzonia
John S. Harris	76	April 10	Beulah
Mary A. Lambert	89	April 27	Benzonia
Mrs. Julia Lockman	71	January 3	Thompsonville
Frank C. Moser	66	December 4	Beulah
Matthew Maize	53	May 22	Beulah
Mrs. Cora Manual	53	May 20	Beulah
Mrs. Ida McLain	60	August 28	Benzonia
L. Peterson	80	May 28	Benzonia
Geo. Reed	87	November 3	Joyfield
Mrs. Rust	88	August 14	Homestead
Orrin Sage	94	June 6	Joyfield
Mrs. Howard Smith		May 14	Homestead
Frederic B. Waters	55	January 17	Benzonia
Seymour Wright	56	February 16	Benzonia

This additional list from Crystal Lake Township, Benzonia County, was furnished by Mr. Watson:

Wm. H. Andrews	78	January 5	
Mary J. Andrews	65	February 24	
Clarinda A. Brewer	82	December 9	
Charles S. Collier	81	January 5	

Digitized by Google

Wm. Fritz.....71.....February 13.....
Einar H. Ness.....89.....April 13.....
Marcus DeLafayette Pratt.72.....August 6.....
Hannah E. Stites.....62.....February 1.....
Julla Wallis.....81.....January 29.....

Miss Florence M. Gwinn, secretary-treasurer of the Huron County Pioneer and Historical Society, is collecting data for a history of Huron County to be published in the near future.

The following report has been received from Mrs. Franc L. Adams, wide-awake secretary of the Ingham County Historical and Pioneer Society:

The past year has resulted in the unearthing of considerable Ingham County history. The item of greatest interest to me is the verification of the fact that a Revolutionary soldier is buried in the county, and in order to get proof of this I spent days of toil, travel and study.

Martin Dubois, a soldier of the Revolution and the son of a Revolutionary soldier, came with his wife to the township of Bunkerhill to spend his last days with his children, who were pioneers of this county. He and his wife died on the same day, some time during the year 1854, and were buried in the same grave in the Fitchburg cemetery; this is a small rural cemetery located on a rise of ground on the road running from Leslie to Fitchburg, which no one will fail to notice because of a striking monument of field stone, which the townships of Bunkerhill in Ingham County and Henrietta in Jackson County erected in honor of their soldier dead. This bears the names of about thirty soldiers of the Civil War and six of

Digitized by Google

the War of 1812, and although Martin Dubois sleeps but a few feet from this cenotaph, his name is not in the list of United States heroes, because of the fact that his history remained unknown when this honor roll was made.

The Dubois family is one of the oldest of the noble houses of Colentin, Duchess of Normandy, France, and the Heraldic records at Paris begin with Geoffoi du Bois, a knight banneret and companion of Duke William in the Conquest of England in 1066. It is interesting to trace the line down through the ages, but suffice it to say that, owing to persecution, Louis Dubois and one brother, both strong in the Huguenot faith, left their native land and came to America about 1660 and settled in Ulster County, New York. About 1700 the Dubois line merged into the Anneke Jans line, when Gerret Dubois married a great-granddaughter of that well known historic personage. Gerret Dubois was the father of Conrad, or Coenradt Dubois, who served in Capt. Hasbrouck's Company, John Cantine's regiment, of Ulster County's troops, in 1778, as found in the Lineage Book, Vol. 15, page 196,—also in *New York in the Revolution.*

Conrad was the father of Martin Dubois who served in Col. Wessenfels' regiment under the levies of Ulster County. These levies were drafts from inside militia for service outside the State.

Research along the Dubois line brought out the fact that Mrs. Julia Price of Mason is a granddaughter of Martin Dubois, and has in her possession a conch-shell, which he apparently used as a bugle during the Revolutionary War. Mrs. Price can remember her grandfather, who lived to the ripe old age of 90 years, and also remembers when the bugle mentioned bore an inscription which would have made this shell a proof of the service its owner rendered had it not been

Digitized by Google

obliterated when the shell was stolen and held in possession of people outside the family.

Elijah Grout Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, of Leslie, was the first to gain any knowledge of the service of Martin Dubois, and they will have the honor of placing a suitable marker over his grave. This was done on June 11, 1918, as a part of the program at the annual meeting of the Ingham County Historical and Pioneer Society, which was held that day in Stockbridge.

While in search of the Dubois Revolutionary record, it was discovered that Leslie has the grave of a Revolutionary soldier's wife in the village cemetery. Mrs. Lovey Aldrich was a native of New Hampshire and her first husband was a soldier of the War of 1812. After his death she married Caleb Aldrich, who was enrolled as a Revolutionary soldier of New Hampshire and Vermont. Mrs. Aldrich, in 1886, was the only Revolutionary pensioner then living in the western states. She was a descendant of Hannah Dustin, who is famed in history for her heroic deeds in 1697. While the graves of Revolutionary women are not officially recognized and marked, unless these women performed some patriotic deed worthy of note, it would not be out of place to have flags put on the graves of Margerite Dubois and Lovey Aldrich, if for no other reason than because they lived with and cared for their patriot husbands in their declining years.

It is never out of place to speak of notable relics of early days and to display them whenever possible. It was my good fortune while writing a paper on "Sun-dials and Clocks" to find that Dr. S. H. Culver, of Mason, had in his possession a pocket sun-dial over 250 years old, which he very kindly loaned me to use in illustrating my subject. This is a Ger-

Digitized by Google

man product, but its great age is strong proof that no present-day German propaganda attends it.

Another relic of interest, not as old as the one just mentioned, is a mail-sack recently placed in the museum at the Capitol, by A. A. Hall, supervisor of Stockbridge Township. The first mail ever brought into Ingham County was carried in this pouch over the Government road between Dexter and Stockbridge. The first mail-carrier was David Rogers, and if one were giving an historical sketch of Ingham County and Stockbridge Township, his name would head the list of pioneers and hold a place of prominence in the early history.

David Rogers was born in Newark, N. J., in 1798, and nothing more is learned of him until November, 1833, when he came into the southeast corner of Ingham County and located on Government land. He had been living in Lima, Washtenaw County, and went back there to spend the winter and get out the timbers for his house. These he put onto runners in the following March and took them over the trail to his holdings where he soon set out the first house in the county and began clearing his land.

As the first Government road through Stockbridge was established in 1848 it seems reasonable to think that it was about that date that Mr. Rogers used the mail-sack before mentioned. It is in a good state of preservation, although it lay for years in an old building in Stockbridge where it was discovered by Mr. Hall when the building was demolished a few years ago; and he, thinking it worthy of a place in the archives of the State, presented it to Mrs. Ferrey to be placed in the State museum.

The name of David Rogers stands for much in Ingham County, and his work is not forgotten; its results are still seen though he has been dead since 1875. He was the first justice

Digitized by Google

of the peace in Stockbridge and in those days was obliged to go to Jackson in order to qualify for his office.

Stockbridge is rich in historical material, and it is hoped that much of this material can be gathered and put into form for future reference. It is interesting to meet Mrs. Abby Clark, said to be the first white child born there; to learn of Asa Thompson, who turned the first sod in the village; of Silas Beebe, who was the first postmaster and built the first store; of the first newspaper published, and many other items intimately connected with that section.

It is my great pleasure to have in my possession the files of the *Ingham County News* from 1869 to 1900, and they furnish a source of information which I find very valuable in my research work for the State Historical Commission, the Daughters of the American Revolution, the Ingham County Historical and Pioneer Society and the Woman's Relief Corps.

At the county historical meeting held in Mason last June, a history of Onondaga Township was read by Mrs. Ira Eldred of Onondaga, and this paper was placed in the files of the State Historical Commission. Mrs. M. B. Ferrey at that time gave a talk entitled "The Melting Pot," and displayed costumes and relics of great interest to all. A wonderful display of relics was loaned by Mason residents, which emphasized the benefit that could be derived from a county historical museum, which the children from the rural schools could visit on certain days and where they could hear the story of the things which represent history. Then, with a broadened vision, the lessons learned from their text-books would mean much more to them.

The present war with its various activities is the most important, all-absorbing thing the ages have brought us, but the history of our forefathers, the pioneers of this great land,

Digitized by Google

and particularly of our own great peninsular commonwealth should not be lost sight of, for it is through them and their indomitable spirit which is their legacy to us, that we are able to add such momentum to the forces of the Allies that victory shall crown their efforts.

In times past, war records have been so carelessly kept that many times it was with difficulty that a soldier's history could be accurately ascertained. To obviate that difficulty regarding the soldiers of the present war, the Daughters of the American Revolution have undertaken, through a branch known as "Home Ties and War Records," the stupendous task of getting the history of each soldier, to be kept as a permanent record.

The fuel situation during the past winter and the comments made on the possibility of finding coal in southern Michigan, brought to mind an episode which occurred at the county seat in 1873. Acting on a suggestion made by Douglass Houghton to a Mason pioneer in 1837, it was determined by thirteen men here, that they would follow up the indications which Houghton, the great geologist, found along Sycamore Creek, mine the coal and make their fortunes. Of those thirteen stockholders, only one, L. C. Webb, is now living, and he tells that many borings were made on the west side of the stream on the land now owned by the Michigan Railway Co., J. W. Hyde and Mrs. F. L. Adams. For some time their hopes ran high, but after each had sunk about $135, with only a hole in the ground to show for it, the project was abandoned. Several four-foot veins of good coal were found in their digging, and 33 feet below the surface they ran through a four-foot layer of rich fire clay, and for a time there was talk of installing potteries, but the coal and clay both lie undisturbed. Experts from Jackson mines pronounced the coal found here

Digitized by Google

an extra fine grade of bituminous coal, containing but little sulphur. Other mining attempts were made near Mason, one in Aurelius Township, said to be a good quality of cannel coal underlying many acres of land, and another in Alaiedon, but these mines of "dusty diamonds" were soon abandoned; it brings no satisfaction to the owners to know they own these hidden treasures, which are unattainable, as they struggle along with their neighbors trying to procure fuel of some sort with which to warm their homes.

While writing a history of "Early Ingham" a few months ago, I learned where as late as 1874 there still existed proof that the "Mound Builders" of prehistoric ages once occupied this region. Mr. O. M. Barnes, a pioneer said to have been an authority on such matters, told at that date how he helped open these mounds and found human bones, beads, cooking utensils, and in one a wooden structure which had apparently been used to protect the enclosed body from the earth. One was on a farm a few miles west of Mason known as the Huram Bristol farm, and the other, much larger, was on section 17 in Leslie Township. The last named mound was 180 by 120 feet in size and had been surrounded by a moat or ditch, then filled up or crumbled away. In the enclosures were large trees growing.

To return to the society of Ingham County. Forty-six names have been reported for the memorial list, though but ten of them appear on the roll of membership for the Ingham County Historical and Pioneer Society.

In Ionia County the Ladies' Literary Club of Danby have placed a fine boulder on the roadside between Portland and Sebewa bearing the inscription

Digitized by Google

1845

MISH-SHIM-ME-NE-CON-ING

1918

In the paper read by Mrs. L. P. Brock on the occasion of its dedication it is stated that the name Mish-shim-me-ne-coning is Ottawa for "peaceful valley," and that the Indian village here contained about 150 inhabitants. About 1844 the Methodist missionary Manasseh Hickey labored among them with success, and about 1856 in accord with an Act of Congress respecting the removal of the Indians, they were taken to a reservation in Isabella County.

The movement to commemorate this village, some marks of which may still be seen, was started by Mrs. Emma Lyon, president of the Ladies' Literary Club of Danby. The memorial boulder lies in front of the spot where the church stood. The dedication took place on May 28, the eighty-fifth anniversary of the arrival of the Samuel Dexter colony at Ionia, one of the earliest, if not the earliest, settlement of the Grand River region.

Among others present on this occasion was Mr. Martin Compton, 85 years of age, a son of John Compton who assisted Manasseh Hickey and taught the first school among these Indians; and Mr. Hall Ingalls, over 80 years old, who was raised from babyhood among them and whose father sold the land on which their town was built. Each told stories of their early experiences with the Indians here.

A pleasing feature of the program was the rendering of Cob-bo-moo-sa's "Lament," by Mrs. Capt. S. A. Mulhauser of Ionia. Cob-bo-moo-sa was chief of the last Indian village at Ionia when the Indians sold to Mr. Dexter their gardens and wigwams for the use of the first settlers until log houses could be built. The chief lived for some years in his wigwam about

Digitized by Google

four miles west of Ionia. About 1856 his band was removed to Oceana County, and this lament of the old chief was his feeling put in poetic form by Mr. Baxter of Grand Rapids and printed in an early Grand Rapids newspaper. The old chief died about 1866, said to have been over 100 years old. After him are named a river, a small lake, a postoffice, and an Indian mission school in the eastern part of Oceana County where a number of his descendants still live.

The second annual pioneer picnic of the Iosco County Gleaner Federation was given on June 29 at Hale, followed by a pioneer program of old time music, reminiscences and patriotic addresses. A specially praiseworthy action of the Federation was the appointment of corresponding secretaries in each township to aid in gathering data for a history of the county.

The following persons were appointed:

Alabaster—Frank Robinson
Baldwin—John Sullivan
Burleigh—Peter Hottois
Grant—Mrs. John Fraser
Oscoda—James Hull
Plainfield—E. V. Esmond
Sherman—Mrs. John Cataline
Tawas—Mrs. James Chambers
Wilber—John McMullen
East Tawas—B. F. Oakes
Tawas City—J. M. Waterbury
Whittemore—H. M. Belknap

Reports from these representatives of the county organization will be sent to the secretary, Mrs. Fred Jennings, of Hale,

Digitized by Google

and published in the *Iosco County Gazette*. Special attention will be given to the collecting of fugitive war material and pioneer museum objects. It is expected that a pioneer room may be furnished later at the county seat for such valuable relics as may be recovered. Teachers will urge pupils to search their homes and interview the old pioneers of their districts and will make reports of their finds to the township representative. In this way an effective historical organization will be built up that will be a pride to the county. A special interest in this work is being taken by Hon. Augustus C. Carton of East Tawas, president of the State Historical Society.

Officers for the coming year were elected as follows:

President—John A. Campbell, Tawas City

Vice-President—Miss Edna Otis, East Tawas

Secretary-Treasurer—Mrs. Fred Jennings, Hale

The following report of the Oakland County Pioneer and Historical Society has been received from the secretary, Mrs. Lillian Drake Avery of Pontiac:

The officers of our Oakland County Pioneer and Historical Society are:

President—Joseph L. Stockwell

First Vice-President—Ralzemond A. Parker

Second Vice-President—Mortimer L. Leggett

Third Vice-President—Mrs. Carrie J. Craft

Secretary—Mrs. Lillian D. Avery

Treasurer—Harry O. Whitfield

The annual meeting and banquet were held Feb. 22, and were well attended by the old residents of the county.

As the township of Avon gave up the celebration of their

Digitized by Google

centennial in 1817 on account of war activities, the county society invited the people of this township to present their historical papers relating to the first settlement in the county at the last meeting Feb. 22, 1918. Three interesting papers were given. "The First Settlements in Avon," by Mrs. J. W. Willson; "The Personality of the First Settlers," by Miss Nellie Snook, and "A Hundred Years of Progress in Avon," by Miss Eva Barwise.

It is the purpose of the society to have the program next year devoted to the observance of the 100th anniversary of the settlements in Pontiac, Bloomfield and Waterford townships.

Realizing the importance of preserving the history of the various activities of the county during the war, the secretary enlisted the assistance of a committee appointed from the Woman's Literary Club of which she was chairman. The work was divided under the following headings:

The Draft Board—Mrs. Herman Seagraves
Red Cross—Mrs. Joseph W. Newbigging
Food and Fuel—Mrs. Chas. H. Going
Women's Work—Mrs. Arthur F. Newberry
Educational—Miss Elizabeth Efferts
Civilian Activities—Mrs. Geo. W. Smith.

Personals and the usual vital and historical articles are the work of the secretary, Mrs. Lillian D. Avery. Scrapbooks have been provided for each subject except the personals, which are kept by the card-index plan. The personal clippings are mounted on manilla-paper backing, 9½x4⅞, which takes a trifle more than two columns of newspaper. When front and back are covered, another sheet is used, and two or more can be joined together by a gummed binding that is specially pre-

Digitized by Google

pared for mounting sheet music. Several of these bound leaves could be bound together in a pamphlet cover and filed in this manner as the material under one heading increases. Pictures of the boys and their officers, letters, and anything that may be of interest in addition can be filed with the newspaper clippings.

It is our purpose in the club to have a day in November devoted to our historical work. Each member of the committee at that time gives a summary of the work she has done. When I last heard from my helpers each one was doing her level best not to let anything of importance get away from her. So I hope Old Oakland County may have some work that she will feel proud of in the future.

August 8 and 9 at Pentwater in Oceana County were held jointly the 33rd annual meeting of the Old Settlers' Historical Association and the 45th annual meeting of the Veterans' Monument Association. Mr. F. O. Gardner, president of both organizations, presided, and a band concert was given each day. Dinner was furnished free on the camping grounds. It was voted that C. E. Mears gave the best talk, and was awarded a prize. Among those present was Mr. F. W. Fincher, the first school teacher of Oceana County.

In Roscommon County the only historical work undertaken for years has been that done by the Women's Club. This year they held a special meeting and under the inspiration of Mrs. John Carter promised to have one person appointed in each township to gather all possible data for a history of the county. These enterprising women will undoubtedly have the support

Digitized by Google

of the pioneers and may well form the nucleus of a Roscommon County Historical Society.

The forty-fifth annual meeting of the St. Joseph County Pioneer and Historical Society was held at Centerville on June 12. A picnic dinner was followed by an inspiring program in which Hon. Chase S. Osborn spoke on "The Pioneers of the World." The live spirit of the meeting is reflected in a handbill containing the program in which is announced "A wonderful day, every minute full of the best the world affords. Come and continue this great organization, founded by our fathers and dedicated to booming St. Joseph County and making it a better place in which to live. Come and learn of Auld Lang Syne and honor the pioneers yet with us. Your attendance makes you a member."

Among those taking part in the program were Mayor Guy L. Thoms, James Yauney, the "grand old man" of St. Joseph County, and Mrs. Eleanor Hazzard Peacock of Detroit who furnished several vocal selections, accompanied by Mrs. C. H. Bennett of Detroit. The Centerville Band gave a concert. Mr. J. H. Worthington of Mendon, president of the association, presided at the meeting.

Vice-presidents have been appointed for each township to help gather the county's history, as follows:

Leonidas—David Purdy
Mendon—John Mathewson
Park—James Wakeman
Flowerfield—Wm. Null
Fabius—C. L. Shafer
Lockport—John J. Kline
Nottawa—H. S. Leinbach

Digitized by Google

Colon—Samuel C. Thoms
Constantine—"Uncle Hi" Bittenbender
Florence—James Yauney
Bur Oak—A. M. Graham
Sherman—Alexander Sharp
Mottville—B. McGill
White Pigeon—David Barnes
Fawn River—S. Williams
Sturgis—S. Williams
Sturgis—James Sheap
Three Rivers—Major S. Langley
Sturgis City—Miss Aloysia McLaughlin

The Washtenaw Pioneer and Historical Society held its annual meeting June 12 at Saline. On motion of Mr. B. A. Finney of Ann Arbor the society voted to turn over to the Michigan Historical Commission its collection of historical material now in the Court House at Ann Arbor where it might be more useful and better cared for,—subject to recall if conditions should arise in the future to make such recall desirable. A committee consisting of Secretary Robert Campbell, Mr. Goodell of Ann Arbor, Mr. B. D. Kelly of Ypsilanti and Mr. Finney was appointed to look after the transfer. Mr. Finney was elected president for the coming year.

At this meeting Prof. Laird of the Normal College gave an inspiring talk on "The Present War." The High School chorus rendered appropriate music, and the ladies of Saline furnished a dinner to members and guests.

The State is indebted to Mrs. Sophia Farland of Dearborn, Wayne County, for several newspapers containing articles on the early history of Dearborn and sketches of its pioneers.

Digitized by Google

Daughters of the American Revolution

(Report of State Chairman of Historic-Spots Committee for Michigan from October, 1916, to October, 1917)

ALEXANDER MACOMB CHAPTER, MT. CLEMENS

Site of first Court House in Macomb County marked by an electric flag on the present Court House which stands on the same spot as the first one.

Macomb County in the early days comprised all the territory now forming the counties of St. Clair, Oakland, Livingston, Genesee, LaPeer, large portions of Shiawassee, Ingham, Sanilac, Tuscola and the southeast corner of Huron and portions of two townships in Saginaw County.

ALGONQUIN CHAPTER, BENTON HARBOR AND ST. JOSEPH

(A) Old Territorial Road near Keeler marked with a boulder and bronze tablet by Algonquin Chapter and Ladies' Literary Club of Keeler. Tablet, the gift of Club; boulder, the gift of Chapter's Registrar.

(B) Revolutionary Soldiers' Graves. Located four.

Grave of Edward Evans, Constantine Cemetery, marked June 30, 1917. (This grave was located by the State Chairman of Historic-Spots Committee in 1914. A detailed history of this soldier is to be found in Abiel Fellows Chapter's Historical Collection)

BATTLE CREEK CHAPTER, BATTLE CREEK

Assisted with marker at Climax, Mich., boulder and tablet, for first rural mail route in southern Michigan.

Digitized by Google

CHARITY COOK CHAPTER, HOMER

(A) First Rural Mail Route in southern Michigan at Climax, Michigan, with tablet and boulder. Chapter assisted with expense.

(B) Pay for the care of two graves. Revolutionary Soldier, Elijah B. Cook. Real Daughter, Charity Cook. In Homer Cemetery.

COLDWATER CHAPTER, COLDWATER

Two Revolutionary Soldiers' graves located.

ELIJAH GROUT CHAPTER, LESLIE

(A) Revolutionary Soldier's grave. Martin Dubois' grave located, in township of Bunker Hill.

(B) Village erected flag pole. Chapter presented flag, floated July 4, 1917.

FORT ST. JOSEPH CHAPTER, NILES

Fund started to mark Old Carey Mission west of Niles, at a colonial tea, February 22, 1917, at home of Mrs. F. M. Bonines.

GENESEE CHAPTER, FLINT

(A) Revolutionary Soldier's grave located. John Britton, in cemetery between Atlas and Goodrich. (Marker will be placed before State convention meets)

(B) Four flag poles erected through efforts of Genesee Chapter by City Park Board in city parks. Two steel poles; two wooden poles.

HANNAH M'INTOSH CADY CHAPTER, ALLEGAN

(A) Revolutionary Soldier's grave marked. Stephen Pratt, 1761-1854, Otsego Cemetery. Date of marking May 23, 1917.

(B) Real Daughter's grave marked with bronze tablet.

Digitized by Google

Hannah McIntosh Cady, Allegan Cemetery. Date of marking June 14, 1917.

JOB WINSLOW CHAPTER, TRAVERSE CITY

Flag pole erected on City Library grounds in memory of the pioneers of Grand Traverse County, April 9, 1917.

MARY MARSHALL CHAPTER, MARSHALL

Memorial to first rural free mail delivery at Climax, assisted in placing boulder and tablet with contribution of ten cents per capita.

MENOMINEE CHAPTER, MENOMINEE

Trail Bay de Nocquet, marking under way, with 21-ton boulder and a beautiful and suitable bronze tablet. This trail was that of the Indians and early fur traders of the region. This is the first Indian trail to be marked in the Upper Peninsula, which is rich in Indian history.

OTSIKETA CHAPTER, ST. CLAIR

Marked site of Fort St. Clair with boulder and bronze tablet. Date of marking May 30, 1917.

SARAH TREAT PRUDDEN CHAPTER, JACKSON

Early trail marked by bronze tablet in sidewalk. Date of marking June 14, 1917.

This is the St. Joseph Trail where it crossed the first town square of Jackson in 1830. Tablet placed at corner of Main and Jackson streets. Cost $217.

SHIAWASSEE CHAPTER, OWOSSO

Flag pole erected in center of grounds in front of Armory June 14, 1917.

Digitized by Google

SOPHIE DE MARSAC CAMPAU CHAPTER, GRAND RAPIDS

Marked the site of the largest Indian Village on the Grand River in 1825, with a bronze tablet on the Straight School. The tablet was the gift of Mrs. L. Victor Seydel, the retiring regent. Date of marking June 14, 1917.

YPSILANTI CHAPTER, YPSILANTI

Site of first permanent building in Ypsilanti was marked by a bronze tablet on the Detroit Edison Building, corner of Huron and Pearl streets. Inscription reads, To commemorate the site of the first permanent building in Washtenaw County, Godfroy's on the Pottawottomi Trail, erected as a trading post by Gabriel Godfroy in 1809. Erected by Ypsilanti Chapter, D. A. R.

SUMMARY.

5 Historic Spots marked:

First Court House, Macomb County, Electric Flag, Alexander Macomb Chapter.

First Rural Mail Route, southern Michigan, tablet and boulder erected by Charity Cook, Marshall, and Albion and Battle Creek Chapters.

Site of Fort St. Clair. Boulder and bronze tablet by Otsiketa Chapter, May 30, 1917.

Site of largest Indian Village on Grand River; bronze tablet by Sophie de Marsac Campau Chapter; tablet the gift of Mrs. L. Victor Seydel, June 14, 1917.

Site of first permanent building, Ypsilanti; bronze tablet by Ypsilanti Chapter.

3 Roads and Trails marked:

Territorial Road near Keeler; boulder and bronze tablet; marked by Algonquin Chapter and Ladies' Club of Keeler.

Digitized by Google

Indian and fur traders' trail, Menominee; boulder and bronze tablet, by Menominee Chapter.

Early trail to St. Joseph where it crossed public square of Jackson; bronze tablet by Sarah Treat Prudden Chapter.

7 Flag poles:

Elijah Grout Chapter gave flag pole erected by Village of Leslie.

Four secured by Genesee Chapter efforts, for City parks of Flint through Park Board.

Job Winslow Chapter, placed flag pole in Library grounds in memory of pioneers of Grand Traverse region.

Shiawassee Chapter erected flag pole at Armory in Owosso.

3 Revolutionary Soldiers' graves marked:

Rev. Edward Evans, Constantine Cemetery, marked by Algonquin Chapter, June 30, 1917.

John Britton, Cemetery between Atlas and Goodrich, marking under way by Genesee Chapter.

Stephen Pratt, Otsego Cemetery, marked by Hannah McIntosh Cady Chapter, May 23, 1917.

7 Revolutionary Soldiers' graves located:

Four soldiers' graves by Algonquin Chapter.

Two soldiers' graves by Coldwater Chapter.

Martin Dubois, Bunker Hill Township, by Elijah Grout Chapter, Leslie.

1 Real Daughter's grave marked. Hannah McIntosh Cady, Allegan. Marked June 14, 1917, by Hannah McIntosh Cady Chapter.

Respectfully submitted,

(DR.) BLANCHE M. HAINES,

State Chairman of Historic-Spots Committee.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PAPERS

Digitized by Google

MICHIGAN, MY MICHIGAN

(Dedicated to the Marquette Chapter, D. A. R., by Lilia Bartlett King, and sung at the Marquette meeting of the State Historical Society, 1918)

Land of my love, they sing to thee,
Michigan, my Michigan.
Brave sons and daughters fair to see,
Michigan, my Michigan.
Land where the lofty pine trees grow,
Land where the golden wheat-fields glow,
Thou land of Sun and land of Snow,
Michigan, my Michigan.

On murmuring wires thy copper sings
"Michigan, my Michigan."
Each forge in anvil chorus rings
"Michigan, my Michigan."
Thou land of hill and land of plain,
Thy lakes and rivers sing one strain,
Thy forests echo the refrain,
"Michigan, my Michigan."

Thou land of apple and of vine,
Michigan, my Michigan.
On North and South thy Star doth shine,
Michigan, my Michigan.
And as from every clime they throng
Where Knowledge waits thy groves among,
Young men and maidens swell the song,
"Michigan, my Michigan."

Digitized by Google

'Twas here our Fathers did decree,
Michigan, my Michigan,
"Religion and Morality,"
Michigan, my Michigan.
Our prayers and theirs arise to Thee,
Great God of land and rolling sea,
For this fair State's prosperity,
Michigan, my Michigan.

Digitized by Google

The University of Michigan in the War

(*The First Phase*)

By R. M. Wenley, Litt. D., LL.D., D. C. L.

Ann Arbor

A GREAT University, enlisting more than eight thousand souls in its immediate work, and numbering more than forty thousand *alumni,* now scattered to the four corners of the earth, cannot be regarded as an object or thing capable of being caught up and carried off in a basket; nor can it be viewed as a curious museum specimen, lying still and inert for any chance spectator to describe. On the contrary, it is a living organism, informed by a central spirit, possessing a character of its own calculated to stamp its members with more or less indelible tendencies. Thus, when an unprecedented situation overtakes it like a thief in the night, the bare telling of a tale is out of place, because, with this, all focus flees. So the sole way of approach lies through the insight of constructive imagination. If we do not dream dreams, we must at least see visions. Statistics, names and similar paraphernalia sink to their proper level—they become symbols of something far more deeply interfused.

At any moment in the life of any academic organization, the Faculty is apt to be more interesting than the students, and for an obvious reason. The great mass of youngsters tend to a general level of likeness; the teachers, especially those who count, are apt to be highly differentiated—divergent persons, each of whom makes himself felt in his peculiarly individual

Digitized by Google

fashion. For this reason, we may turn to the activities of the Faculty in the war, to begin with.

Many men still in the prime of life can recall the day when the "college professor" was regarded as belonging to a third sex. Just as our ancestors in Europe spoke of "men, women and priests;" just as our contemporaries in America often allude laughingly to "men, women and schoolmarms," so, forty or fifty years ago, one might have heard of men, women and college professors. Living apart in the shady groves of academe, unspotted from and untroubled by the sad world, professors were a curious species to the multitude. The few might have seen select specimens from time to time, the people as a whole knew little or nothing of the breed. At best, it was judged to be something queer and, more than likely, incompetent, when practical affairs came in question. Hence the wry faces that are pulled even now, when the word "academic" falls from scornful lips. But the old college, with its two hundred students, one hundred and eighty of them in training for the Protestant ministry, with its dozen professors, recruited from the same ministry, has gone, like the stage-coach, the peddler, and the home-industry. Your contemporary professor is a man in a world of men—often a man of affairs who plays quietly a prominent part in his State, serving the people in numerous ways. Likely enough, he presides over the destinies of a complicated department, enrolling many hundreds of students and spending many thousands of dollars annually. He must select, estimate and manage a score or more of associates, be responsible for the purchase, care and use of costly apparatus. Sometimes, he is a notable public figure, familiar not merely in his own State, but throughout the country and, as it may happen, better known in Europe than to his next-door neighbor. Above all, he is the possessor of expert knowledge.

Digitized by Google

Indeed, such is the situation in the contemporary United States that professors probably monopolize a greater proportion of the available expert knowledge of the country than in any other land. If the public be unaware of this, it is because the real masters are not given to much talk.

Now, the importance of the part played by the universities differs from nation to nation. This holds true on the intellectual no less than on the social side. For example, frequent comment has been passed upon the significant paucity of academic teachers on the list of the great thinkers in England. From Francis Bacon, whose "Novum Organum" was published nigh four hundred years ago, to Herbert Spencer, university professors were conspicuous by their absence. Similarly, scientific leaders, like Priestley, Davy, Wollaston, Young, Dalton, Faraday, Joule, George Green, Boole and Darwin, worked outside the pale of the universities. In Scotland, on the contrary, nearly all the great names, Hume the most conspicuous exception, belong to the academic circle—and, when Edinburgh refused Hume a professorship, she made one of her immortal blunders. The United States resembles Scotland, and the resemblance grows closer as our universities gain strength and solidity. We are reminded continually, and justly, that the future of our scholarship and science depends upon the professoriate. Private investigators are the exception, not the rule, for the group of experts associated with the Government are, like the professors, public servants. Accordingly, it is very natural that, at a national crisis, when expert knowledge of every kind must be enlisted in the service of the country, hundreds, probably thousands, of members of the faculties of our universities should have been summoned to lend aid. If the faculties of the other great universities have been called upon in the same proportion as the Michigan faculty, some two thou-

Digitized by Google

sand professors, drawn from fifteen leading institutions only, must be working in or for Washington. At a recent meeting in Chicago, attended by some of our most distinguished men, I was struck profoundly by the accounts presented of the service now being rendered by professors. These reports were made more impressive by the fact that this service was receiving open recognition, not merely from Government officials, who knew it at first hand, but also from the general public. To the same effect was a remark, made to me only yesterday by an eminent industrial chemist. He declared that the work now being done by the staff of the University of Michigan would bring home to the people and to their representatives in the Legislature the indispensableness of the University as no report or conspectus of figures, of the kind so often circulated at Lansing, could possibly do. Let us hope that the prophecy was well taken.

Soon after the declaration of war, the Regents placed all the facilities—and the most important facilities are men—at the disposal of the Government, and numerous drafts have already been made upon the experience and knowledge of my colleagues, of whom some one hundred and twenty-five are now in the exclusive service of the Administration. The reasons are plain enough. The mighty conflict, in which we are now partners, has brought the practice of a theory formulated long since by military politicians and social stategists. It is, that the entire resources of a nation must be mobilized and thrust against the enemy. In former days, the army stood aside, more or less apart from the life of the whole body of the people. Today, you and I are asked to do our part to keep the fighting men in the field; and we are assured constantly that our part is no less important than that of those who give their bodies to the bullet. "Save and serve" applies to all civilians, so much so that they too become part and parcel of the available fight-

Digitized by Google

ing force. For, as they save, they make food available for the soldier and sailor, they create means for the supply of clothing, equipment and munitions; as they serve, they release others to join the firing line, or they step in to perform vacated tasks. But even this is the material side to a large extent. And we must never forget for a moment that the spiritual aspect is no less important. For, it is a case of brains against brains, of ingenuity and knowledge against ingenuity and knowledge, of stern purpose to win against stern purpose to win. We must go the enemy one better in the devices to be put into the hands of our defenders. The technical backing of a modern army and navy is of overwhelming moment. The engineer, the chemist, the inventor, the mathematician, the ordnance expert, the metallurgist, the botanist, the physician, the surgeon, the agriculturalist, the statistician, the historian, the captain of industry, to name but a few, are all equally indispensable. It may well take a score of men to keep a single soldier at the front effectively. Any talent may tell its tale here, and help to bring home the bacon. In the same way thinkers are necessary—moralists, statesmen, jurists, anthropologists—to formulate the spiritual issues. This the Germans know right well, and we must learn it.

In these circumstances, no one need be surprised to learn that one in every four members of the Faculty is engaged either in important Government work, or in lending his talents to some administrative service. Eleven have the rank of major, twelve of captain. There are at least ten other commissioned officers, and a much larger number the magnitude of whose service has no relation to rank, official or other. Among them are to be found physicians, surgeons, hospital experts, quartermasters, chemists, engineers, metallurgists, geologists, botanists and agriculturalists; leaders in social work, in insurance,

Digitized by Google

in aviation, in library administration, in psychology and education, in trade and commercial relations; linguists and so forth. Nor is this all. An unknown number give of their knowledge to the Government and, at the same time, maintain the University in operation from day to day. They are consulted upon every conceivable problem. I may not tell tales out of school here. But I may say that even philosophers, who are popularly supposed to dwell far away from the rough-and-tumble of the workaday world, have been drawn into the service. If this be true of them, very little imagination is needed to infer what is true of the others—Government can use any kind of brains, any line of specialized mastery. And, speaking of imagination, let me refer at greater length to two examples of service, eminently fitted to stir it. They are excellent examples of Michigan quality.

At the moment when the conflict first blazed forth upon a dismayed and incredulous Europe, Professor René Talamon, of the Department of Romance Languages, was in Paris—upon his wedding tour. Being a French citizen, he immediately joined the colors. He saw trench warfare in the darkest days, when the German hosts, taking advantage of overwhelming superiority in numbers and equipment, were attempting to deliver a knock-out blow to France. Thanks to him and his devoted comrades, the peril was averted. But at great price. Many thousands made the supreme sacrifice, many more thousands were wounded, among them Mr. Talamon. After a long convalescence, which left him disabled in one arm, he returned to the service, and capitalized his dear-bought experience in training French recruits, more recently in familiarizing Americans, whom he understands so well, with the subtle tricks of the new warfare. Such a tale stirs the blood, and when Mr. Talamon appears in our midst again, we mean to let him know

Digitized by Google

how high an estimate we put upon his self-sacrifice, courage and grit. The men who were "in it" at the start encountered fearful odds to save the day. As Mr. Talamon is not here to read this, I may fall into the Scottish tongue, and say that he is a bonnie man; he is evidently a bonnie fighter also, of the kind that the Scots love—and produce. Now, all the world loves such, even if it does not, and never can, realize the perils outfaced, the hardships serenely borne, the dangers confronted —and overcome. The Michigan Faculty is proud of him, proud of itself because he belongs to it.

Again, the advance guard of our boys is "over there" now, with the main body to follow. "Over there" is far, far away. The lads are to be in a strange country, and we who are left gaze after them wistfully, want to know how they fare, to keep in close touch. For this purpose, the American University Union has been founded, and will act as a principal agency. It provides headquarters in Paris, where Michigan men can fraternize, and keep one another in good heart by singing the familiar songs and recalling the old times of fellowship at Ann Arbor. This is all very well for them—a bit of America in France must be as a spring of water in a thirsty land. But, what about us? Well, the Union will list all the boys, will keep track of their whereabouts, and will send us news of them as occasion demands—with extraordinary rapidity and accuracy, everything considered. Members of the great Eastern universities, like Harvard, Yale and Princeton, are on hand to look after their boys. Nor is Michigan outdone. My immediate colleague, Professor Charles Bruce Vibbert, went to Paris in August, 1917, and has been in charge of this important work from the first. One of our graduate students, Mr. Warren J. Vinton, of Detroit, has followed him, to assist in the onerous task. Their duties, undertaken at great personal sacrifice, of

Digitized by Google

which the U-boat peril is but a small part, are also calculated to stir the imagination. As the fighting proceeds, we shall have Messrs. Vibbert and Vinton in mind constantly, because we shall hang breathlessly upon their news, anticipating that they will keep us informed about our loved ones, about our friends, about our pupils. It is a splendid service, of which, once more, the Michigan Faculty is proud. Its great importance, easily apt to be overlooked, may be brought home to all by those extracts from a recent letter, sent by Mr. Vinton to President Hutchins:

"The work of the Union and of the Michigan Bureau increases every day, and the number of men visiting us each week is continually growing.

"Both Professor Vibbert and I keep busy from early morning till midnight. Visiting with Michigan men who drop in, telling them the latest news from home and from their friends in France is, we think, most important and worth while, yet it does take up a lot of time. Our Bureau being the best informed on Paris and French affairs, and having two men who speak French, has become the center of French affairs. We are charged with locating in pensions or private families, those men who desire such lodgment; we keep the Union's record of French teachers, and try to supply applicants with some suited to their needs. We also dispense information regarding the theaters, the monuments and the points of interest in Paris, and have laid out sightseeing tours for many a man. In short, we are a sort of Parisian bureau of information.

"Moreover, we are still taking care of the hospitality offered us by so many French homes. There are now so many French homes receiving us that Professor Vibbert and I are taking turns leading the parties from the Union and introducing the men to their hosts. The courtesy and friendliness of the

Digitized by Google

French people is above all praise, showing, as it does, their appreciation and their love of their newest ally. We shop, too, for our men who are billeted outside of Paris or who are close to the front. We forward their mail and answer a flood of letters, so you see our time is not hanging heavy on our hands."

It may be affirmed with no little confidence that, if every group of our citizens puts its back into the struggle as the Michigan Faculty has done and is doing, the end will be brought much nearer. But my colleagues are taking no peculiar credit to themselves. For, if they do not realize what this war implies at rock-bottom, who can?

When we turn to the Alumni, graduate and undergraduate, our records are necessarily less accurate, and far from complete. We know that, in October, 1917, our enrollment of men dropped 1,239, and we had lists of 1,332 graduates in active service; we know that 1,046 students had been inducted into various arms; the numbers in the undergraduate R. O. T. C., and in the special work of medicine, dentistry and engineering ran to nigh 2,000. Taking these figures, together with a rough, and conservative, estimate for other Alumni, we were able to place the total at 6,700, before the Selective Draft had operated. By May, 1918, twenty-eight had given their lives. Already, the finger of death has touched the families of two of my colleagues. As time passes, our records will become more complete and, not till they are thus complete, will it be possible to estimate the service rendered by the sons of the University with any degree of exactitude. As I am perforce confining myself to the first phase, I must rest content with a description of the spirit that animated the Michigan boys who met the call voluntarily. Fortunately, I had every opportunity for personal observation of the prevalent attitude.

Recall, to begin with, that America was caught hopelessly

Digitized by Google

unprepared, and that Michigan, in particular, not being a Land Grant college, offered no military training. Thus, when war was declared, the University had but one hundred and fifty-seven men ready for immediate embodiment in the forces of the United States. These were the members of the VII and VIII Divisions of the Michigan Naval Militia. Yet, despite this handicap, our students, like others the country over, especially in the East, detected the real issue sooner and more definitely than the average citizen. Thanks to their educational opportunities, thanks to the team-work learned in their sports, thanks to their heart-to-heart talks (many of which I was privileged to share), they envisaged the situation clearly and, all things considered, quickly. They early enjoyed the vision that was to transmute the nation at large later. Colorless youngsters most of them seemed to be, yet, deep down, they were moved profoundly, and made haste to "hitch their wagon to a star." As I came into contact with them familiarly, this appeared to me to be the main phenomenon.

It was not that they sensed merely a great adventure overseas; rather, they felt the stern call of duty, and responded to convictions such as one had not been accustomed to associate with their prevalent light-hearted whimsicalities. I have no doubt that the infernal blackguardism of the Germans had much effect. Fritz is a dirty fighter and, no less, a bad loser. And your sport-loving student has no use for either. So, all the boys were asking not only, "What can *I* do?" but, "What can I do *at once*?" Hence, they ceased on a sudden to be commonplace, because their souls shone with a strange refulgence. They had already gained a mighty victory—victory over themselves, over their personal welfare, above all, over the individualistic preconceptions inherited by them from us older folk, more shame to us. There was no shouting, much less bravado,

Digitized by Google

but clear-eyed seriousness in face of a tremendous issue whose end nobody could foresee.

Taught in the classroom that there are high ideals and that, in the long run, such ideals govern men, the boys, nevertheless, had had no opportunity to test the faith that might have been transmitted to them by their teachers. And now, in a moment, almost in the twinkling of an eye, they saw the truth of it all, and gave themselves, dimly conscious that their personal sacrifices and efforts might well help to guarantee the preservation of righteousness on the face of the earth. It was hardly possible that they could have put their case in these phrases and, if they could, I do not think they would:—

"Our country is higher and holier than mother or father. When we are punished by her, the punishment is to be endured in silence. Whether in battle or in a court of law, or in any other place, the citizen must do what his city and his country order him. This is the voice which I seem to hear murmuring in my ears, like the sound of the flute in the ears of the mystic."

These winged words, written by Plato about Socrates nearly two thousand three hundred years ago, intimate that the soundness of a man depends ultimately upon the worth of the larger ends with which he takes more or less deliberate service. They are as true today as they were in ancient Athens; they will be true till men cease to be men. And, better than any known to me, they express the spirit that moved our boys forthwith, when the crisis struck into their young lives. They *volunteered* on behalf of decency, of homely dealing as between man and man, of common honesty as between nation and nation. In short, they stood forth for the only idealism that can ever make the world safe for Democracy and, what is far more to the point, Democracy safe for the world.

Now they are inducted, inducted by their own free will, into

Digitized by Google

every conceivable kind of job; the great majority into posts of some responsibility, or demanding special knowledge, or requiring the adaptability or quickness to learn that presupposes a broad educational foundation. Nearly all are "over there." Some have made the final sacrifice; scores have been wounded; all have passed through undreamed inconvenience—to use a very mild term—without a murmur, nay, smiling. The poignancy and wistfulness that were theirs when they enlisted, are now transferred to us—mothers, fathers, friends, teachers—who must remain behind. As we reflect, we understand that we have looked straight into the heart of Young America, and have found it gold, pure gold. This revelation is recompense for all our qualms and fears. The memory of it cannot fail to temper our sorrows as the anxious weeks and months pass, bringing tales of irreparable loss, of bitter suffering, of scars destined to be carried to the grave.

Such, then, are impressions of the service rendered by the University in the initial phases of the struggle. The State has good reason to be proud of its most famous institution of education. I trust that the memory it must form of this new spirit will never fade.

The fresh departure of the Students' Army Training Corps, which passed into effect on October 1, 1918, puts everything on a different basis, and must eventually become the subject of very different treatment—more exact, more statistical. But, I doubt not, the same staunch spirit of self-forgetfulness will consecrate the legally organized service. The student soldiers of 1918 ought to profit mightily by the splendid example of their predecessors, the volunteers, who toed the line when it was by no means clearly drawn.

Digitized by Google

Why the United States is at War*

By Mahlon H. Buell

Hillsdale College

AMERICA is a nation of peaceful traditions. Conceived in the spirit and ideal of tolerance and founded upon the principles of undying democracy, she has sought, through the years of her development, to maintain the doctrine of right for right's sake, and has not interposed might except to add authority to a just cause. Recognizing the wisdom in the advice of the "Father of his Country," she has avoided entangling alliances, to the end that until the entrance of the United States into the Great War of the nations in 1917 she has not been embroiled in any strictly European conflict.

Nor has America's avoidance of over-sea military struggles been because of any lack of opportunity to enter them. Neither has she, in abstaining from such wars, in any way played the role of a slacker or turned traitor to a cause she should have championed. Upon no former occasion has she been convinced that the European conflicts were her struggles in any way. For this reason, she refused to comply with requests and entreaties to fight with the revolutionists in France during the closing years of the eighteenth century, or with the Boers against the English one hundred years later.

Through the tenets of the Doctrine espoused and championed by President Monroe nearly one hundred years ago, and since known by his name, America virtually declared her

*This and the following essay won prizes in the Michigan Historical Commission's prize essay contest of 1917-18. See *Magazine* for January, 1918, page 17.

Digitized by Google

intentions of non-interference in European affairs by enunciating her "hands off" principle to Old World nations. To this Doctrine she has adhered, and her demands that the American continents be allowed to pursue their own courses unhampered with outside interference have been acceded to by many of the more powerful European states.

It is true that, since the formation and adoption of this doctrine, the United states has been embroiled in conflicts, both diplomatic and military, with European nations, but in each case the question in dispute has been fundamentally American in its nature and could not have been allowed to go unsettled. The one classic example, that of our difficulties with Spain in 1898, does not disprove our insistence that this is a peace-loving nation. The war of '98 was made on Spain only as a means of stopping most intolerable practices in Cuba, and our subsequent interest in the Philippine Islands has been primarily to educate their people for future independence which shall be free from the domination of any exploiting and colonizing power.

But the time came when, because of carefully planned schemes of barbarity and intrigue, we were forced to abandon our tradition of peace with European nations. It was through no mere happenings that the United States was steadily ensnared in such a net. Rather the relations each day grew more strained between our own Government and that of the Imperial German Empire, because of evident design. The breaking point was finally reached and the German ambassador, Von Bernstorff, was given his passports.

President Wilson has stated and countless others have reiterated the fact that the United States entered the war that the world might be made "safe for democracy." Idealistic

Digitized by Google

and entirely praiseworthy as is this statement, the fact remains that had not the Imperial German Government, repeatedly, persistently and no doubt deliberately insulted our rights as a nation with her aggression and intrigue, as well as with her wanton disregard for American rights of persons and property upon the high seas, we doubtless would not be fighting Germans today.

The direct and technical violations of the rights of the United States are, to the casual observer, the only causes of the war; but to the student of affairs, these immediate acts which precipitated the breaking off of diplomatic relations and the declaration of war, are but a part of a long process.

Prior to the awful days since August, 1914, every nation of the civilized world respected the rights of neutrals and belligerents upon the seas. All nations had adopted the provision of international law which provides that no merchant vessel of any nation shall be sunk without first providing for the lives and safety of those on board. Under this code it was the established right of a citizen of a neutral country to travel the high seas even under the flag of a belligerent in times of war, with the full guarantee of his safety. Despite this international agreement, however, the world was shocked beyond expression when it learned that on May 7, 1915, the British unarmed passenger vessel *Lusitania* was submarined and sent to the bottom of the Atlantic with her load of human freight. The fact that one hundred and fourteen American citizens, who met their tragic death in this disaster, had been warned through the New York press that they should not sail on board this boat offered no legal excuse for the outrage. Rather, in the murder by the German Government of those one hundred and fourteen Americans, there were thrown at our feet one hundred and fourteen causes for war.

Digitized by Google

Diplomatic relations became more strained, which resulted four months later in the following assurance being sent to the United States by the German Government on September 1, 1915:

"Liners will not be sunk by submarines without warning and without safety to the lives of non-combatants, provided the liners do not try to escape or offer resistance."

Six weeks later on October 15, three Americans lost their lives when the British steamship *Arabic* was sunk. The German Government promptly sent its "regrets," and disavowed the act, only to follow it with the sinking of the American vessel *William P. Frye* on November 29, and the British liner *Persia* on December 30, when the crew and passengers, including one American consul traveling to his post, were lost.

More assurances of "good faith" were dispatched to America and more lives were lost on ships sent to the bottom.

On April 18, 1916, President Wilson sent his ultimatum to Berlin, stating that

"If it is still the purpose of the Imperial German Government to prosecute relentless and indiscriminate warfare against vessels of commerce by the use of submarines, without regard to what the Government of the United States must consider the sacred and indisputable rules of international law and the universally recognized dictates of humanity, the Government of the United States is at last forced to the conclusion that there is but one course it can pursue. Unless the Imperial Government of Germany should now immediately declare and effect an abandonment of its present methods of submarine warfare against passenger and freight-carrying vessels, the Government of the United States can have no choice but to sever diplomatic relations with the German Empire altogether."

Digitized by Google

The answer came back on May 4, that German naval officers would act "in accordance with the general principles of visit and search in the destruction of merchant vessels recognized by international law."

Germany's untrustworthiness was proven again when more Americans were killed through the sinking of more British steamers.

The crowning act of German audacity did not come, however, until on January 31, 1917, the German Government notified the world that she would attack all navigation, both neutral and belligerent, within certain prescribed zones bounding the belligerent countries, except in restricted zones where specified vessels were "permitted" to navigate on certain days. Three days after such "permission" was granted all diplomatic relations between the United States and Germany were broken off.

During the two months following, scores of Americans lost their lives through the sinking of foreign boats. Also seven steamships of American registry were sunk by German submarines. Furthermore, before our declaration of war the British steamer *Yarrowdale* was captured by a German war vessel and seventy-two Americans were taken prisoners, not to be released until after they had been considerably maltreated and abused. Such in brief were the direct causes which led President Wilson to deliver his "War Message" before Congress on April 2, 1917, which resulted in that body's declaring war on the German Empire, April 6.

But the causes of the war are not confined to the immediate sinking of ships and the resulting murder of American citizens. It is entirely plain now, through the revelations of our Government, that Germany not only was bent on bringing material

Digitized by Google

damage to our property and citizens, but also sought to undermine and corrupt the loyalty and patriotism of our citizenship. Through direct subsidies to disloyal publications, the German authorities at Washington sought to spread sedition and corruption broadcast through our land. From the same source came the funds which induced other citizens to disavow their allegiance to and respect for this nation by direct attempts to do violence to our commerce and industry. No less a German official than Ambassador Von Bernstorff was responsible for much of this treachery. While still at Washington as the official representative of his Government, and while enjoying the hospitality which this Government extends to all such diplomats, he continued to add his designing insults to the material injury with which his Government was trying the mettle of America. His telegram to his own Government, dated January 22, 1917, and later made public by our State Department, in which he asks for authority to expend $50,000 "in order, as on former occasions, to influence Congress through the organization you know," is conclusive proof of his treachery and entire lack of any sense of integrity and fair dealing.

Again, while German treachery was subsidizing disloyal American newspapers and endeavoring thereby to foster an anti-war spirit in this country, the "home office" was not inactive. Not content with having spent $600,000 on Huerta's effort in this country to start a rebellion in Mexico in 1915,[1] the German Government sent directly from its foreign office, in Berlin, the note signed by Foreign Secretary Dr. Alfred Zimmermann to Von Eckhart, German minister to Mexico,

1. *Congressional Record*, April 5, 1917, pp. 192, 193.

Digitized by Google

requesting him to seek an alliance with Mexico and Japan against the United States.

What acts could more conclusively have revealed Germany's desire to hamper the United States and draw us into war than these? What could better prove how great has been the influence upon the present German generation of Bismarck with his secret diplomacy and treachery? German diplomats of today sought to emulate this imperialistic "tamer" of the Prussian Parliament of half a century ago. Through his diplomatic trickery Bismarck alienated the allies of his enemies and drew his foes into single-handed and one-sided battles. Similarly, the present German autocrats are not incapable of any acts of perfidy and treachery in seeking to accomplish their aims.

Our distrust of German statements is further augmented by the atrocities in Belgium and Armenia. Too many reliable witnesses have testified to the truth of the accusation brought against the German officers and soldiers in these countries for us to doubt their validity at least in part. And even if the stories of massacres, brutal butcheries, deportations and worse outrages upon the non-combatants of the overrun countries be false and overdrawn as Germany declares, even then, I say, the fact that the treaties guaranteeing the neutrality of Belgium were thrust aside as mere "scraps of paper" is reason enough for our utter distrust of a Government capable of such acts. Such, however, are the levels to which a power-crazed nation, based upon *militaristic* authority and false democracy, can descend.

Under the guise of a so-called "democratic government" the present militaristic system has evolved. Nearly half a century ago Bismarck devised a constitution and considered it ratified

Digitized by Google

in Germany when twenty-five princes and kings, headed by the king of Prussia, had signed it. Under its provisions the legislative body of Germany consists of the Reichstag, which is little more than a debating society, with no power except to recommend, and the Bundesrat, in which the king of Prussia, the present Emperor of Germany, dictates a controlling number of votes. In this so-called "ideal democracy" the king of Prussia is the autocratic, self-asserted Divine Right despot, whose will is law.

Under this "democracy" the modern military system of Germany has evolved. Realizing that the hegemony of Germany could never be effected by Prussia unless that state possessed a large and efficient army, King William persistently insisted that more stringent militaristic laws be passed by the Prussian Parliament. Concerning this stage of Prussia's history, Professor Carleton J. H. Hayes, of Columbia University, says in his *Political and Social History of Modern Europe,* Volume II, that "on the whole the parliament was hostile to the new military policy. Many extreme Conservatives, who did not relish additional taxation for the sake of a fight with reactionary Austria, made common cause with the Liberals, who feared lest military exultation be detrimental to Liberalism. At first the parliament consented to lengthen the term of service in the regular army to three years, but in 1861 positively refused to authorize increased financial expenditures or the enrollment of additional regiments without a compensatory diminution of the term of service."

In order to quell this hostile parliament, King William put it in charge of the "Tamer Bismarck," who understood the situation and undertook the task with the slogan, "Not by speeches and resolutions of majorities are great questions of the time decided,—that was the mistake of 1848 and 1849,—but

Digitized by Google

by iron and blood." Finding that the Progressives stubbornly insisted that militia was preferable to a professional army, Bismarck, with the king's consent, proceeded to govern the country without a budget and without a parliament, after that body had refused to vote the appropriations necessary for the conduct of the Government in 1863. Mr. Hayes states also that, "In flat contradiction of the constitution of 1850, taxes were arbitrarily levied and collected, the military reforms were fully carried out, and Prussia was duly prepared to wage war with Austria for the hegemony of the Germanies. For this unprincipled and high-handed procedure Bismarck was cordially hated by sincere Liberals, but unpopularity and insults did not change his course. For nearly four years he maintained the unconstitutional regime under the questionable maxim that the end justifies the means."

Through his treacherous diplomacy a quarrel was picked with Austria, which resulted in the Seven Weeks' War of 1866, causing the dissolution of the Germanic Confederation, extensive Prussian annexations, and the establishing of the North German Confederation under Prussian presidency.

The unification of Germany continued under Bismarck and his doctrine of "Iron and Blood" until France had been humbled in the Franco-Prussian War of 1870-1871. By the terms of the treaty of Frankfort, which closed this war, France ceded to Germany the whole of Alsace, excepting Belfort, and eastern Lorraine, and the fortresses of Metz and Strassburg, and agreed to pay an indemnity of five millards of francs (one billion dollars).

Closely following this treaty came others which united the formerly hostile south German states of Bavaria, Württemberg, Baden and Hesse-Darmstadt, the chief states still outside the direct Prussian influence, to the North German Confedera-

Digitized by Google

tion. From this it was but a step to the empire and henceforth the King of Prussia was known as the Emperor of Germany instead of the President of the Confederation.

Such in brief were the steps which united the states of Germany into an empire and fixed militarism in Germany against the manifest will of the people. And it is this same autocratic government to which President Wilson refers when he insists that there is a cleavage between the governed and the governing groups in Germany.

German officials, grounded in the doctrines of Bismarck, have, since his day, been steadily planning for the hegemony of Europe and the world about Germany as a center, upon a plan similar to the one which unified the German states about Prussia. As evidence in support of this statement, volumes of quotations from German Emperors, high German state and military officials as well as from philosophers, educators and other national leaders have been published. Our own Government's Committee on Public Information has published many such statements in the pamphlet, *Conquest and Kultur*. As one typical example of their lust for world power, let me quote from the Kaiser's speech, delivered at Saalburg, October 11, 1900. "Our German Fatherland (to) which I hope it will be granted, through the harmonious co-operation of princes and peoples, of its armies and its citizens, to become in the future as closely united, as powerful and as authoritative as once the Roman world-empire was, and that, just as in the old times they said 'Civis romanus sum,' hereafter at some time in the future they will say, 'I am a German citizen.'"

It is for our own national security against this irresponsible power-intoxicated Kaiser and his Potsdam subordinates that the United States has taken up the gage of battle. For our own future integrity we have risen in arms.

Digitized by Google

But upon what foundation has this system of thought been built which makes it possible for a so-called "enlightened people" to be coerced by autocratic despotism? What has been the philosophy and education which has instilled into the very marrow of their bones such a doctrine so that they can endure year after year of slavish warfare? For an answer we must look back beyond the present generation. We must discover in the philosophers of a century or more ago the beginnings of present-day German thinking. Among all the intellectual lights of modern Germany, three stand out above the rest in influence upon the national thought, Emanuel Kant, Johann Gottlieb Fichte, and Friedrich Nietzsche.

Concerning the influence of Kant upon German philosophy, Mr. John Dewey, Professor of Philosophy in Columbia University, has said in his book, *German Philosophy and Politics*, that "It is a precarious undertaking to single out some one thing in German philosophy as of typical importance in understanding German national life. Yet I am committed to the venture. My conviction is that we have its root idea in the doctrine of Kant concerning the two realms, one outer and physically necessary, the other inner, ideal and free. To this we must add that, in spite of their separateness and independence, the primacy always lies with the inner. As compared with this the philosophy of a Nietzsche, to which so many resort at the present time for explanation of what seems to them otherwise inexplicable, is but a superficial and transitory wave of opinion. Surely the chief mark of distinctively German civilization is its combination of self-conscious idealism with unsurpassed technical efficiency and organization in the various fields of action."

Fichte reiterates the doctrine in his *Addresses on the Fundamental Features of the Present Age*. He says, in the words of

Digitized by Google

Mr. Dewey, "that the end of humanity on earth is the establishment of a kingdom in which all relations of humanity are determined with freedom or according to reason,—according to reason as conceived by the Fichtean formula." Again in his *Addresses to the German Nation,* Mr. Dewey finds him believing that "the Germans are the sole people who recognize the principles of spiritual freedom, of freedom won by action in accord with reason. Faithfulness to this mission will 'elevate the German name to that of the most glorious among all the peoples, making this nation the regenerator and restorer of the world.'"

But to Nietzsche, who doubtless was one of the most influential of modern German thinkers, we turn for the present doctrine of the Superman. Professor Thilly, of Cornell University, says in his *History of Philosophy* that "He [Nietzsche] not only antagonizes the old theories and methods, but sweeps away the old values and condemns the entire trend of our modern times and civilization, considering the historical attitude as the cause of the weakness of our age." He is a strict convert to Darwin's theory of the "survival of the fittest." His goal is the creation of the Superman, or a race of heroes through struggle, pain, suffering and injury to the weak. The better men, the natural-born leaders and aristocrats should be in the forefront and have special privileges over the rabble. Traditional morality, based upon pity and favor for the weak, is rejected by Nietzsche. Religion, especially Christianity, is repudiated upon the same grounds, and war is preferable to peace, for peace is a symptom of death. Thus the Superman lives in a realm beyond the ordinary. He becomes law unto himself and needs no rules like those that govern common folk. He is beyond good and evil, hence it is possible for him to regard treaties as mere "scraps of paper."

Digitized by Google

Around these brilliant intellectual lights of modern Germany have revolved lesser thinkers, and upon their philosophy has been built the common German thought of today. With such a background, it is little wonder that they have undertaken the dissemination of "Kultur" to all the world.

The remarkable success in rearing a strongly unified state during the past half century has convinced the German that the Superman is not only coming to Germany, but that it is the duty of Germany as a nation to establish him in all habitable lands and give him a "place in the sun." This is the peril which the United States faces today and which she is seeking to avert.

We have drawn the sword against Germany, not that we may annihilate her "without a trace," but in order that we may forever put an end to the encroachments of autocracy upon the rights of free-born men and women. Germany forced us into this war by her ruthless submarine policy; but should she today make ample reparations for all the damage she has done in a material way, we would not and could not now disband our armies and call our duty done. Her intrigue against our safety at home and among other nations, her brutality and treachery against the unfortunate victims of her power, her utter disregard for treaties and international agreements, her military principles based upon her false democracy, all grounded in a philosophy which culminates in the doctrine of the Superman, call us to make the supreme sacrifice.

We believe that the military masters of Germany, who are today bleeding their country's resources and manhood to the limit, now see clearly to what conditions their methods have brought them. To maintain their power at home they must maintain it abroad, and to bolster up their tottering imperialistic systems, they are soothing the ears of their subject sol-

Digitized by Google

diers with boasts of world empire and power. But as firmly as we believe that we are in the right in this great cause, just so firmly do we believe that these boasts will eventually be proved empty. Germany's greatest defeat will not come until after she is beaten on the field of battle and her despotic rulers have been discredited before their subjects as they are now before the world. To this end we fight.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Benjamin Rand. *Modern Classical Philosophers.*

John Dewey. *German Philosophy and Politics.*

Herbert Cushman. *Beginner's History of Philosophy,* Vol. II.

Carleton J. H. Hayes. *Political and Social History of Modern Europe.*

President Wilson. *Flag Day Address.*

Government Committee on Public Information. *How the War Came to America. Conquest and Kultur.*

Congressional Record.

Daily papers and periodicals.

Digitized by Google

Why the United States Is at War

By Miss Etta Kinch
Michigan State Normal College

OUTLINE

I. Introduction
   1. Subjection of a virgin continent by Europeans
   2. Influences in this civilization
      (a) Traditions of European stock
      (b) Effect of new environments
   3. Result—A new nation—The United States of America
   4. American ideals
      (a) Democracy—within
      (b) Monroe Doctrine—without
   5. Effect of the United States on International Law
      (a) Arbitration
      (b) Neutral rights
      (c) Transfer of citizenship

II. The World War of 1914
   1. Balance of Power in Europe
   2. Trade wars in Europe

III. Our Attitude
   1. Neutrality
      (a) Infringement on our rights, England, Germany
   2. Mental repulsion of German acts
   3. Perception of what Germany was trying to do
   4. Perception of the reasons for Germany's peculiar conduct

IV. The Moment of Decision
   1. Efforts for peace
   2. Unrestricted submarine warfare
   3. Russian collapse
   4. Our reply

V. Reasons for Our Decision
   1. Self-respect—Acts of war against us
   2. Impending economic subjection
   3. Rights of small nations
   4. Liberty—Autocracy vs. democracy

Digitized by Google

SOME four centuries ago Europeans poured into the wilderness of this unknown continent, bringing with them European institutions, ideals and personalities, as diverse as the countries they represented. America took them to her bosom, taught them a new way of looking upon the destiny of the common man, trained them in adaptation to a new world, to new institutions, to meet new needs, and constantly, as this society grew to resemble the Old World in its social forms and industries, and whenever it began to lose faith in the ideals of democracy, she opened new provinces and dowered new democracies; and at last, the ennobling love of freedom brought forth a new nation, the United States of America. This nation has had one abiding policy,—"to live and to let live," the essential thought of democracy.

This ideal of democracy has been attained through toil, sacrifice, and suffering. All American institutions have been vitalized by its principles of equality, of opportunity for the individual, and our Government has had the ever-present aim of liberty and well being for the masses through self-government.

A nation is largely a way of thinking.[1] Our nation has produced certain ideals, traditions and principles in which is embraced the peculiar essence of our being. This principle, of democracy, is the key to our internal life.

In foreign affairs it was necessary for us early to formulate a policy. We voiced it in the Monroe Doctrine, briefly defined as an announcement that the United States would not interfere in the internal affairs of Europe and would oppose the interference of European powers in affairs of this continent, either for acquisition of new colonies, or for the disturbance of existing governments.[1a] The most vital underlying conception of

1. Dr. Robert Mark Wenley, University of Michigan.
1a. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, Chapter 17.

Digitized by Google

the Monroe Doctrine was, that we were the natural champions and protectors of those other western hemisphere peoples who desired to work out for themselves the principle of a free government. The doctrine is also really self-defensive,—a defense of our own republican institutions, through defending the rights of others to the same experiment. The modern phrases of "the rights of the small nations," and the "rights of peoples to self-determination," are ideas embodied in the Monroe Doctrine. This was not primarily a policy of isolation, as is commonly believed. Isolation is largely a patriotic misconception, born of the facts of our position on the globe, and of our English traditions; and people who hold it forget that constantly increasing means of communication and commerce make foreign interests our interests.[2]

On account of our peculiar position, and on account of our experiment in republican government, we have made some remarkable contributions to the theories of international law. Arbitration, the rights of neutrals, and transfer of citizenship, are subjects to whose principles American theory, and American practice, have contributed a major portion of the content.

International problems, some perennial, some transient, have at all times confronted our administrations, influencing us to take an active part in the Geneva and Hague Conventions, and in the London Naval Conference. As often as we have been represented, we have voiced the principles of democracy. Because of our geographical isolation, and because of our great resources, we have had many problems pertaining to our commercial relations. These problems have always been acute in time of war, and of a peculiar nature when we ourselves were not involved. Ever since the art of navigation was matured,

2. "Isolation and Other Policies," *North American*, February, 1912.

Digitized by Google

and piracy abolished, the seas have been free to the ships of all nations in times of peace; but the freedom has been precarious, because it was liable to interruption in times of war. The position of every nation which depended to a considerable extent for its subsistence upon foreign commerce, was rendered insecure, because its means of livelihood could be cut off completely or partially by an enemy with a fleet. Perceiving this and aspiring to better conditions, the United States has attempted to persuade to a code of sea laws based on mutual consent, which would define restraints placed on trade and the rights of neutrals during war. Our creed has been that the seas must be free to all, and that all who sail upon them must have a voice in framing their government; and that the life, liberty and property of neutrals must be protected.[3]

The Geneva and Hague Conventions and the London Naval Conference had resulted in international agreement upon certain principles of conduct toward neutrals during war, among which the following were the most important: (a) a neutral flag covers enemies' goods, with the exception of contraband of war;[4] (b) blockades to be binding, must be effective;[5] (c) belligerents must refrain from hostile actions in neutral territory;[6] (d) the high seas are to be free highways.

Practically all civilized nations had subscribed to these principles by 1914; but Germany had evinced an indifferent attitude, saying at The Hague Conference of 1917, "The Im-

3. *How the War Came to America*, pp. 2-3, Committee on Public Information.
4. J. Lawrence, *Principles of International Law*, pp. 557-576, 559-623; *Encyclopedia Brit.*, "Declaration of Paris."
5. J. Lawrence, *Principles of International Law*, pp. 576-599.
6. *Ibid.*, pp. 500-518, 592.

Digitized by Google

perial German Government favors treaties with individual nations rather than with many."[7]

The principle of arbitration may be said to have been perfected and popularized by the practice of the English-speaking peoples. They began its use in 1794, when the Jay Treaty between the United States and England provided for certain arbitration boards to meet later for a decision on contested points. Arbitration settled these points successfully, and since that time the principle has been applied to our diplomacy in three aspects: in territorial disputes, in slavery issues, and in damage claims resulting from seizure and arrest.

Our boundary troubles were interwoven with many interstate and international controversies, but they were peacefully settled by arbitration or compromise; the northeast boundary by the Webster-Ashburton Treaty of 1842;[9] the northwest boundary by what is known as the "Oregon Agreement" in 1846;[10] and the Alaskan boundary by the Commission of 1903.[11]

Even in the midst of the Civil War, territorial claims between our country and South and Central America were also settled in this way. In 1863 and 1868 we submitted contentions with Peru[12] to mediation, in 1866 with Venezuela,[13] and in

7. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 115-120, 126, 128, 372.
9. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 228, 234, 287; J. W. Foster, *A Century of American Diplomacy*, pp. 282-286.
10. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 432-434; John Bassett Moore, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 234-236.
11. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 344-367; George Davidson, *The Alaska Boundary;* John Bassett Moore, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 213-219.
12. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, p. 350; John Bassett Moore, *American Diplomacy*, p. 215.
13. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, p. 350; John Bassett Moore, *American Diplomacy*, p. 215.

Digitized by Google

1868 with Mexico.[14] Even the "high-handed Olney" policy,[15] attempting to act for Great Britain in her Venezuelan boundary controversy in 1899, resulted in a peaceful arbitration.

Fishery disputes have been of a threefold nature: seizure of fishing vessels by Great Britain, complaint of Newfoundland of invasion of territorial waters, and protection of the Alaskan seals. The Newfoundland fishery question, probably the most irritating point of contact, was handled in 1870 by the Treaty of Washington on the principle of reciprocity. This treaty terminated in 1885, and in 1909 a permanent territorial fish commission was established.[17]

The Alaskan seal controversy involved economic, social, historic, and legal points, and a claim on the part of the United States to jurisdiction over the Behring Sea. In 1892 a joint commission decided on certain protective regulations and rejected the latter claim, and in 1911 a joint protective treaty[18] was signed by Japan, Russia, Great Britain and the United States.

While our foreign relations were strained over the issue of the slave trade, nevertheless arbitration was employed to settle differences. In 1818 it was used to settle the dispute between the United States and Great Britain over indemnity for deported slaves.[19] Between 1841 and 1853 we peacefully set-

14. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, p. 350; John Bassett Moore, *American Diplomacy*, p. 215.
15. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 390-395; John Bassett Moore, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 153-156, 218.
16. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 117-119; J. B. Henderson, *American Diplomatic Questions*.
17. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, p. 434, Chapter 12; Wm. Elroy Curtis, *The United States and Foreign Powers*, Chapter 12.
18. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, p. 434; Wm. Elroy Curtis, *The United States and Foreign Powers*, Chapter 12.
19. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, p. 191.

Digitized by Google

tled the celebrated Creole case,[20] although it involved domestic, maritime, and slave-trade laws, international agreements and bitter sectional animosities. Great Britain finally paid an indemnity to us, although her heart and soul were in a conscientious fight against slavery.

The most celebrated damage claim resulted from the case of the Alabama,[21] a British-built commerce destroyer used during the Civil War against the Union. A tribunal of five adjusted this claim in 1871; such a settlement between two great nations

---

20. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 238-240; Schuyler, *American Diplomacy*, Chapter 5. The case grew out of the controversies arising from our domestic maritime slave trade. In 1841 the Creole cargo of slaves revolted, killed a passenger, took possession of the boat, and made the port of Wassau. Those guilty of murder were executed and the remainder freed. The case aroused great excitement in the United States. Calhoun offered a resolution in the Senate in which he declared that the protection of domestic slave trade was a matter of obligation and not of choice, and that England should be made to understand that she must not interfere with our legal slave trade. This case came up in the Webster-Ashburton Treaty. Webster apparently had little enthusiasm for the discussion, for in a letter to Ashburton, he said: "Using the words of Walter Scott when he sent one of his works to his publisher—'I send you my Creole, d—n her.'" No agreement was reached at this time, but in 1853 a claim convention submitted the matter to arbitration and Great Britain paid indemnity.

21. C. R. Fish, *American Diplomacy*, pp. 345-347, 339; T. W. Balch, *The Alabama Arbitration*.. The Alabama was a British-built commerce destroyer, purchased from Great Britain by the Confederates early in the Civil War. At the close of this war all questions in dispute were made the subject of a general negotiation and treaty. After thirty-seven sittings, the treaty was signed, May 8, 1871. It dealt first with the claims for damage done by the Alabama and other British-built destroyers. This questions was submitted to a tribunal of five arbitrators, who met at Geneva. Our direct claims were granted, and by the final decision of September 14, 1872, the sum of fifteen and a half million dollars was awarded to us.

Digitized by Google

created a tremendous influence for arbitration throughout the world, and no doubt had much to do with the establishment of the permanent Court of Arbitration by the First Hague Convention of 1899.

The third great contribution of the United States to the principles of international law, was the right of transfer of citizenship. The insistence of the United States upon this principle is due to the fact that we are a nation of all nationalities. The vast mass of peoples look upon our country as a "Modern Utopia," and this tendency has caused a great influx of citizens from all corners of the globe, making it necessary for us, in order to preserve our unity and our ideals of democracy, to extend to them the right of citizenship. Other nations were slow to concede this principle, but at last it has become widely recognized; and when we obtained recognition of the right of transfer of citizenship, a great stride was taken toward individual independence and freedom.

Thus, within we have had democracy, and without we have stood upon those principles of international law concerning arbitration, neutral rights and the transfer of citizenship, which, together with the Monroe Doctrine, caused the world to recognize us as the champion of the freedom of individuals, of nations, and of equity between the nations.

With this background of history, and with the people the controlling element of our Government, we could not comprehend the situation when Europe was caught in the whirlpool of a World War. We had read of the "Balance of Power," we knew of the ancient trade wars, and we as a people, separated from Europe by natural barriers, looked across the Atlantic and wondered if this was another of the age-long series of struggles for colonies, naval and trade supremacy. We per-

Digitized by Google

ceived elements in it that pointed to trade rivalry between England and Germany. We could see the Triple Alliance arrayed against the Triple Entente; Germany, "the land rat," marshalling her forces against England, "the water rat,"[22] for the supremacy of the sea; and the sporadic Balkan question again to the front, with Austria fighting Russia in what was perhaps her fourth advance on Constantinople.

We were without immediate, or deep sympathy, for any of these factions. We were confused as to merits and issues in the controversy; but we were soon forced to act; for, again, as a hundred years before, we were caught in between. Seemingly, at first there was no clear issue that affected our national policy, no direct assault on our national rights. We thought it a European dispute, that did not warrant our interference; and true to our traditional custom of avoiding all entangling European affairs, our Government issued its proclamation of neutrality.

It was not long, however, before we found that this war threatened us; because, the protection which international law was supposed to afford to neutral trade and neutral life was broken down, murderously on the part of Germany, quietly and effectively on the part of Great Britain. When the war broke out, England's fleet drove German commerce from the sea, and bottled the Kaiser's ships within the Baltic. She found her opportunity to declare a blockade of all goods, in or out of Germany, when Germany proclaimed general food-control by the state. This blockade seriously interfered with neutral trade. On August 6, 1914, we sent an identical note to each of the powers involved, proposing that the Declaration of

22. Chas. Seymour, *The Diplomatic Background of the War*, Chapters 9, 12.

Digitized by Google

London be accepted for the duration of the war. Great Britain answered by saying she would adopt its principles with modifications; controversies arose between England and the United States in regard to the meaning of the freedom of the seas; Germany was getting considerable trade through the neutral countries, and England kept cutting down the number of ships until she thought these countries were securing just enough food to meet their own needs. England, excepting on the principle of enemy destination, had no legal right to stop neutral ships, especially when they carried only non-contraband. President Wilson protested; but England paid little attention to these protests, for many of our ships carried contraband, and we were mild because we were anxious for the profitable trade. This profit came largely from munitions. Germany was well supplied, and the Allies were in need; we shipped gigantic quantities to the Allies and Germany protested, but not consistently, for she had in 1912 and 1913, during the Balkan war, sold ammunition to the belligerents; also earlier to Turkey in the Turko-Italian War, as well as to Spain during the Spanish-American War. If we as neutrals refused now to sell to belligerents, in time of war it might under the circumstances be considered an unneutral act, and these belligerents would probably refuse to sell to us if we were ever at war.

Our refusal to give up this trade embittered Germany and she sent a great many spies to our country, who, without regard to loss of life, blew up factories and destroyed munition shops. Finding this was not as effective as she had hoped, she turned her submarines loose. On February 4, 1915, she declared the waters surrounding Great Britain, Ireland and the English Channel a submarine zone, saying she would sink all and every merchant ship found in those waters. President Wilson sent

Digitized by Google

a note to Germany, informing her that the submarine campaign was unlawful, and that he would hold her responsible for harm done to American citizens. On May 7, 1915, the great *Lusitania* went down with the loss of 1,150 lives. Many of the passengers were women and children, and 114 of them were American citizens. Horror and indignation swept over the country. Our Government sent a strong protest to Germany, who tried to explain her action, and for a time ceased to torpedo boats. Next came the case of the *Arabic,* on which three Americans lost their lives, and then Germany promised there would be no more cases of this kind. Why? Then we did not understand, but it is perfectly evident now. The English fleet of trawlers, swift motor boats, and nets had bagged most of the submarines. She had to get a new fleet of these boats ready, and this time they were improved for their deadly work by having noiseless engines that prevented the English from detecting their approach. By 1916 she had this fleet ready, and in March the *Sussex* outrage was committed. This was the point beyond which we could not and would not go. We informed Germany that the law of nations upon which we based our protest was not of recent origin or founded on arbitrary principles set up by convention, but on the manifest principles of humanity, and had long been established with the approval and by the assent of all civilized nations. We explained that great liners and relief ships, as well as mere passenger boats, had been attacked; and, without warning, non-combatants, both passengers and crews, had been destroyed heedlessly and in a manner which the United States could not regard but as wanton and without the slightest color of justification. We warned her that if such a case occurred again we would break relations and send her minister home. At this juncture the

Digitized by Google

presidential campaign occurred. While the war spirit was growing in some sections of the country, there was still no widespread desire to take part in the conflict abroad. The political parties used the "war spirit" or "anti-war spirit," as the case might be, as an issue in the campaign, and it is safe to say that President Wilson was elected on the popular slogan, "He kept us out of war."

Nevertheless, infringement on our rights continued and reached and passed the limit of forbearance. We were trying to maintain amicable relations with a barbaric brute; there came a time when no grounds were left upon which to justify neutrality. Beyond any doubt, American neutrality was real during the first months of the war, but at the sinking of the *Sussex,* neutrality, in the old meaning of the word, had ceased to exist.

As our sense of justice and our sense of right were more and more grossly insulted by fiendish militarism, we began to see Germany in a different light, and to understand our Anglo-Saxon brother better. When the war was first precipitated, we had been greatly disturbed by the stories of the atrocities committed by the Germans. Our repulsion was at first voiced by a few able men; by some of the more scholarly; in short, by those who had a keener insight into the affairs of humanity. Our abhorrence, starting like the tiny flame of a candle, grew in proportion as Germany practiced her atrocious policies and committed her unspeakable crimes, until the majority of American citizens recoiled from the Teuton. The ancient invasion of the Hun lacked color beside the atrocities committed in conquered Belgium and over-run and ruined France. The shooting of captured soldiers, the murdering of innocent women and children, the placing of the immoral custom above the moral,

Digitized by Google

the deporting of scores of French and Belgians into Germany for enslavement, and the deliberate starvation of Serbia and Poland, made us sick at heart.[23] The mental attitude of the individuals making the nation became gradually the nation's attitude.

We perceived what Germany was doing in Europe. We saw that she had tried to build an island empire and had failed, that her African colonies had not been an economic success, and that lately she had been seeking dominance in the Balkans and Asia Minor by "peaceful penetration" and the "Bagdad bahn." We saw that 1914 had been a most opportune time for Germany to go to war. Her army was well supplied with draft animals, tractors and motor trucks, which enabled her to transfer men and supplies with speed; the fiscal bill of 1913 had provided a large increase of forces and an immense appropriation of money; strategic railroads had been constructed to the French, Russian and Belgian frontiers; and she had secretly perfected new and murderous weapons from great guns to poisonous gases. The Kiel Canal had been completed, Helgoland acquired and fortified, and her navy made at least second in the world's fleets. Her sway over Turkey had become complete, her diplomacy in the Balkans was succeeding, and at last Austria was caught in a situation where she would be willing to do her bidding. Her enemies, too, were at a disadvantage in 1914. Russia had only begun to plan her strategic roads, her finances were in bad shape, her industrial development retarded, labor troubles were rife, and revolution strained at the leash,—a leash that would hardly stand the pull of war. France had recently inspected her military condition and pronounced it bad, her reforms were not yet in operation, and her

23. *German War Practices*, Red, White and Blue Series, No. 6.

Digitized by Google

atmosphere was murky with political scandal; the great British Empire faced disruption through civil war in Ireland, intrigue in India, and malcontented laborites and feminists. To Germany it seemed that her decadence invited assault.

We slowly perceived the real nature of the German Government. The "divine right" doctrine of its war lord, upheld by the junker class of militaristic Prussia, had indeed evolved a strange condition. Here was a federal empire with the external signs of democracy,—a constitution, a partially elected legislative body, and a widely distributed franchise.[24] But in its operation we saw a three-class franchise system, where property controlled two-thirds of the vote; a legislature whose elected lower house was merely a debating society; whose controlling upper house was dominated by Prussian junkers, and whose cabinet was responsible alone to a Hohenzollern régime that considered itself God's anointed, and went "its way" regardless of the opinions of mankind.[25]

We saw a state that taught a political philosophy based on the assumption that, although the individual is bound by moral law, the state is not,—that for the state, Might is Right, force is the ultimate good, war is noble and the citizens ripe for sacrifice.[26] We saw a people deluded by the idea of the superiority of the German race and their call to found a Pan-German World Empire. We perceived a state-tied religion, teaching the divine mission of Germany to force "Kultur" upon

---

24. F. K. Krüger, *Government and Politics of the German Empire;* F. A. Ogg, *Governments of Europe.*
25. W. H. Dawson, *What's Wrong with Germany,* Ch. 3, 6.
26. W. H. Dawson, *What's Wrong with Germany;* J. H. Rose, *Origins of the War;* H. G. Treitschke, *German Destinies and Policies;* Charles Seymour, *The Diplomatic Background of the War,* Ch. V.

Digitized by Google

a resisting world.[27] We saw a school system relentlessly grinding the worship of ruthless autocracy into the souls of its plastic children, blinding their moral insight and perverting their humanitarian tendencies.[28]

All these things the United States learned through three years of neutrality. It saw that German warfare meant the success of ruthlessness, of conquest by militarism, the sanction of brute force, and a world constantly in the throes of war. We saw that eventually we would be drawn into the struggle, we and our children after us; for, beyond Belgium, France, Great Britain and the Atlantic, lay the United States. Had not Germany occupied Belgium and France? Had it not claimed sovereignty over the Atlantic? And was not the United States the next step in the Kaiser's stupendous attempt to conquer the world? Of this there could be little doubt. However, still hoping to avoid the bitter passions abroad and praying for the divine task of mediator, President Wilson attempted "to speak counsels of peace and accommodation, not as a partisan but as a friend."[29] In January, 1917, perhaps building somewhat on the Kaiser's advances, he delivered in Congress his famous peace message, which outlined the peace the United States would join in guaranteeing. This message proposed a Monroe Doctrine for the world; declared that governments derive all their just power from the consent of the governed; that all nations should avoid entangling alliances;

---

27. Charles Seymour, *The Diplomatic Background of the War*, Ch. V; War Information Series, *Conquest and Kultur;* H. G. Treitschke, *German Destinies and Policies.*

28. J. H. Rose, *Origins of the War;* H. G. Treitschke, *German Destinies and Policies.*

29. *How the War Came to America*, p. 13.

Digitized by Google

that the seas must be free, and that peace must be made secure by the organized major force of mankind.[30]

From this event affairs moved rapidly. On the last day of January, 1917, Germany informed our Government that it was her intention to intensify and render more ruthless the operation of her submarines at sea.[31] This form of outrage was intolerable. Von Bernstorff was sent home; diplomacy had failed. Armed neutrality, forced on us by the congestion of our trade, fell short of effectiveness, and the only way we could be effective in this world crisis was to put the power of our finance, industry and transportation back of the Allies. This meant a declaration of war; and this declaration was our answer to Germany's proclamation of unrestricted submarine warfare. We could not avoid it and we would not. Life, liberty, and property are the common possessions of all, and these possessions Germany had been attempting to wrest from the world.

The Russian situation undoubtedly hastened our decision, for if she collapsed, England, France and Italy would be left alone to fight Germany. The eastern front would be clear, leaving her free to concentrate all her forces on the west. The situation was desperate. The moment of decision was at hand. For our own self-respect, we could not avoid war longer. Germany had declared war on us by her conduct, by her attacks on our lives, our rights, our Government, and our commerce. From the very outset of the present war she had filled our unsuspecting communities with spies, who had blown up our factories and sought to destroy our unity;[32] she had supported

30. *The President's Speech*, January 22, 1917.
31. *Diplomatic Correspondence Between the United States and Belligerent Governments*, Vol. 10.
32. President Wilson's *Flag Day Address*, p. 5.

Digitized by Google

speakers who were to arouse a bitterness of feeling and distrust in our hearts against the Allies;[33] she had incited the Hindoos within the United States to stir up revolts in India, and supplied them with funds for that end;[34] she had sought to arrest our commerce, not by submarines alone, but by blowing up ships in harbors and at sea;[35] she had tried to set Mexico and Japan at our throats by offering the Mexican Government Arizona and New Mexico if it would join Japan in attacking us;[36] she attempted to destroy our South American friendships, and finally she issued her decree declaring indiscriminate warfare and subsequent renewal of ruthless methods of destruction with increased disregard of life.[37]

We declared war on Germany because of the loss of lives and property at sea. We saw ship after ship crowded with the sons and daughters of neutral countries, ships of mercy bound for starving Belgium, and Red Cross ships laden with the wounded of all nations sent to the bottom.

We declared war because we saw the sea dominated by a power which knew not the meaning of the words "international law;" which sought to subject the world to economic slavery. We are fighting because American and British sea power are complementary; because if the submarine should vanish the British fleet, we alone would have to defend our independence and the ideals of the English-speaking peoples.[39] We declared

---

33. *The War Message and the facts behind it*, p. 20.
34. *Ibid.*, p. 20.
35. President Wilson's *Flag Day Address with Evidence of Germany's Plans*, p. 6.
36. *Ibid.*, p. 22.
37. *Diplomatic Correspondence between the United States and Belligerent Governments*, Vol. 10.
39. "German Brutality and American Justice," *Living Age*, April 7, 1917. President Wilson's War Message, April 2, 1917.

Digitized by Google

war in behalf of the right of small nations to self-determination,—"for the rights of nations and the privilege of men everywhere to choose their own way of life and obedience." We declared war on Germany because of the gradual shaping of the conflict into a war between autocratic nations on the one hand and democratic nations on the other; because of the realization that the bond which was uniting the Allies against the Central Powers was the liberty America has ever championed; because we believe that government is an instrument devised for the benefit of human beings,—"that law and liberty spring from the same soil, and that reason is the only conqueror that does not rule slaves."[40] We declared war on Germany because the peace we love is a peace founded on political liberty, a peace which is impossible until the world is rid of autocracy and militarism.[41]

Our Government has embarked upon a great enterprise, and the way we have set about to accomplish our aims shows that America is in dead earnest. These aims are not selfish, for they apply to humanity, to liberty and to democracy at large. As listed, they divide into two groups: international questions dealing with international understandings, freedom of the seas, reduction of armaments, open adjustment of colonial claims, and equality of trade conditions; and European questions, treating of the readjustment of Russian, Belgian, French, Italian, Polish and Austro-Hungarian territory.[42]

We have answered the call of our ancient faith, of our ancient brotherhood in this day of democracy's test. Because

---

40. *Conquest and Kultur*, p. 3.
41. "Entry of the United States," *Living Age*, May 12, 1917.
42. *Current History*, New York Times.

Digitized by Google

of American ideals, because of bleeding Europe, because of democracy and justice, and because the world has not reached the place where Might can be met with argument or where the wrath of nations can be turned away with a soft answer, war is our lot; and since it is, we will make war upon Germany with our whole heart, for she worships one God and we another. The lion and the lamb cannot lie down together; one or the other must perish.

With regret and reluctance we entered the war, because we believe in arbitration rather than war. Without self-interest, but in self-defense, desiring only liberty for ourselves and for our brothers, we shall prosecute the war. With a patient, persistent, consecrated resolve, we shall sit at the peace conference demanding equity and equal opportunity for all. We know not the years, the money nor the lives that shall be the toll of our decision, but the conviction that our decision was right grows surer each day, and trusting that the right must prevail, we shall fight on, consecrated to our cause of freedom for all mankind.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

BOOKS

Charles Seymour. *Diplomatic Background of the World War.*
C. R. Fish. *American Diplomacy.*
J. B. Moore. *American Diplomacy*
J. Lawrence. *Principles of International Law.*
Baker, Voorhis & Co. *Diplomatic correspondence between the United States and belligerent governments relating to neutral rights and commerce.*
J. H. Rose. *The Origin of the War.*
H. A. Gibbons. *New Map of Europe.*
G. H. Allen. *The Great War.*

Digitized by Google

Treitschke. *German Destinies and Policies.*
J. W. Headlam. *History of Twelve Days.*
F. A. Ogg. *Governments of Europe.*
F. K. Krüger. *Government and Politics of the German Empire.*
I Accuse. By a German.
W. H. Dawson. *What Is Wrong with Germany.*
James W. Gerard. *My Four Years in Germany.*
Wm. L. Nida. *Story of the World War.*
J. H. McFarland. *A New Call to the Colors.*

PAMPHLETS

I. Red, White and Blue Series.
No. 1. *How the War Came to America.*
No. 4. *The President's Flag Day Speech with Evidence of Germany's Plans.*
No. 5. *Conquest and Kultur, the Germans' Aims in Their Own Words.*
No. 6. *German War Practices.*
II. War Information Series.
No. 1. *The War Message and the Facts Behind It.*
No. 2. *The Nation in Arms.*
No. 4. *The Great War; from Spectator to Participant.*
No. 5. *A War of Self-Defense.*
No. 6. *American Loyalty by Citizens of German Descent.*
No. 8. *American Interest in Popular Government Abroad.*
A League of Nations. Vol. I, No. 1, October, 1917.

MAGAZINES

"Evolution of a National Policy in Relation to the Great War," *New Republic*, March 10, 1917, Part 2.
"America in the Battle Line of Democracy," *World's Work*, April, 1917.
"Our Past with Germany," *World's Work*, March, 1917.
"Why This Is America's War," *World's Work*, May, 1917.
"Entente Greetings to America," *Current History*, N. Y. *Times*, 6 Part 2, August, 1917.
"Why We Entered the War," *Current History*, N. Y. *Times*, 6 Part 2, August, 1917.
"Lloyd George on America's Entrance," *Current History*, N. Y. *Times*. June, 1917.
"United States at War with Germany," *Current History*, N. Y. *Times*, May, 1917.

Digitized by Google

"Awful America," *Literary Digest*, May 5, 1917.
"Why We Are Fighting Germany," *Literary Digest*, June 16, 1917.
"How Germany Helps Pan-America, *Literary Digest*, June 9, 1917.
"Burying the Monroe Doctrine," *Literary Digest*, March 10, 1917.
"Isolation and Other Policies," *North American*, February 17, 1917.
"What Are We Fighting For?" *Living Age*, June 2, 1917.
"German Brutality and American Justice," *Living Age*, April 7. 1917.
"International Rights America Must Champion," Annapolis *American Academy*, July, 1917.

Digitized by Google

King Alcohol: His Rise, Reign and Fall in Michigan

By John Fitzgibbon
Detroit

The beginning of the liquor traffic in Michigan
Prohibition versus license
Temperance societies and moral suasion crusades
The no-license and prohibition period, 1850-1875
Conditions in Michigan from 1850 to 1875
Stirring campaign in the 80's for prohibition
The prohibition party and its campaigns
Local option in Michigan
Scientific temperance educational laws
Chronology—Michigan
Chronology—National

TRAFFICKING in ardent spirits in Michigan began with the opening of the first white settlements. One Indian tradition relates to Manhattan Island, corrupted from Manahachtanienk, meaning in the Delaware language, "The island where we all get drunk." By getting the Indians intoxicated the white man bought his furs at less than he would if the Indian was sober.

This tradition tersely expresses the sordid motives that actuated explorers and traders in early colonial times in all their dealings with the Indians. They plied the savages with ardent spirits so as to get cheaper their packs of furs that they brought regularly to trading posts at the close of each trapping season,—furs, spirits and ammunition being the chief article of commerce of the white man in all the early settle-

Digitized by Google

ments. At the Mackinaw post, established before the first white settlers located at Detroit, brandy was traded to Indians. One account tells of an explorer who sent a flotilla of canoes to Mackinaw in charge of friendly Ottawas, the canoes being loaded with "goods and brandy."

References to trafficking in ardent spirits are found in the annals relating to the founding of Detroit by Cadillac, in 1701. At the trial of Cadillac, at Quebec, in 1705, on charge of interfering with and injuring the trade of the Colony of Canada, there was testimony that one trader at Detroit had a stock of four hundred quarts of brandy, and that brandy was used to corrupt the Indians. Cadillac admitted that brandy was a common article of traffic at the Detroit post. One bit of testimony was that Cadillac required a blacksmith to give him six hundred francs and two hogsheads of ale for the privilege of working at this trade. An official report of 1708 reads:

"If Cadillac had not introduced the trade of brandy in Detroit but few of the traders would remain and no more would go here. Brandy and ammunition are the only other articles of commerce of the French, the English furnishing all others. Brandy is rated at twenty francs (about $5) a quart, at the post. The Indians squander the greater part of their beaver (furs) in presents and brandy and have not enough remaining to purchase one-half the articles indispensable to their comfort."

The Jesuit missionaries early realized the baneful effects of intoxicants on the Indians and earnestly encouraged the efforts of the Government to prevent traffic in it. Practically nothing was done to restrain the traffic. Traders encouraged the traffic in spirits with the Indians because they made large profits; besides, as explained, when Indians were under the influence of spirits they could beat them in the price of their fur packs.

Digitized by Google

Then, too, post commandants engaged in the traffic for their personal gain. Cadillac, while commandant at Detroit, established the first brewery there; while Tonty, the second commandant, monopolized the business for himself. Tonty would not allow a settler to keep liquor in the house even for private use.

Under English rule from 1759 the same troubles gave concern to the Government. Pleas by merchants and traders as to why they should not be debarred from selling liquor to Indians read in twentieth century light strange indeed. Here are a few illustrations:

"If Indians cannot get liquor from us they will go where such restrictions are unknown and get it in exchange for furs."

"It is customary to give liquor to Indians at feasts and public talks, and it does not appear more is given than enough to prevent them carrying their furs to distant or foreign markets."

"Settlers set up distilleries of corn spirits throughout the back settlements, and, without control, supply the Indians with such destructive liquors; therefore is it not humanity in supplying them moderately with spirits of less pernicious quality?"

The trouble continued to be glaringly reprehensible in the earlier decades of the Northwest Territory, of which Michigan was a part. By act of 1802, Congress authorized the President to take such steps as might seem to him expedient to prevent the selling or giving of spirits to Indians. In 1815 there was passed by Congress a law providing for a fine of $500 for any one setting up a still in the Indian country; and six years later Indian agents were empowered to search stores of Indian traders for spirits and to confiscate any found, and revoke the license. In 1834 the penalty for selling or giving liquor to

Digitized by Google

Indians was raised to $500, and in 1862, in addition to a fine, the offender was liable to two years' imprisonment. As late as 1825, the trouble still existed. The records of the Detroit Common Council show that on August 9 of that year the following order was made:

"On account of the many disorders, riots and indecencies committed in the streets of the city of Detroit by Indians from different parts of the country when visiting the city, the superintendent of Indian affairs be requested to aid the corporation by instructing the interpreter to explain the laws of the city from time to time to the Indians; also to direct the agent to ascertain from whom the Indians buy liquor, and report such breaches of law."

Ardent spirits ruined the health and morals of more Indians than perhaps any other cause; yet it is an historical fact that the North American Indian never made alcoholic liquors of any kind. The only kind he has ever known is what the white man made and furnished him. In this the North American Indian was different from the Indians of Mexico and other Central and South American countries. The Mexican Indians have their pulque, and others have indigenous beverages of an intoxicating nature.

PROHIBITION VERSUS LICENSE

In the colonies before the Revolution the question of license was more or less prominent, but nothing besides regulation by license was tried except as to Indians. License rates and penalties for violation were low. Liquor selling was quite generally confined to hotels, taverns and grocery stores.

About the middle of the nineteenth century began the controversy in temperance circles as to whether prohibition or license was the most effective weapon against the liquor traffic.

Digitized by Google

Prohibition and License were the watchwords of the opposing factions. The work for temperance up to this period had been wholly along license lines. The first important declaration against license and for prohibition was by a national temperance convention of 560 delegates in 1844. Maine, in 1846, led all the States in passing a prohibition law; repealed it in 1856, and restored prohibition in 1858 by a majority of 22,956. Delaware followed Maine by adopting prohibition in 1847, Massachusetts in 1852, and Michigan in 1855. Other States also tried prohibition about this period. In fact, during the decade 1850-1860 the prohibition movement made headway in more States than during the three decades from 1860 to 1890.

No sooner did the Michigan no-license constitutional amendment of 1850 go into effect, than the liquor interests began agitating to repeal it. They had the support of the temperance people, who had more faith in license than prohibition laws. How temperance people were antagonistic in methods, though working for the same end, is clearly expressed in the decision of Mr. Justice Cooley, of the Michigan Supreme Court, sustaining the validity of the tax law of 1875. Justice Cooley's words are elsewhere quoted in this article.

The high-license movement gained momentum in the early 80's, when license rates took an upward trend not only in Michigan but in other States. Some States raised license rates to as high as $1,000, and authorized municipalities to impose additional license rates. The municipal license rates in several States exceeded the State rate. In certain Michigan municipalities local license rates in the decade preceding May 1, 1918, exceeded $1,000.

Digitized by Google

TEMPERANCE SOCIETIES AND MORAL SUASION CRUSADES

Michigan's first temperance society was organized in Detroit, February 19, 1830. It took the name, Detroit Society for the Suppression of Intemperance, changed two years later to the Detroit Temperance Society. Its first president was General Charles Larned, a veteran of both the Revolutionary War and the War of 1812, and who served the Territory of Michigan as attorney general. In March, 1833, it was enlarged into a State organization, The Michigan Temperance Society.

Only twenty-two years before the Detroit Society was formed, the first temperance society in the United States was started in Saratoga County, N. Y. The conditions of membership in this New York society that came into existence one hundred and ten years ago were, that a member must sign a pledge to pay a fine of fifty cents every time he became intoxicated; that any member drinking spirituous liquors except on the advice of a physician, or in case of sudden illness, except wine at public dinners, was to pay a fine of twenty-five cents; also there was a penalty of fifty cents for offering to another a drink of liquor.

Michigan's foremost citizen in public life at this period, General Lewis Cass, was a leader of a temperance movement at the National Capitol. In the Senate Chamber, February 26, 1833, on a call signed by twenty-five members of Congress, there was a meeting at which was organized the Congressional Temperance Society. General Cass, then Secretary of War, and who the year before, as Secretary of War, issued an order abolishing the grog ration in the army, was chosen president of the society. The purpose of the society, as stated in its by-laws, was: "By example and kind moral influence to discountenance the use of ardent spirits." The

Digitized by Google

society exercised considerable influence at periods for more than a generation. In the decade following the Civil War it had a vigorous revival in which two vice-presidents, Schuyler Colfax and Henry Wilson, were conspicuous.

When the early temperance societies were organized, the temperance creed did not include wine and malt fermented beverages, but chiefly whiskey and rum. There was no tax on whiskey; it cost but a few dimes to make a gallon, and it could be distilled with an outfit that was within the reach of men in every community. The claim was raised that the temperance movement was directed at people in humble circumstances. The poor man could not afford to buy wine like the well-to-do, so the temperance idea meant that he would be restricted to small beer and like beverages. A bitter controversy was waged over the issue. When a teetotal pledge was formulated during the controversy, there was much clamor to the effect that the lighter drinks should be left longer to the people, and that the teetotalers were ahead of the times. The controversy brought the temperance movement to a standstill; and inactive it remained, until the Washington Society movement, which struck Michigan in 1841, and started the first real temperance crusade.

The Washingtonian was the first of the "moral suasion" movements. Six reformed inebriates,—a tailor, a carpenter, a silversmith, a coachmaker and two blacksmiths,—started it in a Baltimore tavern, in 1840, after listening to an address by a temperance lecturer at which they signed a total abstinence pledge; and they formed the nucleus of a society that they named for Washington. In less than two years the Washingtonian movement spread all over the country. Hundreds of thousands that came under the spell of its crusaders signed the pledge. It developed some of the greatest platform

Digitized by Google

orators of the century in the interest of the temperance movement. John B. Gough quit liquor in 1843 and became a Washingtonian crusader, and for forty-five years was recognized as one of the most effective temperance orators of all time. And there were others whose fame as temperance advocates was second only to Gough.

The crusade of the Washingtonians was the beginning of what was called "the confessional period of temperance reform." In the words of one historian, the first "moral suasion" crusade began in times when man's power was mighty in reform and before he relied largely on constitutional and statute law to promote the cause of temperance. The ablest public speakers in the Washingtonian crusade were reformed inebriates. The paramount spirit underlying the crusade was, that by kind words and the depiction of the miseries of intemperance, addressed to inebriates in their sober hours they could be turned permanently from degradation to a sober life. The crusade gave great impetus to the temperance cause, but it spent its force in 1843. Yet it developed energy of lasting benefit.

When the Washingtonian movement spread into Michigan, alcoholics in moderation were called temperate. Anyone, even clergymen, could take an occasional glass and still be considered an exemplar of temperance. The products of stills was considered indispensable to raisings, logging bees, husking bees and neighborly gatherings of pioneer times. First known by the French name Usquibae, or scubae, the Indians called it squibe, in time corrupted to "whiskey." It was the strong drink of the pioneer.

The first of the nationally known temperance crusaders to enter Michigan was Augustus Littlejohn, orator and wit. He came from Herkimer County, N. Y., in 1843, and began his

Digitized by Google

crusade in Kalamazoo County. Charles E. Stuart, United States Senator for Michigan from 1853 to 1859, said Littlejohn surpassed in eloquence any man he ever heard. Littlejohn invariably treated inebriates as friends. He had in a supreme degree not only the power to convince them they could reform but made them believe they must.

He used to give a spectacular turn to his meetings by trying King Alcohol on charges of murder and other heinous offenses. He himself would prosecute with all the forms of a court trial. King Alcohol would be convicted and sentenced to be burned at the stake. The sentence would be duly executed by carrying a jug of whiskey in a procession with a band playing a death march, and on a pile of logs previously arranged, burning the jug and contents.

The second moral suasion temperance movement was felt in Michigan when Rev. Father Theobald Mathew, a Roman Catholic temperance crusader, came to the United States in 1849 with a prestige of having persuaded several million in Great Britain and Ireland to sign the pledge. An English historian wrote of Father Mathew: "A pious and earnest friar who had neither eloquence nor learning, but only enthusiasm and noble purpose, stirred the hearts of millions in the cause of temperance as thoroughly as Peter the Hermit might have stirred the hearts of a people to a crusade." Eliza Trask Hill wrote that "Father Mathew's was the most widely successful temperance crusade ever undertaken." Father Mathew remained in the United States two years and a half and was accorded official honors seldom extended to a foreigner. President Taylor tendered him a banquet at the White House, and the Senate admitted him to the bar of the Senate Chamber, a mark of distinction that had been conferred on but one other foreigner, General Lafayette. He visited twenty-five

Digitized by Google

states including Michigan and administered the temperance pledge to over 300,000 in 300 cities and villages. Father Mathew's temperance societies were organized in Michigan. Captain Eber B. Ward, Detroit's foremost captain of industry of his time, gave the Detroit society a site on the corner of Fourth and Porter streets on which to build a home.

Father Mathew was conducting his temperance crusade in this country when agitation was strong in Michigan for prohibition. While the agitation was at its height a state temperance mass-meeting was held in Detroit. The day was June 7, 1852. An immense procession marched to Woodbridge grove where addresses were made by Neal Dow, of Maine, Jacob M. Howard, later one of Michigan's United States Senators, and some others. Two years before this time John B. Gough delivered a series of eight temperance lectures in Detroit.

In the middle 70's two temperance crusaders who had attained nation-wide fame preaching the temperance doctrine of moral suasion, appeared in Michigan and spoke in a score of cities, althought there was no rivalry between them. In all cities where they appeared, temperance clubs were organized with a membership up in the tens of thousands. The Detroit club organized during a series of meetings by one of these crusaders had 7,000 members. The crusaders were Dr. Henry A. Reynolds and Francis Murphy, both reformed inebriates. Dr. Reynolds started his crusade in Maine, Francis Murphy in Pennsylvania, and both were at the zenith of their fame when they appeared in Michigan. The emblem of the signers of the Reynolds pledge was a red ribbon, while a blue ribbon was the emblem of the Murphy pledge. Like the Washingtonians and Father Mathew they preached that a

Digitized by Google

man could reform within himself, that he is a law unto himself and can reform without prohibition or license.

The Woman's Christian Temperance Union, organized in Ohio in 1874 following a woman's temperance crusade in that State, had branches in Michigan cities when the Reynolds and Murphy crusades opened in this State. The women's union joined enthusiastically in these crusades and contributed materially to help in the battle of this period with the liquor forces.

Moral suasion was the basis for all the early temperance movements, societies and crusades led by such crusaders as the Washingtonians, Mathew, Gough, Reynolds, Murphy and the women's societies. But, the judgment of students of these temperance movements is, that while moral suasion cultivated sentiment, spread education, brought new workers into the cause and created or strengthened organization, it did not generally produce lasting reform. Sterner methods were necessary.

THE NO-LICENSE AND PROHIBITION PERIOD,—1850-1875

The revisers of the State constitution in 1850 inserted an article in the revision which declared against licensing the liquor traffic, yet did not forbid conducting the traffic without a license. It was article IV, section 47, and read:

"The legislature shall not pass any act authorizing the grant of license for the sale of ardent spirits or other intoxicating liquors."

The revision with this article in it was ratified by a vote of 36,169 to 9,433. Three years later the legislature passed what was known as the first Maine Prohibition Law. This law forbade traffic in liquor except for medicinal, mechanical, scientific and sacramental purposes; and at a referendum of the

Digitized by Google

electors of the State on the third Monday in June, 1853, it was ratified by a majority of 17,397. There were defects in the law, and one court declared it unconstitutional. So, in 1855, the Legislature passed what was called an iron-clad prohibition law. This law was intended to outlaw the liquor traffic unreservedly.

The prohibition law of 1855 was on the statute books for just twenty years and nine months. It was openly and flagrantly defied in Detroit, and was but indifferently enforced in many other sections of the State. Fairly it may be said that the reason for this was that the law was in advance of the spirit of the times. It was very generally not enforced because the predominating public sentiment did not demand its enforcement.

The temperance movement was practically suspended during the Civil War. With a life and death struggle waging to maintain the integrity of the Republic, the energies of all in Michigan, regardless of views on the liquor question, were taxed to the limit for the sole purpose of winning the war. The war over, the movement in the interest of temperance again acquired momentum. In May, 1867, the Grand Lodge of Good Templars of America held its annual convention in Detroit. At the regular legislative session in 1867 a proposed constitutional amendment was submitted to the electors which contemplated strengthening article IV, section 47, of the constitution of 1850, by not only prohibiting the licensing of the liquor traffic, but making it mandatory on the Legislature to pass a law to prohibit the sale of intoxicants as a beverage. The amendment read:

"The legislature shall not pass any act authorizing the grant of license for the sale of ardent spirits or intoxicating liquors, but shall by law prohibit the sale of the same as a beverage."

Digitized by Google

This amendment was submitted to the electors in April, 1867, and was rejected, the vote on it being: yes 72,462, no 86,143.

The first organized state-wide effort to check the temperance movement when this movement was revived after the war, was by a State convention of Germans, in Detroit, in August, 1871. At this convention a league was formed pledged to defend all saloon-keepers affiliated with the league in any suits brought against them for violation of the prohibition law.

Three years later the Woman's Christian Temperance Alliance was organized, its name being changed in 1876 to the Woman's Christian Temperance Union. The women's crusade, started in the winter of 1874-75, created an influence that seriously disturbed liquor sellers throughout the State and country for the future of their business. Some Detroit saloon-keepers actually quit business on account of the women's crusade. Alarmed at what crusades of this nature might lead to, a State convention of liquor dealers was called to meet in Detroit August 12, 1874.

At this convention a plan for a State tax law was initiated. The directors of the convention reasoned that a tax law would give the liquor business legal standing and stability; in a word, give it a standing that it did not have. The plan met the approval of many temperance people, who considered that a tax law enforced, even though giving the business a legal recognition by taxing it, was better than a prohibitory law under which intoxicants were sold everywhere yet the sellers paid no tax. The tax law of May 3, 1875, was the result. With the passage of the tax law, the prohibitory law of 1855 was repealed.

This tax law was more stringent than its promoters contemplated. It provided that retailers of spirituous liquors

Digitized by Google

should pay an annual tax of $150, retail dealers in beer $40, and wholesale dealers in spirituous liquors $300. Brewers were to be taxed from $50 to $300 according to the quantity of beer they produced annually. Bar-rooms were to be kept closed on Sundays, but no reference was made to closing on other days. In 1877 it was amended to require closing on election days, and again amended in 1879 to require closing on all legal holidays, and to make the penalty for violators imprisonment as well as fine. In 1911 the holiday closing regulations were eased up to permit bar-rooms to keep open on a few of the lesser holidays but still required that they be closed on New Year's Day, Memorial Day, July Fourth, Labor Day, Thanksgiving and Christmas.

Article IV, section 47, of the constitution of 1850 was still in force. A group of Detroit saloon-keepers refused to pay the tax imposed by the new law and appealed to the courts to restrain the sheriff from enforcing the law. They retained three of Detroit's ablest attorneys to contest the constitutionality of the law in the courts. The objection principally relied upon was, that the tax on the traffic in liquor under the law was equivalent to a license of the traffic, and therefore came directly in conflict with article IV, section 47 of the constitution, which declared that the Legislature shall not pass any act authorizing the granting of a license for the sale of ardent spirits or other intoxicating liquors. The Supreme Court, in a decision written by Mr. Justice Cooley, unanimously rejected this contention, emphasizing that taxing a business does not necessarily license or legalize it. The decision attracted nation-wide notice. It was given in October, 1875, the title of the case being Youngblood *versus* Sexton, and is printed in Vol. 32 of the Supreme Court Reports. The essential part of the decision reads:

Digitized by Google

"One needs to give very little attention to the proceedings of the convention, [constitutional convention of 1850] to be convinced that members of the convention who expressed views leading to the same result in shaping the instrument to be submitted to the people had objects in view that were totally different, and expected, or at least hoped, to accomplish wholly different ends by means of the provision finally agreed upon.

"The provision itself was experimental, and no one could safely predict the consequences; but while those who favored total abstinence of the traffic in ardent spirits hoped to accomplish that object by means of prohibition or license, others, not willing to destroy the trade, regarded the inhibition of license as a removal of embarrassing restrictions and impediments.

"The provision agreed upon was not in itself a prohibition of the traffic, and upon this the most diverse views might be concentrated; but beyond this there was no harmony of purpose whatever.

"With license prohibited, a broad field was still left for legislation, and still each side might hope to attain the advantage in that, and not to find the constitutional provision interposed any serious objection. For these reasons the proceedings of the constitutional convention are as nearly as possible worthless for any purpose of giving aid in the construction of the provision, and we can only take it as it stands and seek the meaning employed to express it.

" . . . The object of a license is to confer a right that does not exist without a license. . . . Within this definition a mere tax upon the traffic cannot be a license of a traffic unless the tax confers some right to carry on the traffic which otherwise could not have existed. We do not understand that such is the case here. . . . If the tax is paid the traffic is

Digitized by Google

lawful, but if not paid the traffic is equally lawful. The State has provided for the taxation of a business which it found in existence and the carrying on of which it no longer prohibits, and that is all.

"The idea that the state lends its countenance to any particular traffic by taxing it seems to us to rest upon a very transparent fallacy. . . . Taxes are not favors; they are burdens. . . . A business may be licensed and not yet taxed, or it may be taxed and not yet licensed. . . . It would be a remarkable proposition that a thing is sanctioned and countenanced by the Government when this burden is imposed upon it, while, on the other hand, it is frowned upon and condemned when the burden is withheld.

"The federal laws give illustrations of the taxing of an illegal traffic. A case in point was that of the taxation of the liquor traffic in this state previous to the repeal of the prohibitory law. The federal law found a business in existence [when it enacted, as a war measure, in 1862, the first Internal Revenue law] and it taxed it without undertaking to give it any protection whatever."

The following year section 47 of article IV was eliminated from the constitution.

CONDITIONS IN MICHIGAN FROM 1850 TO 1875

No Michigan laws were ever so brazenly defied as the anti-saloon laws of the 50's. Some judges openly refused to receive complaints against violators. One notable exception where the law was enforced was Battle Creek. There every saloon was closed under the prohibition law, yet not without acts of violence. John Van Arnim, leader of the temperance forces of Battle Creek, while on his way home one night after delivering a temperance lecture, was waylaid and slugged with a

Digitized by Google

wine bottle, while Justice Babcock, who sent violators to prison, had his well poisoned and both himself and wife went to their deaths under circumstances that created a suspicion that poison had been maliciously given to them.

In Detroit all acts directed against the sale of intoxicating beverages were disregarded very generally, and continuously. Less than one year after the electors of the State ratified the no-license section in the constitution, the Detroit Common Council passed a resolution to license dealers to sell ardent spirits in quantities of one quart and upwards. License rates were fixed at from $10 to $30.

Following the enactment of the first Maine prohibition law (1853) another temperance society, the Carson League for Wayne County, was organized on a pretentious scale to enforce prohibition. The plan was to raise $2,000,000 as a working fund by selling memberships at $100. Alanson Sheley, wholesale merchant and banker, was elected president of the League, and many prominent citizens of Detroit were in the organization. The League made its power felt for a time, though it raised far less than $2,000,000. One month after its organization the three principal hotels of the city had closed their bars, as had most of the grocers. But the League's financial plans failed and with it the League itself, and all bars re-opened.

Directly following the enactment of the prohibition law of 1855 Mayor Ledyard issued a proclamation appealing to citizens to uphold the law, and many of the saloons of the city closed. Again the dry spell was short, for juries would not convict, and the town was once more wide open. An ordinance passed in September, 1861, requiring saloons to close Sundays was defied from the outset with impunity.

For several years following '61, Sunday closing was a vital

Digitized by Google

issue in Detroit. When the Metropolitan Police force was created, in 1865, the Sunday ordinance of '61 was actually enforced for a short time. Sunday, August 27, 1865, was the first Sunday the uniformed force was on duty, and it was the first dry Sunday Detroit knew. But, vigorous enforcement of the Sunday closing law was resented by the liquor interests. They presented a petition to the Common Council signed by 8,265 for repeal of the Sunday closing ordinance. A petition with 2,500 names against repeal was also presented. The Council repealed the ordinance and enacted another to permit selling on Sundays from 1 o'clock p. m. to 10 p. m.

As showing how liberally Detroit was furnished with intoxicants in the years following the first prohibition laws, it may be mentioned that in 1857 there were 420 saloons in Detroit and 56 hotel and tavern bars, being one drinking place for each seventeen families. Besides these there were twenty-three breweries and six distilleries in Detroit in 1857.

In 1864 there were 523 saloons in Detroit, of which eleven were kept by women; and twenty-eight breweries, and but eighty-three lawyers. The population of Detroit in 1864 was 53,170. So there was one bar for about each 100 of the population. In 1875 when the State tax law was enacted there were 765 bar-rooms and the city's population was a little over 100,000. The income from licenses for Detroit bar-rooms the first year the tax was in effect was $93,545.

Of the twenty-eight breweries in Detroit in 1864 only one was in business when state-wide prohibition came in 1918. At the beginning of 1918 there were but eleven breweries in Detroit, yet each of these eleven had a greater annual output than the combined twenty-eight in 1864.

The fact that prohibition was a failure when first tried in Michigan is without significance in these times. It failed be-

Digitized by Google

cause the dominant public sentiment did not demand its enforcement. Times have changed; so has public sentiment on the question of enforcing prohibition.

STIRRING CAMPAIGN IN THE 80'S FOR PROHIBITION

The tax law of 1875 swept away the last vestige of prohibitory legislation, but not without the protests of the radical temperance element. At the succeeding regular session of the Legislature, the session of 1877, they introduced a bill to restore the prohibition staute of 1855, but got nowhere with it. Again they tried in the session of 1879 with the Mosier bill, so-called. Introduced in the House, the Mosier bill was rejected by a vote of 50 to 37.

At the legislative session of 1881 petitions were presented with 100,000 signatures praying for the submission of a prohibition amendment. Both houses of the Legislature were controlled by the Republicans; and, although the Republican State convention, in session February 23, which was within the legislative session period, adopted a plank reading: "Resolved, That when the people by petition manifest a desire to alter or amend the constitution their wishes should receive the consideration to which they are entitled as coming from the source of all power," the House rejected the proposed amendment. The proposition to submit the amendment received 61 votes in the House, which was six less than the necessary two-thirds. Thirty-two members voted not to submit.

Governor Jerome opposed submission of the amendment for the familiar reason that prohibition could not be enforced; and so, in his opinion, high license would do more to abate the evils of the liquor traffic than prohibition. Because of the Governor's opposition, the prohibition element of the State became

Digitized by Google

bitterly hostile to him, a circumstance that contributed to his defeat for re-election in 1882.

At the Republican State convention August 30, 1882, at which Governor Jerome was renominated, although not without a contest, the submission plank of February, 1882, was reaffirmed. The platform adopted at the 1882 convention resolved that the evils of intemperance have become so great that most efficient measures should be taken to reduce these evils to a minimum; and none of the two leading political parties being agreed as to whether this can be done by prohibition or regulation, and as the people ought to be the final arbitrators of this question, therefore: "We declare that we believe it would be wise and patriotic for the next Legislature to submit a prohibition amendment to a direct vote of the people, and we demand that it be submitted."

This was the first explicit declaration of either of the two leading parties in Michigan in favor of the submission of a prohibition amendment. The Legislature elected in November, 1882, convened in regular session the January following. The Republicans controlled both houses, but the party's convention pledge for submission was disregarded. Four years elapsed before a Republican State convention again pledged submission, which it did August 26, 1886. Still the dominant party, though with its domination threatened, the Republican leaders were seized with alarm. Prior to 1881 Michigan had been one of the banner Republican States. The Greenback party, coming into existence in the late 70's, became a formidable third party in Michigan. By fusing with the Democrats they elected a Greenbacker, Josiah W. Begole, Governor in 1882. Within the next four years, candidates on fusion tickets were three times elected justices of the Supreme Court, and several times to be regents of the University of Michigan. In 1884 the Fusionists

Digitized by Google

came within 3,308 votes of defeating the Republican electoral ticket. The vote for the Democratic candidates for electors and the Prohibition party's candidates for electors combined in 1884, exceeded the vote of the Republican presidential electors by 15,095 votes. Quite apparently the Prohibition party held the balance of power.

So, at their State convention in 1886, the Republicans once again resolved in favor of submitting a prohibition amendment. The Prohibitionists, quite naturally, did not place explicit faith in this third pledge, which may have had something to do with Dr. Samuel Dickie's receiving 25,179 votes, as the Prohibition party's candidate for Governor, in November, 1886. Dr. Dickie's vote and the vote of the Democratic candidate for Governor this year exceeded the vote of the Republican candidate by 18,747 votes.

The Republican party's convention pledge of 1886 was not, however, like the previous party pledges, disregarded. No sooner was the new Legislature that convened in January, 1887, organized than the submission amendment was introduced in the House. It passed that body January 13 by a vote of 74 to 21. In the Senate 22 votes were needed to pass it in that body. The political complexion of the Senate was: Republicans 23, Democrats 9. But, two of the Republicans were opposed to submission and it was necessary to unseat a wet Democrat Senator and give his place to a dry Republican. This was done, and the amendment was ratified by the Senate January 27 for submission at the ensuing April election.

The campaign for the amendment was opened with a mass-meeting in Detroit February 11. A campaign committee of ten Republicans, ten Democrats and ten prohibition party men was appointed with Dr. Dickie as chairman. Many prominent dry speakers were brought into the State. No material help

Digitized by Google

was received from the old party leaders. The wets made a systematic effort to command the opposition of conservative men not personally identified with the traffic, who had more faith in regulation than in prohibition. General Byron M. Cutcheon, member of Congress for the Manistee district, and Edward P. Allen, Congressman for the Ann Arbor district, were the only two public men of prominence who made speeches for the amendment.

Some men of high character and place, men who had no sympathy with the traffic, opposed the amendment and publicly spoke against it. Two of the most conspicuous of these were Charles A. Kent, eminent Detroit lawyer and member of the law faculty of the University of Michigan, and D. Bethune Duffield, also a Detroit lawyer of high standing. Mr. Duffield was the first president of the Detroit Red Ribbon club organized in the winter of 1876-77 during Dr. Reynold's temperance crusade.

Arguments of men of the character of Prof. Kent and Mr. Duffield were based on the claim that high license or tax was more conducive to temperance than prohibition laws. This argument prevailed with many temperance voters. When the election returns showed that the amendment had been defeated, Miss Frances E. Willard was quoted as saying that the Michigan amendment "died of high license."

On the face of the returns on the election in April, 1887, the amendment was defeated by a majority of 5,545, the total vote for it being 178,636 while the vote against it was 184,281. The dry leaders were firmly convinced that gross frauds produced the adverse majority. There was strong evidence to support this charge. Specific allegations of frauds were made as to the vote returned for Wayne and Gogebic counties. In Wayne County the total vote was 34,029. For the amendment

Digitized by Google

5,860 votes were returned and 28,168 against it, being a majority of 22,308 against. The drys secured a large number of affidavits showing that dry workers at the Detroit polls were vilified and assaulted and driven away. In one Detroit precinct for which but nine votes were returned for the amendment more than seventy voters made affidavits that they voted for the amendment. Twenty-nine years later when a prohibition amendment was again submitted, and the election orderly, and the count honest, Wayne gave a majority against prohibition of but 6,426 in a total vote of 137,821.

Gogebic County, in 1887, was a new iron-mining district. It was created by the Legislature early in 1887 out of Ontonagon County. In the whole of Ontonagon County there were cast but 1,589 votes in November 1886. Yet the vote returned from Gogebic County in April, 1887, was 2,341 against the prohibition amendment and but 186 for it. Gogebic's vote was not returned until more than two weeks after election. In fact it was the last county to report.

In November, 1916, Gogebic County gave a majority of 301 for the prohibition amendment. Gogebic's vote at that election was: for the amendment 2,148; against it 1,847.

The dry leaders petitioned the Legislature for an investigation of the frauds in Wayne and Gogebic counties. They filed several hundred affidavits with the Legislature to substantiate the charges. The Legislature appointed an investigating committee. The committee's enquiries were indifferently pressed and when the legislative session adjourned *sine die,* the committee did likewise and nothing came from the investigation.

Eight months after Michigan rejected prohibition the Supreme Court of the United States rendered a decision in a Kansas case that ended for all time the claim of the brewery

Digitized by Google

and liquor interests that when prohibition was adopted in any political subdivision they were entitled to compensation from the public treasury for their property. This decision was:

"That States have unquestioned power to prohibit such use by individuals of their property as will be prejudicial to the health, the morals or the safety of the public, and cannot be burdened with the conditions that the State must compensate owners for pecuniary loss they sustain by reason of their not being permitted by a noxious use of their property to inflict injury upon the community."

THE PROHIBITION PARTY AND ITS CAMPAIGNS

The initiative for the creation of a distinctive prohibition party was taken in Michigan by Rev. John Russell. In a weekly temperance paper, the *Peninsula Herald,* which he established at Romeo in 1864, he urged the creation of such a party. In 1866 he removed the paper to Detroit, where he continued to edit it, assisted by his son, Charles P. Russell, until 1873, when it passed into other hands. "Father of the Prohibition Party" is writ in the annals of Rev. John Russell and his times. In 1867 he called a meeting of Prohibitionists in Detroit, at which the new party organization had its birth.

Conditions produced by the Civil War prompted prohibition leaders to decide that they could accomplish more for the cause of temperance by political action through a new party than by continued affiliation with the old parties. Internal revenue legislation, enacted in 1862 as a war measure, imposing a specific tax on malt and spirituous liquors, gave the liquor traffic legal recognition by the Federal Government. The liquor element was brought into political prominence and gradually made itself a factor in the politics of the northern States. No prohibition measures had been enacted in the North during the

Digitized by Google

war. In fact, the liquor-regulating laws of the several States, so far as they were affected by State legislation during this period, were weakened. Rhode Island, in 1863, substituted license for prohibition. Massachusetts did likewise in 1867. Prohibition leaders became apprehensive that the liquor interests were bent on stifling prohibition legislation everywhere in the country. The liquor forces were already on the war path. At the National Brewers' Congress at Chicago, June 5, 1872, a resolution was adopted declaring that: "We will sustain no candidate of whatever party in any election who is in any way disposed towards the total abstinence cause."

At the national meeting of the Independent Order of Good Templars at Oswego, N. Y., May, 1869, Rev. John Russell and four others were designated to prepare a call for convention to organize a national Prohibition party, Rev. Mr. Russell being chairman of the committee. The call, duly issued, addressed to "The Friends of Temperance, Law and Order in the United States," was for a general mass-meeting at Chicago, September 1, 1869. The mass-meeting or organizing convention met in Chicago on that day with nearly 500 delegates in attendance from 19 States, including Michigan, and the District of Columbia. Rev. Mr. Russell called the convention to order and was the temporary chairman. The platform of principles adopted declared that, "the existing political parties are hopelessly unwilling to adopt an adequate policy for dealing with the temperance question," and so, "we are driven by an imperative sense of duty to sever our connection with these political parties and organize ourselves into a national Prohibition party, having for its primary object the entire suppression of the traffic in intoxicating drinks."

A proposal was submitted to call the new organization the Anti-Dram Shop party, but the convention named it the Prohi-

Digitized by Google

bition party. A national committee was appointed on which all States were represented and Rev. Mr. Russell was elected chairman of this committee.

At the election two months after the organization of the new party, Ohio returned 679 votes for the Prohibition party ticket and was the only State that did report straight prohibition votes; although in Maine 4,743 votes were cast for "Republican-Prohibition" candidates, and 1,791 votes for like candidates in Minnesota. The election in November, 1870, was the first at which Michigan returned prohibition votes after the new party had been created. At this election Michigan was one of six States that cast a total of 20,012 Prohibition party votes. Michigan's vote was 2,710.

In his capacity as national committee chairman Rev. John Russell called to order the first national nominating convention of the Prohibition party, which was held at Columbus, O., on Washington's birthday, 1872. Henry Fish, of Michigan, was temporary chairman of the convention. James Black, of Pennsylvania, was nominated for President, and Rev. John Russell was nominated for Vice-President without a dissenting vote. The platform adopted at this convention contained two planks that later were accepted by both the old political parties. One was for civil service in the Federal Government; the other for woman suffrage. The woman suffrage amendment was the subject of prolonged debate in the convention and was adopted with but 22 dissenting votes. The new party did not make any campaign this year. No effort was made to secure votes. Electoral tickets were nominated in but six States, Michigan being one of the six. The total vote of the six States for the Prohibition presidential electoral tickets was but 5,607. Michigan's vote was 1,231. At the next election for Governor (November,

Digitized by Google

1874) the Prohibition party's candidate for Governor polled 3,937 votes in Michigan.

There was an ebb in the Prohibition party tide in 1876. But few more than 100 delegates from 12 States attended the national nominating convention at Cleveland, May 17. Gen. Green Clay Smith, of Kentucky, was nominated for President. The two Russells, father and son, were prominent in this convention. Charles P. Russell was one of the convention's two secretaries, and Rev. John Russell was designated by the convention to prepare an address to the people of the United States, which he did. General Smith's total vote in 19 States was but 9,737. Michigan contributed 747. The Prohibition party did not nominate a State ticket in Michigan in 1876.

The tide had turned before the off-year elections of 1877, for in that year 43,230 prohibition votes were returned in six States, Massachusetts returning 16,354, and Iowa, a State that in 1877 for the first time nominated Prohibition party candidates, returned 10,545. In 1878 there was again a subsidence of the Prohibition party's vote in all the important States except Michigan, Minnesota and Illinois, the total vote declining to 22,509. Michigan, however, returned 2,896 votes for Prohibition party candidates for Congress in five districts; congressional candidates were nominated in five districts only. The Prohibitionists, as in 1876, did not nominate a candidate in 1878 for Governor of Michigan.

At the third national nominating convention, at Cleveland, June 17, 1880, Michigan was one of 12 States that sent 142 delegates. D. P. Sagendorph, of Michigan, was one of the secretaries of the convention. Neal Dow, of Maine, was nominated for President. But 16 States returned votes for the Prohibition party's national ticket as against 18 in 1876. The total of the 16 was 9,678. Michigan returned 942 votes for Neal Dow

Digitized by Google

and 1,114 for McKeever, the Prohibition candidate for Governor.

Impetus was given to the prohibition movement in 1881 and 1882 by affiliation with the movement at a national convention at Lake Bluff, near Chicago, in August of the first named year, of influential prohibition leaders who had not been actively identified with the new party. At this convocation a committee, of which George W. Bain, of Kentucky, and Miss Frances E. Willard were members, was appointed to outline a plan for a Home Protection party, so-called, whose platform should be based "on constitutional and statutory prohibition of the manufacture and sale of alcoholic beverages in the State and Nation." The plan led to a national convention at Chicago August 23 and 24, 1881, 341 delegates being present from 22 States, Michigan being of the 22. The platform was substantially the same as the platform adopted at the national Prohibition party's conventions of 1872, 1876 and 1880. Though it took the name of the Prohibition Home Protective party, it was in no sense antagonistic to the party that had been in existence since 1869. Rather it was to all intents and purposes a regeneration of the prohibition political movement.

The effect was a substantial growth in the prohibition vote in State elections of 1881, 1882 and 1883. In Michigan, in April, 1881, the Prohibition party vote was 12,774, being exceeded that year only by the vote of Ohio. The vote in the eight States in which elections were held in 1881 was 47,326.

In 1882 Sagendorph, Prohibition candidate for Governor of Michigan, received 5,854 votes.

There was evidence at this period that the fluctuations in the vote of the Prohibition party were the consequences of local discontent—bolting voters using the third party as a temporary refuge. New York, in November, 1882, furnished a

Digitized by Google

striking illustration. The Prohibition candidate for Governor of New York that year polled the unprecedented vote of 25,783. His vote was generally understood to come largely from dissatisfied Republicans, dissatisfied with the methods of warfare between the "stalwarts" and "half breeds," so-called, of their party. This was the year Grover Cleveland received his remarkable plurality of 192,000 for Governor of New York. The regeneration brought about by the Lake Bluff convocation gave the dry party for the first time permanent root. Many men of influence and practical spirit got behind it.

The national campaign of 1884 was the first in which the Prohibition party was a real factor. Heretofore the party, in national campaigns, may be said to have been a merely nominal organization. In 1884 it began an active career. Dr. Samuel Dickie, since 1901 the honored president of Albion College, presided at the national convention, which nominated for President, John P. St. John, who had twice as a Republican been elected Governor of Kansas. The date of the convention was fixed for May 21, at Pittsburgh. It was postponed to give the two old parties a chance to favorably recognize the temperance question as one of the political issues of the day. The Republican national convention met June 5, the Democrat July 10. Both of these conventions, after listening to prohibition advocates, ignored their requests. So the Prohibition convention that assembled July 23 bitterly arraigned both the old parties. The name of the party was at this convention again changed, the original name of Prohibition party being restored.

The general plan of the prohibition managers of the campaign of 1884 was to try to win the largest possible vote in States of greatest political importance in order to attain a strategic position for the party. The work was so effective that both the old parties retaliated with attacks on the good

Digitized by Google

faith of Governor St. John and others high in the Prohibition party. The Prohibition party polled a total of 150,625 votes in 34 States for its candidate for presidential electors. Michigan's vote was 18,403 for the electors; but David Preston, Detroit banker and Prohibition candidate for Governor, received 22,207 votes. It was the first election in which the dry party's candidates received votes in the Southern States. Thirteen Southern States returned 15,560 Prohibition votes.

When the returns showed that the Republican electoral ticket had been beaten in New York by a plurality of but 1,047, and the vote of New York elected Grover Cleveland, and Governor St. John polled 24,999 votes in New York, there was an outburst of Republican wrath. St. John was burned and hanged in effigy throughout the country. Ministers who supported him were dismissed from their pulpits, and business men were boycotted. The temper of a large number of Republicans was characteristically expressed by an influential Ohio Republican daily paper, July 4, 1887:

"The Republicans have made a mistake in not fighting the St. John frauds with fire, brimstone, clubs, pitchforks and butcher knives."

In 1886 Dr. Dickie received the Prohibition nomination for Governor and polled 25,179 votes. John B. Finch dying in October, 1887, Dr. Dickie was selected national chairman to succeed him. Dr. Dickie called to order the national convention of 1888 held at Indianapolis, May 30 and 31. The convention was attended by delegates from 42 States and Territories, and the District of Columbia. General Clinton B. Fisk, of New Jersey, was nominated for President. Dr. Dickie directed the campaign with great energy and resourcefulness. The expenses of the national committee in the campaign as shown by an itemized statement was $33,397.69.

Digitized by Google

The weapons of vilification and slander were, as in 1884, freely used in this campaign by the old parties. Many Prohibition meetings were dispersed and other disorderly acts committed against the drys. Republicans persistently charged that the Prohibitionists were in alliance with Democrats and were sustained by Democrat money. When the New York *Tribune* published these allegations, Dr. Dickie challenged that paper to produce its proof, offering to pay $5,000 to charity for proof that would be satisfactory to a committee of fair-minded Republicans. The *Tribune* neither accepted the challenge nor produced proof of its charges.

In every State but South Carolina, ballots were cast in 1888 for the Prohibition electors, the total being 249,945. Michigan's vote was 20,492.

At the election in 1890 the Prohibition candidate for Governor received 28,681 votes. This is the high-water mark of the Prohibition party's vote in Michigan. The high-water mark of the party in the nation was in 1892, when John Bidwell, its candidate for President, received 264,133. At the succeeding presidential elections, the Prohibition party received: in 1896 132,007, in 1900 208,914, in 1904 258,536, in 1908 253,840, in 1912 207,928, in 1916 221,329.

In 1892 the Prohibition party vote in Michigan fell to 20,777, in 1894 to 18,788, and in 1896 to 5,499. It came back to 7,006 in 1898, to 11,834 in 1900, and was 11,326 in 1902. Since then it has fluctuated between 16,092 in 1908 and 3,830 in 1914. In 1916, when Michigan ratified the prohibition amendment by a majority of 68,624, the Prohibition candidate for Governor polled but 7,255 votes.

While the Prohibition party never rose to power in any State, it exercised indirectly a potent influence in creating temperance sentiment until that sentiment become so strong

Digitized by Google

that the old parties could no longer ignore temperance as a political issue. The circumstance that the dry party gained no voting strength in the nation in the last 25 years, in many States losing strength, may be accounted for on the theory that a majority of temperance people seem to have been convinced that they could get quicker results working with the old political parties than through independent political organizations. Michigan affords a good illustration of the correctness of this theory.

LOCAL OPTION IN MICHIGAN

Local option grew out of conditions under which statutory laws were of legislative origin while the enforcement of laws were left to local authorities. People had come to look to the local rather than to the State authorities as the dispensers of license prerogatives, and the local was popularly regarded as the real source of power. The people were in more direct contact with the regulating authorities; and, not unreasonably, opinion became pretty general that the local was the proper authority to license or prohibit the traffic. Local option therefore came as a natural thing from local license.

Michigan vested local-option powers in municipalities in 1845, and Detroit promptly tried it. On March 2, 1846, Detroit voted to banish bar-rooms, the vote being 230 for licensing bars and 1,070 against. Dealers resolved to sell without license. The practical results were not such as to encourage those opposed to license. At the charter election in March, 1850, Detroit restored licenses by a vote of 1,482 to 1,035.

Thirteen years before Michigan's municipal option law was enacted, the first county local option in the United States was placed upon the statute books. This was in Georgia in 1833. By 1840 several other States had local-option laws, and each

Digitized by Google

succeeding decade saw local-option territory increase all over the United States. Yet, not until the present decade did States begin to legislate to cure a grave defect in local-option laws; that was, to impose sweeping restrictions against taking liquor into counties dry under local option. In Michigan for the last thirty years before state-wide prohibition came, the unit for local option was the county, although liquor interests repeatedly tried to reduce the unit to municipalities and townships.

In 1887 the Michigan Legislature enacted a law for county local option in Michigan; but the Supreme Court nullified it, because the title did not conform to the text of the Act. Two years later the Legislature re-passed the Act in correct form. In 1890 the first local-option election was held under the new law. It was in Van Buren County, when the county voted 2,599 to 1,320 to banish saloons. Five times since—in 1892, 1897, 1903, 1906 and 1910—the wets had the question re-submitted in Van Buren County, and every time they were beaten.

For twenty-eight consecutive years before prohibition came, Van Buren was dry under local option. By 1894 Allegan, Antrim, Eaton and Hillsdale were also dry. Then all but Van Buren went back to the wet column. From 1899 to 1902 Van Buren was the only dry county. Montcalm went dry in 1903 and Oceana in 1904, but in 1906-07 Van Buren was again the only dry county. The local-option campaign of the spring of 1908 was the first that amounted to a real drive. It brought eleven counties into the dry column and put 265 saloons and two breweries out of business. The election the following year increased the number to 30, and the election in 1910 to 40. There was a slight recession in 1911 when one county went back to license, still another in 1912 when the dry counties were reduced to 35. The election in 1913 put two more that

Digitized by Google

had been dry in the wet column. In 1914 the number of dry was 34, in 1915, 44. When state-wide prohibition came May 1, 1918, these 43 of the 83 counties were dry under local option: Baraga, Emmet, Charlevoix, Antrim, Kalkaska, Benzie, Oscoda, Alcona, Wexford, Missaukee, Roscommon, Mason, Osceola, Clare, Gladwin, Montcalm, Gratiot, Tuscola, Sanilac, Ionia, Clinton, Oceana, Newaygo, Mecosta, Isabella, Midland, Shiawassee, Genesee, Lapeer, Allegan, Barry, Eaton, Ingham, Livingston, Oakland, Van Buren, Kalamazoo, Calhoun, Berrien, Cass, St. Joseph, Branch, Hillsdale, Lenawee.

More than 1,200 saloons and 12 breweries were closed by local option from 1912 to 1916. When state-wide prohibition came, statistics showed that just prior to the day King Alcohol was driven into oblivion April 30, 1918, there were in the 39 wet counties 3,068 retailers, 59 breweries, 9 wholesalers, 6,387 saloon employees, 2,060 brewery employees, 52 warehouse agencies for beer brewed in other States, while the capital invested in the wet business was $12,384,000.

In 1889 when the county local-option law was put upon the statute books there were 6,059 bar-rooms in Michigan and 128 breweries. So in the nearly three decades that the county local-option law was in force the number of bar-rooms was reduced nearly 50 per cent, while the number of breweries decreased by a little more than 50 per cent.

Since 1896 all local-option drives in Michigan were directed by the Michigan Anti-Saloon League, organized in 1896 with W. R. Fox, of Grand Rapids, president. Rev. Mr. Brandt, who came from Ohio, was the first superintendent. E. T. Gilbert, of Detroit, was president from 1904 to his death in 1910. From 1910 to 1912 J. L. Hudson, of Detroit, was president. Mr. Hudson dying the latter year, Richard H. Scott of Lansing

Digitized by Google

succeeded to the presidency. Mr. Scott was still president in 1918.

Rev. George W. Morrow came from the Vermont State League in 1910, and was superintendent of the Michigan League up to 1912, when he was succeeded by J. Frank Burke. Grant M. Hudson, who had been assistant superintendent, has filled the office of superintendent since 1914.

The tax fixed by the act of 1875—$150 for retailers of spirituous liquors and $40 for retailers of malt liquors only—was amended in 1879 when the Legislature raised the tax to $200 and $65. This latter raise was vigorously opposed by wet dealers. So, on July 29, 1880, they organized the Michigan Liquor Dealers' Protective Association to recover holiday privileges and a reduction in the tax, and entered politics.

The Association raised a large campaign fund to be expended in efforts to secure the election of members of the Legislature who would repeal the holiday feature and reduce the tax. They invited candidates for Governor and Lieutenant Governor and members of the Legislature to express themselves. The expressions of the Democratic candidates were accepted as the most satisfactory. Accordingly they issued a circular calling on all wets to vote the Democratic State and legislative ticket. But their efforts were unavailing. The Republicans carried the State by a plurality of 41,303 and elected a majority of both houses of the Legislature.

The new Legislature—it convened in January, 1883—promptly raised the tax to $300 for spirituous beverages and $200 for malt. In 1887 the Legislature made another raise, this time to $500 and $300.

When the regular session of the Legislature convened in January, 1895, the State license rates were still $300 for retailers of malt liquors and $500 for retailers of spirituous

Digitized by Google

liquors, or for both spirituous and malt. A great many bar-room-keepers violated the license law at this period by taking out a malt liquor license and selling spirituous liquors as well as malt. Of 4,315 barroom-keepers who secured licenses in Michigan in 1894 about one-third paid the $300 malt liquor license. In Detroit, in the same year, 747 had a $500 license and 459 a $300 license. Yet it was common knowledge that, with comparatively few exceptions, those holding licenses for malt liquor sold only spirituous liquors, also not only openly but with impunity. It is not recalled that a single Detroit bar-room-keeper was ever prosecuted for selling spirituous liquors under a malt license.

These conditions were the excuse of the liquor interests to have introduced in the Legislative session of 1895 a bill for a uniform license rate of $400. Manifestly the passage of the bill would have effected a reduction of bar-room taxes, taking the State as a whole; for twice as many had been paying the $500 as paid the $300. The bill was taken up in the House in April, as a special order, and, after several hours debate, was rejected in committee of the whole, on a rising vote. Sixty votes were counted against it.

No sooner was the result of the vote announced than the temperance floor leaders sprang a substitute for a uniform tax rate of $500 for both malt and spirituous liquors. The substitute "carried with a whoop," and when the committee arose and a roll call was taken the $500 uniform-rate substitute carried by a vote of 72 to 22. The substitute bill passed the Senate a few days later and was approved by the Governor. It was the last drive the liquor interests made on the Legislature to secure a reduction on bar-room license rates.

In the bill as the liquor interests had it introduced there was a section to permit bar-rooms to keep their doors open for busi-

Digitized by Google

ness on New Year's Day, Fourth of July, Labor Day, Washington's Birthday and on election nights. This section was rejected with the bill as introduced.

SCIENTIFIC TEMPERANCE EDUCATIONAL LAWS

In the early 80's the Woman's Christian Temperance Union proposed measures for compulsory education in the public schools concerning the nature and effects of alcoholic liquors and narcotics on the human system. Michigan and New Hampshire were the first two States in which the Legislature moved to enact such laws. It was in 1883. In 1887 the Michigan Legislature completed the law so as to provide that in all public schools where there are classes in which hygiene and physiology are taught, text-books on these subjects shall be used which tell of the effects of alcohol and narcotics on the human system. Between 1883 and 1890 the legislatures of 33 States placed such a law on their statute books. In 1886 Congress enacted a like law applying to the schools of the District of Columbia and all other schools controlled by the Government. This was the first purely temperance measure enacted by Federal authority.

CHRONOLOGY—MICHIGAN

The first measure to restrict the traffic in intoxicating liquor within the confines of what is now the State of Michigan was taken two years before the Declaration of Independence was proclaimed. Because of disturbances in Detroit by Indians when intoxicated with liquor given to them in exchange for furs, Detroit merchants on April 26, 1774, agreed to put their liquor in one general store and to sell to an Indian not more than one glass at a time. The Acts in chronological order to restrict, regulate and outlaw the traffic from that year to the

Digitized by Google

legislative session of 1917, which created the machinery for enforcing prohibition, were these:

1775—Committee of Detroit merchants formulated a plan to prevent the sale of liquor to Indians under penalty of $300 fine.

1795—The law courts of Quarter Sessions were authorized to license the sale of wine and beer, the license fee to be $4 a year.

1805—Territorial licenses for the sale of all kinds of intoxicant beverages were fixed at $10 to $25, the amount to be determined by justices of the peace.

1812—Penalty for selling to Indians fixed at $5 to $100 and forfeiture of the article (usually furs) that the Indian gave for liquor.

1814—Licenses in the Detroit district fixed at $10 for all, and $5 outside; also provision enacted that no one could be licensed to sell in less quantities than one quart except on petition of 12 free-holders.

1815—Dealers were forbidden to sell intoxicating beverages to a soldier without consent of his officer, or to an apprentice without consent of his master. Tavern-keepers were forbidden to sell to any person on Sundays except travelers and lodgers.

1819—Law enacted vesting the granting of licenses in county courts practically at their discretion, and making debts for liquor uncollectable.

1822—Detroit was vested with authority to tax and regulate retailers who were not tavern-keepers.

1827—Teritorial Legislative Council warned tavern-keepers not to give or sell liquor to habitual drunkards; also decreed that intoxicating liquors should not be sold within a mile and a half of the meeting place of a religious society; also that licenses were to be issued by the county courts and that tavern-keepers holding liquor licenses must have at least two beds for

Digitized by Google

travelers. Law of 1819 declaring debts for liquor uncollectable made more specific.

1829—Decreed in the Detroit district that no liquor should be drunk on licensed premises.

1833—Another license law enacted vesting licensing authority in township boards, licenses to be granted only when taverns were necessary for travelers.

1834—Licenses in the Detroit district raised to $100. Detroit's population in 1834 was 4,968, and there was one licensed place for selling liquor for beverage purposes for each 13 families. All grocery stores had licensed bars. The $100 license rate was disregarded.

1836—A State license law enacted and license rates fixed at $15 to $20.

1845—Law enacted for local option by municipalities and townships.

1850—Constitutional provision adopted reading: "The Legislature shall not pass any Act authorizing the grant of license for the sale of ardent spirits or other intoxicating liquors."

1851—Law enacted requiring barroom-keepers to give bonds of from $500 to $1,000, conditioned to pay any penalties and forfeitures incurred by reason of violating any provisions of law, and judgments in civil cases. The Supreme Court held this Act not to contravene the constitutional provision which prohibited granting licenses as means of revenue, and not to interfere with the right of the Legislature to prohibit, under heavy penalties, the traffic in ardent spirits when conducted in such manner as to corrupt public morals. Further, the court held that the statute was not an enabling Act to authorize the traffic by granting a license.

1853—Legislature passed the first so-called Maine prohibition Act. A petition 1,300 feet long was presented to the Legis-

Digitized by Google

lature praying for its enactment. The Act provided that municiual councils and township boards, on the first Monday in October each year, might authorize some person to sell liquor for medicinal, mechanical, scientific and sacramental purposes only. Dealers were required to keep a list of all sales and names of persons to whom sold. The law was submitted to a referendum of the electors on the first Monday of June, 1853, and was ratified by a vote of 40,449 to 23,054. It went into effect December 1, 1853. A few weeks later a Detroit judge declared it unconstitutional. His decision greatly encouraged barroom-keepers and no serious effort was made to enforce the law.

1855—An iron-clad prohibition law was passed by the Legislature. It declared the liquor traffic to be illegal. Druggists, however, were to be permitted to sell for medicinal purposes and purposes other than beverage. Debts for liquor were declared to be non-collectable. The law went into effect May 15, 1855. During the following several months the number of bar-rooms in the State was materially diminished. There were many arrests for violating the law, but few convictions, and in a few years it was a dead letter.

1859—The Legislature, apparently realizing that the law could not be enforced, enacted a measure to forbid the adulteration of liquors, and provided for appointment, by probate judges, of chemists to be county inspectors of liquor. The measure accomplished practically nothing and was repealed in 1875.

1861—Distilling of alcohol to sell out of the State was legalized; also was legalized the selling of wine and cider in quantities of one gallon or over, and the brewing of malt beverages to be sold in quantities of more than five gallons.

1871—Justices of the peace were given jurisdiction to try

Digitized by Google

barroom-keepers for violations on account of liquor sales.

1873—Law amended so that women would be subject to imprisonment for liquor violations the same as men.

1875—State enacted a law taxing the manufacture and sale of spirituous liquors.

1876—Constitutional provision forbidding the grant of licenses for the sale of ardent spirits and other intoxicating drinks was repealed on a referendum. The vote was: for repeal 60,639, against 52,561.

1877—Tax law amended to require bar-rooms to be closed on election days.

1879—Law amended to require closing on all legal holidays, and also to make the penalty for violators imprisonment as well as fine.

1887—Legislature submitted a prohibition amendment to a referendum. Rejected by a vote of 178,636 for the amendment and 184,281 against it. Directly after the rejection of the amendment at the April election the Legislature enacted several laws containing these provisions: each violation of the liquor laws to be a separate offense; saloon-keepers made liable for civil damages for selling to minors and posted persons; no saloon to be conducted within one mile of the State Soldiers' Home; unlawful to sell liquor to inmates of the Soldiers' Home except when away from Grand Rapids on furlough; declared unlawful to sell to minors and students, or to permit minors and students to be in bar-rooms; persons intoxicated in public places to be liable to $20 fine or 30 days' imprisonment, with the person having the option to sign a pledge in the presence of the judge to abstain from intoxicants for one year; sale of intoxicants barred from theaters and other places of amusement; closing hours fixed from 9 p. m. to 7 a. m.,—in cities to 11 p. m., if the local authorities permitted; screens and cur-

Digitized by Google

tains that obstructed the view of bars from the street forbidden.

1889—County local-option law enacted. Registration and election boards forbidden to meet in buildings in which intoxicants were sold.

1893—Law enacted forbidding the sale of intoxicants on boats on State waters outside the boundaries of cities, villages and townships, except on boats licensed by the Federal Government.

1895—Tax rate for retailers of malt beverages, or spirituous beverages, or both, made uniform at $500.

1897—Law forbidding giving or selling intoxicants to posted persons made more stringent.

1907—Boards of supervisors empowered to send "booze-fighters" to gold cures at public expense.

1909—Warner-Cramton law enacted which limited the number of bar-room licenses that a city, village or township could issue to one for each 500 population; also a law forbidding free lunches to be served in bar-rooms, except crackers and pretzels; also fixed a penalty of $1,000 fine or one year imprisonment for furnishing intoxicants to inmates of State penal and reformatory institutions, except hospital supplies. Penalty for selling to posted persons increased to $200 fine or 90 days' imprisonment.

1913—Pray law enacted which prohibited the shipment of intoxicating beverages into dry counties except under rigid regulations, and which contained drastic search and seizure provisions. It was supplementary to the Webb-Kenyon Federal law forbidding interstate shipments, except under specified conditions, from wet States into dry States. Law enacted to prohibit the drinking of intoxicants on steam and interurban cars except in compartments where drinks could be served

Digitized by Google

under licenses, and authorizing trainmen to enforce the law. Law forbidding the taking of liquor into mines.

1915—Township boards empowered to refuse, at their option, to approve all applications for bar-room licenses. Declared to be unlawful to use in advertising liquors the picture, or any utterance or writing, of a deceased President of the United States. Also made unlawful to give or sell intoxicants to employes in lumber camps, mills and yards, or on the right-of-way of logging railroads.

1916—Constitutional amendment for state-wide prohibition initiated under the initiative and referendum article of the constitution. The amendment was submitted to the electors November 7, 1916, and ratified by a majority of 68,624. The vote was: for the amendment 353,378, against 284,754. Amendment operative May 1, 1918.

1917—Law enacted providing methods and machinery for enforcing state-wide prohibition.

FEDERAL CHRONOLOGY

It was not until nearly sixty years after Michigan made the first move against unrestricted traffic in liquor that Congress enacted the first temperance law. The Federal temperance Acts chronologically are these.

1832—Act forbidding the sale of intoxicants to Indians or introducing liquor into Indian country.

1883—Excessive use of intoxicating liquors declared to be a bar to appointment in the civil service.

1890—Sale forbidden of intoxicating liquor in any military post, canteen or transport, or on premises used for military purposes.

1902—Sale of intoxicants to certain natives on islands of the Pacific coast forbidden.

Digitized by Google

1902—Sale of intoxicants in national parks prohibited.

1903—Congress declared that no intoxicating liquor should be sold in the restaurants of the Capitol building at Washington.

1907—Congress forbade sale of intoxicants anywhere between the Government Hospital for the insane and the Home for the aged and infirm, or within a radius of a mile and a half of either in the District of Columbia.

1907—Sale of intoxicating liquors in any immigrant station forbidden.

1909—Interstate carriers were forbidden to collect the purchase price of liquors before or after delivery from the consignee, which killed the odious C. O. D. express business of liquor shipments into dry States. The Act also required all liquor shipments to be marked as such and forbade delivery except to bona fide consignees.

1909—Congress declared intoxicating liquors non-mailable.

1912—Act passed forbidding the sale and manufacture of liquors in Alaska except under certain conditions.

1913—Congress passed Webb-Kenyon Act to forbid the importation of intoxicants into a State to be received, used or possessed contrary to the laws of such States.

1917—Congress submitted to the several States for ratification a constitutional amendment for nation-wide prohibition. Also passed a law for absolute prohibition in Alaska; also a bill for prohibition in Porto Rico; also a bill making the District of Columbia dry; also to forbid the sending of advertising matter and soliciting letters for liquor orders into dry States; also a law providing severe penalties for persons who order, purchase or cause intoxicating liquors to be transported by interstate commerce into a dry State except for medicinal, mechanical, scientific or sacramental purposes.

Digitized by Google

Claude Jean Allouez, S. J. (1613-1689)

By John A. Lemmer
Notre Dame University

WITHIN twelve miles of Notre Dame, in the vicinity of Niles, Mich., is the grave of Father Claude Allouez, of him who endured hunger, nakedness, shipwreck, and persecution, that the savages of the wild northwest might know of God; of him who for thirty years traveled through gloomy forest and over desolate prairie, preaching to numberless tribes of Indians, sometimes worshipped as a manitou, sometimes avoided as a pestilence and despised as an assassin. It is he who founded Catholicity in the West, and well is he called the Francis Xavier of the American missions. He lives forever,—the pioneer of the holy men of God in the wilderness of North America.

It was in the year 1613[1] at St.-Didier-en-Forest, Haute Loire, in the province of Toulouse, France, that Claude Jean Allouez was born. When about seventeen years of age he entered the Jesuit mission of Toulouse as a novice, and here, as well as at

1. T. J. Campbell, S. J., in the *Catholic Encyclopedia*, gives 1620 as the year in which Allouez was born. However, in the same article Father Campbell writes that Allouez died in 1689 at the age of 76, which makes 1613 the year of his birth. Another evidence of inaccuracy in Father Campbell's account is the statement that Father Allouez died near the St. John's River; it is the St. Joseph River near which his death occurred.
In the *Jesuit Relations*, Vol. 44, p. 322, June 6, 1622, is mentioned as the date of the birth of Allouez; in Vol. 71, p. 158, 1613 (al. 1620) is given. Margry and Winsor accept 1613.

Digitized by Google

Billom and Rodez, he labored until his student life ended in 1656.[2] He served but a short time as preacher at Rodez, for the missionary spirit burned within him, and in 1657 he received permission to embark for Canada.

On the 11th of July, 1658, the ship which had conveyed d'Argenson, Governor of New France, and Father Allouez across the Atlantic, anchored before Quebec. Two years later, on September 19, Allouez left this city to become Superior of Three Rivers, where for seven years he ministered to the people of the neighboring St. Lawrence settlements. While he was stationed there, he was appointed by Bishop Laval of Quebec as grand vicar for "all the countries toward the north and west;"[3] so Allouez holds the distinction of being the first vicar-general in the west, the head of the first ecclesiastical organization in that country.

In 1664 Father Allouez was selected to continue the work of Father Réné Ménard. He left Three Rivers for Montreal, whence he expected to go to the Ottawas, but he reached Montreal too late to depart for the western mission, and he had to return to Three Rivers. The following year, on the 8th of August, Allouez bade farewell to his mission again, and with six French fur traders and four hundred savages who were fleeing from pursuing Iroquois, he set out for the western wilds. The canoe in which he and the French traders paddled was smashed, and the Indians whom Allouez had called the "Angels of the Upper Algonquins," waited not for them to repair it. Fortunately, however, they succeeded soon in fixing the little

2. *Jesuit Relations*, Vol. 44, 322. According to this account Allouez was born in 1622.

3. *Ibid.*, LVI, 303, note 8. The document conferring this title is dated July 21, 1663, and is to be found in the archiepiscopal archives at Quebec.

Digitized by Google

boat, and they overtook the savages on the Ottawa River. The canoe was now of little use, so Allouez requested the Indians to take the white men aboard with them. They replied by making room for the traders and leaving the priest behind, telling him in arrogant and threatening terms that he would be abandoned on some desert island should be attempt to follow them further.

This unkind treatment did not daunt the heroic Father. Providentially, some Frenchmen discovered him, and some days afterward they caught up with the fleet of Indian canoes. Allouez had now determined upon a more brusque attitude toward the red men. "Know you not," he berated them, "that I hold Onnontio's voice in my hands, and that I am to speak for him, through the presents he entrusted to me, to all your nations?"[4] His eloquent tirade frightened some of the Indians, but the heart of one old chief remained untouched, and he insisted that because Allouez could not carry a heavy load or paddle a canoe, he should be left behind. The advice of this contemptuous chief was followed; but later, evidently regretting his action, the chief came back after the missionary, gruffly provided him with a paddle, and silently made room for him in his canoe.

Father Allouez in tender simplicity and humility tells of this voyage. "The slight esteem in which they held me caused them to steal from me every article from my wardrobe that they could. . . . And when evening came, as my pilot took away a bit of blanket that I had, to serve him as a pillow, he forced me to pass the night without any covering but the foliage of some trees.

"When hunger is added to these discomforts, it is a severe

4. *Ibid.*, L, 253; 1664-67.

Digitized by Google

hardship, but one that soon teaches a man to find a relish in the bitterest roots and the most putrid meat. God was pleased to make me suffer from hunger, on Fridays especially, for which I heartily thank Him."[5]

Continuing, Allouez tells how amid all these hardships, he would exert himself to carry as heavy burdens as he possibly could around the rapids, and that his weak efforts resulted only in the mockery of the savages. But frequently, one of them softened with compassion would, as unostentatiously as possible, lighten his burdens.

It was on this journey that Allouez displayed the qualities so essential to the missionary. The Indians had picked up some wounded Ottawas, over whom the medicine men pronounced invocations to their divinities in order to effect a cure. Allouez refused to remain silent amid this superstition, and despite the fact that he was there alone and despised and at the mercy of the Indians, he accosted the chief medicine men and bade them desist from their ceremonies. His words moved the sick man, who refused to consent to a continuance of the Indian practices. Allouez was happy over the result his interference had effected, and minded little the destruction of his canoe.

On the 5th of September, 1665, the party reached Sault Ste. Marie. There, on the waters of Lake Superior, which Allouez named Lac de Tracy, in honor of the Governor, he met the Indians of twelve or fifteen nations. It seemed the obvious design of God to facilitate the promulgation of the Gospel by means of these excellent fishing waters. After coasting 180 leagues along the southern shore of Lake Superior, Allouez, on October 1, arrived at a beautiful bay called Chegoimegon. A

5. *Ibid.*, L, 257; 664-67.

Digitized by Google

village of seven nations of savages stood here, the home of eight hundred men capable of bearing arms. Here the priest began the mission of La Pointe du Sainte Esprit, and achieved his first triumph when he successfully persuaded the young warriors of a number of Algonquin tribes assembled there to abandon a war against the Sioux.

Father Allouez met with considerable difficulty in attempting to bring these Indians to Christianity. The polytheistic Ottawas worshipped the sun, the moon, the stars, the lake, the rivers and woods as benevolent spirits, and the dragon, the adder, and the storms as malevolent powers. The object of their special veneration was the "Missibizi," a fabulous animal they saw only in dreams. Allouez erected his chapel in the middle of their village, and placed striking pictures of hell and of scenes depicting the Last Judgment therein. Many Indians came to him for instruction, and eighty infants were baptized the first winter. The missionary found in the medicine men his bitter enemies, and frequently he had to endure their contempt and mockery. Indeed, their insolence was so great that his chapel was wrecked by profligate Indians whom the medicine men had incited.

After Allouez had labored at La Pointe nearly two years he set out on the 6th of May, 1667, for Lake Nipigon to visit the Nipissiriniens, among whom Christians were to be found. He passed in a canoe across the western end of Lake Superior, and on its northern shore in a chapel of foliage he took the opportunity to say Mass, thus enjoying the sweetest refreshment he had experienced during that journey, entirely obliterating all his former fatigues. He reached the village of the Nipissiriniens on June 30, and there he found twenty Christians, with whom he remained two weeks.

Father Allouez now resolved to go to Quebec in the attempt

Digitized by Google

to secure assistance in his work, and if possible to bring workmen back with him, that chapels and houses for the missionaries might be erected in order to provide permanent residences, and that the Indians might be encouraged in the tilling of the soil.

He reported to his superiors on August 4, 1667, and visited with them two days. Then he returned to Chegoimegon, taking Father Louis Nicholas and one other man with him, since the Indians refused to make room for more white men in their canoes. Work at La Pointe was again resumed, but the results were far from encouraging. Allouez, who had been instructing the Indians there for two or three years, now determined to leave them unless they took increased interest in his labors. His spirits rose, however, when in the summer of 1668 the Elders among the Queues Coupees[6] declared themselves in favor of embracing Christianity. They had failed thus far to take the Faith seriously, and Allouez had become impatient with them. "I told them," wrote the missionary, "that at length I felt myself obliged to leave them, in order to go to the Sault, because, after my three years among them, they were unwilling to embrace our holy Faith. . . . I added that I should leave the place immediately, and that I was going to shake the dust from my shoes; indeed, I took my shoes off in their presence, in proof that I was leaving them altogether, and did not wish to take anything from them away with me, not even the dust that clung to my shoes."[7]

---

6. *Ibid.*, XXXIII, 273, note 6. "*Kichkagoneiak*, the Kiskakons are the 'Short-tailed Bear' clan of the Ottawas, not a separate tribe. The name *Kickkagon* is derived.....from the Algonquin word *Kiska*, 'to cut,'—alluding to the abbreviated tail of the bear; hence its French soubriquet, *Queues Coupees*, 'Cut tails,' sometimes given to the clan."
7. *Ibid.*, LII, 205; 1667-69.

Digitized by Google

Allouez saw that he had inspired them with fear, and left them to their deliberations. Fortunately, before he could take his leave, the conversion of the whole nation of the Queues Coupees was made certain. Consequently, the priest wintered with the Indians for the fourth time in order that he might instruct and baptize them. They abandoned their superstitious ceremonies and refrained from offering sacrifices to their old gods; they abolished polygamy entirely, and exhibited the greatest fervor, living near Allouez' chapel so that the women and children could go to church every day during the winter.

In September, 1669, Father Allouez was replaced at La Pointe by Father Marquette, and Allouez went to Quebec, taking with him some Indians that he had ransomed. His stay in Quebec was very brief, and he quickly returned to Sault Ste. Marie. There he met some Pottawattomies, who requested him to come with them that he might soften the hearts of some French traders who had been abusing the Indians. So on November 3, 1667, Father Allouez with two other white men left the Sault for Baie des Puants, or Green Bay. That the trip was a hard one we learn from Allouez, who writes that one morning "upon awaking we found ourselves covered with snow, and the surface of the canoe coated with ice. This little beginning of crosses which our Lord was pleased to allot invited us to offer ourselves for greater ones. We were compelled to embark with all the baggage and provisions, with great difficulty, our bare feet in the water, in order to keep the canoe afloat, which otherwise would have broken."[8]

Wisconsin received its first message of Christianity when on the 2nd of December, the eve of the feast of St. Francis

8. *Ibid.*, LIV, 199; 1669-71.

Digitized by Google

Xavier, the post of the French traders and the motley village of Sacs and Foxes and Pottawattomies was reached. The mission of St. Francis Xavier was established there, among Indians very barbarous and in an exceptionally needy condition, their food consisting mainly of Indian corn and acorns.

In April, 1670, Allouez ascended the Fox River and visited the Winnebagoes. He translated the Lord's Prayer and the Angelican Salutation together with a very brief catechism into their strange language which he had studied. His labor among them was very fruitful, and fifty-seven of the tribe were baptized.

Allouez had received instructions to return to Sault Ste. Marie, which he did on the 20th of April. Accompanied by Father Dablon, his Superior, he returned to St. Francis Xavier by canoe in September of the same year. The priests received a hearty welcome from the Indians, and bands of warriors constantly paraded before their lodge in amusing imitation of the soldiers which some of them had seen at Montreal. Allouez addressed large audiences, and spoke to them of hell and of the devils. The interested Indians beset him with so many questions that even the nights were employed in explaining to them the doctrines of Christianity.

To get to the tribes farther inland Father Allouez traveled twenty-four leagues during the month of February, 1671, to the village of the Outagamis, the mission of St. Mark. "What consolation, O my Jesus," he wrote, "to make you known to those who have never heard of you! I was preparing myself for death, meeting at first nothing but insolence and repulses from these barbarians; and lo! they are listening to me with an attention and affection beyond what I could have expected even from the best disposed people."[9] The missionary planted

9. *Ibid.*, LV, 221; 1670-72.

Digitized by Google

a cross in the middle of the village of the Outagamis, and told the young warriors the story of Constantine, whereupon, of their own accord, they marked their shields of bull-hide with the cross, and marched to victory in battle.

We come now to one of the most interesing incidents in the history of the wild northwest. Monsieur de St. Lusson, subdelegate of the Intendent of New France, Monsieur Talon, summoned all the tribes within a radius of one hundred leagues of the Sault to come there, and on the 4th of June, 1761, the territory of the northwest was solemnly taken over in the name of the King of France. The purpose of the assemblage was to foster the spread of Christianity as well as to cause the sovereignty of the French monarch to be recognized by even the most remote tribes. Sault Ste. Marie was an ideal place for apostolic labors since it lay in the most traversed route of the savages who went to the French settlements, and the representatives of fourteen nations were present, some deputies coming from Monsonis at the head of Hudson's Bay.

When all were assembled a huge cross was raised, and the French escutcheon was fixed to a cedar pole erected above the cross. Allouez, who understood the Indian method of harangue and how to adapt himself to the comprehension of the savages, was the orator of the day, and astonished the Indians with the power and greatness of the French monarch as he pictured it for them.

"Cast your eyes upon the Cross raised so high above your head," bade he; "there it was that Jesus Christ, the Son of God, making Himself man for the love of men, was pleased to be fastened and to die. . . . He is the Master of our lives, of Heaven, of Earth, and of Hell. Of Him I have always spoken to you, and His name and word I have borne into all these countries. But look likewise at that other post, to which

Digitized by Google

are affixed the armorial bearings of the great Captain of France whom we call King. He lives beyond the seas; he is the Captain of the greatest Captains, and has not his equal in the world. All the captains you have ever seen, or of whom you have heard, are mere children compared with him."[10]

Then Allouez translated Lusson's speech into the Algonquin tongue, the Frenchmen sang the Exudiat to the delight of the savages, musketry was discharged, and the observance ended amid the cries of "Long live the King!"

Allouez returned to his work at Green Bay, and established the mission of Des Pères. On the 9th of August, 1672, he embarked for the mission of St. Jacques among the Mascoutens on the Fox River, and he reached there four days later. During the previous year 114 persons had been baptized at the mission, and now it was a village of 6,000 souls, in which five tribes were represented. The eagerness of the Indians to hear Allouez was so great that the chapel was much too small and the walls, which were made of rushes, were broken down. Indeed, all could not be given instruction at one time, so Allouez often had to go outside the chapel in order to make himself heard; or he would have the Indians within the chapel say the prayers he had taught them, and then they would withdraw, their places being taken immediately by others.

In front of his chapel which stood among the Mascoutens the missionary erected a cross twenty-two feet high. The Miamis were especially grateful for this, and hung clusters of Indian corn, girdles, and red garters upon it as a mark of veneration. But they desired the cross near their own cabins, and beseeched Allouez to remove the one from the Mascoutens to their village. To this the Mascoutens strenuously objected, so in order to

10. *Ibid.*, LV, 100; 1670-72.

Digitized by Google

satisfy all, Allouez had a similar cross erected among the Miamis.

On the 6th of September, Father Allouez started down the river to St. Francis Xavier, and while descending the rapids his canoe was broken and all the baggage was water-soaked. Some of the boatmen went to get another canoe, while Allouez was compelled to remain for eight days on an islet ten feet long with one of the men who was sick. The trip to Green Bay was made upon his recovery.

In 1676 Allouez was called upon to replace Father Marquette, whose work among the Illinois had been terminated by death. He left Baie des Puants in October, desiring to winter with the Illinois, but he was forced to encamp until February of the next year. Then he placed his canoe on the ice and ice-boated toward Lake Michigan, or the Lake of the Illinois, as it was called by the members of that tribe. He reached this body of water on the vigil of the feast of St. Joseph, and so he named it Lake St. Joseph. After traveling seventy-six leagues along the lake, he reached the river that led to the Illinois. When he arrived at their settlement he was welcomed by eighty Indians, the chief of whom advanced thirty steps with the calumet to greet him.

It was on the 27th of April, 1677, that Allouez reached Kaskaskia, the village of the Illinois, to make his home in Marquette's cabin. Eight tribes were assembled there and 351 cabins lined the river banks. Allouez tells us that the Indians living there used no guns because they were too cumbersome, but that they were expert with the bow and arrow, and that their shields of wild bison were arrow-proof and covered the whole body. On the festival of the Holy Cross, May 3, 1677, Allouez planted in the village a cross thirty-five feet high,

Digitized by Google

while the Indians looked on admiringly and respectfully. Soon thereafter he was driven from this nation, but he returned again the following year.

It was because of Allouez' supreme trust in God that the Illinois were won over to Christianity. They possessed no love for the French, because they believed that the Europeans were allied with their enemies, the Iroquois, with whom they were constantly at war, and so the Illinois determined to kill the first Frenchman who came to them. Fully aware of their resolution, Allouez went to them, telling them that he knew of their intention, but that his zeal for their salvation was so great that the safety of his own life meant little provided he could save their souls. This heroic act of the missionary gained the admiration and love of the Illinois, and they accepted his teachings cordially.

When Allouez returned to Kaskasia in 1678, he found that the tribe had been scattered by the Iroquois, but he remained there until LaSalle came in 1679, when he retired to the Mascoutens. It is now that we come upon the sole dissonant voice in the life of Allouez, and that issues from the proud and boastful La Salle, who always saw in the disasters that befell him the influence of the Jesuits. La Salle showed particular animosity towards Allouez, and accused him of inspiring the Miamis to bring the Illinois and the Iroquois to war against each other and to have La Salle massacred. However, the circumstances given by La Salle upon which this suspicion rests are far from convincing.[11] The best proof that La Salle's suspicions of Allouez are groundless is the sincere friendship that existed between the priest and Tonty, La Salle's most faithful follower.

The last years of Allouez' life were spent among the Illinois

11. Parkman, *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West*, p. 222.

Digitized by Google

and the Miamis. Zealously he instructed them, sharing with them the few miserable roots they found to eat, and even of these each obtained very little owing to the great numbers in the tribe. The scarcity of food did not permit the savages to remain long in one place, but this did not diminish the enthusiasm of Allouez, who traveled with them through dismal marshes, sometimes passing through twelve marshes in one day, sometimes even through one continuous swamp. In winter the ice was not very thick, and frequently he sank up to his knees in the cold water. Yet, despite all this, Allouez, ardent in his love for all the children of God, labored and prayed, employing even the time spent in travel for instruction.

Among the Miamis, near the site of the present city of Niles, Mich., on the banks of the St. Joseph River, Allouez died on the night of August 27-28, 1689. His name is connected everlastingly with the advancement and discovery in the northwest, for he was a man of zeal and piety, of fearlessness and energetic devotion. In many an Indian village did he plant the cross of Christ, and among many an Indian tribe did be abolish idolatry and superstition. With sincere fortitude he gave himself, body and soul, to God, unhesitatingly facing death whenever the cause of Christianity would be thus promoted. Many a wintry night he spent alone in some little snowbound cabin, possibly because a Christian Indian had died after baptism, and as a result, had become a murderer in the eyes of the rest of the tribe. Gifted with the power of tongues, he instructed over 100,000 savages during his life, and baptized 10,000. Truly is he the Francis Xavier of America.

Digitized by Google

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Thomas J. Campbell (S. J.), *Pioneer Priests in North America; Catholic Encyclopedia,* "Allouez."

P. F. X. de Charlevoix. *History of New France.*

Jesuit Relations.

D. B. Martin, "Father Allouez and the Fox River," in *The Catholic World,* 81: 199-207.

Francis Parkman, *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West.*

John Gilmary Shea, *The Catholic Church in Colonial Days; Discovery and Exploration of the Mississippi Valley; History of Catholic Missions Among Indian Tribes; First Establishment of the Faith in New France.*

Justin Winsor, *Narrative and Critical History of America.*

Digitized by Google

OLD VETERANS' STORIES

By the Lansing Lodge, Sons of Veterans

GHOSTS!

Contributed by Bernard B. Whittier

IT was Hallowe'en! And the twins had been invited to a party at Grandpa's!

There had been the usual games, dipping for apples, black cat, and all the rest of the fun. Every child that Grandpa and Grandma knew, the twins thought, had been invited to the party, and they were having such a good time!

But there comes a time at every party when the children get too sleepy to enjoy their games. At most parties that is the time to go home. But at a Hallowe'en party that is only a signal to sit down and tell the creepiest stories you can possibly think of. Grandma was 'most afraid to have the children indulge in that part of the program, but Grandpa was firm.

"Didn't we used to tell the worst ghost stories you ever heard when we were kids?" he said.

"Yes," said Grandma, "and many's the night I've laid awake half the night, scared out of my wits, thinking of those stories, too."

"And never got 'em back!" said Grandpa. "That's half the fun, you know. But in those days the old folks about half believed in ghosts and goblins themselves, and didn't take any pains to teach us there really aren't any such things. That makes a big difference, you know."

Digitized by Google

"Yes, I suppose so," said Grandma, seeing that he was determined to have his way about it.

So the twins, Ethel and Bert, had their stories, with Grandpa sitting as arbiter, to see that nothing was told that was not all right, and to sooth any too ruffled nerves that might develop. But in a large measure Grandpa was right, and the children told of their ghosts and goblins and other horrid things, with nothing more than an occasional "Oo-o-o!" from the more nervous girls.

But at last even that exciting sport was beginning to pale. All the most exciting tales had been told, and the time had come when further efforts would fall flat in their effect. It was then, as usual in emergencies, that Grandpa was appealed to.

"You tell us a ghost story, Grandpa," said Ethel.

"A really, truly one," added Bert.

"Oh, do!" sang the chorus of voices.

"A really, truly ghost story," repeated Grandpa. "Well, now, how is a fellow to tell really, truly ghost stories, when there aren't any such things as ghosts?"

"Oh, tell us something exciting, anyway," said Ethel.

"Something exciting, anyway," said Grandpa, drawing lustily on his pipe, which had nearly gone out. "A really, truly ghost story about some ghosts that aren't real, and make it exciting. You don't want anything, do you?"

"Oh, you know what we mean!" said Ethel, banging a tiny fist against her knee.

"Yes, Missy," said Grandpa, "I guess maybe I do. Now let me see. We want a suitable ghost story. A ghost story. I guess maybe I'll tell you about a ghost I saw in the army one time."

"Oh, goody, goody!"

Digitized by Google

"Did you really see it?" asked one of the children.

"Yes, I really saw it," said Grandpa. "It was while I was on picket duty one night. I was standing in the open, but there was a patch of woods only a little ways from me. It was away in the middle of the night, some time—I don't remember just what time—when I first saw the ghost, just coming out of the edge of the woods. I didn't think anything of it at first. We got used to seeing all sorts of sights in the army, you know. A little thing like a white ghost at midnight didn't bother me any.

"Then after a while the ghost suddenly disappeared right while I was looking at it. That made me sit up and think a bit. A white ghost was all right, but a white ghost that suddenly disappeared while I was looking at it was another thing."

"Maybe it went back in the woods," said Bert.

"That's what I thought," said Grandpa. "But after a while there it came into sight again, right before my eyes. That set me to thinking again. It was nearer to me than it was the first time, too."

"Oo-o-o, my!" shivered one of the girls.

"That was what I thought," said Grandpa, "after it had disappeared and come into view again. It did that several times; now I saw it, now I didn't, and every time I saw it, it was nearer to me. And I couldn't away, you know, because that was against the rules. I just had to stand there and watch that ghost come closer and closer to me every time I saw it. And I couldn't tell what it was doing when I couldn't see it, you know. It made me feel pretty nervous."

"Oo-o-o, my! I should think it would!" said the girls.

"Yes, it did, really," said Grandpa. "You see, I wasn't afraid of it so much as a ghost, because I knew there wasn't

Digitized by Google

any such thing as really, truly ghosts; but I did know that the Johnny Rebs were trying to pull off every trick they could think of to get some advantage over us. You see, I was really afraid that was a Johnny disguised as a ghost to scare the liver and whey out of me, so as to get close enough to put me out of business. And I had no particular liking for being stuck with a Johnny's bayonet. They were too long and sharp!

"But that ghost kept getting closer and closer till at last it was but a few feet away, and I was about ready to have a fit. I figured it was time to put an end to it, even if it did rouse the camp. So I waited till it came into view again, only a little ways away, and then I raised my gun and fired. The ghost disappeared immediately, of course, but it was only a minute till the officer of the guard was on hand, wanting to know what I had shot at. How was I to tell a big United States Army officer that I had shot at a ghost, and expect to have him believe me?

"Well, he didn't believe me, and ordered another guard posted with me until morning. But in the morning we had it on the officer, for there, when I had shot her, lay a fine, fat cow, white on one side, and a dark red on the other. Of course, when she turned the red side towards me in dark I couldn't see her, but when she turned the white side towards me I could see her; but, not being white all over, it didn't look like a cow, you know. She had wandered out of the woods eating the grass. She certainly did throw a scare into your Grandpa once, though."

"What did you do with her?" asked Bert. "Didn't you have to pay for her?"

"No, siree," said Grandpa. "The army was glad enough to do any paying, for the fresh meat she made. I had the first

Digitized by Google

real good beefsteak I had had in months off of that cow. I wasn't so sorry, while I was eating that beefsteak, that I had seen ghosts that once."—[From an experience of James J. Whittier, Co. A, 6th Vt. Inft. Date unknown]

A BOX OF TROUBLE

Contributed by L. E. Bradley

Just after the battle of Atlanta, a number of recruits joined our regiment at the camp, six miles east of Atlanta, and among the number was an Indian by the name of "Fisher," who came from near Saginaw, Mich., as a substitute. He did not chum with the boys to any extent, and seemed a "lone Indian" in every sense of the word.

Soon afterward we started out after General Hood, with General Thomas in command, and I saw the Indian with a spade, there not being a gun handy. He was put in the engineers' corps. The next day I saw him without his spade, and asked him what he had done with it.

"Hugh! Throwed it in the weeds. I don't carry spade!"

He came that night to have me read some letters he had received from a sister, and to write to her, as he could not read or write. He was very homesick. He would "never see Michigan again." I tried to cheer him up, but he "had it bad." I saw him only about once a week, although in the same company.

While we were crossing the Cumberland Mountains we halted to rest, and, being at quite an elevation, we had a good view of the slopes below; and I saw someone prowling around the buildings some forty rods away, but thought nothing of it, as there were always some of the boys looking for something to piece out our rations with. But, as he was the only one in view, I continued to watch him, and saw him pick up some-

Digitized by Google

thing and put it on his shoulder. Soon he began to wave his free arm frantically. I became interested, and soon saw him put the box down, dive both arms into it, and start for the column. Between him and the column was a small piece of hemp, about six feet high, and I could just see the top of his head as he bounded through. He came up to the line, and such a sight! We could not tell whether he was an Indian or an over-ripe banana. He was covered with bees, with his arms clasping about a pound of honey, the rest having run down his clothes. His eyes were swollen shut, but he remarked, "I got honey!"

Some little time after that I saw him again for the last time. He had a haversack left of all his outfit. He told me his shoes hurt his feet, and that it was so warm he did not need his blanket or clothes, so he "throwed them away," and was dressed in light marching order—barefooted, and with pants and shirt constituting his wardrobe.

I see in the records that he was sent to a hospital in Virginia, from which he was afterwards discharged, in '65.—[Co. D, 23rd Mich. Vol. Inft. Experience during Georgia campaign. Courtesy Mrs. Albertine B. Conklin and Miss Gertrude E. Mevis]

COURTING!

CONTRIBUTED BY GERTRUDE E. MEVIS AND BERNARD B. WHITTIER

At the close of the war two chums returned to Knoxville, entering Government employ, and being sent to pick up Government stock, as horses and mules bearing the United States brand were called, making their headquarters with a farmer named French, on "Strawberry Plain."

To pass away the time they called one evening on some girls whose acquaintance they had made a year and a half

Digitized by Google

before, when the army was in Tennessee. But while chatting with the girls their two brothers, with two neighbor boys, returned from Dandridge, all being ex-Confederate soldiers; and all were proportionately "wrathy" that the "Yanks" should call on their sisters. So when the boys came to go, the Southerners swore to "take care of them," promising them only four lengths of fence before the hostilities should begin.

Being granted the privilege of saying farewell to the family, young Bryant went into the house and laid the situation before them, asking only one favor. It was readily granted, though doubt was expressed of anything being of any avail. The lad then requested that the girls hold their brothers' arms while they made good their escape.

So the boys were stationed off the four lengths of fence, and bade to go, which they did; but before they could hardly get started they heard the curses and swearing of the enraged brothers at being held; and soon the bullets were flying fast and close. But the boys made good their escape, arriving at their headquarters late at night, and promptly throwing up their job the next morning, starting for Michigan on horseback, by way of Cumberland Gap and Lexington and Louisville, where they carred their horses for Detroit.—[Experience of A. L. Bryant and his chum, Albert E. Ludlum, Co. G, 23rd Mich. Vol. Inft. Fall of 1865]

A PLATE'S WORTH

Contributed by Edwin R. Havens

In June, 1863, we started for Gettysburg, as it afterward turned out. On th 27th of June, at Frederick, Md., a change in the command of the division and cavalry corps took place, and the Michigan Cavalry brigade was placed under the command of the afterward famous Gen. George A. Custer in the division

Digitized by Google

commanded by Gen. Judson A. Kilpatrick, and the next day took up a line of march towards Gettysburg. On the first day, or rather the first night, my captain, the company being on advance guard of the column, asked me if I did not want to go ahead to some of the farmhouses by the way and get something for him and myself to eat that night. Of course, I assented, boylike, not thinking that there could be any danger in the scout; so, taking his haversack and my own, I spurred up my horse and started.

I had not ridden far before discerning a light near the roadside and started for it, but before reaching it the light was extinguished. I soon after espied a house by the road, with no yard in front, so, riding alongside the porch, I drew my sabre and, rapping sharply on the floor of the porch, I was greeted with the hail, "Who bee's there?" I answered, "A soldier." "Bee's ye a yankee or bee's ye a rebel?" I replied, "A Union soldier." Then came, "Get oop! Katherina, get oop! The yankees is coom, the yankees is coom!" and soon the light again appeared, and the good couple, not stopping to make an elaborate toilet, appeared, both loaded with eatables. After my haversacks were both filled to the brim and overflowing, the farmer appeared with a great, big pie. I demurred to taking it, telling him that I had all I could well carry and no place to put the pie, everything being full. But he said, "Shust take it along on the plate." "But," says I, "you may never get your plate again." "Nefer mind that; shust you drive the damn rebels out *and you may keep the plate!*"

Well, we did both.—[Sergt. Co. A, and Lieut. Co. I, 7th Mich. Vol. Cav. Experience on June 28, 1863. Courtesy of Miss Edna Havens and Miss Gertrude E. Mevis]

Digitized by Google

MICHIGAN HISTORY MAGAZINE

VOLUME II, 1918

INDEX

Abbott, Robert, petition from Democratic Republicans of Wayne County, 286

Adams, Professor Charles Kendall, quoted, 314

Adams, Mrs. Franc L., Report on Ingham County Historical and Pioneer Society, 667–673

Adams, Prof. S. E., select private high school, 559

Agassiz, brief account of, 470

Akogibik Lake, derivation of name, 545–546

Alabama claim, settled by arbitration, 722–723, 722 (n. 21)

Albert, King, resistance to Germans, 474

Alcona County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 585

Aldrich, Mrs. Lovey, brief sketch of, 669

Alger, Governor, recommends amendment to suppress liquor traffic, 301

Alger County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 585; *Munising in History* (Wyman), mentioned, 648; *Pioneer Days in Munising* (Whitmore), mentioned, 648

Aliens, see Foreigners

Allegan County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 585

Allouez, Father, western journey, 353; quoted on myth of michabos, 532–533; *Claude Jean Allouez, S. J. (1613-1689)* (Lemmer), 781–794; bibliography on, 794

Alpena County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 585

Altmicks, Rev. Servatius, missionary work in and around Harbor Springs, 326–327

America, *Changing America* (Wenley), mentioned, 22; Americanism of Carl Schurz, 73–74, 80; outline for study of coming of Americans to Michigan, 217; American Revolution, Daughters of the, see Daughters of the American Revolution; War

Angell, President, prominent place of, 150; tribute to Professor Morris, 225; *James Burrill Angell and the University of Michigan* (Shaw), 309–323

Anti-Saloon League, see Michigan Anti-Saloon League

Anti-Slavery, see Slavery

Antrim County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 585–586

Apostle Islands, article entitled "Naming of Apostle Islands," mentioned, 45

Digitized by Google

Arbitration, practiced by English speaking people, 720–723; see also Treaties
Arbor Day, changed to Arbor and Bird Day, 336
Arbury, F. W., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 564, 565
Archambeau, A. E,, biographical sketch of Dan H. Ball, 419–420
Archives, *Records of the Northwest Territory in British Archives* (Burton), mentioned, 22; *Report on the Archives in the Executive Department, State Capitol, Lansing*, 238–256; *Report on the Archives in the Department of State, State Capitol, Lansing*, 437–454; *Father Jones and the Jesuit Archives* (Landon), 499–503
Arenac County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 586
Arthur, Mrs. Clara B., work of, 108(n.92)
Askin, John, *John Askin, Tory*, mentioned, 22
Assinins, meaning of, 540
Atlases, see Maps
Attila, invasion of Europe, 466
Audubon Society, see Michigan Audubon Society
Austin, E. C., letter book, mentioned, 239
Authors' Association, see Michigan Authors' Association
Automobiles, material in archives of State Department, 437–438
Au Train, origin of name, 539

Backus, Henry T., information on political situation, 186, 187 (n.128)
Bacon, David, school in Detroit, 149
Bacon, Sir Francis, cypher, 520
Badin, Rev. J. Vincent, at Harbor Springs, 328
Bailey, Mark, in Pageant of Escanaba, 346
Bailly, Sophia, married Henry G. Graveraet, Jr., 88
Baldwin, Governor, papers of, mentioned, 244
Ball, Dan H. biographical sketch of, 419–420; *Hon. Dan H. Ball* (Bates), mentioned, 648
Bancroft, George, quoted, 555
Banks, attitude of radical Democrats toward, 180–181; material in executive archives on, 247
Baraga, Fr., missionary work, 325, 326; on meaning of Nintonaganing, 544–545
Baraga County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 586
Bark River, meaning of Indian name for, 544
Barlow, George, death of, announced, 663
Barnard, Arthur, testimony in case of, mentioned, 451
Barnard, Miss Emily, gifts to museum, 58
Barrows, Prof., lectures on birds, mentioned, 333
Barry, Governor, letters, mentioned, 246
Barry County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 586
Bates, Asher B., active Whig, 183
Bates, Miss Clara, Audubon society work, 334
Bates, I. P., report on meeting of Van Buren County Pioneer Association, 40
Bay de Noc, spelling and meaning of, 548–549

Digitized by Google

Bay County, *Bay County, Past and Present*, review of, 410–413; *Pioneer Schools of Bay City* (Richardson), mentioned, 426; *Historical Incidents in the History of Bay County* (Shields), mentioned, 426; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 586–587
Bayard, Mr., on creation of new State out of Northwest Territory, 275, 276
Beaufait, Louis, petition from, 282
Beccherini, Fr. Francis, takes census of Detroit Italians, 120; work as pastor in Detroit, 122–124
Begole, Governor, on liquor traffic, 301; fire in the "Thumb" in 1881, 406–410
Belgium, invasion by Germans, 473–475
Bell, Miss Annie M., wife of Brayton Saltonstall, 382(n)
Bennett, Miss Susie, gifts to museum, 58
Bentley, Mrs. Bessie, gift to museum, 58
Benzie County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 587
Berra, Mr. and Mrs. Paul, mentioned, 119
Berrien County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 587
Berto', Fr. Benjamin, pastor in Detroit, 121–122
Betsy River, origin of name, 538
Bible, John F., papers on case of, mentioned, 249
Bibliography, on Claude Jean Allouez, 794; County Organization in Michigan, 603–604; historical society publications, 231, 232, 233, 430, 433; Indians, 45, 60, 230, 432, 648; Keweenaw Historical Society, 430–436; Mines and mining, 430, 432, 436, 648; war, 7, 10, 11, 22, 45, 46, 195, 203, 204, 208, 209, 484, 713, 715, 734–736; see also Biographical sketches; Biographies
Biddle, John, candidate for U. S. Senator, 171–172
Bidwell, John, vote for in 1892, 767
Bingham, Kinsley S., brief biographical sketch of, 180; views on national issues, 190–191; on prohibition law, 298
Biographical sketches, Angell, James Burrill, 309–323; Ball, Dan H., 419–420; Bingham, Kinsley S., 180; Buttars, Archibald, 387(n); Chandler, Zachariah, 49; Coleman, Harry, 504–512; Conlon, Josephine Sullivan, 517–518; Daniells, John T., 491(n); Henderson, Dr. James, 235–237; Norvell, John, 168; Ransom, Epaphroditus, 178; Saltonstall, Brayton, 381–382(n); Scott, Winfield Lionel, 513–517; Sherman, Mrs. Pruella Janet, 519–521; Wood, Hon. Edwin O., 401–403; Woodbridge, William, 184
Biographies, memorial to Lawton T. Hemans, noted, 233; Wenley, Prof. Robert M., *The Life and Work of George Sylvester Morris*, review, 223–230; need of biographies of leading University professors, 224
Birds, *The Michigan Audubon Society* (Munger), 330–340
Birmingham, Alton M., gift to museum, 58

Digitized by Google

Birmley, Mrs. Lydia, death of, announced, 655
Blackbird, Mr., on meaning of Mackinac, 527, 528
Blacker, Robert R., motion and briefs in case of, 451
Blair, Mrs. George H., gift to museum, 58
Blake, Mr., teacher in Houghton, 558
Blinn, Emma C., wife of Archibald Buttars, 393
Bliss, Mrs. Alseba, gift to museum, 58
Bohrer, Louis, death of, announced, 663
Bois Blanc, meaning of Indian name for, 554
Borgess, Rt. Rev. Caspar, interest in education, 154, 155
Boschi, Fr. John, in Detroit, 123
Boundaries, Ohio-Michigan boundary in Michigan politics, 172–177; outline for study of, 218–219; materials in executive archives on, 240; of States created out of Northwest Territory, 272–273
Bowen, Mr. and Mrs. W. L., gift to museum, 58
Bowman, Mrs. Margaret, death of, announced, 655
Boyce, Addison S., "The Battle of Cow Hollow," 487–488; diary of, mentioned, 490
Boyd, Hugh, death of, announced, 655
Bradley, L. E., "A Box of Trouble," 799–800
Brady, Samuel, gifts to Keweenaw Historical Society, 433, 434
Branch County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 587
Brooks, Colonel, political activity of, 186, 187
Brougham, Nellie, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
Brown, Earl, winner in school prize essay contest, 643
Brown, Judge Edward O., quoted on location of Marquette's mission, 133–134
Brown, Dr. Elmer E., tribute to Prof. Morris, 228–229
Brown, Elmer E., death of, announced, 655
Brown, Gen. Joseph W., gift to museum, 59
Brown County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 587
Browne, Mrs. Grace Greenwood, Audubon society work, 334
Brule River, *Trouting on the Brule River* (King), 431
Bruneau, Jos., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 432
Buell, Mahlon H., winner in war prize essay contest, 641; *Why the United States is at War*, 702–715
Burnett, Dr. Dewitt A., death of, announced, 655
Burnt Bluff, Indian name for, 550
Burton, Mrs. L., gift to museum, 59
Butler, Jefferson, lectures, mentioned, 332, 333; work for protection of birds, 334–335; legislative bills for bird protection, 335
Buttars, Archibald, *Memories of Northern Michigan*, 387–395
Butterfield, George E., Introduction to *Bay County, Past and Present*, 410–413

Digitized by Google

Cadillac, De La Mothe, commandant of Detroit, 110; on liquor traffic at Detroit, 738
Calhoun County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 587
Calumet, origin and meaning of, 540–542
Campbell, Rev. T. J:, quoted on veneration for name of Marquette, 142; account of Allouez, 781(n.1)
Canada, "Historical Activities in Canada, 1916–1917," mentioned, 45
Cardiello, Pietro, Italian Consul in Detroit, 124
Cardoni, Francesco, business career in Detroit, 115–116
Carleton, Will, *Memory Day*, 494–498
Carton, Augustus C., *What Can A Historical Society Do Now?*, 459–464
Cass, General Lewis, supporters of, 189, 190; counties organized by, 575; temperance work of, 742
Cass County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 587
Catholics, *Father Marquette at Michilimackinac* (Wood), 125–142; *Historical Sketch of the University of Detroit* (Doran), 154–164; *Early Catholic Missions in Emmet County* (Linehan), 324–329; *Father Jones and the Jesuit archives* (Landon), 499–503; *Jesuit Relations* of 1671, quoted, 527; *Claude Jean Allouez, S. J., 1613-1689* (Lemmer), 781–794; bibliography, 395, 499, 500, 794
Census, returns in executive archives, 238; in archives of State Department, 438; see also Population
Chaffey, Mrs. Agnes, gifts to museum, 59
Champlin, Judge, decision on Local Option law, 303
Chandler, Zachariah, *The Public Life of Zachariah Chandler* (Harris), contents summarized, 47–53; establishment of Detroit *Post*, 69; as United States Senator, 72
Chapin, Mrs. A. M., gifts to museum, 59
Charitable institutions, outline for study of, 221–222
Charlevoix County, business firms, 391–392; city of Charlevoix in 1856, 393; Marquette and Saginaw trails, 393, 394–395; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 587–588
Chase, Lew Allen, appeal for historical material, 413–416; gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
Cheboygan County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 588
Chelli, Mr., in Detroit, 114
Chiera, Gabriel, business in Detroit, 117
Children, see Minors
Chippewa, origin and meaning of the name, 533
Chippewa County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 588
Chubb, Henry S., gifts to museum, 59
Churches, erection of churches for Italians in Detroit, 121–123;

Digitized by Google

establishment of in Michigan by various denominations, 145–146; see also Catholics; Congregationalism
Citizenship, transfer of a contribution of United States, 723
Claims, material in executive archives on, 248
Clare County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 588
Clark, General George Rogers, lands granted to, mentioned, 272
Cleveland, Rev. John P., work in interests of Presbyterian Church, 147
Clinton County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 588
Clubs, see Societies
Coal mining, see Mines and mining
Coates, Mrs. Katherine R., death of, announced, 656
Coburn, Mrs. H. W., gift to museum, 59
Coburn, Mrs. M. A., gift to museum, 59
Coleman, Charles, father of Harry Coleman, 511
Coleman, Harry, *Harry Coleman* (Fitzgerald), 504–512
Collins, Mrs. Joseph, sketch of, 664–665
Colombo, Louis and Paul, reasons for settling in Detroit, 118
Colonial Wars, Society of, see Societies; War
Comfort, Will Levington, *Routledge Rides Alone*, mentioned, 32
Comstock, E. H., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 567
Conger, candidate for U. S. Senator, 185
Congregationalism, *Congregationalism as a Factor in the Making of Michigan* (Sanderson), 143–153
Congress, measures in for division of Northwest Territory into States and Territories, 270–288
Conlon, Josephine Sullivan, sketch of education and work of, 517–518; *Father John and Other Stories*, 518; *Smiles and Tears*, 518; *Be Brave*, 518–519
Constitutional Conventions, of 1835, factional struggle in, 170–171; action on liquor traffic in 1850, 293–294; in 1867, 299
Constitutions, clause relative to liquor traffic, in 1850, 294; in 1867, 299; in archives of State Department, 439
Cook, R. K., gifts to museum, 59
Cooley, Professor Charles H., on Dr. Angell, 321
Cooley, Justice, decision on taxation of liquor business, 750–752
Cooper, Richard, store of, 388
Corey, Mrs. Polly, gift to museum, 59
Corporations, materials on in archives of State Department, 439–443
Correspondence, in executive archives, 239–243; in archives of State Department, 443
County organization, *County Organization in Michigan* (Hathaway), 573–629
Covell, Hon. George G., brief sketch of, 656
Crane, Mrs. Caroline Bartlett, war work of, 264
Crary, Isaac E., material on in executive archives, 248

Digitized by Google

Crawford County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 588
Culver, Lorraine W., death of, announced, 656
Cummings, Miss, private school of, 559
Custer, Camp, amount of State fund expended on health activities, 268

Dablon, Father, in Michigan, 125; on Michilimackinac, 127–130; letter from Father Marquette, quoted, 134–135
Dale, Father, at Escanaba, 357
Daniells, J. T., *The History of Memory Day*, 491–498
Daughters of the American Revolution, action of at annual meeting, 404–406; report on war work of, 416–419; work in making records of boys in service, 421–425; report of State Chairman of Historic spots Committee, 681–685
Day, Justice William R., address on unveiling of Marquette statue, quoted, 142
De Jean, Father, missionary and educational work at Harbor Springs, 328
Delamater, Mrs. Louis, gift to museum, 60
Delta County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 589
Democracy, influence of Congregationalism on, 147–149; America champion of, 717–719; see also War, Great
Democrats, see Politics
De Niccola, Tommaso, arrival in Detroit, 117
Dependents, relief of, 264; amount of State fund expended for relief of, 268
De Rocher, Mrs. Ruth, gift to museum, 60
Despres, Mrs. S. C., paper before Old Settlers' Association of Grand Traverse region, 655–667
Detour, meaning of Indian name for, 533
Detroit, *Coming of the Italians to Detroit* (Vismara), 110–124; *Historical Sketch of the University of Detroit* (Doran), 154–164; opposition of people of to law attaching Michigan to Indiana Territory, 277–279; report of Worthington on situation of inhabitants, 281; report on attachment of inhabitants in and around to Ohio, 283; petition relative to creation of Michigan Territory, 284-285; liquor traffic at post of, 738–739; organization of temperance society at, 742; anti-liquor laws violated, 753; number of saloons and breweries, 754; action on barrooms in 1845 and 1850, 768; bibliography, 22, 55, 431; see also Wayne County
Dewey, Prof. John, tribute to Prof. Morris, 225–226; *German Philosophy and Politics*, quoted, 712
Dickie, Dr. Samuel, vote for in 1886, 757; active in Prohibition party, 765, 766; vote for in 1886, 766
Dickinson County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 589
Diepenbeck, Rudolph, reports, mentioned, 255

Digitized by Google

Dierkens, Brother Novatus, missionary work of, 327
Dill, Mr., death of, announced, 656
Dixon, Hon. John S., pioneer farmer in northern Michigan, 388, 389
Dobson, Mrs. Robert, brief sketch of, 656
Doelle, J. A., gifts to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434; work as superintendent of Portage Township schools, 567–570
Donovan, Hon. William H., gift to museum, 60
Dooley, Rev. William, growth of University of Detroit under, 160–164
Doran, William T., *Historical Sketch of the University of Detroit*, 154–164
D'Orsi, Fr., in Detroit, 123
Doyle, Flora, gift to museum, 60
Doyle, Michael J., papers relative to misconduct, mentioned, 451
Dowling, Michael, work in connection with the University of Detroit, 157–159
Draft boards, amount of State fund expended by, 268
Draper, Edwin J., winner in war prize essay contest, 641
Dubois, Martin, and family, sketch of, 667–669
Dunbar, B. A., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 565, 566
Dunbar, Miss, school in Escanaba, 357
Dunmore, Lord, see War
Dutcher, William, lectures mentioned, 322
Dyer, Thomas, death of, announced, 656
Eaton County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 589
Eddy, Jerome, in State election campaign of 1882, 408–409
Edgerton, Miss, teacher in Houghton, 559
Education, influence of Congregationalism in promoting higher education, 149–150; *Historical Sketch of the University of Detroit* (Doran), 154–164; outline for study of educational institutions, 222; *University Education* (Morris), mentioned, 226; comparison of University of Michigan with other universities, 315; financial aid from State received by University of Michigan, 316; development of academic side of University of Michigan under President Angell, 316–319; see also Schools
Edwards, James, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
Elections, struggle over elective franchise in Constitutional Convention of 1835, 170–171; materials in executive archives on, 243–244; materials on in archives of State Department, 443–444
Emmet County, *Early Catholic Missions in Emmet County* (Linehan), 324–329; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 589
Englehardt, Rev. Fr., missionary work at Harbor Springs, 327–328
Equal suffrage, *History of the Equal suffrage Movement in Michigan* (Fox), 90–109; see also Michigan Equal Suffrage Association

Digitized by Google

Erkins, Rev. Damases, missionary work at Harbor Springs, 328
Escanaba, *The Pageant of Escanaba and Correlated Local History* (King), 341–380; spelling and meaning of, 542–544
Estes, Charles, brief sketch of, 656–657
Evans, Dr. Z. H., brief sketch of, 657
Extradition, materials in executive archives on, 244–245; see also Pardons and paroles

Facchinetti, Mrs., in Detroit, 116
Factions, see Politics
Fairbanks, Mrs. Emmeline D., death of, announced, 657
Family histories, see Genealogy
Farnsworth, Elon, brief biographical sketch of, 169
Fasquelle, Mrs. Ethel Rowan, secretary of Emmet County Historical Society, 41
Fearing, Paul, delegate to Congress from Northwest Territory, 271, 274; on boundary of new State, 275, 276
Felch, Dr. T. A., pioneer reminiscences of, mentioned, 648
Ferrey, Mrs. M. B., report on work of local historical societies and organizations, 41–44; *Donors and Their Gifts to the State Pioneer Museum, Jan. 1 to Dec. 31, 1917*, 58–65
Ferris, Hon. Woodbridge N., quoted on equal suffrage amendment, 108; address of, mentioned, 233; "Memory Day" Proclamation, 493
Field, C. E., gift to museum, 60
Finances, Michigan war loan of 1917, 260; war loan of 1917, items of expenditure, 268
Finley, William, lectures, mentioned, 332
Fisher, Miss Jennie, wife of Dr. Henderson, 237
Fisher, Hon. S. O., speech, mentioned, 248
Fitzgerald, Howard H., *Harry Coleman*, 504–512
Fitzgibbon, John, comment on the papers of Austin Blair, 44–45; *King Alcohol: His Rise, Reign and Fall in Michigan*, 737–780
Fletcher, Judge William A., report of committee to investigate last resting place of, 644–646
Foch, General, in battle of Marne, 478
Food, work of preparedness committee and food director, 261; measures for conservation and increase of, 261–262; amount of State fund expended by food administration, 268
Foote, Mrs. Nettie E., death of, announced, 657
Ford, Henry, bird reserve mentioned, 334
Ford, Prof. R. Clyde, *France in the Great War*, 465–483
Ford River, Indian name for, 544
Foreigners, attitude of conservative Whigs toward, 183; coming of nationalities, in Pageant of Escanaba, 372–375
Fourth of July, *Fourth of July Song* (Nimmo), 457–458
Fox, Karolena M., *History of the Equal Suffrage Movement in Michigan*, 90–109
France, *A Day in France* (Scott), 68; *In France* (Scott), 258; *France in the Great War* (Ford), 465–483
Franchise, see Elections
Free Soil party, see Politics

Digitized by Google

French, outline for study of early settlements in Michigan, 216–217
Frieden, Rev. John P., work for University of Detroit, 157, 158
Frieze, Professor Henry S., president of the University, 310
Fuel, work of director in Michigan, 262; amount of State fund expended by administration, 268
Fuller, Mrs Josephine L., brief sketch of, 657
Fuller, Philo C., candidate for Governor, 185
Fur Trade, material in executive archives on, 248
Furtsch, Frank, death of, announced, 657

Gagnieur, Rev. William F., *Indian Place Names in the Upper Peninsula, and Their Interpretation*, 526–555
Gagnon, Samuel, death of, announced, 658
Garbarino, Stefano, in Detroit, 114
Garden Bay, meaning of Indian name for, 550
Gause, Supt. F. A., compiler of cooperative work *Bay County, Past and Present*, 410–413
Gayley, Prof. Charles M., tribute to President Angell, 322
Genealogy, suggestions on collecting genealogical data and on family trees, 427–429; information on the Coleman family, 511
Genesee County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 589
Germaine, Mrs. Anna, brief sketch of, 658
Germany, principal reasons why the United States is in war with and must continue war with, 196–210; preparations for war, 471–472; invasion of Belgium and France, 472–481; violation and disregard of American rights, 704–708; atrocities in Belgium and Armenia, 708; evolution of military system, 708–710; unification of, 710–711; plans for hegemony of Europe and the world, 711; influence of German philosophy and education, 712–714; submarine warfare, 725–726; effect of atrocities on attitude of Americans, 727–728; preparations and aims, 728–730; reasons for declaration of war against, 731–734; see also War, Great
Ghering, Michael, death of, announced, 658
Gibbons, Cardinal, quoted on woman suffrage, 104
Giles, W. B., petitions from inhabitants of Northwest Territory, 274; report on establishment of new State, 275, 276
Gillette, James M., brief sketch of, 657–658
Gladstone, Indian name for, 549
Gladwin County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 589–590
Glazier, Frank G., record of case of, mentioned, 253
Goose Island, meaning of the name, 528–529
Gordon, Lieutenant-governor, candidate for U. S. Senator, 184–185

Digitized by Google

Governor's office, *Report on the Archives in the Executive Department, State Capitol, Lansing*, 238–256; *Governor's message*, 431; records in archives of State Department, 445
Grand Traverse County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 590
Gratiot County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 590
Graveraet, Garrett A., in Civil War, 88
Graveraet, Henry G., Jr., brief account of, 88
Gray, W. T., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
Great Britain, outline for study of Michigan under rule of, 217; aid promised and given to, 404–406; settlement of international disputes by arbitration, 720–723; on neutral shipping during the Great War, 724–725
Great War, see War
Greilick, Louis, brief sketch of, 658
Griffin, Mr., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 566, 567
Griffith, Miss E. M., work on Pageant of Escanaba, 346
Grinold, Mrs. Elizabeth, gifts to museum, 60
Gros Cap, origin of name, 553
Guck, Homer, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434

Hadrich and Kaine, Mesdames, gift to museum, 60
Hall, Devere, testimony on election of, mentioned, 448
Hall, Professor G. Stanley, on biography of Prof. Morris, 224
Handy, Fred, gift to museum, 60
Harbor Springs, mission at, 326–329; school at, 328
Harden, Miss Mary, paper by on teaching Michigan History, summarized, 210–214
Harlow, Mr., *Mr. Harlow* (Wright), mentioned, 648
Harris, Williams Cooper, on Society of Colonial Wars in Michigan, 19
Harris, Wilmer C., *The Public Life of Zachariah Chandler*, review of, 47–53
Harrison, Governor, proclamation to sheriff of Wayne County, 286; boundaries of Wayne County defined by, 575
Harroun, Mrs. Mary Houghton, gifts to Keweenaw Historical Society, 433
Hart, Dr. Albert Bushnell, *National Ideals Historically Traced*, 195
Hartzog, Rev. W. G., gifts to museum, 60
Hastings, Eurotas, P., portrait of, mentioned, 44
Hathaway, William H., *County Organization in Michigan*, 573–629; bibliography, 603–604; maps, 605–629
Haven, President E. O., attitude toward women's rights, 92; president of the University, 310
Havens, Edwin R., "A Plate's Worth," 801–802
Hayes, Gurd, gifts to museum, 60
Hayes, J. H., *Political and Social History of Modern Europe*, quoted on Germany, 709, 710
Health, work of Dr. R. M. Olin, 264–265
Hedges, father, quoted on site of mission of St. Ignace, 141–142

Digitized by Google

Hemans, Lawton T., memorial to, mentioned, 55, 233; appreciation of by Hon. Addison A. Keiser, 420–421
Henderson, Dr. James, biographical sketch of, 235–237; "Thread from the Woof of Melody," mentioned, 236; letter relative to Winfield Lionel Scott's "From my Note Book," 516–517
Henry, Alexander, noted places mentioned by, 532
Hiawatha, Longfellow's, *Hiawatha*, quoted, 352, 364–365, 536–537, 541, 543, 553; *A Critical Review of Longfellow's Hiawatha* (Gagnieur), mentioned, 648
Higgins, John, record of case of, mentioned, 252
Hillsdale County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 590
Hinsdale, Professor, quoted on Dr. Angell, 316; on seminar system, 317
Historical activities, article entitled "Survey of Historical Activities," mentioned, 45; see also Canada; Northwest
Historical Societies, see Michigan Pioneer and Historical society; Societies
History, see Local history; Michigan history
Hoffman, F. L., petition, mentioned, 253
Hoglesong, Mrs. Lillie G., gifts to museum, 61
Holden, Edward G., *Carl Schurz in Michigan*, 69–80
Holland, J. G., verse by, 421
Home Guard, organization and equipment of, 266-267; amount of State fund expended on, 268; see also War, Great
Hoover, Herbert, importance of work of, 474
Hopkins, Mrs. C. C., gifts to museum, 61
Hornaday, Dr., estimate of bird destruction, 332
Horton, Captain, settled near Horton's Bay, 389
Hough, Professor, tribute to Prof. Morris, 226–227
Houghton, Dr. Douglass, papers, mentioned, 433; probable influence on county organization, 577
Houghton, Mrs. Mary, death of, announced, 658
Houghton County, *History of the Schools of Portage Township in the Copper Country* (Paton), 556–572; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 590
Hubbard, J. P., gift to museum, 61
Hubbard, Dr. L. L., gifts to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
Hugo, Victor, poem on France quoted, 481
Hull, Governor, districts formed by, 575
Humane Society, aid in bird protection, 335
Hunt, James B., on slavery extension, 189
Huron County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 590–591
Huron Mountain, Indian name for, 540
Hutchinson, Mrs. Harriet, gifts to museum, 61

Digitized by Google

Illinois Indians, Father Marquette relative to the, 126; missionary work of Allouez among the, 791–793

Illustrations, Carl Schurz, 69; The Lagorios, 112; Louis Schiappacasse, 114; San Francesco Church and Rectory, 1898, 118; Rev. Francis Beccherini, 122; Marquette at St. Ignace de Michilimackinac, 1673, starting to explore the Mississippi, 125; First building used for classes, 1877, 154; Building of 1889, now used as high school, 158; Engineering building, 1915, 162; James Burrill Angell, 309; Dr. Angell at the time he came to the University of Michigan, 312; Dr. Angell at the end of his years as President of the University, 316; Memorial tablet of President Angell, 318; The President's house on the campus occupied by Dr. Angell for 45 years, 322; Supt. F. E. King of Escanaba's schools, general director of the Pageant, 341; The seven talented high school girls who wrote the Pageant Prologue and most of the spoken parts, 356; Herald and attendants, 360; One of many tepees showing Indian home life, 368; Medicine man in home-made costume, 368; Indian maiden dance, 368; Landing of Marquette and party, 368; Marquette plants the cross, 368; A contrast dance, 368; Only a glimpse of labor scenes, 368; Spirit of Escanaba enthroned welcomes all nationalities, 368; Many nationalities swarm upon the scene, 368; Pictures were taken of small groups only, 368; From 75 to 100 each of fifteen nationalities, 368; All in homé-made costumes, 368; Gave folk dances and sang their national songs, 368; Children of French or Swedish or Irish descent acted as German, Italian or Scotch, and vice-versa, 368; Part of one of fifteen groups, 368; All groups gave folk-song or folk-dance, 368; All nationalities become Americans, 368; Human flag; 368; "Song of the Robin" dance, 378; John T. Daniells, 491; Harry Coleman, 504; Supt. John A. Doelle, 568; Houghton High School, 570

Immen, Mrs. Lorraine Pratt, gift to museum, 61

Immigration, materials in executive archives on, 241

Indiana Territory, Michigan made part of, 277; Bill to divide in Congress, 281–284, 287–288

Indians, *Indian Legends of Northern Michigan* (Wright), 81–89; missions to, 125–142; in Michigan, outline for study of, 216; materials on Indian affairs in executive archives, 241, 249; prohibition of sale of liquor to, 290; *Early Catholic Missions in Emmet County* (Linehan), 324–329; petition of Ottawas for missionary, 329; archives material on Jesuit missions, 500–503; *Indian Place Names in the Upper Peninsula, and Their Interpretation* (Gagnieur), 526–555; maps of Indian land cessions, 606, 607; in Ionia County, 674–675; liquor trade with, 737–740; missionary work of Father

Digitized by Google

Allouez, 782–793; see also Escanaba, Pageant of
Industrial development, outline for study of, 221
Ingham County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 591; history of Onondaga Township, mentioned, 671
Internal improvements, issue in Michigan politics, 178–179; materials in executive archives on, 241; materials on in archives of State Department, 445–446
International law, rights of neutrals during war, 718–719; neutral trade in Great War, 724–726; see also Arbitration
Ionia County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 591
Iosco County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 591
Iron, see Mines and mining
Iron County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 591
Iroquois Point, meaning of Indian name for, 537–538
Isabella County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 591
Ishpeming, meaning of, 542
Isle Royal County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 591
Italians, *Coming of the Italians to Detroit* (Vismara), 110–124

Jack Bluff, meaning fo Indian name for, 550
Jacker, Francis, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435
Jackson, Andrew, political philosophy of, 167
Jackson, C. T., *Full Exposure of the Conduct of Dr. Chas. T. Jackson*, mentioned, 431
Jackson, *History of Jackson State Prison*, (Frensdorf) mentioned, 426
Jackson County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 591–592
Jameson, George, death of, announced, 659
Jefferson, President, approves bill creating Michigan Territory, 288
Jenks, William L., *The Creation of the Territory of Michigan*, 270–288
Jerome, Governor, on prohibition amendment to Constitution, 755
Jesuits, see Allouez, Claude Jean; Catholics; Missions and missionaries
Johnson, Mrs. Jennie E., brief sketch of, 658–659
Johnson, W. W., on meaning of Mackinac, 528; on the Escanaba River, 543–544
Joliet, Louis, sketch of, 137–139
Jones, Father, *Father Jones and the Jesuit Archives* (Landon), 499–503
Judson, Mr. and Mrs. Nathan, gifts to museum, 61

Kahn, Otto, on duty of Americans of German origin, 208–209
Kalamazoo County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 592
Kalkaska County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 592
Kaspers, Mrs. Nellie, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435

Digitized by Google

Keenan, Father, at Escanaba, 357
Keiser, Hon. Addison A., appreciation of Hon. Lawton T. Hemans, 420–421
Kelley, Dennis W., death of, announced, 660
Kelley, Miss Margaret, Audubon society work, 335
Kelton, Captain, on name of Patterson's Point, 552
Kennedy, John, brief sketch of, 659
Kent County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 592
Keweenaw Bay, Indian name for, 540
Keweenaw County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 592
Keweenaw Historical Society, see Societies
Kiefer, Fr., in Detroit, 123
Kinch, Miss Etta, winner in war prize essay contest, 640; *Why the United States Is at War*, 716–736
King, Supt. F. E., on pageant in Escanaba, 24–27; *The Pageant of Escanaba and Correlated Local History*, 341–380
King, Lilia Bartlett, *Michigan, My Michigan*, 688–689
King, Minnie, mother of Harry Coleman, 511
King, Mrs. Myrtle Miller, death of, announced, 659
Kirtland, Mr., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 566
Keyes, Sydney A., death of, announced, 659
Knox County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 592–593
Kratochvil, Vencil, brief sketch of, 659

Labor, women labor laws, 96–97; materials in executive archives on, 241, 249; breaking up of I. W. W. strike, 265; tribute to in Pageant of Escanaba, 368
Lafayette, General, *Lafayette and the Lafayette Portrait* (Campbell), mentioned, 426; aided Americans in Revolution, 467–468; last visit to America, 468–469
Lagorio, Domenic, in Detroit, 113–114
Lagorio, John, in Detroit, 113
Lagorio, Nicholas and Angela, coming to Detroit, 112
Lagorio, Thomas, in Detroit, 113
Laird, Prof., address of, mentioned, 41
Lake County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 593
Lakes, Great, article entitled "A Century of Steam on the Great Lakes," mentioned, 45; *Navigation of the Lakes* (Johnson), mentioned, 431; meaning of name Lake Michigan, 547–548
Landon, Hon. Fred, *Father Jones and the Jesuit Archives*, 499–503
Lands, materials in executive archives on, 241, 249, 250; materials on in archives of State Department, 445–447; maps of Indian land cessions, 606, 607
Langdon, Thos., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
L'Anse, meaning of word, 540
Lansing Lodge, Sons of Veterans, *Old Veterans' Stories*, 484–490, 795–802

Digitized by Google

Lapeer County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 593
La Pointe, Marquette at, 127; missionary work of Allouez at, 785–787
L'Arbre Croche, location of, 325; mission and missionaries at, 325–329
Larzelere, Prof., plan of text on Michigan history, 215
La Salle, *La Salle and the Griffon* (Burton), mentioned, 23; in Pageant of Escanaba, 353
Lautishar, Rev. Lawrence, at L'Arbre Croche, 326
Laws, see Legislation
Lay, A. Tracy, brief sketch of, 661
Leach, Mrs. Abagail, sketch of, 660
Le Clerq, Father Christian, on mission of "Michilimackinack Island," 133
Leelanau County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 593
Lefevre, Bishop, interest in education, 154
Legends, "State Legends and Their Use" (Larzelere), mentioned, 24; *Indian Legends of Northern Michigan* (Wright), 81–89; *Indian Legendary Poems and Songs of Cheer* (Brown), announced, 230
Legislation, for protection of women, 94–97; acts of Congress granting proceeds from land sales and surplus fund to States, 173–174; in executive archives, 244, 245–247; Michigan's war measure of 1917, 260; *History of Prohibition Legislation in Michigan* (Streeter), 289–308; for bird protection, 335; relative to birds, 339–340; archives of State Department, 448–449; laws creating and affecting county boundaries in Michigan, summarized, 585–602; liquor, chronology — Michigan, 773–779; liquor, federal chronology, 779–780
Legislature, factional contest in 1835, 171–172; contest over election of U. S. Senator in 1841, 184–185
Lemmer, John S., *Claude Jean Allouez, S. J. (1613–1689)*, 781–794
Lenawee County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 593–594
Les Cheneaux, meaning and origin of the name, 530–532
Lewis, H. T., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435
Lewis, Miss Lucy D., death of, announced, 661
Liberty Loan, subscriptions in Michigan to, 263
Lime Island, meaning of Indian name for, 534
Lincoln, Abraham, quoted, 209–210
Linehan, Judge Thomas, *Early Catholic Missions in Emmet County*, 324–329
Liquor traffic, see Prohibition
Littlejohn, Augustus, temperance crusade, 744–745
Littlejohn, Flavius J., work for internal improvements, 178; candidate for Governor, 188
Livingston County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 594
Local history, Pageant of Escanaba correlated to, 344–349;

Digitized by Google

list of questions in, 636–640; *Local History and Patriotism* (Ferrey), mentioned, 648; see also Michigan history
Local Option, laws in Michigan, 302–304; history of, 768–773; see also Prohibition
Lombards, immigration to Detroit, 117–119
Loranger, S., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
Lord, Rev. William, lectures, mentioned, 332
Luce, Governor, recommends amendment to suppress liquor traffic, 301
Luce County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 594
Lumbering, *Romance of Lumbering on the Saginaw* (Mills), mentioned, 427
Lyon, Hon. Lucius, painting of, mentioned, 64; letter on attitude toward John Norvell quoted, (168 n.15); brief biographical sketch of, 169; on elective franchise, 170; election as U. S. Senator, 171; leader in west, 178; support to Farnsworth, 182; correspondence, mentioned, 240
Lyon, Mr., teacher in Houghton, 558

McBride, Dorotha, winner in war prize essay contest, 641
McClelland, Robert, on slavery extension, 189; on prohibition, 294
McIntyre, Angus, testimony in case of, mentioned, 452
Mackinac County, *Marquette at Michilimackinac* (Wood), 125–142; *Reminiscences of the Mackinac Country* (Saltonstall), 381–386; *Historic Mackinac* (Wood), review of, 399–401; *Mackinac, Formerly Michilimackinac* (Bailey), mentioned, 430; interpretation of the name, 526–528; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 594
McKnight, Sheldon, removal demanded, 186
Maclachlan, Maj. Gen. J. D., address before D. A. R., mentioned, 405
McManus, Arthur R., death of, announced, 660–661
McManus, Thos. D., brief sketch of, 660
Macomb County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 594–595
McPherson, William, Jr., motion and briefs in case of, mentioned, 451
Magazines, historical, list of, 231–233; see also Newspapers
Manistee County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 595
Manistique, spelling and meaning of, 550–551
Manitopaymen, meaning of, 552–553
Manitou County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 595
Manufacturing, in Escanaba, 358
Manuscripts, Civil War letters by W. H. Tuttle, mentioned, 44; papers of Austin Blair, comments on by John Fitzgibbon, 44–45; *Report on the Archives in the Executive Department, State Capitol, Lansing*, 238–256; *List of manuscripts from The Burton Historical Collection*, mentioned,

Digitized by Google

432; letters and papers presented to Keweenaw Historical Society, 433, 434, 435-436; *Report on the Archives in the Department of State, State Capitol, Lansing*, 437–454; diary of Addison S. Boyce, mentioned, 490

Maps, mentioned, 500, 551; atlases mentioned, 431, 432; list of maps in executive archives, 247; map showing vote on Prohibition Amendment to the State Constitution, November 7th, 1916, 307; list of maps and atlases in archives of State Department, 449; presented to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434, 435; in Hathaway, William H., *County Organization in Michigan*, 605–629

Mark, C. E., account of the fire in the "Thumb" in 1881, 406–410

Markers, see Monuments

Marquette, Fr., *Father Marquette at Michilimackinac* (Wood), 125–142; in Pageant of Escanaba, 353, 366, 367; Journal, mentioned, 395, 502

Marquette County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 595; papers on, mentioned, 648

Marquette Island, origin and meaning of name, 529

Marquette Trail, statement of Archibald Buttars relative to, 393, 394–395

Marshall, Miss Millie, death of, announced, 660

Mason, Stevens T., *Stevens T. Mason and His Times* (Hemans), mentioned, 22

Mason County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 595

Mathew, Rev. Father Theobald, temperance crusade, 745–746

Mauck, Mr., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 565

Maxbauer, Joseph, death of, announced, 660

May, James, memorial for creation of Michigan Territory, 284–285

Mazzuchelli, Fr. Samuel Charles, information in *Memoirs* on missionary work in Emmet County, 324–325; arrival at L'Arbre Croche, 325–326

Mead, Charles, gifts to museum, 61

Mecosta County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 595

Memory Day, *The History of Memory Day* (Daniells), 491–498

Menominee County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 596

Menominee River, Indian name for, 546

Mercier, Cardinal, work of, 474

Merrick, Miss, gifts to museum, 61

Merrifield, Mrs. Sarah Thomas, gifts to museum, 62

Mershon, Hon. W. B., medals for essays on birds, 335

Messages, governors', in executive archives, 246

Mevis, Gertrude E. and Whittier, Bernard B., "Courting," 800–801

Michigamme, Indian names for, 542

Michigan Anti-Saloon League, activity of, 770–771

Digitized by Google

Michigan Association Opposed to Equal Suffrage, formation and work of, 102–105
Michigan Audubon Society, *The Michigan Audubon Society* (Munger), 330–340
Michigan Authors' Association, data on history of, 31–33; *Michigan Authors' Association A Symposium*, 513–525; officers elected, 650–651
Michigan Equal Suffrage Association, formation and work of, 93–94
Michigan counties, *County Organization in Michigan* (Hathaway), 573–629
Michigan Historical Commission, conditions of prize essay contest on "Why the United States is at War," 17–19; fifth annual report of, 54–57; *Prize Essays written by Pupils of Michigan Schools in the Local History Contest for 1916–17*, mentioned, 233
Michigan history, in the grades, 23–24; "Michigan History in the Primary Grades" (Warren), summarized, 27–30; paper by Miss Harden on teaching of, summarized, 210–214; sources for teaching of, 214–216; Twenty-Five Topics in Michigan History, 216–222; list of subjects for doctoral dissertations in State history, 633–636
Michigan Liquor Dealers' Protective Association, organization and work of, 771
Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society, mid-winter meeting postponed on account of war, 33–34; list of deaths of members in 1917, 34–35; new members added in 1917, 35–36; notice of annual meeting of, 222–223; annual meeting of, 425–427, 644–647; *What Can A Historical Society Do Now?* (Carton), 459–464; third Upper Peninsula meeting, 647–650; see also Michigan Historical Commission; Societies
Michigan Territory, see Territory
Michigan War Preparedness Board, organization and work of, 260–269
Midland County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 596
Miege, Rev. John Baptist, first president of University of Detroit, 155–156
Miles, Mr. and Mrs. T. P. L., gifts to museum, 62
Militarism, see War
Millecoquin, meaning of, 551–552
Miller, Mrs. M., gift to museum, 63
Mines and mining, material in executive archives on, 247; amount of iron ore exported from Escanaba, 359; coal mining in Ingham County, 672–673; bibliography, 430, 432, 436, 648
Minors, prohibition of sale of liquor to, 291; illegal to spend time in saloons, 305
Mish-shim-me-ne-con-ing, site marked, 673–674
Missaukee County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 596
Missions and missionaries, *Father Marquette at Michilimackinac* (Wood), 125–142; outline for study of in Michigan, 216; *Early Catholic Missions in Emmet County* (Linehan), 324–329;

Digitized by Google

History of the Catholic Missions Among the Indian Tribes of the United States (Shea), mentioned, 329; coming of, in Pageant of Escanaba, 366–367; archives material on Jesuits in America, 499–503; *Claude Jean Allouez, S. J. (1613–1689)* (Lemmer), 781–794
Mississippi River, Father Marquette's intention to explore, 126–127
Molinari, Fr., priest in Detroit, 121
Monroe, Mrs. Mercy, brief sketch of, 660
Monroe County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 596–597
Monroe Doctrine, adherence of America to, 702–703; principles set forth in, 717–718
Monoskon, origin of name, 535
Montcalm County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 597
Montieth, Rev. John, work of, 147, 149
Montmorency County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 597
Monuments, boulder marking old Territorial Road, 40; marking of Mish-shim-me-ne-con-ing in Ionia County, 674; historic spots marked by D. A. R., 681–685
More, Mrs. James H., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434
Morgan, Mrs. Harriet Douglass Houghton, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 433
Morris, George Sylvester, *The Life and Work of George Sylvester Morris* (Wenley), review, 223–230; difficulties encountered by Prof. Wenley in preparing life of, 234–235
Moses, Celia E., wife of Archibald Buttars, 393
Mound builders, "The Message of the Mound Builders to the Twentieth Century" (Hulbert), mentioned, 22; in Ingham County, 673
Munger, Mrs. E., gift to museum, 63
Munger, Mrs. Edith C., *The Michigan Audubon Society*, 330–340
Munising, meaning of, 539
Munthe, Louis W., papers relative to misconduct, mentioned, 451
Museum, *Donors and Their Gifts to the State Pioneer Museum, Jan. 1 to Dec. 31, 1917* (Ferrey), 58–65; articles donated to Keweenaw Historical Society, 434, 435
Muskegon County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 597
Mutual Aid Society, founded by Italians in Detroit, 120–121

Nąhma, origin of name, 550
National Council of Defense, Michigan branch, 263–264; amount of State fund expended by Woman's Committee, 268; see also War, Great
Neebeesh Island, origin and meaning of name, 534–535
Negaunee, meaning of, 542
Newaygo County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 597
New England, pioneer settlers from, 312

Digitized by Google

Newspapers
Boston *Transcript*, Mr. Scott a contributor to, 515
Chicago *Post*, war poem 481–483
Detroit *Daily Advertiser*, attitude toward Ohio boundary controversy, 175–176;
Detroit *Free Press*, attitude toward Ohio boundary controversy, 175–176; Harry Coleman as managing director, 511
Detroit *Post*, Carl Schurz connection with, 69–71
Detroit *Sunday News*, quoted on University of Detroit, 158
Detroit *Tribune*, quoted on University of Detroit, 158
Ingham County News, files of, mentioned, 671
Michigan Catholic, Josephine Sullivan-Conlon's connection with, 517–518
Mining Journal, editorial comment on organization of Marquette County Historical Society, 37–38
Oakland County Post, successfully edited by Harry Coleman, 506–508
Pontiac *Daily Press*, a rival of the Pontiac *Gazette*, 508–509
Portage Lake Mining Gazette, on Portage Township schools, 558–560, 562, 563–564
Saturday Evening Post, war story in, 473
U. of M. Daily, edited by Harry Coleman, 505–506
Nicolet, in Pageant of Escanaba, 352
Nierman, Rev. Pius, missionary work in and around Harbor Springs, 326
Niles, Mich., grave of Father Allouez near, 781; death of Allouez near, 793
Nimmo, David Chalmers, *Fourth of July Song*, 457–458
Norbett, Fr., missionary work at Harbor Springs, 327, 328
Northwest, "Records of the Northwest Territory in British Archives" (Burton), mentioned, 22; "Historical Activities in the Old Northwest," mentioned, 46; measures for division of into territories and States, 270–288; restriction of sale of liquor in, 290–293; *Early Narratives* (Kellogg) 431; *Tourists' and Invalids' Guide to the Northwest* (Sweetser) 431; government of, 573–574; organization of States and counties in, 574–575; *Some Remarks Upon the History of the Northwest, the Upper Peninsula, and Marquette County* (Stone), mentioned, 648
Norvell, John, brief biographical sketch of, 168; on elective franchise, 170; election as U. S. Senator 171–172; opposition to Farnsworth, 182
Nye, Miss, in charge of kindergarten work in Houghton schools, 570–571

Oakland County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 597; articles relating to Avon Township, mentioned, 677
Oceana County, *History of Oceana County* (Hartwick and Fuller), mentioned, 63; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 597–598

Digitized by Google

Ogemaw County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 598
Ohio-Michigan boundary, in Michigan politics, 172–177
Ohio River, *Frontier Retreat on the Upper Ohio* (Kellogg), 433
Olin, Dr. R. M., health work of, 264–265
Ontonagon, origin and meaning of name, 544–545
Ontonagon County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 598
Ordinance of 1787, provisions of on division of Northwest Territory into states, 270–271
Ornithological Club, see Michigan Audubon Society
Osborn, David, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435
Osborn, Governor, endorsement of equal suffrage movement, 101
Osceola County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 598
Oscoda County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 598
Otsego County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 598
Ottawa County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 598–599

Paddock, Mrs. Cornelia, gift to museum, 63
Pageants, talk on pageant in Escanaba, 24–27; *The Pageant of Escanaba and Correlated Local History* (King), 341–380
Paige, Charles R., death of, announced, 661
Palmer, Walter B., questions on labor troubles, mentioned, 247
Palmieri, Pasquale, directs immigrants to Detroit, 118
Pankhurst, Miss Sylvia, "Universal Suffrage," address, mentioned, 101
Panuzzi, Francesco (Frank Panett), brief account of, 117
Papers, see Manuscripts
Parcells, Charles A., national director of juvenile farm labor, 262
Pardons and paroles, material in executive archives, 242–243, 251–254; material in archives of State Department, 443; see also Extradition
Parkman, Francis, use of Jesuit archives in Montreal, 500; on Jesuit manuscripts, 502–503
Paton, Florence E., *History of the Schools of Portage Township in the Copper Country*, 556–572
Patriots, "Pioneers and Patriots" (Sparks), mentioned, 22
Patterson's Point, Indian name for, 552
Peace, dangers of, with Germany, 204–206
Peck, Mrs. Charles R., gift to museum, 63
Penal and reformatory institutions, outline for study of, 221
Pendill, Miss Olive, report on organization of Marquette County Historical Society, 36–38
Pericles, quoted, 478
Perry, Anna Bernice, winner in war prize essay contest, 640
Perry, Mrs. Belle M., Audubon society work, 334
Pershing, General, quoted, 469

Digitized by Google

Person, Judge Rollin H., work in investigation of last resting place of Judge Fletcher, 644–645
Petitions, in executive archives, 254
Pewabic, raising of, 46–47
Phillips, Major M. J., supervision of Home Guard division, 266
Philosophy, *The Life and Work of George Sylvester Morris* (Wenley), review, 223–230
Pictured Rocks, origin of name, 538–539
Pierce, Rev. John D., influence of, 149
Pierz, Rev. Francis, at L'Arbre Croche, 326
Pioneer museum, see Museum
Pioneer Society, see Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society
Piret, Father, missionary work, 529
Plats, see Maps
Point Detour, Indian name for, 550
Pointe à la Barbe, origin of name, 553–554
Pointe aux Barques, meaning of, 549
Pointe aux Chenes, meaning of, 553
Politics, Civil War and Reconstruction period, 47–53; in Reconstruction period, 69–72; *History of the Equal Suffrage Movement in Michigan* (Fox), 90–109; *The Factional Character of Early Michigan Politics* (Streeter), 165–191; outline for study of political and social questions in Michigan, 220; correspondence in executive archives, 242; in creation of Michigan Territory, 272, 275, 277; attitude of parties toward prohibition legislation, 296–298; Republican party on prohibition, 756–757; the Prohibition party and its campaigns, 760–768
Pontiac's conspiracy, *Journal of Pontiac's Conspiracy, 1763* (Burton), mentioned, 23
Population, Italians in Detroit in 1897, 120; present number of Italians in Detroit, 123; religious elements in Michigan, 145–146; origin of a basis for factional divisions in politics, 165–166; of Wayne County and Mackinac in 1800, 277
Porter, Andrew, mission school, 388
Porter, Augustus, elected U. S. Senator, 184
Potagannissing, derivation of name, 534
Potawatamie Island, meaning of Indian name for, 552
Potier, Father Pierre, writings of, mentioned, 501–502
Preston, David, vote for, 766
Prescott, George A., Food Director, 261
Presque Isle, Indian names for, 540
Presque Isle County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 599
Proclamations, Governors', in executive archives, 254
Proctor, Colonel Henry, "Civil Regulations," mentioned, 254
Prohibition, *History of Prohibition Legislation in Michigan* (Streeter), 289–308; *King Alcohol: His Rise, Reign and Fall in Michigan* (Fitzgibbon), 737–780; see Politics; Temperance

Digitized by Google

Prudden, William K., fuel director, 262
Pryor, James, teacher in Portage Township school, 557
Putnam, Gen., on local government in Northwest, 573

Quinessec, meaning of, 544

Rabbit's Back, meaning of the Indian name for, 532; Charlevoix's *History*, quoted on, 532
Railroads, issue in Michigan politics, 178–179; materials in executive archives, 242, 243, 249, 250; progress in construction of Northwestern, 357, 358; materials on in archives of State Department, 447; influence in settlement of Michigan, 582–583
Randolph, John, on creation of new State in Northwest Territory, 276
Ransom, Epaphroditus, brief biographical sketch of, 178
Rapid River, Indian name for, 544
Rashleigh, Mrs. Jos., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435
Reardon, Will E., record books of, mentioned, 252
Receipts, in executive archives, 256
Red Cross, subscriptions in Michigan to, 263; *Michigan's Red Cross Work* (Warner), mentioned, 426
Reeder, J. T., gifts to Keweenaw Historical Society, 432, 433, 434
Rees, A. J., on collection of war material, 413
Relief work, see Dependents
Religious thought, influence of Congregationalism on, 150–151
Reports, in executive archives, 254–256; in archives of State Department, 453
Republicans, see Politics
Revolutionary War, see War
Rice, Nelson C., record books of, mentioned, 252
Richard, Father, visit to Marquette's grave, 140; work of, 147
Richards, Ann Loomis, wife of Harry Coleman, 511–512
Richards, Rev. J. E., Presbyterian pastor, 511
Rivers, influence on settlement of Michigan, 581
Roads, boulder marking Territorial Road, 40; material in executive archives on, 249; building of a military activity, 267–268; amount of State war fund expended on, 268; data on in archives of State Department, 447; Blois' *Gazetter*, quoted on Chicago Road, 581; influence on settlement of Michigan, 581–582; first government road through Stockbridge, 670
Robinson, Rix, on woman suffrage, 90
Rogers, David, brief sketch of, 670–671
Rogers, Mrs. Jessie A., gifts to museum, 63
Rompf, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435
Roscommon County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 599
Ross, James B., partner of Dan H. Ball, 420
Round Island, meaning of Indian name for, 554
Rowe, W., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435

Digitized by Google

Rowell, Mrs. H. L. B., gifts to museum, 63
Royce, E. P., in Escanaba, 356
Rumer, James F., record books of, mentioned, 252
Ruppe, Mrs. Peter, gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435
Russell, Rev. John, work in organization of Prohibition party, 760–763
Russell, J. H., gifts to museum, 64
Ryan, Miss Frances, work on Pageant of Escanaba, 346

Sabin-Kelly, Mrs. Lydia, brief sketch of, 659
Sackett, L. O., death of, announced, 661
Saendrel, Rev. Simon, at L'Arbre Croche, 326
Sagendorph, D. P., vote for in 1882, 764
Saginaw County, *Reminiscences of Early Saginaw* (Foote), mentioned, 426; *The Saginaw Valley as Related to the Great War* (Linton), mentioned, 426; *History, Resources, and Prospects of the Saginaw Valley*, 430; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 599; see also Lumbering
St. Clair, Governor, attitude toward division of Northwest Territory into States, 272–274; on local government in Northwest, 573, 574
St. Clair County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, 600
St. Ignace, mission at, 131–134; meaning of Indian name of, 554
St. John, Joseph, gift to museum, 64
St. Joseph County, laws creating, summarized, 600
St. Mary's Falls, *Report on the Canal around Falls of St. Mary's*, mentioned, 432; Indian name for, 536
St. Vital Island, Indian name for, 549–550
Saloons, see Prohibition
Saltonstall, Brayton, *Reminiscences of the Mackinac Country*, 381–386
Saltonstall, William, at Mackinac, 381–386
Sanderson, Rev. John P., *Congregationalism as a Factor in the Making of Michigan*, 143–153
Sanilac County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 599
Sargent, Winthrop, counties organized by, 574
Sault Ste. Marie, assemblage of Indians at, 789–790
Sawyer, Mrs. S. O., death of, announced, 662
Schiappacasse, John, coming to Detroit, 114
Schiappacasse, Joseph, arrival in Detroit, 114
Schiappacasse, Joseph (younger), lawyer in Detroit, 115
Schiappacasse, Louis, arrival in Detroit, 114; fruit business in Detroit, 115
Schoolcraft County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 599–600
Schools, *Prize Essays Written by Pupils of Michigan Schools in the Local History Contest for 1916-17*, mentioned, 55; school for Italians in Detroit, 122–123; influence of Congregationalism in promoting higher education, 149–150; *Historical Sketch of the University of Detroit* (Doran),

Digitized by Google

154–164; outline for study of educational institutions, 222; at Harbor Springs, 328; *History of the Schools of Portage Township in the Copper Country* (Paton), 556–572; prize essay contest, 643–644, see also Education; Escanaba, the Pageant of; University of Michigan

Schurz, Carl, *Carl Schurz in Michigan* (Holden), 69–80

Scott, Winfield Lionel, data on history of Michigan Authors' Association, 31–33; *A Day in France*, 68; biographical sketch of Dr. James Henderson, 235–237; *In France*, 258; sketch of life and work of, 513–517; *An Elsation Idyl*, mentioned, 514; *At Sunset*, mentioned, 514; *Azure and Silver*, mentioned, 514; *Interludes*, mentioned, 514; *Lazy Days in Venice*, mentioned, 514; *'Neath Summer Skies*, mentioned, 514; *Songs of an Idle Hour*, mentioned, 514; *A Poet's Workshop*, quoted on Winfield Lionel Scott's home, 515–516; *From my note Book*, Dr. Henderson on, 516

Seaman, A. E., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435

Sectionalism, in Michigan, political significance of, 166–167, 172

Settlements, outline for study of settlement of Michigan after War of 1812, 218; outline for study of settlement of northern Michigan, 219–220; in Pageant of Escanaba, 368–369; *Economic and Social Beginnings of Michigan* (Fuller), 432; economic factors determining location of, 579–583

Seul Choix, meaning of, 552

Sewell, F. G., early teacher in Houghton, 556

Shabwaway, Chief, account of, 529–530

Shaw, Wilfred B., *James Burrill Angell and the University of Michigan*, 309–323

Shawano's Point, Indian name for, 535

Shea, Dr. John Gilmary, quoted on mission of St. Ignatius, 132–133

Sheehan, Daniel, testimony in case of, mentioned, 451

Shelden, Ransom, pioneer settler at Houghton, 556

Shelldrake River, meaning of name, 538

Sherman, Mrs. Pruella Janet, "Cipher Stories," mentioned, 519; sketch of life and work of, 519–521

Shiawassee County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 600

Shields, R. H., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435

Shipherd, Father, founder of Olivet College, 149

Sibley, Solomon, letter of Senator Worthington to, 280

Sicilians, immigration to Detroit, 119–120

Sidman, W. P., in Portage Township schools, 559, 562

Sifferath, Rev. Louis, at L'Arbre Croche, 326

Sigourney, Mrs., poem "Indian Names," 555

Silliman, Miss Sue I., records of boys in Great War, mentioned, 421

Slauson, Mr., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 564

Digitized by Google

Slavery, attitude of radical Democrats toward, 179–180; attitude of radical Whigs toward, 188; attitude of radical Democrats toward extension of, 189–190; outline for study of Michigan and slavery, 220; prohibition of sale of liquor to slaves, 291
Slevin, Rev. Richard, Gymnasium added to University of Detroit, 159
Smith, E. J., gifts to museum, 64
Smith, Miss Jane, first teacher in Houghton, 556
Smith, Miss Josephine, wife of Dr. Henderson, 237
Smith, Mrs. Sarah J., death of, announced, 661
Smith, Willard W., brief sketch of, 662
Smith, Mrs., gift to museum, 64
Snyder, Miss Marie, work on Pageant of Escanaba, 346
Social order, Congregationalism promoting, 151–152
Social relief, see Dependents
Societies, Society of Colonial Wars in Michigan, object and purpose of, 19-21; report by Mrs. Ferrey on work of local historical societies and organizations, 41–44; *Proceedings of the 11th Annual Conference of Historical Societies*, mentioned, 433; materials on in archives of State Department, 453–454; see also Daughters of the American Revolution
Alger County: Historical Society, organization of, 39–40; represented at Marquette meeting, 652
Antrim County, represented at reunion of Old Settlers' Association of Grand Traverse region, 654
Baraga County, see Keweenaw
Benzie County, represented at reunion of Old Settlers' Association of Grand Traverse region, 654
Berrien County: Three Oaks Historical Society, report from, 652
Charlevoix County, represented at reunion of Old Settlers' Association of Grand Traverse region, 654
Clinton County: Pioneer Society, report from, 652–653
Delta County: Pioneer and Historical Society, represented at Marquette meeting, 653
Eaton County: Pioneer Society, meeting of, 653
Emmet County, represented at reunion of Old Settlers' Association of Grand Traverse region, 654
Genesee County: Pioneer Association, annual picnic, 653–654
Grand Traverse County, represented at reunion of Old Settlers' Association of Grand Traverse region, 654
Grand Traverse region, Old Settlers' Association, annual reunion, 654–667
Houghton County, see Keweenaw
Huron County: Pioneer and Historical Society, collecting data for history of Huron County, 667
Ingham County: Historical and Pioneer Society, report from, 667–673

Digitized by Google

Ionia County: Ladies' Literary Club, report from, 673–675
Iosco County: Gleaner Federation, report from, 675–676
Keweenaw Historical Society, financial report of, 429–430; bibliography of new books and list of other gifts, 430–436
Leelanau County, represented at reunion of Old Settlers' Association of Grand Traverse region, 654
Marquette County: Historical Society, organization of, 36–38; meeting of, 647–650
Oakland County: Pioneer and Historical Society, report from, 676–678
Oceana County: Old Settlers' Historical Association and Veterans' Monument Association, meeting of, 678
Ontonagon County, see Keweenaw
Roscommon County: Women's Club, historical work of, 678–679
St. Joseph County: Pioneer and Historical Society, officers of, 40; report from, 679–680
Van Buren County: Pioneer Association, report from, 40
Washtenaw County: Pioneer and Historical Society, meeting of, 680
Soldiers, sale of liquor to restricted, 290–291; *Soldiers' Songs* (Nimmo), 458
Spencer, Mrs. Mary C., gift to museum, 64
Stark, Mrs. Susie, gift to museum, 64
State history, see Michigan history
State Humane Society, see Humane Society
State Rights party, see Politics
Stebbins, Mrs. W. M., letter of appeal and instruction for record of boys in service, 422–425
Steinhauser, Rev. I. G., at L'Arbre Croche, 326
Stephenson, Isaac, information on Escanaba, 544
Stevenson, A. E., Michigan executive of explosives committee, 263
Stone, Senator, letter of President Wilson to, quoted, 200
Strang, James J., Mormon colony, 584
Streeter, Floyd B., *The Factional Character of Early Michigan Politics*, 165–191; *History of Prohibition Legislation in Michigan*, 289–308
Stritch, Father, aids building of church, 123
Strobel, Mrs. Chas., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 435
Submarines, see Germany; War, Great
Suffrage, see Equal suffrage; Women
Sullivan, Boethius, teacher in Houghton, 558
Supreme Court, decision on prohibition law, 295–296; decision on first Local Option Law, 302–303
Svenson, Fr. Anthony, ministers to Italians in Detroit, 121
Swan, Peter, death of, announced, 661
Symmes, Judge, on local government in Northwest, 573

Digitized by Google

Tablets, see Monuments
Takwamenon River, origin of name, 538
Talamon, Professor René, war service of, 695–696
Taper, T., gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 432
Tappan, Henry Philip, as president of the University, 309–310
Taxation, of liquor business, 749–750; Judge Cooley's decision on taxation of liquor business, 750–752; on retailers of liquors, 771–772
Teachers and teaching, what history teachers can do to win the war, 6–9; State Teachers' Association on Michigan history in the grades, 23–24; "Michigan History in the Primary Grades" (Warren), summarized, 27–30; paper by Miss Harden on teaching Michigan history, summarized, 210–214; sources for teaching Michigan history, 214–216
Temperance, organization of societies in Michigan, 742–743; moral suasion crusades, 743–747; work of Woman's Christian Temperance Union, 747-749; scientific temperance educational laws, 773; see also Prohibition
Tennyson, quoted, 344, 356
Territory, Michigan, publication of *Executive Journal* of the Governor and Judges of Michigan Territory, mentioned, 55; representative men of, 218; *The Creation of the Territory of Michigan* (Jenks), 270–288; restrictions on sale of liquor in, 290–293; *Report from the Governor and Presiding Judge of the Territory of Michigan*, mentioned, 431; organization of counties in, 575–576
Thayer, George W., gift to museum, 64
Thomas, Henry F., record books of, mentioned, 252
Thompson, E. H., on woman suffrage, 90
Thompson, Medad, pioneer settler in Northern Michigan, 389, 390
Three Rivers, missionary work of Allouez at, 782
Thwaites, Dr. Reuben Gold, quoted on St. Ignace Mission, 131; quoted on Michilimackinac, 131–132; quoted on Marquette and Joliet, 138
Tiegs, E. W., winner in war prize essay contest, 640
Trails, Marquette Trail, 393, 394–395; Saginaw Trail, 394
Transportation, outline for study of, 221; influence of routes of on settlement of Michigan, 579–583
Travel, *Travels through the Interior Part of North America* (Carver), mentioned, 430; *Tour of the American Lakes* (Colton), mentioned, 430; *Journal of a Trip to Michigan* (Swan), mentioned, 431
Treaties, concluded by President Angell, 313–314; settling boundary troubles, 720–721; settling fishery disputes, 721
Trumble, Raymond, gift to museum, 64
Tuscola County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 600–601
Tyler, President, dissatisfaction with, 185, 186

Digitized by Google

University of Michigan, *American State Universities* (Ten Brook), mentioned, 225; work of Prof. Morris in, 225–230; materials in executive archives on, 251; *James Burrill Angell and the University of Michigan* (Shaw), 309–323; *The University of Michigan in the War* (Wenley), 690–701
Upper Peninsula, I. W. W. strike in, 265; *Where Copper was King* (Wright), mentioned, 432; *Need of Historical Work in the Upper Peninsula of Michigan* (Ferrey), mentioned, 435; *Indian Place Names in the Upper Peninsula, and Their Interpretation* (Gagnieur), 526–555; *Cloverland* (Rowell), mentioned, 648
Uren, Mrs. W. J., gifts to museum, 64; gift to Keweenaw Historical Society, 433

Van Buren County, local option, in, 769; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 601
Vandercook, Major Roy C., *Michigan in the Great War*, 259–269
Van Dyke, Fr. Ernest, ministers to Detroit Italians, 121
Van Dyke, Mrs. Frances E., death of, announced, 662
Van Paemel, Rev. A., at L'Arbre Croche, 326
Vermont, University of, Dr. Angell president of, 312
Verwyst, Father, on derivation of "Neebish", 534; on Indians about Escanaba, 543; on derivation of Gogebic, 545
Veterans, see War, Civil
Vibbert, Professor Charles Bruce, work in connection with American University Union in Paris, 696–698
Vinton, Warren J., work in connection with American University Union in Paris, 696–698
Vismara, Rev. John C., *Coming of the Italians to Detroit*, 110–124
Vouchers, see Receipts

Wages, for woman labor, 96–97
Waiski River, meaning of name, 537
Wait, Mrs. William H., statement of action of National Society, D. A. R., 404; report on war work of Daughters of the American Revolution, 416–419
Wakeman, Abram, gift to museum, 65
Walbridge, Mr., on woman suffrage, 100
Walter, Mrs. Anna, Audubon society work, 335
War, Society of Colonial Wars in Michigan, purposes and work of, 19–23; opposition of Carl Schurz to militarism, 79; outline for study of Michigan and War of 1812, 217; material in executive archives on military affairs, 241–242, 249, 250; printed manuals and rules in archives of State Department, 449–450
Civil War, letters by W. H. Tuttle, mentioned, 44; materials in papers of Austin Blair, 44–45; Indians in, 88; outline for study of Michigan in, 220; *Reminiscences of Civil War Days* (Reed), mentioned, 426; *Recollections of Civil War Conditions in the Copper Country* (Robinson), mentioned, 436; *Old Veterans' Stories* (Lansing

Digitized by Google

Lodge, Sons of Veterans), 484–490, 795–802
Great War, suggested work for history teachers, 6–9; National Board for Historical Service, work of, 10–12; appeal for collecting war history data and kinds of data needed, 12–15; efforts to obtain records of men in service, 16; prize essay contest, conditions of, 17–19; mid-winter meeting of Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society postponed on account of, 33–34; address on "The War and Its Causes" by Prof. Pray, mentioned, 42; Handbook of the War for Public Speakers, two chapters summarized, 195–210; *In France* (Scott), 258; *Michigan in the Great War* (Vandercook), 259–269; appeal for war and other historical material by Lew Allen Chase, 413–416; report on the work of the Daughters of the American Revolution, 416–419; making records of boys in service, 422–425; *Work in Peace and in War, Michigan Daughters of the American Revolution* (Wait), mentioned, 426; *Michigan's "Medal of Honor" men* (Silliman), mentioned, 426; *Michigan's Red Cross Work* (Warner), mentioned, 426; *Industrial History of Lansing as Affected by the Great War* (Bement), mentioned, 426; *Experiences of the Great War* (Clarke), mentioned, 427; *America and the War* (Osborn), mentioned, 427; *What Can A Historical Society Do Now?* (Carton), 459–464; *France in the Great War* (Ford), 465–483; war verse "Be Brave" by Josephine Sullivan-Conlon, 518–519; poem "The Service Flag" by Mrs. Pruella Janet Sherman, 521–523; prize essay contest, 640–643; *America After the War* (Osborn), mentioned, 648; *Why the United States is at War* (Tiegs), mentioned, 648; *Our Obligations to Our Allies* (Van Tyne), mentioned, 648; *Americanism vs. Germanism* (Barth), mentioned, 648; *The University of Michigan in the War* (Wenley), 690–701; *Why the United States is at War* (Buell), 702–715; *Why the United States is at War* (Kinch), 716–736; see also Germany; National Council of Defense
War Preparedness Board, see Michigan War Preparedness Board
Warner, Gov. Fred M., military correspondence, mentioned, 241; proclamation on Memory Day, mentioned, 492
Warren, D. H., gift to museum, 65
Warren, Minetta L., "Michigan History in the Primary Grades," summarized, 27–30
Warren, W. W., on name Ojibway, 533
Washtenaw County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 601
Watkins, John, Audubon society work, 335
Watkins, Mrs. William, gift to museum, 65

Digitized by Google

Wayne County, census of 1800, 277; petition of Democratic Republicans for division of Indiana Territory and separate government for Wayne County, 286; proclamation requiring vote on second form of government, 286–287; laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 601–602; map of, 605; newspaper materials on early history of Dearborn, mentioned, 680; see also Detroit

Webb, Charles E., work as secretary of transportation committee, 263

Webb, Dwight, on woman suffrage, 90

Wenley, Prof. Robert M., *The Life and Work of George Sylvester Morris*, review, 223–230; difficulties encountered in preparing the life of Prof. Morris, 234–235; *The University of Michigan in the War*, 690–701

Wernigk, M., French photographer, 384, 385

West, Mrs. Hazel, gift to museum, 65

West, *The Paul Revere of the West* (Tuttle), mentioned, 22; *Trip to the West and Texas* (Parker), mentioned, 431; *A Summer Journey in the West* (Steele), mentioned, 431

Wexford County, laws creating and affecting boundaries, summarized, 602

Whig party, see Politics

Whipple, Ella A., on women labor, 97

White Fish River, Indian name for, 539

White, Hon. Peter, Ishpeming and Negaunee named by, 542; *Hon. Peter White* (Russell), mentioned, 648

Whitney, M. J., superintendent of schools at Houghton, 562; report on Portage Township schools, 563–564

Whittaker, Melville C., letter relative to fire in "Thumb" in 1881, mentioned, 406

Whittier, Bernard B., in charge of "Old Veterans' Stories," 486, 487; "Twelve Killed," 488–490; "Ghosts!", 795–799

Wilcox, Mrs. James, gift to museum, 65

Wilhelm, Mrs. Josephine Mary, brief sketch of, 662

Wilhelm, Dr. Julius M., brief sketch of, 662–663

Wilhelm, Rev. Norbet, missionary work of, 327

Williams, Bishop Charles D., quoted on women in politics, 107

Wilmot Proviso, supporters of, 189–190

Wilms, Brother Arnold, missionary work in and around Harbor Springs, 326

Wilson, Mrs. Harold B., tribute to Prof. Morris, 227–228

Wilson, President, protest and warning on sinking of Lusitania, 197; quoted on rights of American citizens, 200; quoted on American attitude toward German people, 206–207; ultimatum to Germany, 705

Wilson, W. E., record book of, mentioned, 251, 252

Winans, Governor, requisitions, mentioned, 245

Digitized by Google

Winsor, Justin, on Mission of St. Ignace, 133
Wisconsin, work of State Historical Society, 231; missionary labors of Allouez in, 787–789, 790–791
Wisner, Governor, commissions by, mentioned, 239
Wolverton, Sara Sutter, *The Crown of Motherhood*, mentioned, 32; *Primroses*, mentioned, 32
Woman's Christian Temperance Union, see Temperance
Women, *History of the Equal Suffrage Movement in Michigan* (Fox), 90–109
Women's Clubs, see Daughters of the American Revolution
Wood, Dwight Hulbert, Dwightwood Spring named for, 401
Wood, Hon. Edwin O., *Father Marquette at Michilimackinac*, 125–142; *Historic Mackinac*, review of, 399–401; biographical sketch of, 401–403
Wood, John, death of, announced, 662
Wood, Prof. Norman, lectures, mentioned, 332
Woodbridge, William, biographical sketch of, 184; elected U. S. Senator, 185; decision on appointments to office, 186
Woodward, Judge, *Judge Woodward and the Episode of the Forty-five Laws* (Jenks), mentioned, 426
Woolson, Constance Fenimore, tribute to Marquette, 135–137; quoted on death of Marquette, 139–140; *Anne*, mentioned, 383
Worthington, Thomas, work for establishment of State in Northwest Territory, 274; Senator of Ohio, 278; letter on creation of Michigan Territory quoted, 280–281; report on situation of inhabitants of Detroit, 281; presented petitions of May and others for creation of Michigan Territory, 284–285; bill to divide Indiana Territory, 287–288
Wright, John C., *Indian Legends of Northern Michigan*, 81–89
Wright, Robert H., report on meeting to organize Alger County Historical Society, 39–40; gift to museum, 65
Wright, Miss Sophia, brief sketch of, 664
Wyandot County, laws creating, summarized, 602

Yeomans, Mr., bill to permit women to vote, 100

Zorn, Rev. P. S., at L'Arbre Croche, 326

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

E.H.S. coll.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

E.H.S. col.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

E.H.S. coll.
Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Princeton University Library
32101 066151554

Digitized by Google